

Lawyer's Own Law - makamundo (earthnotes)

Prologue

"Sit," maawtoridad na utos nito nang pumasok ako sa loob ng kwarto niya.

Sitting on the dark brown colored sofa, he patted his strong thighs, a gesture that he wanted me to sit on his lap.

I shook my head.

"Kuya, I'm grown up. Hindi na ako 'yong bata na umuupo sa hita mo," giit ko at humawak sa isang side ng bewang ko.

Nandito ako para sa kasalanan ko. I know that I've been very stubborn lately.

"I'm sorry, Kuya Law-"

"Don't call me kuya," matigas na pagputol nito sa sasabihin ko.

Magkapatid kami, mas matanda siya ng pitong taon tapos sasabihin niya sa akin na huwag ko siyang tawaging kuya?

"Why not? You're my brother," I stated, a matter of fact.

Hindi siya nagsalita.

Pinapunta niya ako rito sa kwarto niya para lang ba pagalitan ako? I was just having fun in school, nakakahiya kasi sinusundo niya pa ako. Like who the fuck would fetch a sixteen years old girl in her school? I'm not a child anymore.

"Come here, little girl," utos niya ulit sa boses na hindi ko magawang sumuway.

He's been calling me little girl since I was born until now. 'Yong dalawang kuya ko ay hindi naman gano'n ang tinatawag nila sa akin, ako kasi 'yong bunso at si Law lang ang tumatawag sa akin niyan.

I call him Law since the day that I've said my first word. I didn't call him kuya at minsan ay pinapagalitan na ako ni Mommy Sai. Nasanay lang kasi ako na tawagin siya sa kanyang pangalan at tinatawag ko lang siyang kuya kapag may nagawa akong kasalanan.

Wala akong ibang mapagpipilian kung 'di ay ang lumapit sa kanya. I felt awkward when he grabbed me by the waist and crouched me down on his lap.

Nakahawak ako sa matigas niyang balikat nang komportable niya na akong naipuwesto sa hita niya.

"Ano na namang ginawa mo sa school?" nakakatakot ang boses ni Law nang nagtanong siya sa akin.

He's intimidating when it comes to such situations like this. Lagi naman talaga siyang nakakatakot, mas natatakot pa ako sa kanya kesa sa daddy namin na minsan lang naman pumupunta rito.

"Kuya Law naman, I'm sixteen years old. Papaluin mo pa rin ba ako sa pwet?"

nakangusong sabi ko sa kanya habang nakababa ang tingin ko sa aking hita.

I don't wanna look in his eyes. It scare the hell out of me and I know that in this precious moment, he's intimidatingly looking at me.

Kaya minsan ay umiiwas ako sa gulo upang hindi ko siya makausap.

Everyone in our family respect him. Pumapangalawa siya ni daddy at Grandpa Sattie.

Ganito lagi ang eksena namin ni kuya sa bahay ni Mommy, wala pang katulong pero may caretaker naman na every weekend naglilinis dito. Mas gusto ko pa tumira sa mansion. Madalas naman ay pumupunta kami sa mansion at kapag summer ay pupunta kami sa hacienda ni Grandpa Sattie.

Dinidisciplina ako lagi ni Law at tinatama ang lahat ng mali ko.

"Ano 'tong narinig ko sa principal niyo? Mom's not here kaya ako ang pumunta nang pinatawag si Mom. She's annoyed, little girl," I could hear the disappointment in his ghastly voice. Hindi niya rin talaga nagustuhan ang ginawa ko.

"Kuya--"

"What did I told you?"

"Not to call you kuya," mahina at masunuring sagot ko sa kanya. Nakakatakot naman kasi ang paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin, parang binabalatan ako ng buhay. "Bakit? You're super mad kaya ayaw mo'ng tawagin kitang kuya?"

Hindi niya sinagot ang tanong ko. Lagi naman. Nasanay na akong magtanong sa kanya tapos wala akong makukuhang sagot. Katulad na lang ng mga tanong ko lagi kung nasaan si mommy, uuwi ba si daddy, dito ba matutulog si Kuya Laki o mag-oovernight na naman siya sa bahay nila Kuya Ruin, kailan uuwi si Kuya Laz dahil may tinutuluyan na siyang dorm sa new school niya. Lahat ng 'yon hindi niya sasagutin.

Lagi na lang kaming dalawa ang naiiwan dito at madalas ay wala pa siya kasi busy din siya sa pag-aaral niya at pumupunta pa siya sa mansion.

Palagi na lang akong nag-iisa kaya madalas din akong gumagawa ng mga bagay na makakakuha ng atensyon nila.

"Sabihin mo sa akin kung ano ang ginawa mo sa school," pag-uulit niya sa tanong niya kanina. Hindi na ito tanong ngayon, utos niya na ito.

Ayan na naman siya. He's using that fatherlike voice against me.

"Bakit ko pa sasabihin? Alam kong alam mo naman, hindi ba sinabi sa'yo ng gurang na principal na 'yon? Lagi niya na lang akong sinusumbong," bakas sa boses ko ang pagrerebelde.

Wala naman kasi akong ginawang masama. Nagmukha lang akong masama kasi 'yong nauna ng gulo ay siyang nauna pang umiyak. Hindi ako umiyak kaya ayon, pinagkamalan akong ako ang nangunguna ng gulo.

Marami na rin naman kasi akong bad record sa guidance kaya pinagbibintangan nila ako kapag nasangkot ako sa gulo.

They got me irritated and annoyed, they started it. Anong tingin nila sa akin? Magpapaapi? Umuwi na lang sila sa mga magagarang bahay nila dahil hindin-hindi ako magpapaapi. I'm a Cavanaugh, kami dapat 'yong nang-aapi.

"Kryptonite, gusto mo bang magalit ako sa'yo?" naramdaman ko ang mahigpit na paghawak ni Law sa balakang ko kaya mabilis akong umiling bilang sagot sa tanong niya. "Sagutin mo'ko ng maayos."

Minsan na siyang nagalit sa akin noong eight years old ako at sobrang namumula talaga ang pwet ko dahil sa kakapalo niya.

Ang laki naman kasi ng kamay niya na halos sakop na nito ang dalawang pisngi ng pwet ko.

Our parents didn't know about it.

"T-They started it, nadamay lang naman ako. Binuhusan kasi ni Erich ng orange juice 'yong drawings ng katabi ko kaya natalisikan 'yong assignment ko and you know that she's way older than me, kung umasta ay parang bata. I told her to stop but she didn't kaya nabasa na lahat ng assignment ko sa cafeteria table. Nainis ako kaya sinipa ko siya sa tuhod at kahit hindi naman masyadong malakas 'yon. Bigla na lang siyang natumba at umiyak tapos tinuro na ako ang may kasalanan ng lahat," mahabang paliwanag ko habang nakatungo ang ulo at minsan ay napapatingin sa maskuladong braso niya.

I was wearing my pink shorts, ramdam ko ang marahang paglapat ng forearm ni Law sa hita ko. He rested his forearm there.

"How many times did this happen in just one year, little girl?" marahan ang kanyang paraan ng pananalita ngunit nakakatakot pa rin. "More than fifty times, I guess? Pinalampas ko lahat ng 'yon."

Hindi na talaga siya nagbabago, naging close kami nang dahil dito. Siya lang kasi lagi ang sumasalo sa mga kasalanan ko sa school. He never judge me, tinatanong niya lagi ang side ko bago ako papagalitan at pagsabihan. Kapag maling-mali ako ay papaluin niya ako sa pwet.

"I already told you, it's not my fault," kinakabahang pangangatuwiran ko.

"Alam mo naman siguro kung bakit kita pinapalo sa pwet 'di ba? Dinidisiplina lang kita," bulong niya sa tenga ko dahil kung bakit sunod-sunod akong napalunok.

Marahas niya akong pinatayo mula sa pagkakaupo sa matigas niyang hita kasabay ng pagtayo niya rin.

"K-Kuya—"

"Dumapa ka sa kama ko,"

"N-No! Ayoko!" pagtuto1 ko at umiling. Alam na alam ko na kung ano ang susunod na mangyayari.

Ang lakas ng loob kong lumaban sa mga nang-aapi sa akin sa school at ni isang luha ay wala akong sinayang pero pagdating kay Law ay natatakot ako.

Lalo na kapag pinapalo niya ako sa pwet ko. Matagal na rin simula noong huli niyang ginawa 'yon at ayokong maulit 'yon. Siguro ay fourteen years old ako simula noong huminto siya pero ngayon ay mukhang punong-puno na siya.

"I'll make it fast, little girl. I just want you to learn your lesson for this day," sabi niya habang hinihilot ang kanyang sentido. "Drop on my bed," utos niya ulit.

Naalala ko pa noon na nilagyan ko ng foam ang pwet ko para hindi masyadong masakit kapag pinapalo niya ako gamit lang naman ang kamay niya pero masakit pa rin. Nang nalaman niya ang ginawa ko ay pinapahubad niya na sa akin ang shorts ko at nakasuot na lang ako ng underwear sa tuwing papaluin niya ang pwet ko.

I didn't want to experience those terrible things again. I know why he's doing this, he just love me kaya ayaw niyang mapariwara ang buhay ko.

Sila Kuya Laz at Kuya Laki ay dinadaan niya lang sa matinong usapan pero sa akin ay pagkatapos kong sirain ang matinong pakikipag-usap niya sa akin, papaluin niya ako sa pwet.

"K-Kuya, please... I'm sorry, I promise! I won't do it again!" mangiyak-ngiyak kong sabi sa harap niya nang hinubad niya ang kanyang suot na manipis na tee shirt.

Hindi niya pa nga ako pinapalo ay tumulo na ang luha ko nang siya na rin mismo ang naghubad ng pink shorts ko at iniwan lang ang suot kong black panty.

Buti na lang at hindi 'yong thong ang sinuot ko, sigurado papagalitan niya ako. Mas komportable kasi ako kapag 'yong thong panty ang suot ko, hindi babakat sa mga fitted jeans ko unlike normal panties.

"Drop, little girl," utos niya na parang bata pa rin ang turing sa akin.

I wanted to protest but I'm afraid. I had no choice but to obey him, be his obedient little girl.

Kinakabahan at mabagal ang galaw ko nang dumapa ako sa malambot niyang kama, the color of his sheets was dark brown. Isinubsob ko ang aking mukha sa isang malapit na unan upang pigilan ang pag-iyak kapag papaluin niya na ako.

Naramdaman kong itinukod niya ang kanyang isang tuhod sa kama ngunit nakatayo pa rin siya sa sahig sa dulo ng kama.

Lumapat ang kanyang malaking kamay sa pwet ko, hindi ko alam kung imahenasyon ba 'yong naramdaman ko nang marahan niya itong hinimas.

Napakagat ako sa unan nang naramdaman ko ang paghampas ng mabigat, matigas at magaspang niyang palad sa pwet ko. Some tears from my blurry eyes fell down my cheeks. Pakiramdam ko ay mapupunit 'yong panty ko. My butt bounced a little because of the impact of his hands.

"Next time. Look at me when I'm talking to you, little girl," sabi niya kasabay ng muling paghampas ng kanyang kamay sa pwet ko kaya mariin akong pumikit at bumuhos na naman ang luha sa mga mata ko. "Do you understand?"

Hindi pa nga ako nakakasagot nang may sinunod na naman siyang hampas at inulit ang kanyang tanong.

"Do you understand?"

Unusual

Nakatulog ako kagabi sa kama, sa loob ng kwarto ni Law nang dahil sa sobrang hapdi ng mga mata ko kakaiyak at kakapalo niya habang pinapagalitan ako.

Lagi namang ganito noon pero hindi ko lang alam kung bakit biglang bumalik ang ganitong gawain niya ngayon.

Maybe I was just too much of a stubborn, hardheaded and self-willed girl.

Napabalikwas ako ng bangon at hinawi ang kulay brown niyang comforter na nakapulupot sa katawan ko. The sheets, duvet and pillows of the bed smell like him, strong scent of masculine mixed with my strawberry shower gel body wash. I just had my second bath last night for yesterday before he called me.

Ang mas malala pa ay madalas pangatlong beses akong naliligo sa isang araw. I just feel like it. I love to rinse my body and the soft cottonlike bubbles sticking on my skin felt so good.

Tumayo ako mula sa kama at inilibot ang paningin sa buong kwarto ni Law.

I had always been in question why he love color brown. Mas malinis pa tignan ang kwarto niya kesa sa akin na kebabaeng tao ko tapos ang gulo ng kwarto.

Kaya nga kapag pinapagalitan niya ako ay gusto niyang sa kanyang kwarto kami mag-usap dahil mas magagalit at mauubusan lang siya ng pasensya kapag nakita niya ang magulong kwarto ko.

His room was just simple as he was. Tranquil and silent. Very mature with those shades of brown things. May iilang ibang kulay pa naman akong nakikita rito but majority was color brown.

With my bare feet, I stood on the cold floor of his room. Gano'n pa rin ang suot ko. A top and my black underwear. Nararamdaman ko pa rin ang sakit sa pwet ko kaya lumapit ako sa isang human sized mirror niya rito.

Wala naman siya, siguro ay nagluluto sa baba. I could check my butt.

Nakatalikod ako sa malaking salamin ngunit nakatagilid ang aking ulo upang makita ko ang repleksyon ng aking likod at pwet.

Marahan kong ibinaba ang black panty ko sa parte ng pwet, ang isang kamay ko naman ay nakahawak sa harapang parte ng underwear upang hindi bumaba at baka ay tuluyan kong mahubad ito.

"O-Ouch..." komento ko sa tumambad sa akin sa salamin at mariing napapikit nang nakita ko ang pamumula ng aking pwet.

My butt wasn't that perfect but I could say that it wasn't flat. I was flat-chested pero hindi naman gano'n ka-flat but at least bumawi naman sa pwet ko.

At the age of sixteen, still wearing baby bra.

"Kryptonite."

Mabilis kong hinila paitaas ang aking panty sa pwet na parte nang narinig ko ang malalim na boses ni Law mula sa pinto ng kwarto.

Palihim akong napamura nang nakita ko siyang matiim na nakatitig sa akin at nakatayo ng matuwid sa nakabukas na pinto.

"Kuya? Anong oras na?" tanong ko na parang walang nangyari kagabi. It's awkward because I was sixteen and he was doing it to discipline me again. Alam kong galit pa rin siya kaya kailangan ko siyang respetuhin.

Respetuhin means calling him kuya and I wasn't used to it.

Iniinda ko ang sakit sa pwet nang naglakad ako palapit sa kanya.

He was wearing his usual clothes. Manipis na tee shirt at kulay brown na shorts, kung hindi shorts ay madalas boxers lang.

"8:43," sagot niya, nakapokus ang nakakatakot na tingin sa akin matapos tumingin sa kanyang wrist watch.

Napamura na naman ako nang narinig 'yon. My first class starts at 7:30, ended at 9:00. Sa second subject nalang siguro ako papasok.

"I'm late, what day is it?" muling tanong ko habang nakatingala sa kanya.

He's super tall. Siguro ay hanggang baliklang ako.

"Wednesday," tipid niyang sagot.

"Washday," I mumbled and smirked.

I loved Wednesday. I had freedom what to wear in school and not that cheap uniform, however, the school had rules and policies about what to wear. No ripped jeans, no sleeveless, backless or spaghetti straps and some tops that might get show off my skin, no short shorts and no slippers. It wasn't stylish at all.

Lalagpasan ko na sana si Law at lalabas na sana ng kwarto niya upang pumunta sa kwarto ko at ihanda ang sarili para sa pagpasok but I stopped close and right in front of him when he blocked my way and closed the door.

"Maligo ka na sa banyo ko, I'll get your clothes," utos niya, iminuwestra ang pinto ng kanyang banyo gamit ang kanyang malaking kamay.

I knew what was on his mind. He knows me. Gusto niyang siya ang mamili ng damit na susuotin ko ngayon dahil alam niya kung anong klaseng damit ang sinusuot ko.

"Kuya naman..." my voice toned down.

Katulad ng sinabi niya kagabi ay tumingin ako sa kanyang mga mata kapag kinakausap niya ako.

"I don't want to receive another report from your school that you have violated something," hi masculine voice had never been this intimidating before. He's intimidating but unlike before when I was just thirteen, hindi niya ako masyadong tinatakot. "Just this day, Kry. Don't give me a headache."

Umatras ako nang naglakad siya patungo sa kanyang banyo kaya sinundan ko siya. I could see the visible tensed muscles at his back beneath his thin tee shirt.

"The guard loves me, pinapasok niya naman ako kahit gano'n ang suot ko," sabi ko, bakas sa boses ko ang pilit na pangangatuwiran na tama ako. "It's the school

guard's fault, not mine."

"Ang hilig mo'ng mangatuwiran," he grunted in displeasure.

Napanguso ako habang nakatitig sa likod ng ulo niya. Law's hair looked so soft, hindi ko na nahawakan ang kanyang buhok simula noong nagka-isip ako.

"Totoo naman," pagkairita, hindi ko maiwasang sumagot sa kanya.

Sumasagot ako sa kanya dahil lagi na lang kasing siya ang tama.

Nasa loob na kami ng banyo niya nang huminto siya sa paglalakad at hinarap ako, halatang narinig ang sinabi ko.

I don't want to be intimidated by him but he always does effortlessly.

"If I receive another message from your school in this same week. Hindi lang palo ang matatanggap mo sa akin," titig na titig sa akin ang kanyang mga mata. It was a warn and I know that he meant it. He would do it if needed.

Hindi ko alam kung anong magagawa niya dahil kailanman ay wala pa siyang ibang ginawa na mas masakit pa sa pagpalo sa pwet.

I'd do everything to avoid troubles in school this week. Sa next week bahala na kung anong mangyayari basta huwag lang ngayon. Ang sabi niya naman ay ngayong week lang.

Yumuko ako at napakagat sa labi ko. I heard him cleared his throat and pulled me to get inside his shower stall. Naramdaman ko pa ang hindi sinasadyang marahang pagsagi ng kanyang kamay sa pwet ko.

"I'm sorry, little girl," masuyong bulong niya sa tenga ko nang nanatili akong tahimik at nakayuko. "Does it hurt?"

Napalunok ako nang naalala ko ang nangyari kanina. Nakita niya siguro ang namumula at parang namamagang pwet ko nang tinignan ko ito kanina sa kanyang salamin.

This was embarrassing. Sariling kapatid ko, nakita pa ang gano'ng bahagi ng katawan ko. Nakita niya naman 'yon noong bata pa lang ako, from the day that I was born 'til I turned five years old.

Iba na kasi ngayon, malaki na ako. Dalaga na. Si Kuya Laki pa nga ang nakadiskubre noong first menstruation ko, I don't know how he knew all of that when it was a girl's thing. Ang dami niyang alam tungkol sa babae, minsan na ring pumapasok sa isip ko na baka ay bakla siya.

Nakatalikod ako mula kay Law at paaalisin ko na sana siya dahil maliligo na ako ngunit nagulat ako sa sunod niyang ginawa.

"Law—"

"Little girl."

I felt one rough hand cupped one cheek of my butt. He stroke his hand against my butt and that made it bounced a little. My whole body sensed the warmth from him, burning my back.

Hindi ko siya nagawang harapin dahil sobrang lapit niya sa akin.

Was he out of his mind? Hindi na ako bata para hindi malaman kung ano ang pinapakitang motibo niya. Noong pinapalo niya ako sa pwet ay hindi naman siya ganito.

He'd completely ignore me after he spanked me and that was before.

Hindi ba nakakadiri 'to? He was actually caressing, squeezing, stroking my butt. Kapatid ko siya. What the hell.

"Law!" sigaw ko para matigil na siya pero hindi siya tumigil. Parang ginagawa niya 'yon para mawala 'yong sakit na nararamdaman ko sa parteng 'yon.

"Tinataasan mo ba ako ng boses?"

"N-No..."

"Ituro mo kung nasa'n ang masakit," utos niya sa boses na hindi ko na naman magawang suwayin. "No worries, little girl. It's just a massage."

Nanginginig ang mga kamay kong inabot ang bahagi ng pwet ko kung saan 'yong mas masakit.

Massage? Do brothers these days massage their youngest sister at her butt? Hindi kami masyadong close ni Law, ayoko sa kanya dahil sobrang nakakatakot siya. Hindi naman kami masyadong malapit sa isa't isa dahil lagi siyang busy at pokus sa pag-aaral niya.

Madalas ay kaming apat lang ang nandito sa bahay ni Mommy Sai kasi lagi siyang wala, trabaho, business trip at lahat para maitaguyod kami sa sariling pera niya kahit na naglalagay din naman ng pera si daddy sa bank account namin.

But then, daddy transferred Kuya Lazi and provide him a dorm near the university. Si Kuya Laki naman ay laging wala, hindi na umuuwi at madalas ay mag-oovernight sa bahay nila Kuya Ruin. They're close.

Kaming dalawa na lang ni Law. He's always here to prepare my breakfast and dinner, ihahatid at susunduin sa school.

I didn't know that I was holding my breath, he's not done yet. Ang mas malala pa ay parang wala na talaga akong hangin na maihinga nang ipinasok niya sa loob ng black panty ko ang kanyang magaspang at malaking kamay.

Nararamdaman ko. Nararamdaman ko na talaga ng buo ang kanyang kamay na hinihimas ang pwet ko.

"L-Law. This is wrong..."

"Ayaw mo naman sigurong umupo sa school niyo na masakit ang pwet 'di ba?" kinakausap niya ako sa paraan na parang isang bata lang ang kinakausap niya.

I know it was wrong. Alam kong mali 'to at parang ginagawa niya akong tanga pero hinayaan ko siya dahil pakiramdam ko ay parang unti-unti nga rin namang nawawaala 'yong sakit.

The hand that he used to spank me was the same hand that have caressed the pain away.

Pinapakalma ko ang sarili ko habang halos limang minuto niyang ginawa 'yon.

"How was it?"

"O-Okay..." I stammered and took a deep breath when he finally pulled out his large and rough hand.

He told me to take my bath and make it fast because I was late. Mas lalo akong nakahinga ng maluwag nang lumabas na siya at wala sa sariling napahawak ako sa parte ng pwet ko kung saan niya hinimas 'yon.

It was effective but how? Parang simpleng hilot lang at nawala na 'yong matinding sakit na dulot ng pagpalo niya.

I shrugged all my thoughts off and just do what I've told even though it kept on bugging my mind. This was unusual, Law never did that to me before.

I had noticed that the more I grow up, the more crazy things I did in school. I love studying and having fun simultaneously. I wasn't a dork and nerd, may paki ako sa pag-aaral ko pero hindi naman 'yong tipong ilalaan ko ang lahat ng oras ko sa pag-aaral.

I want to live. Hindi naman masamang gumawa ng kalokohan. Isa rin sa dahilan kung bakit hindi ako na-kicked out ay dahil mataas ang grades ko. Hindi naman mahirap ibalanse 'yon kung hindi ko lang iisipin ang mga negatibong bagay. An outstanding student, ang kaso ay kulang ako sa moral and right conduct and whatsoever. I was not an angel to be.

Huminto ang sasakyan ni Law sa harap ng school gates and as usual, bago ako bumaba ay hinalikan ko siya sa kanyang pisngi. It's normal, I also did this to my other kuyas.

"Wait for me at 4pm, okay?" paalala niya kaya tumango na lang ako bilang sagot. "Huwag kang umuwi mag-isa."

Sinara ko na ang pinto ng front seat at naglakad na papasok sa loob ng gates. I rolled my eyes when I didn't heard the sound of Law's car engine drive away. Hinihintay niya pa akong makapasok bago siya aalis.

Ilang beses na akong umuwi mag-isa at lagi niya na lang akong pinapagalitan pero hindi niya naman ako pinapalo noon.

Alam kong may gagawin pa siya sa oras ng uwian ko but he'd always find a way to reserve an hour of his time and fetch me.

"Hi sexy."

Natigilan ako sa akmang pagpasok ng gate nang biglang humarang sa dinadaan ko si Eloah.

I rolled my eyes again for the second time today. I wasn't sexy, siguro ay nakikita niya lang na palaban ako kaya nasasabi niya 'yon.

He was the Basketball Team Captain for the Junior High. Ka-batch ko siya at classmate. He's tall but my brothers were taller. Gwapo siya katulad ng mga lalaking kinahuhumalingan ng mga babae rito pero hindi naman ako interesado sa kanya.

He's just another pest or insect that I wanted to stomped my feet on and kill with no sweat.

"Move," sumenyas pa ako sa kanya na tumabi sa dinadaan ko pero hindi niya ginawa.

"Why are you late?" tanong niya na may malaking ngisi sa kanyang namumulang mga labi.

"Itanong mo 'yan sa sarili mo," mataray kong sabi at marahang tinulak ang kanyang dibdib gamit ang hintuturo ko.

"Why am I late, self?"

Umiiling akong pumasok sa loob ng gate at bahagyang sinadya ang pagtama ng balikat ko sa kanyang braso.

Gago talaga. Tintotoo ang sinabi ko.

Bumuntot siya sa akin dahil iisa lang din naman ang pupuntahan namin. Syempre sa classroom.

"I saw your brother, 'yong nag-aaral sa isang Law School," bumulong niya at sinadya pang idinikit ang kanyang braso sa braso ko. "Ang sama ng tingin sa akin kanina sa gate."

I frowned.

Lagi na lang ganyang ang sinasabi niya sa akin.

"Anong ibig sabihin nito, Eloah? Are you trying flirt with my sister?"

I smirked when I heard Kuya Laki's voice behind us. Kuya Laki was the Basketball Team Captain of the Senior High Department. He just turned eighteen. Two years lang ang gap namin ni Kuya Laki while Kuya Lazarus was twenty-one, took his course in other university and was tutored to manage dad's company and also our family business.

Nakakalungkot dahil minsan ko na lang nakikita si Kuya Lazi, minsan lang din kasi siyang umuuwi ng bahay. Three years na simula noong inilipat siya ng school ni daddy, he was in between seventeen or eighteen years old that time, ano kayang nangyari sa kanya during his senior high school days before? Was it hard for him? Have he met someone else and moved on?

Naalala ko pa at nasaksihan ko kung paano tinangkang halikan ni Ate Francesca si Law.

I also felt mad and angry toward her. I thought she's not like Erich.

"Let's go, Kry. Tinawagan pa ako ni Kuya Law sa gitna ng klase para utusan akong ihatid ka sa room mo," inakbayan niya ako at hinila palayo kay Eloah na nakangisi pa rin. "Buti na lang pinayagan ako ni bakla na lumabas," dagdag niya, tinutukoy ang teacher niya.

Habang naglalakad kami paakyat ay nakabuntot pa rin sa amin si Eloah dahil syempre ay magkaklase kami. Iisang room lang ang papasukan namin.

"Laki, alam mo pwede naman nating pag-usapan 'to. Kapag nanalo ang team ko sa susunod na intramural—"

"Liligawan mo ang kapatid ko? Hindi mo yata talaga kilala si Kuya Law," hambog na sabi ni Kuya Laki sabay tawa nang nakita naming may tumitig sa kanya na isang babae

na nadaanan namin. She bit her lower lip while staring at him, a sign of something.

Napasapo ako sa aking noo nang gamit ang isang kamay ni Kuya Laki, he formed his fingers into a circle and positioned it at the side of his lips.

He moved his hands and cheek like he was somewhat making a blowjob, staring back at the girl.

Ang laswa niya talaga pero mahal ko siya.

Lahat ng babaeng kaklase ko ay hindi napigilan ang sarili kung 'di ang tumingin sa kuya ko. I kissed my brother at his cheek when he leaned down at me before he left the room.

Umupo ako sa seat ko, tahimik at walang ibang ginawa kung 'di ang panoorin ang pangalawang subject teacher namin.

After an hour of her lecture, I got up and walked out of the room unannounced bringing my bag with me, in the middle of class hours.

I got bored.

Hinayaan ako ng teacher kasi lagi naman nilang linyahan ang if you're not interested in my class, the door is always open.

Isang buwan na rin naman ang titiisin ko. Summer na ulit, pupunta kami sa hacienda ni Grandpa Sattie.

I opened my phone when I felt it vibrated inside my jeans pocket.

Three messages. Galing sa iba't ibang unknown phone number ang dalawa at 'yong isa naman ay kay Law.

Hey love, wanna have fun in my place?

Are you free? Party at Cole's house. 10pm.

Hindi ko sila kilala pero alam kong lalaki ang dalawang 'yon. They're cheap and this was my kind of fun. Pero lahat ng katuwaan na iniisip ko ay nabura nang nabasa ko ang mensahe ni Law.

I'm at the parking lot.

Napalunok ako dahil kakatapos ko lang kumain ng lunch at hindi na muna ako pumasok. I could catch up, hindi ako ma-behind sa lessons namin kahit na dalawang beses sa isang linggo ako pumapasok. Well, I did that once, I pretend that I was suffering from my allergy.

It's just 2pm. May two hours pa bago ang uwian.

Boring kasi absent ang dalawang loka. They didn't informed me. Alam kong tinatawanan na nila ako ngayon sa kung saang impyerno man sila.

Bumaba na ako mula sa pagkakaupo ko sa railings dito sa second floor, sa walang katao-taong parte ng building at naglakad sa lobby pababa ng hagdan.

I didn't know how Law got inside the school's premises. At the parking lot huh?

Nakita ko si Law na nakatayo at nakasandal sa labas kanyang sasakyan, sa driver's

side, arms crossed against his hard chest. He was wearing those clothes he always wear in the house. Siguro ay umuwi siya? Tapos na kaya ang klase niya?

Bumaba ang tingin niya sa akin nang huminto ako sa harap niya.

Ang nakakatakot na paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin ay parang pakiramdam ko, kinakain ako ng libo-libong uod ng buhay.

"Get in my car, little girl," tiim bagang utos niya sabay kuha ng bag ko at hinagis niya iyon sa loob ng sasakyan, sa backseat.

"I didn't do anything," depensa ko sa aking sarili.

"Hm? Why did I receive a message says you're suspended for one week?"

Kumunot ang noo ko nang dahil sa sinabi niya. Wala naman kasi talaga akong ibang ginawa. Unless ay tungkol 'yon sa nangyari kahapon? Baka naman 'yong hindi ko sinasadyang nahulog ang mga libro sa library? Impossible.

Hindi naman siguro nila sesendan ng mensahe si Law kung ang ginawa ko lang naman buong araw ay naglibot lang sa buong campus.

Kaya siguro hinayaan na lang ako ni ma'am na lumabas?

"Get in, now."

Gusto kong sumuway at tumakbo palabas ng parking lot pero nasa loob ng bag ko ang wallet at cellphone ko.

Kinakabahan ngunit naiirita akong pumasok sa loob ng sasakyan niya.

Tahimik lang siya habang nagmamaneho pauwi. Nakikita ko ang iilang ugat na lumalabas sa kamay niya nang dahil sa sobrang higpit ng pagkakahawak niya sa manibela.

He dragged me out of the car when we got home, gripping my arm while his other hand was gripping the strap of my bag.

Nasa loob ng living room pa lang kami matapos niyang sinara ang pinto ay pabagsak siyang umupo sa sofa habang nakatayo ako sa harap niya. Iniwan niya ang bag ko sa isang sofa.

"L-Law, hindi ko naman kasi talaga alam kung bakit—"

Gusto kong tapusin ang sasabihin ko pero hindi ko nagawa nang marahas niyang hinawakan ang bewang ko at pinatalikod.

He's facing my butt now. His hand from my waist come across and unbuttoned my jeans.

Nasa gilid ko lang ang mga kamay ko nang ikinuyom ko ito.

I closed my eyes when he removed my jeans and harshly pulled it down, leaving my white panty on. He prepared my clothes earlier, gusto ko sana thong since jeans 'tong suot ko pero panty at baby bra ang dinala niya.

"One week suspended, little girl," his intimidating voice invaded my thoughts about how did it all happened. Why so sudden? "What are you going to do with that one week?"

Hindi ako gumalaw sa kinatatayuan ko. Ramdam ko ang kanyang mga tuhod na nakadikit sa likod na bahagi ng hita ko.

"I-I'll sleep," tipid kong sagot sa kanya.

Pero hindi ko alam na magiging dahilan 'yong upang mas lalong magalit siya.

I should have shut my mouth.

"No, not just sleep," he corrected. Ginagamit niya na naman ang boses na 'yon, na parang siya si daddy na kahit si daddy nga ay hindi ako pinalo sa pwet noon. "Naalala mo ba ang sinabi ko kanina?"

Ang bilis ng bawat paghinga ko at ilang beses akong nagdasal na sana ay uuwi rito si Kuya Laki. Sana ay dito na lang siya matutulog at hindi na sa bahay nila Kuya Ruin.

"Ang dami mo'ng satsat, Law," lakas loob kong sabi sa kanya, wala nang respeto. Alam ko rin naman kung ano ang mangyayari. "Spank me, now."

I wanted to end this fast.

Bago ko naramdaman ang paghampas ng kanyang magaspang, matigas at malaking kamay sa pwet ko ay may sinabi siya dahilan kung bakit ako nanlumo, marahil ay sobrang hindi niya nagustuhan ang sinabi ko. Ang inaasta ko.

"Kung kailangan kong araw-arawin 'to para matuto ka lang ay gagawin ko. Gagawin ko, Kryptonite."

Chapter 2

Tore

Warm tears, soft sobs and the agonizing pain on my butt.

Pangalawang gabi na 'to. May susunod pang lima. Kailan ba matatapos ang linggong 'to? Ang hirap na kayang umupo lalo na kapag walang cushion o kahit anong malambot na bagay ang uupuan ko.

Suspended. Nandito lang ako sa bahay at kahit ang lumabas lang ay hindi niya ako pinapayagan. Kanina ay wala siya kaya sobrang boring dito kaya lang ay no'ng dumating siya, agad niya akong inutusang pumasok sa loob ng kuwarto niya.

I was wearing a black oversized tee shirt, it was Kuya Lazi's tee shirt, he gave it to me before he left and transferred to the other university. Law removed my cotton shorts and told me to drop on his bed earlier.

Tinotoo niya talaga ang sinabi niya kahapon. Siguro ay sa tuwing umuuwi siya? Alas singko o alas seis ng hapon. Ito pa kasi ang pangalawang araw.

Nakadapa ako sa kulay brown na sheets ng kama niya habang nakasubsob ang mukha ko sa malambot niyang unan.

Naramdaman kong marahas niyang inangat ang hem ng suot kong damit dahil natatakpan nito ang panty at pwet ko.

Sana hindi niya mapansin 'yong panty ko.

It's a seamless panty with foam padded. Nude colored, it looked like a normal panty. Hindi naman kasi siya 'yong foam padded na parang shorts na mula hips hanggang mid-thigh tingnan. It didn't looked like a cycling shorts. It had the shape of a normal panty.

Cykee, one of my crazy friends influenced me about these hot and sexy underwear such as thongs and lingerie, her Mom was a model. I had stocked those daring undergarments up in my secret closet, where I could lock and hide it.

Baka kapag nakita ng mga kuya ko 'yon ay susunugin nila. I loved those things, it's from Cykee so I should treasure it.

Naramdaman ko ang marahang paglapat ng malaking kamay niya sa pwet ko, abot ang paghinga ko nang hindi siya gumalaw upang paluin ako.

The dangerous silence have coated us alone.

Napahigpit ang pagkakayakap ko sa unan kung saan ko mas lalong isinubsob ang aking mukha.

Nakadapa ako sa kama kaya ang hirap ding huminga pero pakiramdam ko ay nalagutan ako ng hininga nang naramdaman ko ang pagdiin ng kanyang malaking kamay sa pwet ko kasabay no'n ay naramdaman ko ang paglapit ng kanyang mukha sa batok ko.

Nakakainis. Hindi porket siya ang pinakamatanda sa aming magkakapatid ay gagawin niya na sa akin 'to. Hindi ko rin siya kayang isumbong ni Mommy Sai kasi ako rin naman ang papagalitan at sasabihing tama naman si Law kuno katulad na lang noong umangal ako at pinagpipilitan ko ang gusto kong mangyari.

I had never told Mommy Sai, not even daddy about what Law was doing to me. Isa pa ay wala rin naman silang oras para sa akin. Lagi na lang silang wala rito.

"Explain this," his harsh tone of voice behind me made my whole body tremble, quiver, shudder. And when his rough hand gripped my panty, I felt like a statue. Nawala ang panginig ng katawan ko at napalitan ng lamig.

I felt the blood in my face drained. Pakiramdam ko ay namumutla na ako.

Medyo nanginginig pa ang kanyang kamay nang dahil sa sobrang higpit ng pagkakahawak niya sa panty ko, sa parte kung saan may foam padded.

"Are you trying to outsmart me, little girl?" displeased, he abusively pulled up off my skin the part of my panty where he was currently gripping it.

Napasinghap ako nang bahagya pang napaangat ang pwet ko nang dahil sa ginawa niyang marahas na pag-angat no'n. Hindi niya pa naman 'yon hinila pababa kaya suot ko pa rin naman ang panty. Isang pagdaing ang lumabas sa bibig ko nang naramdaman ko ang paghigpit ng panty ko sa bahagi ng pagkababae ko.

The panty felt like it was suffocating my feminine part when it tightened.

"K-Kuya. Tama na please..."

"You're calling me kuya now huh? Kahapon lang, wala kang respeto sa akin," hindi ko na maipaliwanag kung gaano siya kagalit ngayon. Nakakatakot ang mababang tono ng boses niya. "Since the day that you've learned how to speak, I've never heard you call me kuya. Tinatawag mo lang akong kuya kapag may kasalanan ka. You're disrespecting me, little girl."

I didn't call him kuya. Hindi niya naman kasi pinaparamdam sa akin noon na kuya ko siya. He was cold and intimidating toward me and that was maybe because I was stubborn, self-opinionated and headstrong girl.

Alam ko namang gano'n din siya kina Kuya Laki at Kuya Lazi pero pakiramdam ko lang talaga noong bata pa lang ako ay parang una pa lang hindi niya na ako tinuturing na kapatid, pinipilit niya lang ang sarili niyang ituring akong kapatid. Unlike Kuya Laki and Kuya Lazi. They're my favorite kuya.

Well, was this his own way of loving his only sister? I hate it. I don't like it.

Napahagulgol ako nang marahas niyang hinila pababa ang panty ko. Parang yumanig ang buong katawan ko dahil sa pagiging marahas niya. He removed it off my body followed by the noise of a ripping fabric.

He tore it.

Mas lalo ko lang idiniin ang mukha ko sa kanyang unan na medyo basa na nang dahil sa patuloy na pagbuhos ng mga luha ko.

Gustong-gusto kong tumakbo palabas ng kwarto niya pero hindi ko ginawa dahil alam ko namang naka-lock 'yon at baka ay mas lalo lang siyang magagalit sa akin.

Naramdaman ko ang pag-uga ng kama sa likurang bahagi ko, he changed position and placed himself at the side of the bed.

I couldn't see him. I didn't wanna see him. Hindi ko rin tinangkang gumalaw. Natatakot ako sa kung anong gagawin niya.

"Do you remember what I told you before?" bulong niya at ramdam ko ay sobrang lapit niya sa akin dahil nararamdaman ko ang kanyang mainit at mabangong hininga na parang hinahaplos ang batok ko. "Hindi lang palo ang makukuha mo sa akin."

Muli kong naramdaman ang paglapat ng malaking kamay niya sa pwet ko at ang paglayo ng mukha niya sa batok ko. Buong buo kong naramdaman ang kanyang magaspang na kamay.

I know why his hands turned rough.

Naglayas kasi siya noong eighteen years old pa lamang siya. Sa kadahilanang pinipilit siya ni daddy na magiging susunod na magpapatakbo ng kompanya but he didn't obliged daddy because he wanted to proceed law after graduating a four year course in college. Naglayas siya sa mansion noong doon pa kami nakatira, namuhay siya mag-isa at siguro ay nagtrabaho pa. After a year, Mommy Sai bought this house and begged for Law to come back and live with us, we left the mansion. Madalas naman kasing wala si daddy sa mansyon kaya ano pang gagawin namin do'n?

Ngayon ay nagkaayos na sila ni daddy dahil pumayag na si Kuya Lazi na siyang susunod na magpapatakbo ng kompanya.

Para sa akin ay ang babaw naman ng dahilan ni Law para maglayas na agad siya. Pakiramdam ko ay may iba pang dahilan maliban do'n. Hindi ko nga lang alam kung ano at bakit pinagpipilitan niyang maging lawyer.

Ilang minuto lang ang hinintay ko bago ko naramdaman ang kakaibang pakiramdam sa pwet ko.

Hindi niya ako pinapalo.

The tears immediately stopped from running down my face because of confusion. Furrowed brows and creased forehead, pinakiramdaman ko ang kung ano mang ginagawa ni Law sa pwet ko.

A soft and moist thing had touched the left cheek of my derriere. I groaned when another moist but hard thing had made a contact on the same spot of my buttocks.

Hindi ko na napigilan ang sarili ko at inangat ko ang aking mukha mula sa pagkakasubsob sa unan ni Law at lumignon sa likuran ko upang makita kung ano ang ginagawa niya sa pwet ko.

"L-Law! What the hell are you doing!" gulantang kong sigaw at sinubukang tumayo ngunit bumagsak lang din ako at nakadapa pa rin sa kama nang gamit ang isa niyang kamay ay ipinatong niya 'yon sa aking likod.

He pushed my back to press my flat stomach against the sheets and to keep my position on the bed.

Muli akong lumignon sa kanya at hindi ko alam kung bakit hindi ako nakaramdam ng pandidiri sa mga nasaksihan ko.

Hinahalikan, bahagyang kinakagat at sinisipsip niya ang isang pisngi ng pwet ko.

Kusang bumuhos na naman ang mga luha ko.

Anong gagawin ko? Mali 'to. Mali ang lahat ng 'to.

Siya ang mas matanda sa amin at kapatid ko siya. Siya dapat ang unang nakaisip na mali ang mga ginagawa niya. He's a lawyer and why was he doing this to his own sister?

"L-Law! Stop! Isusumbong kita kay Mommy--"

"Why, little girl?" he cut my words while sticking his wet tongue out and in my open eyes, he stared at me, running his sinful tongue at the center line of my butt. "If I stop, are you going to behave in school now?"

Pakiramdam ko ay wala na akong mailulunok pa. Gusto kong umiwas ng tingin o 'di kaya'y higitin ang kanyang buhok at hilain palayo sa pwet ko but I've never touch his hair with my hands before. It looked soft anyway.

Kumurap ako dahilan kung bakit sunod-sunod na bumuhos ang mga luha ko.

"This is wrong!" hinampas ko ang kanyang kamay na nakapatong sa likod ko at sinubukan ko pang alisin 'yon. I failed because his hand felt like it was glued on my back. "Paluin mo na lang ako, please. Ayoko ng ganito, Law."

Gusto ko nang tumayo. Nakadapa pa rin ako hanggang ngayon, pakiramdam ko ay nauubusan ako ng hangin.

"This is way better than spank, little girl," his intimidating voice was like telling me that he had the authority to do whatever he wanted to do. "Hindi na sasakit ang pwet mo. Ayaw mo ba 'yon?"

Kung makapagsalita talaga siya ay parang bini-baby niya ako sa nakakatakot na paraan.

Ngumiwi ako nang marahan niyang kinagat ang pwet ko habang nakaangat pa rin ang tingin sa akin.

"A-Ayoko..."

"This is how I discipline you," hard voice had never been smooth and soft in my ears. Mula sa paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin ay alam kong hindi ko na talaga magugustuhan pa ang maaaring susunod na mangyayari. "Don't you know? Ang daming batang ka-edad mo na gustong mag-aral pero wala naman silang pera panggastos tapos ikaw? Sinasayang mo lang ang lahat."

I hated being compared. Even though it wasn't to a specific person.

Anger was slowly building up inside me, eating my whole system.

"Bakit? Makakapag-aral ba sila kung mag-aaral ako ng mabuti? Hindi naman 'di ba?" galit ang nangunguna sa tumataas na tono ng boses. Hindi lang siya ang may karapatang magalit. "Besides, I have maintained my high grades, no worries!"

Alam kong mali ang ginawa at sinabi ko. I just did something stupid. I wouldn't be surprise if having this stupidity might be the cause of my death.

His face and eyes darkened. Nakatitig siya sa akin at marahang inilapat ang kanyang labi sa gitna ng pwet ko bago nagsalita.

"Sumasagot ka na naman sa akin," tiim bagang sabi niya at kasabay no'n ang paghigpit ng pagkakahawak niya sa isang hita ko habang ang isang kamay ay nanatili sa likod ko.

Ang hirap ng posisyon ko. Nakadapa habang nakatingin sa likod ko. Masakit na rin ang leeg ko.

Not my fault that I was indomitable to handle.

I gasped when he parted my legs and positioned himself in the center. Marahas. Pakiramdam ko ay mababalian ako ng buto sa legs ko.

Natataranta na ako at hindi ko na alam kung anong gagawin ko upang pigilan siya dahil mukhang buong buo na ang desisyon niya sa kanyang binabalak na gawin.

Buti na lang at nakadapa pa rin ako. He wouldn't able to see the whole of my feminine part.

He was removing his tee shirt kaya ginawa ko ang pagkakataon na 'yon upang gumapang palayo sa kanya.

"N-No! No! Ayoko, Law! Bitiwan mo ako!" sigaw ko nang naramdaman ko ang kanyang braso sa tiyan ko at hinigit ako pabalik sa posisyon ko kanina.

Kanina pa ako hindi humihinto sa pag-iyak simula noong siya na mismo ang naghubad ng shorts ko kanina. Kanina ah? Hindi niya pa nga ako pinapalo ay umiyak na ako.

Masyado siyang malakas. Unlike Eloah, nagagawa ko pang masikmura ang lalaking 'yon.

"Stop moving," mariin niyang utos habang pilit na hulihin ang kamay kong hinahampas ang kanyang brasong nasa tiyan ko. "Hindi tayo matatapos nito, Kry."

"Ayoko! Ayoko! Nakakadiri ka, Law!"

Nagpumiglas ako at tuluyan na nga'ng natakpan ng oversized tee shirt ko ang pwet at pagkababae ko. Nakaluhod ako sa kama at nasa likuran ko si Law na hindi ko magawang alisin ang maskuladong braso sa tiyan ko.

It happened so fast, just a blink of an eye he turned my body to face him and pushed me hard against the bed. Nakahiga ako sa mga nagkalat na unan at agad siyang pumaibabaw sa akin, my legs were parted in front of him and he placed himself there. He was shirtless and his broad chest moved up and down rapidly, breathing hard and fast.

Mukhang nahirapan siya sa akin.

With full authority, he pinned me against his soft and comfy bed before he slowly draw his face closer to mine.

"Kanina pa sana tayo natapos kung hinayaan mo ako, Kry," sobrang lapit ng mukha niya sa akin kaya mas idinikit ko ang likod ko sa mga unan upang magkaroon ng konting distansya sa pagitan namin.

Sanay naman akong malapit sa kanya dahil noon kapag pinapagalitan niya ako ay pinapaupo niya ako sa kanyang hita pero ngayong malaki na ako ay kakaiba ang nararamdaman ko.

"N-No. Mali 'yon, Law. Magkapatid tayo..." I slightly shook my head. Marahan lang dahil baka ay tumama ang aking ilong sa kanyang mukha.

"Alam ko," he casually answered in a low tone.

Alam niya naman pala. Bakit ginagawa niya pa rin?

Nakaramdam na naman ako ng galit ngunit ngayon ay naging mas maingat na ako. Napakalma ko na rin ang sarili ko mula sa pag-iyak.

"Then why are you doing this?" I hissed at his handsome face. "You should stop!" muli akong nagpumiglas mula sa mahigpit na pagkakahawak niya sa braso ko.

He pursed his lips and form into a thin and grim line. His gaze was more darker and heavier now.

"I did. The day you turned thirteen, little girl," marahas niyang tinigil ang pagpupumiglas ko sa paraan ng mas lalong pagdiin ng mga braso ko sa kanyang kama. "Pero ang tigas ng ulo mo."

"Hindi matigas ang ulo ko," I countered.

"Matigas ang ulo mo," he stated. Tinatapos ang usapan tungkol sa pagiging matigas ng ulo.

I know he hated to have an argument with me. Alam niyang hindi ako nagpapatalo at ginigiit ko ang alam kong tama at totoo.

Nang naramdaman niyang wala na akong balak na makipagtalo at magpumiglas ay saka niya pa ako binitiwang at bahagyang lumayo sa akin.

"Dapa," utos niya sa galit na mababang tono ng boses.

Akala ko ay tuluyan ko nang napakalma at napahinto ang sarili ko sa pag-iyak pero muli na namang tumulo ang luha ko nang sinunod ko ang utos niya. Bumuhos ang luha ko kahit na wala pa naman siyang ginagawa sa akin at dadapa pa lang ako.

Hindi na lang ako titingin.

Dumapa ako at agad kong naramdaman ang kanyang mamasa-masang mga labi na pinaglalaruan ang bawat sulok ng pwet ko. He didn't go farther than that. Hanggang sa pwet sa pwet lang.

Siguro kung hindi ako dumapa ay baka ibang parte na ang pinaglalaruan ng dila at labi niya.

Parang nag-iba si Law. Hindi ko na siya kilala o baka naman ay siya talaga 'to? Nagpapakilala na sa akin kung sino ang totoong siya.

He was licking, sucking and biting my ass.

Ang ginawa ko lang sa halos kalahating oras na dinidisiplina niya ako ay ang umiyak, humihikbi at ipinikit ang mga mata habang nakasubsob ang mukha sa isang unan.

Muli akong nakatulog sa kanyang kwarto at paggising ko kinabukasan ay gano'n pa rin ang hitsura ko. He didn't even bothered to put me some underwear on but at least he covered my body with his comforter.

I saw him walked his way out of the bathroom. Isang kulay puting tuwalya lang ang nakatapis sa kanyang bewang. Basa ang kanyang buhok at medyo magulo, may iilang tubig pang tumutulo mula sa kanyang buhok pababa sa kanyang katawan.

I had seen his body many times. Maskulado ang katawan ni Law, he had six packs and I didn't know how he had it. Workout maybe? Ang daming babaeng nabihag niya at isa na si Francesca roon, pakiramdam ko nga ay may gusto rin sa kanya si Erich.

No one had caught his attention. He would shoo them away through his intimidating presence without even doing something.

Saan kaya siya natulog? Sa pagkakaalam ko ay hindi siya natutulog dahil sa mga binabasa niyang mga iba't ibang makakapal na libro. Something like 1987 Philippine Constitution Articles and Preamble? Not sure but I guess that's that. Wala naman akong alam diyan.

Hindi ko na nakita ang panty ko. Siguro ay tinapon niya na. Sayang, binigay ni Cykee 'yon sa akin last month.

May pasok ngayon. Pero suspended ako.

"I have a group study with my friends, I'll be going home late," aniya habang may hinahanap sa kanyang closet.

"Mabuti naman," I mumbled under my breath and sighed in relief.

Siguradong tulog na ako kapag nakauwi na siya.

"One hour."

Nanlaki ang mga mata ko nang tumingin ako sa kanya. Narinig niya siguro ang sinabi

ko.

"Law, it was half hour yesterday!"

"One and a half hour," he said sternly with finalization in his baritone voice before walking back inside the bathroom, holding his clothes to wear.

Hindi ako papayag. Hindi ko pa nga nakikita kung anong hitsura ng pwet ko ngayon pero napapangiwi na ako. Hickeys.

Anong meron sa pwet ko at parang sarap na sarap siya kagabi? Hindi ba siya nandidiri? Paano na lang kung malalaman ni Mommy Sai at daddy ang tungkol dito?

Nandidiri na ako sa sarili ko at hindi sa nangyari kagabi.

He's my brother. Iniisip niya siguro na bata pa naman ako at hindi ko malalaman ang tungkol sa mga gano'n. Didn't he thought that I had friends in school to influence me?

Inaamin ko, minsan na akong nakapanood ng porn.

School won't just thought us about English, Mathematics, Science, Filipino and whatnots. School was like a highway information. Teachers wasn't only the one who teach students. Students also teach their fellow students with other subjects such as love, pain, fun, sex and what all.

Sa classroom namin, ang wild ng mga kaklase ko, kulang nalang ay ipatupad ng DepEd ang Sex Education.

Law left the house. Mag-isa na lang ako kaya napagdesisyunan kong maligo ng napakatagal sa sariling banyo ko.

Kahit papaano ay nakakapag-isip ako kung anong gagawin ko ngayong araw.

I was so sure that Law won't have the chance to know my whereabouts, matagal pa bago siya babalik so why lock myself here all day? I need some refreshments and I want to go somewhere.

Nagbihis na ako ng panglakad kong damit. Ripped fitted high-waisted jeans and a spaghetti strap crop top. Mas bagay siya kapag heels ang susuotin ko since my jean was fitted.

Hindi ko na ni-lock ang pinto ng bahay dahil babalik din naman ako mamayang hapon.

Walang ibang sasakyan sa garahe, hindi rin naman ako marunong magmaneho kaya lumabas na ako ng kulay puting bakal na gate at naghintay ng dadaan na taxi.

May dumaan na taxi at papara na sana ako ngunit natigilan ako nang may nakitang pamilyar na kulay itim na sasakyan papunta rito.

Shit.

Bakit bumalik siya? Baka may nakalimutan na libro?

Huli na para tumakbo pabalik sa loob dahil nilagpasan na ako ng taxi at huminto sa gilid ng gate ng bahay ang sasakyan ni Law.

Madilim ang ekspresyon sa mukha niya nang bumaba siya ng sasakyan at lumapit sa akin.

"Where are you going?" he asked and clenched his strong and hard jaw. "What did I told you earlier huh?"

"Law, I—"

"Get in my car."

"What?"

"Wala kaming pasok ngayon kaya pupunta ako sa bahay ng kaibigan ko. I forgot my books for the group study," paliwanag niya, nakikita ko pa rin kung ano bahagyang gumalaw ang kanyang panga marahil ay dahil sa galit. "Sasama ka sa akin."

"Ayoko," mariin kong sabi sabay iling. Nalukot na naman ang mukha ko. "What will your friends think of me? That you're babysitting me?"

He was silent for a second. Staring at me like he was trying to balance his temper. "Yes, I'm babysitting you, little girl."

Umismid ako at tuluyan na nga'ng naglakad patungo sa kanyang mamahaling sasakyan. Pinagbuksan niya pa ako ng pinto sa front seat kaya alam kong nakita niya ang hugis ng pwet ko nang pumasok ako at nasa likuran ko siya.

Tiyak na magiging two hours ang pagdidisiplina niya sa akin mamayang gabi.

"What panty are you wearing this time?"

Shit. Thong.

Chapter 3

Bawal

Law had a tight hold on my wrist and took me with him inside a very large house, as large as our house. I let him drag me out of the car earlier because I was planning on staying there and just wait for him 'til they're done with that group study and whatever.

Should I call him kuya in front of his friends, classmates or blockmates whatever it was called in college? I don't know what's the college's system and how it runs. Unlike high school.

When we got inside the house, I gaze around to see some familiar things that I've seen in social media. May iilang kasambahay na naglilinis pero hinayaan lang nila kami ni Law na pumasok.

"Stay here," sabi ni Law at pinaupo ako rito sa isang sofa bago niya ako iniwan.

Nasa limang makapal na libro yata ang dala ni Law. Ano kaya ang mangyayari sa group study nila?

'Yong group study kasi ng mga high school students ay mas marami ang tsismis,

chikahan at tawanan kesa sa pagbabasa ng libro.

Ilang minuto na akong nakaupo rito at hindi pa rin bumabalik si Law. Siguro ay nagsimula na sila sa kanilang group study, pero saan?

This was boring and ever frustrating. Waiting without doing anything wasn't my thing. I'd like to go to parties but it's too early for that and I need to ask Law's permission first if ever I would.

Boredom had struck me.

Tumayo ako at naglibot sa buong bahay, hanggang sa napadpad ako sa labas nito. At the backyard.

Maaliwalas dito at may pool. Buti pa rito may pool, sa bahay wala. Kaya nga gusto kong tumira sa mansion ulit. I didn't know the reason why we left the mansion. Just because lumayas si Law at nag-away sila ni daddy.

Sa pinakadulong bahagi ng pool ay may mahabang mesa na may bubong, walang pader. It was like an open space where some assembly and group gatherings would be held.

There I saw him with his friends gathered around the rectangular table. Books, papers, laptops, phones etc. were scattered on the table. Including glasses of orange juice and some cookies.

Dumaan ako sa tabi ng pool upang lumapit sa kinaroroonan nila.

Nasa kalagitnaan pa nga ako ng paglalakad patungo sa kanila nang isang babae ang tumayo sa kinauupuan niya at lumapit kay Law dala ang kanyang hawak na libro.

She was at the back of Law, nakita ko pa kung paano niya hawakan sa balik at si Law at sinadyabg idinikit ang kanyang katawan habang pinapakita niya kay Law ang kanyang binabasa.

A college girl looked so hot wearing that off shoulder fitted top and jeans but I could say that my spaghetti straps loose crop top and ripped fitted high-waisted jeans was sexier than hers. Since I was wearing a spaghetti straps, hindi ako nagsuot ng baby bra. Black tube lang, ayoko sa strapless bra, pakiramdam ko ay mahuhulog e.

Ang nakakayamot lang ay mas malaki ang kanyang hinaharap.

Ano naman ngayon? I was high school, lalaki pa 'to pagdating ko ng college at isa pa ay tanggap ko naman kung ano ang biniyaya sa akin.

Gosh. Why was I comparing my body to hers? Hindi ako insecure 'no.

Nang nasa malapit na ako ay nakita kong saglit na tumingin sa akin ang mga kaibigan ni Law pero agad din namang ibinalik ang tingin sa kanilang ginagawa.

"Law," I called him, crossed arms with my bored look.

Nakita ko kung paano saglit na natigilan ang kanyang mga kasama at hindi makapaniwalang tumingin sa akin.

Shock lang sila dahil hindi ko tinawag na kuya si Law.

Nainis pa ako dahil hindi niya ako agad tinignan. Tinapos niya muna ang pagtuturo niya sa babae.

"Yes, Dana" he nodded at the college girl named Dana. Nakatingin siya sa babae at hindi man lang ako tinapunan ng tingin dito sa labas.

"Kasali rin 'to 'di ba?" dagdag tanong ni Dana at may tinuro pa sa kanyang hawak na libro.

They talked about articles and some subjects that I didn't have knowledge about.

Nainis ako, he ignored me in front of his friends?

Unfolding my arms against my chest, I drop my arms at my sides. I clenched my fist before I turned and just leave the place without uttering a single word other than his name just minutes ago.

Group study huh? Group study his face. Nakikipagharutan lang siya e, just like Kuya Laki. Pero si Kuya Laki kapag nakikipaglandi ay hindi niya naman ako binabalewala.

Saan naman kaya ako pupunta? Nabibwisit ako rito.

"Kryptonite?"

Natigilan ako sa paglalakad nang may narinig akong pamilyar na boses sa likuran ko. Kakapasok ko lang dito sa loob ng bahay.

I know that voice.

Lumington ako sa likuran ko at hindi nga ako nagkakamali.

Zsolt Guanzon.

My first ever ex and schoolmate. Walang alam ang mga kapatid ko tungkol sa kaniya. I broke up with him last two months, I guess. We've last in just one month, after that hindi na ako nagkaroon ng interes sa mga lalaki. Our relationship was just for fun, pareho kaming walang pakialam at kahit sa mga problema sa pamilya namin hindi kami nanghihimasok sa isa't isa, hindi naman ako seryoso sa kanya. Yeah, he's tall and handsome with those thick eyebrows and almost square jaw but I didn't like him. I was just curious what relationship felt like, Cykee recommended this idiot to be my first ever boyfriend.

The reason why we broke up?

Hindi siya marunong humalik.

I saw how he smirked. "You're wrong, babe. I know how to kiss now."

"So?"

"Why don't we try it? Baka sakaling balikan mo ako," he sounded like those egotistical asshole in the movies.

"Don't waste your saliva, Zsolt," sabi ko at ngumisi sa kanya.

Nairita ako sa paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin. Mukhang wala siyang balak tigilan ako. Dito kaya siya nakatira? Kaya naman pala pamilyar dahil nakita ko na ito sa kanyang mga social media account.

"I know that face, Kryptonite," aniya at nginuso pa ang mukha ko. "You're bored."

In that one month, he knows if I was unhappy, irritated, sad, bored and anything just by looking at my face.

Abala naman si Law sa pagtuturo kay Dana kaya hindi naman siguro masamang makipagkатуwaan kay Zsolt. Hindi naman ako aalis dito.

"To my room?" Zsolt suggested.

Tumango ako at mas lalo lang lumaki ang pagngisi niya. Nauna siyang naglakad habang nakasunod lang ako sa kanya. We went upstairs and entered a manly looking room. Dark sheets of bed, some posters of hot models, video games and computer like the common boys in high school.

Sinara niya ang pinto at walang pasabing agad akong sinunggaban ng halik sa labi. Narinig ko pa ang marahang pagtawa niya nang inabot ko ang kanyang batok pero hindi ko sinuklian ang kanyang halik.

His tongue felt like a knife when it sliced my lips in between to open and let him in. Lip-lock. Hindi ko siya hinayaang hawakan ang ibang parte ng katawan ko. Halik lang, halik lang dapat.

Wala namang masama sa ginagawa niya kahit na siya lang naman ang humahalik sa akin. We're not relatives, maybe we're both young but we've never went that far.

A plain kiss. Akala ko ba ang halik ay may mararamdaman akong kakaiba? Katulad na lang ng mga napapanood ko sa tv. Pero wala.

Kahit wala ay hinayaan ko siyang magpatuloy.

Tinulak niya ako dahilan kung bakit patalbog akong napahiga sa kanyang malambot na kama. Hinihinal na naghubad siya ng pangitaas na damit bago pumaibabaw sa akin at muling pinagpatuloy ang paghalik sa akin. His body was nice but it wasn't my type.

Siya lang ang hinihinal.

"Sweet mouth you have here," he said between sucking my lower lip. "Just kiss back if you want me back."

Wala akong plano.

Mabilis kong naimulat ang aking mga mata nang narinig ko ang pagbukas ng pinto ngunit si Zsolt ay nanatiling pinagpatuloy ang paghalik sa akin.

Sa isang iglap ay naputol ang paghalik niya sa akin nang may isang kamay ang marahas na humila sa kanya palayo sa akin.

"No, wait—Law stop!"

Nakaramdam ako ng matinding kaba nang nakita ko kung paano sinuntok ni Law si Zsolt. Walang kalaban-laban si Zsolt at hindi nakaiwas nang sinuntok siya ulit ni Law.

"What on earth is happening here—Law!" pumasok si Dana na parang sinundan niya yata si Law at natatarantang lumabas din agad. "Guys! Help!"

Kahit na may iilang kusot sa damit ko ay mabilis akong tumayo at hinawakan ang maskuladong braso ni Law kung kailan ay akmang suntukin niya na naman si Zsolt na may iilang tumutulong dugo na sa kanyang ilong.

Huli na nang dumating ang mga kaibigan niya ay kinaladkad na ako ni Law palabas ng kwarto patungo sa hagdan hanggang sa nakarating kami sa kanyang sasakyan dito sa labas lang ng gate ng bahay.

Ramdam ko ang galit niya nang dahil sa paraan ng pagkakahawak niya sa aking braso. Kulang na lang ay mahiwalay ang braso ko sa aking katawan.

He gripped my clothes at my back after he opened the door of his car, pushed me to get inside and slammed the door shut.

"Law, uuwi ka na? Paano na 'yong group study. Marami pa tayong kailangang gawin," narinig kong boses ni Dana na ngayon ko pa namalayang nakasunod din pala sa amin at dala niya pa ang mga gamit ni Law.

Nakababa naman ang bintana ng kotse kaya naririnig at malinaw ko silang nakikita sa labas.

I saw how she moved her body closer to Law. Tinanggap ni Law ang mga gamit niya at ipinasok ang lahat ng 'yon sa backseat.

"Hindi na kailangan, Dana," marahan ang pagkakasabi ni Law nang binanggit niya ang pangalan ni Dana kasabay no'n ang marahas niyang pagsara ng pinto ng backseat. "Mag-aaral ako... Mag-isa."

We left the place.

Nakakatakot ang madilim na ekspresyon sa mukha ni Law. Kahit ang bilis na pagpapatakbo niya ng sasakyan ay pakiramdam ko liliparin ng marahas na hangin ang kaluluwa ko.

He was driving fast and furious. Nagmamadali talaga, parang atat na atat na siyang makauwi kami agad.

Kinakabahan ako pero ano namang silbi ng nararamdaman kong kaba? Sinadya ko ang lahat ng 'yon. Alam kong magagalit siya.

He was ignoring me. Everyone was. Bakit nagagalit siya sa mga ginagawa ko? It's their fault anyway, hindi naman ako magkakaganito kung pinagtuonan nila ako ng sapat na atensyon.

I haven't talked to our parents. Mag-iisang buwan ko na silang hindi nakikita. Hindi niya naman sinasagot ang mga tanong ko.

Nang huminto ang kanyang sasakyan sa harap ng bahay ay saktong may dadaan na taxi kaya mabilis akong bumaba ng sasakyan at sinalubong ang taxi na papalapit.

Hindi alam ni Law ang balak kong gawin kasi ang akala niya ay papasok ako sa loob ng bahay.

"Manong! Para po!" I waved my hand desperately at the taxi when it came near to where I was standing.

"Kryptonite!" I heard Law's angry and intimidating deep voice thundered when he immediately got out of the car after he turned off the car's engine and followed me.

Huminto ang taxi para sa akin at akmang bubuksan ko na ang pinto ngunit hindi ko nagawa nang tinulak ni Law ang pinto upang maisara ulit at pinulupot ang kanyang

isang matigas na braso sa tiyan ko.

"No, no—get off, Law!" I tried to reach for the taxi's door but I couldn't because Law's muscular arms was pulling me away from it.

Sumenyas siya sa taxi driver na umalis na at agad naman nitong sinunod.

Mas lalong kumakalabog ang dibdib ko nang dahil sa nangyari at nanlumo ako habang pinapanood ang taxi na tumakbo palayo.

Ang higpit ng pagkakapulupot ng kanyang braso sa tiyan ko nang naglakad siya papasok ng bahay kaya napilitan akong maglakad.

Binuksan niya ang pinto at saka niya pa kinalas ang kanyang braso sa akin nang nakapasok na kami kaya mabilis akong tumakbo paakyat at pumasok sa loob ng kwarto ko.

He was calling me but I didn't stop nor look back. I locked the door of my room to prevent him from getting inside and discipline me again.

Ano na naman kaya ang gagawin niya sa akin ngayon? He was never been that mad before. His intimidating eyes was ranging with pernicious venom. Fatal.

Agad akong nagbihis ng damit, pati na rin underwear. Kahit na nakalock 'yong pinto ay alam ko namang makakapasok pa rin siya.

Ano bang ikinagagalit niya? 'Yong halik lang ba? Lahat ba ng kapatid na lalaki ay ganito? Bakit si Kuya Laki na ilang babae na ang nahalikan sa school ay hindi naman siya nagagalit?

Kuya Laki influenced me about this. He told me that there's nothing bad about kissing as long as walang nakakahawang sakit ang kahalikan ko. Ang sabi niya pa ay ayos lang naman na makipaghalikan ako pero sisiguraduhin ko lang dapat na hindi nila ako makikita. Experience makes us better. That's what he said.

Makalat ang buong kwarto ko at wala na akong oras para mag-ayos ng gamit. Buong araw akong nasa loob ng kwarto ko. I didn't ate lunch.

I was in an indian sit position on my bed, wearing my white tank top and red shorts. I put on some earphones and browse on my phone when I heard a click from my door.

Actually, I didn't played a song, malinaw kong naririnig ang kung ano mang nangyayari sa buong kwarto ko.

Napamura ako nang nakita ang oras sa phone ko.

It's almost six in the evening.

Nakikita ko sa sulok ng mga mata ko ang pagbukas ng pinto at ang pagpasok ni Law sa loob ng makalat kong kwarto. Nakatutok ako sa hawak kong cellphone nang lumapit siya at huminto sa tabi ng kama ko.

"Kryptonite," matigas na tawag nito habang nakatayo pa rin sa gilid ng kama ko. Nakakatakot ang kanyang boses ngunit nagmatigas pa rin ako.

I ignored him, just like what he did to me.

Tatlong minuto lang ang itinagal nito nang tuluyan na nga siyang naubusan ng

pasensya dahil hindi ko man lang siya tinatapunan ng tingin o 'di kaya'y magsalita.

Marahas niyang tinanggal ang earphones mula sa tenga ko at inagaw mula sa kamay ko ang aking cellphone.

He throw my phone and it hit the hard wall.

Umalingawngaw sa tenga ko ang ingay na pagbasag ng screen ng cellphone ko saka ko siya tinapunan ng masamang tingin ngunit nangingilid ang mga luha sa nag-iinit na sulok ng mga mata ko.

"Ang sama mo, Law," nanghihina ang boses ko nang dahil sa ginawa niya. "Ang sama mo!" I bursted out.

"Go to my room," his voice was firm and serious. Kahit ang ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha ay hindi ko maipaliwanag.

I was afraid of him but I always defend myself. Lumalaban ako sa kanya, sumasagot ako sa kanya. Ibahin niya ako sa mga pinsan at kapatid namin. Takot ako pero kaya ko namang ipagtanggol ang sarili ko kung alam kong tama ako.

"Ayoko. Kung hindi ko makakausap si Mommy then I'll go to the police station. Isusumbong kita, Law. This is child abuse!" sinubukan kong pigilan ang sarili ngunit hindi ko pa rin napigilan ang pagsigaw ko.

Ayokong maulit 'yon. Hindi ako nandidiri sa ginagawa niya kung 'di ay nandidiri ako sa sarili ko.

"What's your evidence? Ipapakita mo sa kanila ang pwet mo?" 'yong boses niya ay parang isa na siyang attorney na nagsasalita sa korte. Mas lalong nagdilim ang kanyang mukha habang nakatitig sa akin. "Wala silang makikitang pasa o sugat sa katawan mo, Kry. I'm not abusing you."

"Then what do you call it? You spanked me many times, you're kissing and biting my butt like I'm not your sister! How can I respect you if you don't even respect me!" I exclaimed and narrowed my eyes at him. Umusog ako palayo sa gilid ng kama, palayo sa kanya. "Nandidiri ako sa'yo, Law. Lumayo ka sa'kin."

My arm felt numb when he violently grabbed my arm, he pulled me and placed me back on the side of the bed where I was near him.

Ang lapit niya na sa akin at mahigpit pa rin ang hawak niya sa braso ko.

"Do you really think you can stop me, little girl?" his voice was threatening and was like challenging me. "Why did that boy kiss you huh?"

"He's my ex-boyfriend--"

"Ex-boyfriend," pag-uulit niya kaya hindi ko na natapos ang sasabihin ko. "'Yan ba ang natutunan mo sa school? Sinasayang mo lang ang pera ko."

Natigilan ako nang dahil sa huling sinabi niya.

Sa pagkakaalam ko, simula noong bumalik siya ay huminto na rin siguro siya sa pagtatrabaho at ang gumagastos para sa pag-aaral namin syempre ang mga magulang namin.

May hindi ba siya nasabi sa akin? What if Mommy Sai and daddy cut off my allowance dahil sa pagiging matigas kuno ng ulo ko at siya na ang nagbibigay sa akin?

"What do you mean? Pera mo?"

I saw a little movement on his jaw. "Do you want me to set you homeschool?" pag-iiba niya sa usapan at hindi man lang sinagot ang tanong ko.

Lagi na lang siyang ganito. Lahat ng tanong ko ay mukhang iniiwasan niya at hindi niya sinasagot.

"No," tutol ko at sinubukan ko pang hilahin ang braso ko mula sa mahigpit niyang pagkakahawak pero wala pa rij akong sapat na lakas. "Hindi papayag si Mommy Sai."

"I can, without Mom's permission, little girl."

Tinitigan ko ang kanyang mga mata ng maigi dahil mukhang may tinatago talaga siya sa akin. Lahat ng gagawin namin ay kailangan pa naming humingi ng permiso sa mga magulang namin.

Pero agad din akong umiwas ng tingin sa kanya dahil pakiramdam ko ay parang binudburan ng asin ang mga mata ko kapag nagtagal pa ang pagtitig ko sa kanya.

"You're not daddy to decide, Law. Just leave me alone. Kung umasta ka ay daig mo pa si daddy," bakas sa boses ko ang walang kupas na kamalditahan. Nanlilisik ang mga mata at nakikisabay sa kanyang galit. "Why don't you just go back to Dana and fuck her all night—"

I gasped when he furiously gripped and shook both of my shoulders with his trembling hands. Trembling in extreme anger.

"Kanino mo natutunan 'yan?" he was loosing his temper. "Hindi kita inalagaan para maging bastos sa akin, Kryptonite."

I don't know how to cook and yes, siya ang nagluluto ng lahat ng kinakain ko rito. Masarap ang mga luto niya pero mas gusto ko pa ring nandito sila Kuya Lazi at Kuya Laki.

Siya ang madalas na nag-aalaga at nagbabantay sa akin noon. I thought somehow that I was his favorite but days passed by and he changed. He started to spank me whenever I did something that disappoint him and our parents.

"Hindi ba totoo 'yon, Law?" bakas sa boses ko ng pagiging sarkastiko. "Ilang babae na ba ang naikama mo, kuya?"

Marahas siyang bumuga ng hangin at marahas din akong pinatayo mula sa pagkakaupo ko sa kama.

Halos magkalebel na kami nang napilitan akong tumayo sa kama ko. Aksidenteng napahawak ako sa kanyang buhok nang muntik na akong nawalan ng balanse mula sa marahas na paraan ng pagpatayo niya sa akin sa ibabaw ng kama.

And I was right. His hair was so soft. Something's pushing me to grab a hold of his hair or caress it but I stopped myself before I did that stupid move. I rested my hands on his broad shoulder to balance my body and thankfully, he let me hold onto him.

Mariin akong napapikit nang mahigpit niyang hinawakan ang waistline ng red shorts at panty ko.

Kung huhubarin niya 'yon ay makikita niya ang pagkababae ko.

Ilang segundo na ngunit wala pa rin akong nararamdamang binaba niya 'yon. Sa tingin ko ay nagdadalawang-isip siya.

Maya-maya ay naramdaman ko ang marahang paglapat ng malambot na labi sa noo ko. Nagtagal ang mga labing 'yon sa noo ko ng halos isang minuto bago ko naramdaman ang pagkalas ng mahigpit na pagkakahawak niya sa waistline ng shorts at panty ko at niyakap ako.

Nanatili akong nakapikit hanggang narinig ko ang kanyang sinabi gamit ang marahan niyang malalim na boses.

Hindi ko alam kung totoo ba ang narinig ko pero pakiramdam ko ay nabibingi ako.

"Ikaw ang gusto kong ikama pero tangina, pinagbabawalan ako ng batas."

Chapter 4

Avoid

Suspended. Ba't ang tagal mo'ng matapos? This was literally and totally a torture to me. Walang cellphone, walang magawa, madalas natutulog. Napapadalas na rin ang pag-stay ni Law dito sa bahay kapag wala siyang pasok o 'di kaya'y vacant time niya ay nandito siya sa bahay.

After what happened last day, I'd have to hide from him. Most likely ignore and avoid him to the highest level and at all cost.

Starting today, I decided to call him kuya most of the time even if it felt unfamiliar and awkward in my tongue. Yesterday, I was undecided of what to do, what's the best thing to do in this confusing situations and difficult circumstances like this.

I needed diversion, pastime or make myself occupied of some other things to get those words of Law brushed off my mind.

So I cleaned my messy room. Parang dinaanan ng bagyo ito kaya sobra akong nahirapan sa pagliligpit ng mga gamit.

Moreover, I also cleaned, piled and folded my clothes in my wardrobe particularly my secret clothes. Those smoking hot, amorous, sexy and erotic garments given by Cykee.

Ganito pala talaga kapag wala nang ibang magawa lalo na ngayong wala na akong cellphone dahil sinira ni Law. I tried to revived it but it finally gave up and unable to use. Ang lakas kasi ng pagkakabato ni Law no'n sa pader.

Hindi niya naman ako binilhan ng bago. Mukhang wala siyang balak.

It's morning, done with my morning rituals. Suot ko ngayon ang dark brown shorts at pale blue na tee shirt. Usually, hindi ako nagsusuot ng baby bra kapag nasa bahay dahil useless naman 'yon, wala rin namang kailangang itago sa hinaharap ko. Mas malaki pa yata ang mga boobs ng bakla kesa sa akin. Pero hindi ako mapakali sa

sinabi ni Law kaya nagsuot ako ng baby bra, to prevent abominable things to happen. Gross, disgust and abhorrent. Didn't he felt that? Kapatid ko siya. Hindi ba talaga siya nandidiri? Bigla siyang nagbago simula noong lumayas siya.

Nababaliw na ako. Hindi ko alam kung paano ko siya kakausapin.

"Breakfast is ready, little girl," narinig kong malalim na boses niya mula sa labas ng kwarto.

Binaba ko ang aking hairbrush sa nightstand at tumayo mula sa pagkakaupo sa kama saka tamad na naglakad patungo sa pinto upang lumabas.

Pagbukas na pagbukas ko ng pinto ay tumambad sa akin ang malapad na dibdib ni Law kaya umangat ang tingin ko sa kanyang mukha. Very grim and intimidating as ever.

"Kuya, what's for breakfast?" magalang kong tanong nang lumabas ako at sinara ang pinto. "I want beefsteak and fresh lettuce."

I faced him after closing the door. Hindi man lang siya nagulat sa sinabi at tinawag ko sa kanya. He looked absolutely displeased instead.

Ayaw niya bang tawagin ko siyang kuya? Ginagalang ko na siya, ayaw niya ba no'n?

I want to treat him this way even though I wasn't used to it. I'd try to make amends because of my bad and unhealthy behavior.

Bumabawi na ako at gusto kong iparamdam at ipaalala sa kanya na kapatid niya ako. Ako na kaharap niya ngayon.

"It's ready," sagot niya at hinawakan ang likod ko saka marahang iginiya pababa, patungo sa kusina.

I wanted to shriek and swat his hand away, though I didn't, maybe it's a brotherly gesture.

Hindi ako mapakali sa kanyang kamay sa likuran ko. Pakiramdam ko ay napapaso at nakukuryente ang likod ko nang dahil sa init ng kanyang palad na tumatagos sa damit ko.

He provided me a seat and we ate in unbreakable and deafening silence.

Though, I broke it.

"Kuya, gusto kong makausap si Mommy," nakatingin ako sa kanya dahil nasa dulo siya ng mesa na parang siya ang pumapangalawa kay daddy at nasa gilid naman ako.

"She's busy," he said curtly.

Lagi na lang silang busy. Sinadya ko nga'ng magpapansin sa lahat ng mga kalokohan ko sa school pero si Law naman lagi ang nakakalaban ko.

"But kuya-"

"Stop calling me that."

I was surprised the way he cut me off from speaking and how violent his baritone voice was.

"I-I don't understand," I tried not to stutter but my voice was slowly shaking and I was gripping the knife and fork, trying to have a small slice of the beefsteak but I paused. "What happened to you, Law? May nagawa ba akong mali maliban sa mga problema ko sa school? Kasi pakiramdam ko ay tinatakwil mo na ako bilang kapatid mo."

Huminto rin siya sa paghiwa ng kanyang kinakain at tumingin sa akin.

"Stop pushing it, Kryptonite. Just eat your breakfast."

Nagpatuloy siya sa pagkain pero ako ay hindi.

Lagi na lang ba talaga kaming ganito? Iniiwasan niya ang mga tanong ko, hindi niya sinasagot ang lahat ng 'yon.

Nakakasakal na ang ganitong ugali niya.

"You're a load of shit, Law. Don't bullshit me!" I shouted at him and drop my knife and fork with a clattering sound when it meet the plate that was made in glass.

"Hindi ko na nagugustuhan ang mga salitang lumalabas sa bibig mo, Kry," aniya at marahang ibinaba ang kanyang hawak na kutsilyo at kutsara sa kanyang plato bago ako tinapunan ng isang seryosong tingin.

"Really, Law? That's good then, dahil hindi ko na rin nagugustuhan ang mga nangyayari," I retorted sarcastically. "What are you trying to do?"

Pinanood ko ang kanyang manipis at mapulang mga labi na mariin niyang idiniin ang pagkakatikom na parang pinipigilan niya akong sigawan.

His kissable and seductive lips were way more delicious and appetizing than the beefsteak and fresh lettuce but I won't admit that it looked that way in my eyes. Mayhap it look that way too in every girl's eyes and not just me?

Would I need to conduct a research about that? This was hilarious. Oh kill me.

"Just eat, little girl," his intimidating voice was demanding and commanding. "Huwag mo'ng pasakitin ang ulo ko."

Nakatitig siya aking mga mata dahil ganyan naman talaga siya kapag kausap niya ako o ang ibang tao. Too professional, proper and respectable man.

I was confused again because of the thought on my mind about his head. Aling ulo ba ang sumasakit sa kanya? Sa itaas o sa baba? Bloody hell.

Hindi na ako umimik at nagpatuloy na lang sa pagkain nang dahil sa mga pumapasok sa isip ko.

This was all Kuya Laki's fault. Dahil sa kanya ay kung anu-ano na lang ang pumapasok sa isip ko. He poisoned my innocent brain.

Limang minuto kaming tahimik na kumakain hanggang sa siya na naman ang bumasag sa katahimikan.

"You're wearing baby bra."

It was not a question. It's obviously a statement.

I swallowed the food inside my mouth before looking down at my not-so-flat chest.

Hindi bumabakat ang nipple ko sa tee shirt at medyo manipis ang tee shirt kaya malayang nakikita ng kanyang mapag-obserbang mga mata ang dibdib ko.

"It's normal-"

"It's not normal," giit niya. Nakita ko pa kung paano niya pinasadahan ng tingin ang hinaharap ko bago ibinalik ang mga mata sa akin. "I know you don't wear baby bra when you're here."

"I changed my mind," I said abruptly defensive.

"Remove it."

Nanliit ang mga mata ko nang tumingin ako sa kanya. Hindi makapaniwala na sa gitna ng pagkain dito sa hapag kainan ay nagawa niyang iutos sa akin 'yon.

Ni hindi niya ako inutusan ng gano'n noon.

"Seriously, Law?" nawawalan na ng respeto ang boses ko sa kanya. "Ano bang paki mo?"

"Are you going to remove it or not?" parang hindi lang simpleng tanong 'yon, mukhang kailangan ko pa talagang pag-isipan ng mabuti ang magiging sagot ko.

Ngunit hindi ako nag-isip.

"I'm not," agarang sagot ko. "Bakit ba ang laki ng issue mo sa baby bra ko? Ano naman ngayon kung flat? Won't you just let it pass?"

Siya pa nga ang tinutulungan para mawala na ang kung ano mang nararamdaman niya, siya pa ang may gustong lumala ang sitwasyon.

Naiinis talaga ako kapag pinapakialaman ang laki ng dibdib ko kahit na ang sinabi niya naman ay hubarin ko lang 'yong baby bra ko.

Pinanood ko siyang tumayo mula sa kinauupuan niya at marahas din akong pinatayo. Sinakop ng isang malaking kamay niya ang buhok ko at inilagay sa kabilang balikat kaya kitang-kita niya na ang leeg ko.

I froze when he inserted his hands inside the short sleeves of my tee shirt. Nang inilabas niya ang kanyang kamay ay hawak niya na ang straps ng baby bra ko. I watched him removed it in my arms and did the next side.

"L-Law..."

"I know you want to have big boobs, little girl," wika niya at hinawakan ang likod ko upang mas mailapit ang katawan ko sa kanya. "I can help you with that."

Anong gagawin niya? He's going to massage it like what he did to my butt? Ginagago niya ba ako? Mukha ba akong batang uto-uto?

Sunod niyang ipinasok sa loob ng tee shirt ko ang kanyang mga kamay at hinila ang baby bra ko pababa ng katawan ko. Naramdaman ko pa ang pagsagi ng kaniyang mga daliri sa balat ko, sa ibabang bahagi ng kili-kili ko, sa gilid ng boobs ko, sa beywang at saka sa tiyan. Nakakapaso. Lumuhod pa siya upang maialis na ito ng tuluyan sa katawan ko.

I stepped out of the baby bra when it met the cold floor.

Nakayuko siya at ngumiwi pa ako nang naramdaman kong sumagi ang kanyang ulo sa shorts ko, sa bahagi ng pagkababae ko bago siya tumayo mula sa pagkakaluhod at hawak na ang aking baby bra.

He was towering over me when he placed my baby bra beside his plate and glass of cold water.

"Kapag papasok ka na ulit, gusto kong iwasan mo ang mga lalaki sa school niyo. Kahit ang mga kaklase mo," hawak ng isang kamay niya ang braso ko kaya hindi ako makakaupo ulit. Nakakatakot ang paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin. "Huwag mo'ng painitin ang ulo ko, Kryptonite."

"Bakit?"

Aling ulo na naman kaya ang iinit kung makikita niya akong may kasamang lalaki sa school? Ay bwisit.

Parang gusto kong pugutan ang sarili kong ulo nang gamit ang kanyang isang kamay ay dumikit ito sa dibdib ko kaliwang dibdib. His thumb was forming circles against my tee shirt, making my nipples hard and erect.

Naramdaman niya ang pagtaas baba ng dibdib ko nang dahil sa ginagawa niya at kahit na may suot naman akong damit ay hindi ko pa rin mapigilang maramdaman ang init ng kanyang hinlalaki na tumatagos sa suot kong tee shirt.

Matapos ang

dalawang araw na hindi niya ako pinapalo, hinahalikan, sinisipsip o kinakagat ang pwet ko ay ito pala ang gagawin niya sa akin? Mas tanggap ko pa kung paluin niya na lang ako sa pwet kaysa sa ganito.

Kailangan ko siyang pigilan.

Nararamdaman kong iba ang epekto sa katawan ko ang lahat ng ginagawa niya sa'kin.

He let go of me and violently pushed me back on my seat while I was still looking up at his face.

"Do you understand me, little girl? I don't want to see you with other boys or men, unless if that man is me."

I continued eating and he left the dining room, didn't even bother to finish his breakfast. Leaving me with my erect and hard nipple that he rubbed and pinched using his fingers earlier.

Hindi ko namalayan na tumutulo ang mga mainit na luha sa pisngi ko at humihikbi habang kumakain mag-isa.

Umalis siya dahil pinipigilan niyang gawin ang ipinagbabawal ng batas.

Bakit hindi na lang siya makipagtalik kay Dana? Mukhang free naman lagi si Erich sa school, mukhang may gusto siya kay Law. Pwede namang patulan niya na si Ate Francesca. Why not them? Why me?

I say vulgar and informal words, marami akong alam sa mga adults activity and one of it was sex but I haven't experienced it.

Si Kuya Laki kasi tapos dinagdagan pa ni Cykee ang mga nalalaman ko. Does Law thought I was innocent?

Nagpapa-inosente ako kapag siya ang kaharap ko. Alam niya kasing may kinalaman ako sa mga kaguluhan sa school and I want him to stand by my side. Gusto kong kampihan niya ako pero hindi niya ginawa. Lagi na lang kasing ako ang mali.

I did avoid him in three days. No talking, I mean I didn't talk verbally but I did nonverbally. Kibitbalikat, tango, iling, gano'n lang ang mga sinasagot ko sa kanya kapag may tinatanong siyang oo at hindi lang ang sagot.

Back to school again, tapos na ang one week suspension. Hinatid ako ni Law kanina at iniwasan ko si Eloah nang nakasabay ko na naman siyang pumasok ng gate. At least hindi na kami late.

Mabilis na lumipas ang oras na lutang ako sa klase. Kahit si Cykee na nasa likuran ko at ang katabi niyang si Faith, lutang din ang dalawa na parang may iniisip at bumabagabag sa kanila. Kaming tatlo lang ang madalas na magkasama since grade seven hanggang ngayong grade ten na kami.

It's lunch and the three of us tardily occupied the seats of the cafeteria's table that we chose to eat our lunch on.

"Musta ang suspension days natin?" basag ni Cykee habang hawak ang kanyang coke in can.

"Natin?" I asked while rolling the long sleeves of my uniform up to my elbows.

Ganito ang uniporme namin since lahat ng rooms sa school na 'to ay air-conditioned. Long sleeves white shirt with black tie and black above the knees length na palda.

"Damay lang ako," natatawang sabi ni Faith.

Sa aming tatlo ay si Faith lang ang hindi masyadong naimpluwensyahan ni Cykee sa mga nalalaman niya. I could call her fortunate that at the age of sixteen she had remained her brain innocent and untainted.

Sila pala ang dahilan kaya na-suspended ako? Kaya ba absent sila last week na huli akong pumasok?

"Anong ginawa niyo? Vandalism? O baka naman ay barado na naman ang restroom ng mga lalaki?" I shot them my suspicious look.

"Terrorism ata 'yon," nakasimangot si Cykee at hindi pa siya sigurado sa sagot niya.

"Gaga," umiiling na sambit ko.

Base sa sagot niya ay malamang may nakaalitan, nakaaway o 'di kaya'y nasipa ang babaeng 'to. Baka kinalbo niya pa o 'di kaya'y sinuntok.

Tinali ni Cykee ang kanyang mahaba at kulay itim na buhok bago binuksan ang kanyang coke in can. May iilang baby hair pa ang dumikit sa kanyang noo. Faith was her complete opposite. Lagpas balikang ang kanyang buhok at kulay brown ito. The only mutual thing they had was the color of their skin. Pareho silang maputi, anak mayaman din kasi at hindi masyadong naiinitan.

Cykee was spacing out again after eating her lunch. Hindi ko alam na pati ako ay nakatulala na rin at naaalala ko na naman ang lahat ng ginawa ni Law sa akin.

"Anong klaseng mukha 'yan, Kry? Para kang nakalunok ng mali at malaking titi,"

narinig kong walang prenong sabi ni Cykee at nakatingin na pala sa akin.

Grabe talaga ang bibig ng babaeng 'to. She's right tho, mali ang isipin 'yong umiinit at sumasakit na ulo ni Law.

"Oh please," Faith rolled her eyes at Cykee. Binato niya pa ng hawak niyang tissue.

"Ano nga? Malaki ba titi ni Superman?" nainip na asik ni Cykee habang nakatingin sa akin at hinihintay ang magiging sagot ko.

"Tangina'ng titi 'yan, Cyk!" singhal ni Faith nang naubusan na talaga siya ng pasensya sa pagiging bulgar nito.

Hindi man lang nahiya ang dalawa nang may iilang estudyante na ang napapatingin sa amin nang napadaan sila malapit sa table namin.

"May problema ako," muling saad ni Cykee nang hindi ako nagsalita. "M-My stepbrother..."

Doon niya nakuha ang atensyon ko nang narinig ko ang panginginig ng boses ni Cykee na kailanman ay minsan ko lang narinig.

"Anong meron? Stepbrother mo? 'Yong kaibigan ng kuya ni Kry?" kunot noong tanong ni Faith.

May dalawang stepbrother kasi si Cykee at ang pinakamatanda ay kaibigan at ka-edad lang ni Law.

"M-May..." nanginginig pa rin ang kanyang boses at galit na isinubsob ang kanyang mukha sa kaniyang palad. Hindi makatingin sa amin. "M-May nangyari sa amin."

Napamura ako sa isip ko nang dahil sa narinig ko.

Mas okay na 'yong sa kanya kasi hindi naman sila blood related, her Mom was a model at maagang nabyuda nang namatay ang Dad niya sa isang plane crash. Siya lang ang nag-iisang anak ng Mom niya nang magpakasal ulit ito after three years ng pagiging byuda. The man that she married had already two sons, mas matanda sa kanya. Ngayon ay may half sister si Cykee, elementary pa lamang.

I couldn't believe this.

Anong meron ngayon? Something happened between Cykee and her eldest stepbrother. Noong nakaraang araw naman ay muntik nang nagtangka si Law sa akin.

"B-Bibilhin niya lahat ng gusto ko in exchange of... S-Sex. Hindi ako pumayag but he blackmailed me." mahina ang pagkakasabi ni Cykee no'n na parang natatakot siya na pati ang mga multo sa school na 'to ay makakarinig. "T-These days, he's getting possessive, obsessive and even aggressive to me."

"Ano? Naging sugar daddy mo na ang stepbrother mo?" hindi makapaniwalang tanong ni Faith.

Oh my God. I couldn't imagine Law doing those things to me. Magkadugo pa naman kami, buti nga si Cykee ay hindi sila magkadugo pero magkapatid sila sa paningin ng batas.

Sa nasaksihan ko pa lang ngayon sa mga nangyayari at ekspresyon sa mukha ni Cykee ay parang hindi ko kakayanin kung may mangyayari man sa amin ni Law.

Nanlalamig ang mga palad at puno ng kaba ang nararamdaman ko ngayon. Kailangan ko talagang iwasan si Law at tama lang ang ginawa ko noong nakaraang tatlong araw.

Natahimik kaming tatlo hanggang sa biglang nagsalita si Faith.

"M-My cousin took advantage of me while I was sleeping."

Pareho kaming napaligon ni Cykee kay Faith. Bumaba ang tingin ko sa kanyang mga kamay na nakalapag sa mesa at nanginginig.

Kaya ba tulala silang dalawa kanina? Tapos kinamusta pa nila ang nangyari sa akin during suspension days ko?

Ang sama man pakinggan pero nakita ko ang matipid na ngiti sa mga labi ni Cykee na parang masaya pa siya dahil may karamay siya.

"Ayos ka lang ba?" I asked. Concern could clearly hear in my voice.

"I-I don't know, he failed anyway. Pero hindi dapat ako magpabaya, mukhang may balak pa yata siyang ulitin 'yon," nababakas sa kanyang boses ang takot at napakagat sa kanyang labi.

Natapos ang buong araw ng pag-aaral na hindi ko sinasabi sa kanila ang nangyari sa akin. May tiwala naman ako sa kanila pero hindi ko pa talaga kaya.

Baka kasi ay magbabago na si Law.

Gulat pa kaming dalawa ni Cykee nang pumunta kami sa parking lot at nakita ko si Law kasama ang stepbrother ni Cykee. Nag-uusap at magkatabi ang pagkakapark ng kanilang mamahaling sasakyan. Si Faith ay nauna nang umuwi mag-isa, natatakot siyang baka ay sunduin siya ng kanyang pinsan.

Madalas ay hindi naman sinusundo si Cykee dahil may sarili naman siyang sasakyan, may student's license din siya pero mukhang pinagbawalan siyang gamitin 'yon ngayon dahil sa one week suspension.

The men were both serious and not even smiling. Ramdam ko ang takot ni Cykee nang sabay kaming naglakad palapit sa dalawa. Kahit ako ay hindi ko rin maiwasang matakot at kabahan kay Law.

Tinigil nila ang kanilang seryosong pag-uusap nang nakita nila kami.

"The latest model of iPhone is in the car, Cykee," sabi ng stepbrother ni Cykee na sa pagkakaalam ko ay Hezion ang pangalan. "Wala bang thank you kay kuya?" marahang tanong nito nang hindi siya pinansin ni Cykee at nagpaalam lang sa akin bago pumasok sa loob ng mamahaling kotse ng kanyang stepbrother.

Lumipat ang paningin ko kay Law nang naramdaman ko ang matagal na pagtitig niya sa akin.

"Snacks inside the car, little girl," marahan niyang sabi habang nakatitig pa rin sa akin.

Naalala ko. Sinira nga pala ni Law ang phone ko. Baka gawin niya rin sa akin ang ginawa ni Hezion kay Cykee? No. No. Hindi ako papayag.

Gano'n din ang ginawa ko. I ignored Law and get in the car.

Nakauwi kami sa bahay nang hindi nag-uusap, hindi ko rin ginalaw ang burger at

fries na binili niya kahit na kumukulo na ang tiyan ko. Agad akong dumiretso sa loob ng kuwarto upang maasikaso ko na agad ang mga assignments ko dahil wala naman akong phone para maglibang.

At this hour, I know that he's in the kitchen. Cooking our dinner. Baliktad ang sitwasyon namin, imbes na ako ang magluluto dahil ako 'yong babae ay ako pa ang nilulutuan. Sa hindi ako marunong at ayoko sa mga gano'ng trabaho.

Nang tinawag niya na ako ay sinadya kong magtagal sa loob ng kwarto bago lumabas at bumaba. Buti na lang at hindi niya ako hinintay.

Nakita ko siyang nakaupo ng maayos sa kanyang upuan sa dining table pero hindi pa siya kumakain. Siguro ay hinihintay niya ako.

He was wearing his black tee shirt and dark brown shorts. His intimidating gaze landed on me when I didn't moved from where I was standing. I didn't sit on my usual seat.

Pinasadahan ko ng tingin ang mga pagkain na niluto niya sa mesa. Karamihan ay 'yong mga paborito ko. Cooked vegetables such as cauliflower, plus those fresh lettuce that I really love.

It was mouthwatering but I chose to reject them for now.

"I don't like it, bukas na lang ako kakain," I may sounded like a spoiled brat but I'd rather be starve to death than having a dinner with him.

Alam ko namang ayaw nila sa gulay. Silang tatlo, ayaw masyado sa gulay but I like vegetables. Napipilitan lang si Law na kumain at magluto ng gulay dahil sa akin.

Tatalikuran ko na sana siya ngunit dalawang hakbang pa nga lang ang nagawa ko nang may isang marahas at magaspang na kamay ang humila sa braso ko pabalik.

He snaked his hard and muscular arms around my waist to the small of my back and squeezed my body against his.

"Stop avoiding me, Kryptonite," I could feel his soft kissable lips were pressed hard against my earlobe. "Let's eat, ayokong magkasakit ka."

I know that he could feel my nipples against the lower part of his broad chest. Hindi ako nagsuot ng baby bra katulad ng gusto niya dahil ayoko rin namang maulit 'yong nangyari noong mga nakaraang araw.

"Ayokong kumain, wala akong gana, Law," halos dumikit na ang mukha ko sa kanyang collarbone na bahagi habang halos mahigpit na nakayakap na siya sa akin. Naaamoy ko na ang natural na bango niya.

I admit that I like his scent, kaya noong bata pa ako ay madalas akong natutulog sa kama niya dahil gusto ko ang amoy ng kanyang kama. Kahit noong pinapalo niya ang pwet ko ay lagi kong sinusubsob ang aking mukha sa kanyang mga unan.

Suminghap ako at napahawak ang mga kamay ko sa kanyang dibdib nang marahas niyang hinawakan ang pwet ko. An involuntary groan escaped from my mouth as I leaned my forehead against his hard chest. He was breathing ragged, I could feel his chest moved up and down rapidly like he was hyperventilating, that's mainly because he's angry.

"I don't like the food too, little girl. Can I eat you instead?"

Chapter 5

Rules

I buried my hot face against my palms when the roller coaster of compilations and projects were needed to pass next week and I haven't even started one single work yet. The worse thing was, it wasn't by group and we must've do it individually.

It's Friday and that's a pretty good thing but hail hell no. It's not if the weekend would kill me with those duties and responsibilities as a great outstanding student.

Next week would be the last week of this school year. Malapit na ang bakasyon at hindi na ako makapaghintay na pumunta kami sa hacienda ni Grandpa Sattie.

"Hindi ko kaya guys, need help," narinig kong nanlulumong sabi ni Faith sa kanyang upuan.

"Kaya ko 'to pero syempre 'di ko 'to matatapos ng dalawang araw lang," iritadong wika ni Cykee. "Are those teachers out of their mind? Sabay-sabay silang nagpapagawa nito tapos dalawang araw lang?"

Hindi na ako nakisali sa mga ratratan at reklamo nila. Si Law nga na nasa college na ay hindi ko nga siya narinig na nagreklamo, ako pa kaya na nasa high school pa lang? Nakayanan nga ni Law mag-aral mag-isa sa bahay, mas pinili niya 'yon kesa sa sumali sa kanilang group study at alam kong kasalanan ko 'yon.

Naalala ko na naman tuloy 'yong nangyari noong nakaraang linggo. Noong iniwasan ko siya at nagkunwaring ayaw ko sa mga pagkaing niluto niya.

He forced me to eat. Sinubuan niya ako, I insisted na kaya ko namang kumain mag-isa pero mapilit siya. It was awkward, parang 'yong mga panahong bata pa lamang ako. Lagi niya akong sinusubuan. It was different now, malaki na kasi ako at nakakahiya namang sinusubuan niya pa ako para lang kumain.

Lumipas ang araw na halos hindi na ako kumakain ng lunch or even snacks dahil dito pa lang sa school, kapag may vacant time o 'di kaya'y absent 'yong teacher ay agad kong inasikaso 'yong mga projects ko.

Unang dumating si Hezion, ang stepbrother ni Cykee at sinundo siya. Si Faith naman ay masuwerte dahil hindi siya naabutan ng kanyang pinsan.

Ako na lang mag-isa ang naghihintay dito kay Law. Gusto ko na sanang umuwi mag-isa, magcommute pero baka ay magalit na naman siya at sesermonan na naman ako. Baka hindi lang sermon ang makukuha ko sa kanya.

Thirty minutes and it's almost five. Kapag lumubog na ang araw at wala pa rin siya ay bahala na. Uuwi na ako mag-isa.

Matapos ang limang minutong muling paghihintay kay Law ay sa wakas dumating na rin siya. Pero nagtataka ako na papasok na sana sa loob ng front seat ng mamahaling sasakyan niya ay hindi ko natuloy ang pagbubukas ng pinto nang nakitang may nakaupo na pala roon.

It's Dana.

Kaya ba natagalan siya? Sa susunod hindi na talaga ako maghihintay. Madalas ay siya kasi ang naghihintay sa akin. Nakakapanibago lang.

Mas lalo akong nawalan ng gana.

Pumasok na ako sa loob ng backseat at sinadya ko pa talaga ang marahas na pagsara ng pinto. Problema niya na kung masisira ko man 'yon, sinira niya rin naman ang phone ko.

"I wanna eat Broccoli and Cheese Baked Potato Casserole—"

"I can't cook right now, little girl," agarang pagputol niya sa sasabihin ko bago pinatakbo ang sasakyan. "I bought our dinner, mauna ka na munang kumain pag-uwi. May gagawin lang kami ni Dana."

Sabi ko na nga ba. Pero bakit nakaramdam ako ng inis?

I scowled. "You know I hate it, Law, right? Ayoko sa mga pagkaing binibili mo sa mga fast food chain or restaurant."

"Don't you wanna try it, Kry? Sigurado akong magugustuhan mo ang biniling hapunan namin, it's a specialty from my favorite restaurant," singit ni Dana sa boses na parang nagpapalakas sa akin, mula sa front seat ay nakaharap siya sa akin, looking at me over her shoulder.

And how did she know my name? Baka nabanggit ni Law.

"Oh then, mas gusto ko pang mamatay sa gutom," mataray kong sabi sa kanya at nakita ko pa kung paano nag-iba ang ekspresyon sa mukha niya. "May gagawin din naman ako so... I'll skip dinner for now."

"O-Oh, okay..." medyo nauutal na responde ni Dana at humarap na lang sa harap saka tumingin sa labas ng kotse, sa mga lugar na nadadaan namin.

Nang lumipat ang paningin ko kay Law ay nakita ko ang nakakatakot na paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin. May nagawa na naman akong hindi niya nagustuhan.

"Kryptonite, where's your manners?" saway ni Law sa pagiging mean na pakikitungo ko sa kanyang kaibigan. "Say sorry to Danna, now."

"Why would I? To say sorry is for those people who have sinned and didn't mean what they did," pangangatuwiran ko laban sa kanya saka pinagkrus ang mga braso sa ibabang bahagi ng dibdib ko. "In my case, I mean it."

Pinanood ko ang pagdilim ng kanyang ekspresyon habang napapasulyap sa akin mula sa rear view mirror.

"You—"

"It's fine, Law. Ayokong mag-away kayo nang dahil lang do'n," mahinahong hinaplos pa ni Dana ang maskuladong braso ni Law.

He calmed down and I couldn't stop myself but think of how she did it. Paano niya nagawang pakalmahin si Law? Kailanman ay walang ibang nagpapakalma sa kanya kung 'di ay si Mommy Sai. Kapag nauubusan na ng pasensya si Law sa akin ay aalis na lang siya dahil baka ay kung ano pa ang magawa niya sa akin.

How come Dana? Gano'n na ba ang epekto ni Dana kay Law? Was there something between the two of them? Are they in a relationship? Bakit mas lalo lang akong nainis kay Dana imbes na maging masaya dahil sa wakas ay wala nang gagawing masama sa akin si Law?

Because I don't like her and that's that.

Law introduced Dana to me and I just nodded when she reached her hand to me. Offering a friendly handshake. Call me rude and disrespectful but I purposely rejected her hand.

Napangiti ako nang nakita ang pagtitimpi sa mukha ni Law. Ang hirap bang disiplinahin ako? Alam kong hindi pa siya tuluyang naging kalmado, sa paraan ba naman ng paghawak niya sa manibela ay parang masisira niya na 'yon.

Gusto kong murahin ang sarili ko nang napagtanto ko kung ano ang mga katangahang ginagawa ko ngayon.

Ginagalit ko si Law.

Shit. Bakit ginagalit ko si Law?

Hindi ako makapaniwala pero parang alam ko na ang sagot sa sarili kong tanong. Ayokong aminin, mali 'yon. Mali ang lahat ng 'yon.

Sa bahay ay hindi na ako lumabas ng kwarto. Alam kong nasa living room sila, may ginagawa tungkol sa kanilang pag-aaral kaya gano'n din ang ginawa ko. Mas lalo nga lang akong nahirapan kasi wala akong cellphone. I was making a scrapbook and I didn't have much ideas about some arts and styles that I wanted to put on my scrapbook.

Dalawang oras na akong madalas na napapasabunot sa sarili ko nang dahil sa pagkabigo ko sa paggawa nito. May compilation pa sa ibang subjects at dalawang project.

Napagpasyahan kong lumabas at manghiram sana ng phone ni Law pero nang bumaba ako at sa pagliko ko papunta sa living room, naestatwa ako sa nasaksihan ko.

'Yong mga libro, notes, pen at notebook ay nakakalat sa center table at sa sahig. Ngunit gulat ako nang hindi lang 'yon ang nakakalat.

Clothes.

I swallowed when I shifted my look to the long sofa and saw Law sitting on it and Dana was on his lap. Underwear na lang ang natira sa suot ni Dana, panty and bra while Law was just shirtless, may suot pa siyang shorts.

They're not kissing but Dana was licking and biting his neck and bare chest. Rocking her body against his and traveling her hands all over Law's chest, arms and down to the most private part of him.

She moaned a little loud even though Law didn't touch her.

I've never seen Law in this situation before. Sa lahat ng pinsan at kapatid ko ay si Law at Kuya Lazi lang 'yong hindi masyadong pinagtutuonan ng pansin ang mga babae. O baka naman ay nagkakamali lang ako? Baka naman ay ganito talaga siya, tinatago niya lang.

Abala sila kaya hindi pa nila agad ako napansin.

Hindi lang naman pala ako. Pati rin naman siya kaya bakit nagtataka pa siya kung bakit ganito ang ugali ko? Mas malala naman pala siya. Dito pa sa mismong bahay namin ginawa ang kahalayan nilang dalawa.

"No. Dana, stop."

Pinanood ko sila habang nakapikit si Law, nakatingala sa kisame at parang halos ayaw tignan ang ginagawa ni Dana sa kanya.

Bakit ayaw nalang niyang itulak 'di ba? Siguro ay nagugustuhan niya rin ang ginagawa ni Dana sa kanya.

"Why are you erect anyway if you don't want me?" her voice was seductive, magkaiba sa maawain niyang boses kanina sa kotse. "Huwag mo nang pahirapan ang sarili mo, Law."

"I was erect two hours and a half ago," Law sounded bored and annoyed. "Stop, I don't have time for this."

Hindi ba natatakot sa kanya si Dana? Bakit ang lakas ng loob ng babaeng 'yan? Porket ba magka-edad sila? Parehong mature?

"That long?" umangat ang mga labi ni Dana pabalik sa leeg ni Law. "How possible is that?"

Dana stopped from licking, sucking and nipping his skin and tried to kiss him on the lips but Law moved his head to the other direction, preventing Dana's lips to touch his.

Nakita ko ang pagbaba ng kamay ni Dana sa shorts ni Law at walang pag-aalinlangang ipinasok niya sa loob ang kanyang kamay.

"Just stop—oh fuck!" singhal ni Law at bahagya pang itinulak si Dana. "Don't touch it! It's not yours!"

"Not mine? It'll be mine soon."

Hindi ko pa narinig na sumigaw ng gano'n si Law. Pero para sa akin ay nakakatakot na 'yon kapag nagkataong ako ang sinigawan niya.

Dana looked unaffected though. She didn't even flinched or winced and just continue on kissing his muscular chest.

I was watching them but not until Law caught me.

Wala pang isang segundo nang nakita niya ako ay tinulak niya si Dana saka tumayo at malalaking hakbang ang ginawa papalapit sa akin.

He doesn't looked annoyed now.

Tumakbo ako pabalik sa kwarto ko at narinig ko pa ang mabilis na paghabol niya sa akin. Narinig ko rin ang pagtawag ni Dana kay Law.

I sighed in relief when I caught sight of my room's door and I was getting nearer to it.

All I wanted to do was to get inside my room and sleep then just leave my school

works for tomorrow morning.

Inabot ko ang doorknob ng kwarto ko ngunit hindi ko ito naipihit nang isang matigas na braso, kasing tigas ng mga bato ay pumulupot sa bahagi ng tiyan ko at hinila ako papunta sa kabilang kwarto.

In Law's room.

"Law! Matutulog na ako! Ano ba!"

Tinulak ako ni Law papasok sa loob ng kwarto niya at ang buong akala ko ay papasok din siya ngunit hindi.

He shut the door and lock it from the outside.

"Law! Napakahalay mo! Nahiya ka pa, 'di mo na lang pinagpatuloy para may matutunan naman akong bago!" sigaw ko sa pinto na bumubulabog na sa labas. Hindi naman ako seryoso s sinabi ko, tinutukso ko lang siya.

Hinampas ko ang kanyang pinto at hindi ako tumigil hanggang sa narinig ko ang mga papalayong yabag ng kanyang mga paa.

"Hoy! Bumalik ka rito! Buksan mo ang pinto!" walang tigil kong hinampas, sinipa at pilit na pihitin ang doorknob ng pinto pero hindi ko talaga ito nabuksan. "Ano na? Ipagpapatuloy niyo ba 'yon? Gusto kong manood!"

Napagod ako kaya tumigil na lamang ako, I slouched down to his warm and cozy bed. Breathing in his addictive scent. Hindi na ako nangialam sa mga gamit niya, ilang beses kong nakita ang mga 'yon at halos lahat ay related sa pag-aaral niya sa law school.

Limang minuto bago muling bumukas at kasunod no'n ang mga mabibigat na yabag bago sumara ang pinto.

I just groaned and frowned in annoyance.

Ang bilis naman yatang natapos? Pinagpatuloy ba talaga nila ang naudlot na ano nila?

Mas idiniin ko pa ang aking mukha sa kanyang unan nang narinig ko ang ingay ng mga librong sa tingin ko ay inilagay niya na sa kanyang drawer or shelf.

Naramdaman ko ang bahagyang pagbaon sa paanang bahagi ng kama na parang may umupo roon.

I pulled myself up and sat on the bed when I saw Law's muscular back. Nakatalikod siya sa akin at nakayuko sa dulo ng kama na parang ang laki ng problema at kasalanan niya.

"What did you saw, little girl?"

Akala ko ay magagalit siya pero kakaiba ang tono ng kanyang boses. Puno ito ng emosyon na hindi ko pa narinig sa kanya noon.

Ilang beses na akong napalunok. This was hard, I didn't know what to say again. Why was I suddenly loosing words? Why was my brain empty? Usually, I got to come up with a witty reply but at this moment, I was gormless.

"I saw her hand in your pants," with all honesty, I eventually came up with an answer. "Did she touch your—"

"Goddammit," he growled like a mad wolf. Sinabunutan niya pa ang kanyang malambot na buhok at nanatiling nakatalikod sa akin. "She didn't, little girl. Pinigilan ko siya."

"Why uhm..." I paused to think for a second, hinalungkat ko ang aking utak kung anong tamang salita ang gamitin. And when I did. I cleared my throat. "Why—what's with the erection?"

Hindi ko alam kung bakit pero 'yon talaga ang unang pumasok sa isip ko. Lalo na ngayon na mukha siyang guilty.

"I can't explain it for now, Kry," mababa at marahan ang tono ng kanyang boses. "Masyado ka pang bata."

"Bata pa nga ako pero bakit gusto mo akong ikama?" inosenteng tanong ko sa kanya na matagal na talagang bumabagabag sa isip ko.

"Wag mo nang isipin 'yon," tanging sagot niya.

Nakatitig lang ako sa likod niya na panay ang paggalaw, taas baba na parang ang bilis ng bawat paghinga niya.

"Bakit ayaw mo'ng may mangyari sa inyo ni Dana kanina?" umusog ako palapit sa dulo ng kama kung saan siya nakaupo.

"You should call her ate. She's six years older than you," koreksyon niya na hindi man lang sinagot ang tanong ko.

"Law, bakit ayaw mo'ng may mangyari sa inyo kanina?" pag-uulit ko at hindi na lamang binanggit ang pangalan ni Dana. Bumaba ako ng kama at tumayo sa harap niya. "Sagutin mo ang tanong ko, Law."

Dahan-dahan ang pag-angat ng tingin niya sa akin bago marahas na bumuga ng hangì. "I don't like her more than a friend."

"Who do you like then?"

Wala na naman akong nakuhang sagot sa kanya.

He tapped his lap, indicating for me to sit on it. And his little girl that I was, I obliged.

Umupo ako sa hita niya, in a side position and not the cowgirl position that I saw earlier with Dana on his lap. Hinawakan niya pa ang hita ko upang mas mailapit ako sa kanya. Sa kabilang hita ko ay hindi ko maiwasang mapaisip nang naramdaman ko ang matigas na umbok doon.

Couldn't he hide that bulge in there?

"I'll be in the mansion next week and I want you to stay in your Kuya Ruin's apartment while I'm gone," wika niya at inabot pa ang mga braso ko upang maipulupot niya 'yon sa kanyang batok.

That's why he wanted me to sit on his lap because he had an announcement for me.

Alam niyang hindi ako magpapaiwan kapag mansyon na ang pinag-uusapan kaya gusto

niyang makausap ako ng matino.

"Gusto kong sumama sa'yo sa mansyon, Law. Please? I missed the mansion."

"Hindi pwede, Kry," tutol niya at marahan pang inilapat ang kanyang labi sa aking braso na nakapatong sa kanyang matigas na balikat. "May pasok ka pa."

"May pasok ka rin naman. How about Kuya Laki?" I asked and felt his masculine arms around my waist.

"Doon na siya tumira sa apartment ni Ruin," he answered quickly.

"Ba't hindi ko alam 'yan?" I pouted. "Law, please? I wanna go to the mansion," pamimilit ko at marahang hinalikan siya sa kanyang pisngi. Like I used to do before whenever I wanted something from him.

It was effective, isang halik ko lang sa pisngi niya noong bata pa lang ako at nagrequest ako ay ibibigay niya agad sa akin.

He didn't budge at my one kiss so I kissed his cheek once more. Muntik pa akong umatras nang hindi ko naiwasan ang biglang paggalaw ng ulo niya at buti na lang ay sa gilid lang ng mga labi niya dumikit ang mga labi ko.

Shit. That was close.

No matter how kissable, tempting and looking soft his lips were, I would never dare to kiss it. It was wrong at the very beginning. Kahit saang banda tignan ay mali 'yon. Maling mali.

Umawang ang mga labi ko nang nakita ang kanyang mga matang nakatitig sa mga labi ko.

His intimidating eyes was burning and darkening... and starving.

"Law..."

"'Yong mga nakita mo kanina..." he hesitated. "'Wag na 'wag mo 'yong gawin sa ibang lalaki."

Nagtatagis ang bagang niya na parang iniisip niya pa lang na gagawin ko 'yong mga ginawa ni Dana sa kanya sa ibang lalaki ay galit na siya.

Tumango na lamang ako kahit na hindi ko naman alam kung ano talaga ang totoong rason niya at para na rin mapabilis ang pagtapos ng usapang 'to dahil kanina lang ay nag-uusap pa kami tungkol sa mansion tapos ngayon ay balik na naman sa mga nangyari kanina.

"Let's talk about your bad behavior lately," saad niya dahilan kung bakit nakaramdam ako ng kaba.

Binuhat niya ako kaya napahigpit ang pagkakahawak ko sa kanyang batok. He slowly and gently placed me on his bed. Nakahiga ako sa kanyang kama nang sumunod siya ngunit nakapaibabaw sa akin.

Pinanood ko siya nang hinawakan niya ang isang hita ko at inangat sa kanyang bewang habang hinahaplos 'yon. My legs were slightly parted in front of him.

Hindi ako umimik at hinintay ko siyang magsalita.

"Don't avoid me," huminga siya ng malalim na parang nahihirapan siya sa sobrang lapit ng katawan namin sa isa't isa. "Don't run against my will, don't provoke me and don't disobey me."

Nakakatakot ang kanyang boses. Sa gano'ng boses niya ay parang kusang mapapasunod niya talaga ako kahit na ayoko.

Parang sinasabi niya sa akin ang sarili niyang mga patakaran sa pagitan naming dalawa.

"Hindi na ako gagawa ng kagaguhan sa katawan mo," matigas ang kanyang boses nang marahan niya akong hinalikan sa gilid ng mga labi ko katulad ng ginawa ko sa kanya kanina. "Say you understand."

It felt like he was hypnotizing me by just staring deep into my eyes, to my soul and all.

Ang bilis ng tibok ng puso ko ng dahil sa ginawa niya sa akin at ang tanging ginawa ko lang ay ang tumunganga at tumitig sa kanya.

Hindi gagawa ng kagaguhan pero hinahaplos niya pa rin ang hita ko na bahagyang nakaangat sa kanyang bewang habang nakahiga ako rito sa ilalim niya.

"Say you understand, little girl," pag-uulit niya na parang naiinip na.

Huminga ako ng malalim nang naramdaman ko ang kanyang kamay na humahaplos sa hita ko ay dahan-dahang pumasok sa loob ng shorts ko, sa panty ko 'til he cupped his hand against my butt. Napangat ng bahagya ang pwet ko mula sa kama nang dahil sa ginawa niya.

Napahawak ako sa kamay niyang nasa loob ng panty ko habang nakatitig pa rin kami sa isa't isa.

Naiinitan na ako. Ang bilis ng tibok ng puso ko na halos naririnig ko na ito.

"Say it, Kryptonite."

Napakurba ang likod ko kaya dumikit ang aking tiyan sa kanyang matigas na tiyan nang naramdaman ko ang kanyang hintuturo na parang may hinuhukay sa loob at hindi lang sa pwet ko kung 'di ay pati na rin sa pagkababae ko.

Napatingala ako at napatingin sa headboard ng kanyang kama bago napapikit habang mabibigat at mainit na hangin ang binubuga at hinihinga ko.

It felt so... good.

Saka pa ako nagising sa pagkakamaling 'to nang naramdaman ko ang mga malambot at nagbabagang init na labi ni Law sa leeg ko.

Mabilis ko siyang tinulak sa kanyang dibdib at inalis ang kanyang kamay sa loob ng underwear ko.

Umiwas ako ng tingin dahil nahiihiya ako at ang hirap tumingin sa kanyang mga mata kung umaapoy ito.

Hinihinga na sinabi ko ang mga salitang inutos niya sa akin na sasabihin ko upang matigil na ang kahibangang 'to.

"I-I understand."

Ang buong akala ko ay 'yon na pero nagulat ako at naguguluhan nang hinila niya ang shorts at panty ko pababa.

"You just disobeyed me, little girl," his deep hypnotizing voice made the hair at my nape raised upright. "Ilang beses ko bang sabihin sa'yo na tumingin ka sa akin kapag kinakausap kita?"

Hinawakan niya ang bewang ko, he violently flipped my body on his bed and now I was laying flat on my stomach against the sheets of the bed. Hindi niya man lang ako inutusan na dumapa.

"What do you want me to do with your lovely butt?" bulong niya mula sa likuran ko habang nakasubsob na naman ang mukha ko sa kanyang unan.

I could feel his rough hand squeezing and caressing my butt 'til he voiced out the choices.

"Spank or suck?"

Chapter 6

Found

"Come again, Kuya Law?"

It was the day when Law would be leaving to go and do something in the mansion. He didn't wanted me to come with him, I had no choice anyway but to stay in Kuya Ruin's apartment with luckily Kuya Laki. With all the respect they had for Law, of course, they couldn't say no and Law wouldn't accept no as an answer either.

Dismay and dumfounded, their faces was expectedly priceless. I was trying hard to hold back a laugh tho.

Kanina, nang binuksan ni Kuya Ruin ang pinto ay wala siyang suot na saplot at brief lang talaga ang suot niya. Humihikab pa siya na kagagaling lang sa pagtulog, magulo ang buhok at inaantok pa ang mga mata. Naabutan pa namin si Kuya Laki na nakaupo sa sofa at may pinapanood na sikat na scandal videos sa school namin.

Panicking, stupefied and in an instant, they had fixed themselves accordingly to feed Law's satisfaction.

In front of us, they looked adequately presentable now.

"Dito na muna si Kry habang wala ako," makapanindig balahibong pagkaklaro ni Law sa sinabi niya kanina dahil tila ay biglang nabingi ang dalawa. "Pinapalinis ko pa ang bahay at hindi siya marunong magluto kaya kayo na muna ang bahala."

"Kuya, dalawang kwarto lang ang nandito. Saan matutulog si Princess?" sumulyap pa sa akin si Kuya Ruin bago tumingin sa mga mata ni Law.

Normally, my cousins would call me princess, including Kuya Laki. Nakikisabay lang siya.

Hindi ko maiwasang matakot nang nakita ko ang pagkuyom ng isang kamay ni Law nang dahil sa tinawag ni Kuya Ruin sa akin. They didn't noticed it, they were busy thinking of reasons and escapes how to resist Law in a nice and better way.

No one had been successful in attempting to resist Law's orders and command, that except for daddy and Grandpa Sattie.

"Baka may bakante sa bahay nila Uncle Thomas, kuya? Nando'n naman sila Noah at Isaiah. Mas masarap silang magluto," giit ni Kuya Laki dahilan kung kaya't napasimangot ako.

Syempre weekend, they wouldn't wanted me to disturb their habit, would they? Kapag nandito ako, hindi sila pwedeng magpapunta ng babae, Law would terminate their sex shenanigans if ever he find out.

Mas maganda na rin 'tong ayaw nilang nandito ako dahil wala rin namang choice si Law kung 'di ang isama ako.

"Law, sama na lang ako sa'yo, please?" pamimilit ko at hinila ko pa ang laylayan ng kanyang damit. "Ayaw naman nila kuya sa'kin."

"No, little girl," napakatindi ng epekto ng kanyang boses sa amin kaya natahimik kami nang siya na ang nagsalita. "You're staying here. May pasok ka pa."

"E kuya, paano 'yong kwarto-"

"Laki, do'n ka muna matulog sa kwarto ni Ruin, magtabi kayo kung gusto niyo," hindi nagbibiro si Law kaya mabilis na naitikom ni Kuya Laki ang kanyang bibig na siyang nagsalita kanina. "This little girl will occupy your room for a few days."

The guys grimaced from their inside pain. Poor semen. 'Di muna makakalabas ng iilang araw, I bet they would do it all by themselves inside the bathroom or before they sleep.

Hindi naman nagulat sila kuya na hindi ko tinawag na kuya si Law. Kahit sila ay nasanay na rin na naririnig akong tinatawag siya sa kanyang pangalan.

Sinundan ko si Kuya Laki at Kuya Ruin na pumasok sa isang kwarto dala ang mga gamit ko. Naiwan si Law sa sala at may kausap sa kanyang phone.

Speaking of phone, he didn't bought me one yet.

"Punyeta, sino na ang magboblowjob sa'kin," narinig kong problemadong sabi ni Laki at malisyosong tumingin kay Kuya Ruin sabay ngisi. "Ruin?"

"Fuck you, 'di tayo talo, gago," Kuya Ruin shot him a death glare. Binato niya pa ng bag na dala niya. "Hanap ka ng bakla."

May inaayos sila rito sa kwarto ni Kuya Laki na pansamantalang magiging kwarto ko ng iilang araw.

"Sa sahig ka matutulog, Ruin. Ako sa kama mo," abala si Kuya Laki sa isang drawer dito at ibinulsa ang lahat ng square shaped na maliit na bagay.

Iba't ibang kulay 'yon, may dark red, dark violet at iba pa na sa tingin ko ay ang tinutukoy ng mga kaklase ko noon na ang tawag ay condom na may iba't ibang flavor.

"Ulol, apartment mo 'to?" sarkastikong saad ni Kuya Ruin at ipinasok na rin ang iba

pang gamit sa isang box.

Hindi ko alam kung ano 'yon pero 'yong isa ay mukhang microphone? Was it a sex toy? A vibrator?

"Ganito na lang, hangal," tumigil si Kuya Laki sa paghalungkat ng mga condom sa isang drawer at lumingon kay Kuya Ruin. "Ako ang matutulog sa kwarto mo sa gabi, ikaw naman ang matulog sa kwarto mo sa umaga. Problem solved, 'di na natin kailangan magtabi sa kama."

At pinagpatuloy nila ang kanilang pagliligpit, pagtatago at pagkuha ng mga gamit na wala akong kinalaman.

Anong klaseng kwarto 'to? Pugad ng mga kahalayan? Makakatulog kaya ako rito kung alam ko ang mga posibilidad na nangyari at ang history ng kwartong 'to?

Kung mag-usap sila ay parang wala ako rito sa loob. Baka naman 'di nila napansin na sumunod ako?

"Ibig sabihin ikaw ang magluluto ng pagkain sa umaga dahil tulog ka sa gabi tapos ako ang magluluto sa gabi dahil tulog ako sa umaga?" paglililaw ni Kuya Ruin sa nanunudyong boses. "'Pag sinusuwerte nga naman. Isang beses lang ako magluluto."

So, Kuya Laki would cook or fry my breakfast and lunch, on the other hand, Kuya Ruin would do my dinner.

Planado na talaga?

"Tangang tao," komento ni Kuya Laki at binuksan ang isa pang drawer saka may kinuhang mga condom na naman. "Pangalawang beses, hoy. Pa'no na ang midnight snack ni Kry?"

Tulog na ako sa mga oras na 'yan. Palusot talaga ni Kuya Laki para lang maging pantay ang lahat sa kanya.

I went out of the nasty room unnoticed. Babalik na lang ako kapag natapos na sila, parang hindi kakayanin ng sikmura ko ang mga gamit na nakikita ko roon.

Law's broad back and intimidating presence with the bone-chilling ambience surrounded him greeted me outside of the unholy room of Kuya Laki.

My arrival was a perfect timing, Law had done talking to the other line of the call and pocketed his phone. He must have sensed that someone was watching him from behind because he turned abruptly and saw me.

His body was rigid and hard. This sight was making me wonder what it felt like again if he'd do what he did last night. Crawled on top of me, pushing his body hard and a little aggressive against mine to keep me underneath him. And yes, I had remembered what happened last night, the feeling and scene were so fresh on my mind until now.

I preferred spank. It was safe that way. I didn't want to fuel his burning desire for me if it was possible though, he's my brother and why would he felt different toward me? Then probably I did the right thing and I won't regret it.

Although, why was I starting to feel different too? I couldn't believe it, maybe, I wasn't sure but this must be one of my hallucinations, imaginations playing on my mind or possibly I was just being delusional that I felt something, even so I was not.

Ayokong mag-isip masyado pero kahit na palo ang pinili ko ay may kasama palang himas ang pagpalo niya sa akin noong nakaraang gabi.

I obeyed him after it. Muntik niya nang nahawakan ang pagkababae ko and I won't let that happen again. As much as I could, I had tried to be obedient, polite and respectful, kicking out that insolent behavior that I had and just be a sweet and good girl to him.

Change, I didn't want to change myself just to satisfy him but if it was for my own good then why not try it? Law was the kind of man who wouldn't tolerate such unacceptable bad behavior.

I'm a Cavanaugh, after all. Bulong ng kabilang bahagi ng isip ko bago ako bumalik sa katotohanang kanina pa pala ako nakatingin sa mukha ni Law. Nakatayo ng matuwid at ilang hakbang lang ang layo sa akin.

"Nagustuhan mo ba ang kwarto ni Laki?" tanong niya sa akin at tinahak ang distansya sa pagitan namin upang lumapit sa akin. "Do you want to use Ruin's room instead?"

I'd like to answer him no, I don't like it. Iyon naman talaga ang totoo pero ayokong mapagod ang dalawa, nagliligpit na ang mga 'yon.

"It's fine, Law," was my only answer.

"Tatawag ako kay, Laki," sabi niya na parang gusto niyang iparating sa akin na dapat ay wala siyang mabalitaan na gumawa na naman ako ng kalokohan. "Don't get too close to them. Do you understand?"

"Why-"

"Do you understand?" he repeated, impatient to hear my answer.

Paano ko maintindihan kung hindi niya sasagutin ang tanong ko kung bakit huwag akong masyadong mapalapit o lumapit sa kanila?

Kahit na gustong-gusto kong sumagot sa kanya at ipagpilitan sa kanya na sagutin ang tanong ko pero wala akong sapat na lakas ng loob ngayon para kalabanin siya kahit na hindi niya naman ako magawang paluin rito ay baka gagawin niya pa rin sa pagbalik niya mula sa mansyon.

"I... I understand, Law," mariin kong sagot habang nakatitig sa kanyang mga mata sa paraan na gusto niya.

Kapag sinabi ko na ang dalawang salitang 'yon. I understand. Dapat kasunod no'n ay hindi na ako magtatanong pa.

Hinaplos niya ang aking buhok bago hinalikan ang noo ko. Ito ang madalas na ginagawa niya kapag sinunod ko siya pero kung hindi? Huhubaran niya ako ng shorts at panty saka papipiliin kung anong gusto kong gawin niya sa pwet ko.

"Babalik din ako agad," he said, reassuring me.

Naalala ko, wala na nga palang pasok next week. This week namin ipapasa lahat ng projects and compilation, hindi ko alam kung may balak pa bang pumasok si Kuya Ruin since he said na matutulog siya tuwing umaga right? Sila na siguro ang bahala, malaki na sila. Graduating student pa silang dalawa, college na sila next school year. Moving up ceremony lang 'yong sa'kin pero wala akong balak umattend as long as pass lahat ng subjects ko kahit hindi na ako sumali sa moving up ceremony and

just excuse myself to our adviser that I wasn't feeling well.

I hate those event. Wala naman akong magulang na manood sa aking maglakad sa stage at kunin ang certificate ko. Our parents were busy.

"Wala ng pasok next week, pupunta tayo sa hacienda ni Grandpa Sattie para magbakasyon, right?"

"No, baka sa susunod na buwan pa," pagtatama niya. His large hand from my hair slid down to the corner of my face 'til it reached my chin, I could feel his thumb rubbing my chin in an invisible circles. "Pupunta ako sa moving up mo. Kaya nga uuwi rin ako agad pagkatapos ng trabahong pinapagawa ni daddy sa akin sa mansion."

Did he read what's on my mind?

Kahit konti ay at least nakaramdam ako ng saya.

"Promise?"

Hindi niya na nasagot ang tanong ko nang bigla naming narinig ang ingay nila Kuya Laki at Kuya Ruin na palabas ng kwarto. Naibaba ni Law ang kanyang kamay sa baba ko nang pareho kaming luminging sa kinaroroonan nila.

"Princess, naayos na namin ang kwarto," sabi ni Kuya Ruin bago pumasok sa kabilang kwarto na dala ang dalawang medyo malaking box na base sa nakita ko kanina ay may lamang mga sex toys.

"Kuya, pasok muna kami," paalam ni Kuya Laki kay Law at bumuntot kay Kuya Ruin.

Napasapo ako sa noo ko nang nakitang may isang condom ang nahulog sa isang bulsa niya at mabilis niya naman iyong pinulot kaya lang ay natigilan siya nang napansin niyang nakatingin ako sa kanya lalo na ang nakakatakot na tingin ni Law sa kanya.

"Ah, 'yong kendi nahulog," marahan niya pang winagayway ang hawak niyang condom na mukha nga namang kendi 'yong supot. "Sige, pasok na ako, kuya, bunso," paalam niya na mukhang kinakabahan pa yata at tuluyan na nga'ng pumasok sa kwarto ni Kuya Ruin sabay sara ng pinto.

Candy pala. Sinong niloloko niya? Siguro ay ang iniisip ni Law, hindi ko alam ang tungkol do'n kaya pinalabas ni Kuya Laki na wala talaga akong alam kahit na nakita ko pa ang video na demo niya kung paano gamitin ng maayos ang condom. Saging pa nga ang gamit niya. Aksidenteng napanood ko, kasi pinagkakaguluan 'yong video niya ng mga babae sa likod ng classroom. Ang cute niya raw kuno magturo, pasado na maging teacher sabi nga nila.

Bakit ang adik niya sa mga gano'n?

"Wait for me, okay? Sabay tayong pupunta sa moving up mo."

That was the last words that he said before he left the apartment.

Lumipas ang ilang araw na na-comply ko na lahat ng gagawin ko sa school at bukas na ang moving up namin sa susunod na araw naman ang graduation nila Kuya Laki.

"Sinong pupunta sa'yo?" unang pabulong na tanong ni Faith sa akin.

"Siya nga hindi pupunta, parents niya pa kaya?" Cykee retorted as if she's the one who's questioned.

The library's peaceful and serene ambience was all that I could ask for. Kaso ay hindi talaga matahimik ang dalawa. Nandito kami, hindi para magbasa kung 'di ay trip lang namin ang tahimik na lugar ngayon. 'Yong walang gulo at sabunutan.

"Pupunta si Law," mahinang sagot ko habang nakapalumbaba sa mesa. "He said that he wanted to watch me walk on stage."

"Hindi ka pa rin talaga sanay tawagin siyang kuya e 'no? Sila Laki nga na dalawang taon lang ang agwat niyo ay tinatawag mo'ng kuya," pinanliitan ako ni Cykee ng mga mata bago hinalungkat ang kanyang bag at may nilabas na dalawang box saka ibinigay sa amin ni Faith. "Oh 'yan, galing kay mommy. Salamat daw sa pagiging good influence niyo sa akin," humagikhik pa siya na parang kinikiliti ng aswang.

Good influence, siya nga 'tong nang-impluwensya sa amin.

Binuksan ko ang box at may nakitang sampung kulay itim na rectangular shaped na flat but thick cellophane. Binasa ko ang pangalan ng kung ano man ang nasa loob nito.

Undercover Silicone Nipple Covers Gel Petals Pasties.

Ano 'to? Oh my God. Ito ba 'yong ginagamit ng mga babae instead of bra? Ito ba 'yong nude colored soft and circle thing na idikit o paste lang sa nipple? At hindi na kailangang gumamit ng bra.

"Disposable 'yan guys, parang si crush lang. Itapon niyo na agad kapag nagsawa na kayo," paliwanag ni Cykee na may halong biro.

This thing was pretty useful for me, Law wouldn't want me to wear baby bra whenever I was in the house so maybe, I could use this thing to hide my nipple instead of wearing baby bras and got scolded by Law.

"Thanks for this," pinasok ko na sa loob ng bag ang box at nakita ko namang napilitan si Faith na tanggapin na lang din dahil kay tita naman galing at nakakahiya naman kung hindi niya tatanggapin.

"Wow ha? Sa lahat ng bagay na binigay ko ngayon ka lang nagpasalamat," nakasimangot niyang sabi bago ngumisi. "Anong pinaplano mo?"

"Hindi na ako gagamit ng baby bra," sagot ko habang abot tainga na ang ngiti sa labi.

Minsan na rin kasing nagbigay ng tampons si Cykee at para 'yon sa mga babae kapag araw ng menstruation. Ang kaso ay hindi ako komportable sa tampons, parang ipapasok pa kasi siya sa loob ng pagkababae ko. Kulay puti siya na parang stick, makapal na stick. Hindi ko ginamit 'yon, mas komportable akong gamitin ang sanitary napkin.

Kinabukasan ay maaga akong nagising nang dahil sa sobrang excited na darating si Law at manonood siya sa akin. Nakasuot na ako ng uniform at panay ang pag-aayos ng buhok ko si Kuya Laki. Hindi ko alam kung kanino niya natutunan ang pagtatali ng buhok, si Kuya Ruin din ang nagplantsa ng uniform ko.

Magsisimula ang moving up mamayang eight ng umaga at handa na ako, hinihintay ko na lang si Kuya Law.

Pero naghintay ako hanggang sa nag-8:30 ngunit wala pa rin siya.

"Princess, mauna na lang kaya tayo? Baka didiretso na si Kuya Law do'n," bakas sa

bores ni Kuya Ruin ng pag-aalala dahil kanina pa ako pasilip-silip sa bintana ng apartment niya, hinihintay na dumating ang sasakyan ni Law.

"No, kuya," umiiling kong tutol at tumingin na naman sa bintana niyang gawa sa salamin. "Ang sabi niya hihintayin ko raw siya rito. Sabay daw kaming pupunta."

Kulang na lang ay iiyak ako nang lumipas ang araw at ang 8:30am ay naging 8:30pm.

Hindi dumating si Law. Alam niyang ngayon ang moving up namin, sinabihan ko siya at syempre nagtext din sa kanya ang adviser namin.

Breakfast lang ang nakain ko. Kahit anong pilit nila kuya na kumain ako ng lunch ay hindi talaga ako kumain. The bacon and egg inside my stomach as my breakfast earlier had fully digested. Walang laman ang tiyan ko ngayon kung 'di ay hangin at hindi pa rin ako nakakaramdam ng gutom.

"Kryptonite, kumain na tayo ng hapunan, kanina ka pa hindi kumakain. Magbihis ka na rin," walang ekspresyon sa mukha ni Kuya Laki nang lumapit siya sa akin matapos niyang magluto sa kusina ng apartment.

Hindi rin ako nakapagbihis, suot ko pa rin ang uniform ko. Kanina ay pinilit pa nila ako na kaming tatlo na lang ang pupunta at baka ay nahuli o traffic lang si Law pero hindi ako pumayag. Hinintay ko siya rito.

Kalahating oras na akong nakaupo rito sa sofa at hindi pa rin ako nakapagbihis.

9:00pm.

"Kryptonite!"

Tumakbo ako palabas ng apartment at mabilis na pumara ng taxi kahit na naririnig ko ang sigaw ni Kuya Ruin at Kuya Laki na hinahabol ako.

Naiinis ako, naiirita, at umasa na darating siya sa isa sa mga espesyal na araw ng pagiging junior high ko. Ba't sinabi niya pa 'yon kung hindi rin naman siya darating? Mukha siyang sigurado noong sinabi niya sa akin 'yon pero hindi siya dumating.

Dala ko naman ang pera ko kaya nang huminto ang taxi sa harap ng bahay namin ay agad akong nagbayad kahit na nangingilid ang mainit na luha at nag-iinit ang sulok ng mga mata ko.

Lock ang gate ng bahay but Law gave me a spare key before. Ginamit ko 'yon at pati na rin ang pinto ng bahay.

It's late night. Madilim sa bahay at sigurado akong nalinis na 'to ng matandang babae, siya ang inutusan ni Law at taga-linis ng bahay na 'to.

Takot ako sa dilim pero mas pinangungunahan ako ng galit habang unti-unting dumadaosdos ang mga mainit na luha mula sa pagod kong mga mata pababa sa nag-iinit kong pisngi.

I didn't turned on the lights, I went directly to my room and let my body dropped on the soft sheets and soothing strawberry scent of my bed.

Gusto kong sumigaw. Kaya ginawa ko, sumigaw ako pero isinubsob ko ang aking mukha pati ang bibig ko sa unan para hindi ako makagawa ng ingay.

Nabibingi ako sa sarili kong paghikbi habang sinusuntok at sinasabunutan ko ang mga

unan ko.

Bakit ganito na lang ang nararamdaman ko? Bakit ganito na lang ang epekto ni Law sa akin? Hindi siya dumating pero ang sabi niya ay darating siya.

Sumisikip ang dibdib ko.

Nasasaktan ako.

Ang sabi niya rin ay tatawagan niya si Kuya Laki para malaman niya kung kamusta na ako o anong ginagawa ko pero wala akong narinig mula kay Kuya Laki na tumawag sa kanya si Law.

I hugged my legs while laying on the bed at my side like those position of the fetus inside a pregnant's womb.

Nakatulog ako sa sobrang pagod at pag-iyak. Siguradong bukas na bukas ay mamamaga 'tong mga mata ko.

Nagising ako kinabukasan nang may naramdaman ko ang sinag ng araw mula sa bintana ng kwarto ko. Sa pagkaalala ko ay nakasara ang mga kurtina sa kwarto ko since gawa sa salamin 'yong bintana.

I jolted on the bed when I turned and saw him. His intimidating eyes had met mine and held it. I clenched my fist and avoided his scary gaze.

Alam niya naman siguro kung ano ang nangyari kagabi. I was just curious why there's shades of black shadows under his eyes, however, his looks remained sexy and masculine even with those dark shadows under his hardened eyes.

It's been how many days since I've seen his face.

Nakatayo siya sa gilid ng kama na parang kanina pa siya nakatayo rito at hinihintay na magising ako.

"Almost 9:30 nang dumating ako sa apartment at naabutang wala ka," wala akong nababakas na ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha kanina nang nakita ko siya. Naramdaman ko pa ring sa akin siya nakatitig kahit na umiwas na ako ng tingin sa kanya. "We called your friends. Pumunta pa ako sa bahay nila para tignan kung nando'n ka ba."

I acted like I wasn't listening to him.

Pabagsak akong humiga ulit sa kama at magtalukbong ng kumot. I ignored him pero nagpatuloy pa rin siya sa pagsasalita.

"Hinanap kita buong gabi hanggang sa sumikat ang araw. Tumawag pa ako ng police para ipahanap ka pero hindi sila aaksyon agad kapag hindi pa nagbente kwarto oras ang pagkawala mo," paliwanag niya, malalim at napakatigas ng boses nito. Parang gusto niyang magmura katulad noong suminghal siya kay Dana nang balak niyang hawakan ang pagkalalaki ni Law.

Pero hindi siya nagmura. Pinanatili niya ang kaniyang mababa at malalim na boses.

Nakatagilid ang posisyon ko sa pakakahiga kaya nakatalikod ako sa kanya upang 'di ko makita ang kanyang mukha.

Galit ako. Sana ay nagtext na lang siya kay Kuya Laki na hindi siya makakarating. Suot ko pa rin hanggang ngayon ang nagusot kong uniporme.

Anong ginawa niya kay Kuya Laki at Kuya Ruin? Bakit parang siya lang ang naghahanap sa akin ayon sa mga sinasabi niya?

He's talking bullshit again. Gaya na lang ng sinabi niya sa akin na darating siya.

He found me. He always did.

Pero parang nakaramdam ako ng konsesya sa ginawa ko nang muli siyang nagsalita bago lumabas ng kwarto ko.

I was breathless and those words kept on nagging me even after an hour that he left the my room.

"Alam mo bang nabaliw ako kagabi sa kakahanap sa'yo?"

Chapter 7

Lie

School had ended. I was craving for us to go to Compostela Valley, at Grandpa Sattie's hacienda. I have missed the farm, the horses, the tiny chicks and their mother hen, missed fishing in the fishpond, watching the farmers to plant and also our neighbor land just thousands square meters away where Grandpa Sattie's friend had owned it. His close friend also had handsome grandsons and pretty granddaughter, and I'd like to see them, they were once my childhood friends every summer.

As I've counted for myself and what I have remembered, Grandpa Sattie's land was approximately or around fifty hectare.

I wanted to go there, though I know that it's impossible now. Law was taking care of his studies and I was bored as hell in this shit of a house.

What if I'd try to bake, fry or cook for myself? Sure, the kitchen would explode and burn, that's a hundred and one percent expected. I've had enough of Law making breakfast, lunch and dinner for me, plus we're not really in a good situation today.

Hindi ko naman siya binabalewala o hindi pinapansin dahil isa 'yon sa sinabi niyang ayaw niya. Don't ignore me.

I have wholeheartedly remained myself obedient, careful and have watched every single words that I say, not push his buttons but this time I wasn't as warm as before. I was giving him the cold treatment without ignoring him, of course.

Way better than babbling nonsense to him and ended up got questioned between his options and that was to spank or suck?

Dalawa lang kami sa bahay na 'to at buong araw siyang wala pero mas maganda na rin 'yon dahil kahit kailan ay hindi ko na talaga siya paniniwalaan.

I've learned my lessons, haven't I?

Well, he's not here and I had eaten my breakfast after heating it up in the oven. I was free to travel around the house alone, my feet brought me to Law's organized and respectively clean room.

Indeed. Cleanliness was his second name or so I thought when I saw some scattered papers on the center of his bed, like he had left it in a hurry to catch up something somewhere? As I've counted the time he left, it was two hours ago.

Hindi naman naka-lock 'yong pinto, hindi niya naman talaga ito nilolock. Unless if he was hiding something important from me? Or sort of things that wasn't suitable for me to see?

Umupo ako sa kama niya at inilibot ko muna ang tingin sa buong kwarto bago dumapo ang aking paningin sa mga papel.

Curious, I took one paper and read what's in it.

It's all about his studies, schedules, some were receipt that he had paid the payment for the semester but there's only one thing that had caught my full attention.

Kusang kumuyom ang nga kamay ko at muntik ko nang nalukot ang papel na binabasa ko.

"He lied..." I murmured to myself, staring at the paper all the while.

Last week, last week noong pumunta siya sa mansion ay wala na pala siyang pasok. Ang sabi niya pa sa akin ay may pasok siya ngayon, nasaan siya kung gano'n? Bakit nagsinungaling siya sa akin na my pasok pa siya hanggang ngayon?

That's according to the papers that I've accidentally-truthfully it was intentional, I intended to read it.

Waves and various of emotions have flooded my mind. Noong una ay hindi siya dumating sa moving up ko tapos ngayon ay malalaman ko na lang na nagsinungaling pala siya sa akin? Last week lang pala natapos ang huling semester niya for this school year.

Bumaling ako sa bintana ng kwarto ni Law nang may narinig akong busina ng sasakyan mula sa baba, sa labas ng gate.

Ibinalik ko ang mga nagkalat na papel sa kama ni Law na parang hindi ko ito ginalaw bago lumabas ng kwarto at bumaba upang tignan kung sino 'yon.

I was so sure that it wasn't Law, he didn't tap the horn of his expensive car if he's outside the gates.

"Geez! Cykee! Shut it!" narinig kong boses ni Faith nang binuksan ko ang gate at lumabas. "My eardrums!"

"I just got my car, Faith," patuloy na pagbusina ni Cykee at halos masira na ang kanyang manibela sa sobrang wild niya sa loob. "You should be grateful that I invited you to come in our outing! Libre sunder pa! Hahanap pa ba kayo ng ibang kaibigan?"

Sa sobrang ingay ay pakiramdam ko pati 'yong matandang bingi na kapitbahay namin mga ilang metro lang ang layo sa bahay namin ay makakarinig na yata. Isang malaking himala 'yon 'pag nagkataon.

"Who do you think you are?" umangat pa ang isang kilay ko habang nakatingin sa

kanila.

"Ako lang 'to, si Cykee na mahal na mahal ka."

Napailing na lamang ako nang salamat ay natahimik na rin siya sa loob ng kanyang white Porsche 911 Carrera S. Who wouldn't have a car like that when her stepfather have owned a real estate and also fish farm? In addition, her mother was the most successful supermodel, once a cover girl, calendar girl and pinup girl in her early and late twenties. Much money to save for Cykee's future.

May sasakyan din naman sana ako. Si Law lang ay sobrang higpit at istrikto at isa pa hindi naman ako marunong magmaneho.

"What's up?"

"Don't what's up me! Sakay na!" naiinip na utos ni Cykee at siniko pa si Faith na buksan ang backseat since nasa front seat naman siya.

"Hindi puwede, baka pagalitan ako ni Law," umiling ako nang nakalapit ako sa side ni Faith at nakatingin sa kanila sa nakababang bintana ng sasakyan.

"Anong oras ba siya makakauwi?" asik na tanong ni Cykee. "Alas tres ng hapon uuwi na agad tayo kaya dali na."

"Cyk, baka mapahamak pa natin si Kry. Pwede namang bukas na lang tayo—"

"Alam naman ni Hezion 'to kaya baka ay sasabihin niya rin sa kuya mo, magkaibigan naman sila," Cykee was pushing it and try to convince me.

But, remembering the tired and exhausted face of Law last day was making me feel guilty if I would come with them.

Wala pa naman akong phone para macontact siya at sabihin na umalis ako ng bahay at uuwi rin agad bago mag-alas kwatro ng hapon. Baka mabaliw na naman siya sa kakahanap sa akin?

And how about me? Boredom was burning me alive.

Well, I was young, wild but not free at all. Why not alter all my anger and frustration into something appeasing and fun?

"Saan ba tayo pupunta?"

"Sa ilog pasig gusto mo?" sarkastikong sagot ni Cykee at nangalumbaba sa manibela ng kotse niya. "Umaga pa naman kaya pwede ring sa gubat tayo. Putulin natin lahat ng puno."

Madalas ay wala talaga siyang silbi kausap.

"It's an outing, Kry," boses ni Faith matapos sinamaan ng tingin si Cykee. "Kasama natin 'yong mga famous guys mula sa ibang school. I don't know where exactly the location is pero hindi naman masyadong malayo."

Famous guys? Lalong hindi magugustuhan ni Law 'to. Ang sabi niya pa naman sa akin ay huwag akong sumama sa ibang lalaki o kahit makita niyang may kasama akong ibang lalaki.

Law. I didn't know where he was, what he was doing. But he just lied to me that he'll be going out for school. Now I had the courage to do what I really wanted

since then, to come out from my shell, to leave my comfort zone that he build and created perfectly for me to fit in.

We're even. I wanted to leave even just for a while. Sa kanya rin naman ang bagsak ko pagkatapos nito.

"Okay, I'm in."

"Oh yeah and don't pack your things," pagpigil ni Cykee sa akin nang akmang papasok na ako para kukuha ng gamit at magbihis na rin. "Kompleto na ang mga gamit na gagamitin natin dito."

"Pero nakapambahay lang ako?"

"You see, nakapambahay lang din naman kami," may kinuha pa si Faith sa kanyang paa sa loob ng sasakyan at iwinagayway sa akin ang mabalahibong bagay at kulay itim pa ito. "Fluffy slippers."

Ni-lock ko muna ang pinto ng bahay at 'yong gate bago pumasok sa loob ng backseat at nakita sa likod ang isang malaking bag na puno ng gamit at pagkain.

"Kryptonite, alam mo ba? Ang dami pala nilang nagkagusto sa'yo!" tili ni Faith nang pinatakbo na ni Cykee ang sasakyan.

Hindi ko alam kung ano ang mga pinagsasasabi ni Faith.

"Like hey bitch, come and date me. Gano'n ang datingan nila," umakto pa si Cyk na ginulo ang buhok at sabay kagat ng pang-ibabang labi habang nagmamaneho.

"Paano niyo sila nakilala?" takang tanong ko dahil kailanman ay wala naman akong naalalang may kilala kaming students sa ibang school.

"Social media," simpleng sagot ni Cykee.

Bumaling ako ng tingin kay Faith na nagkibitbalikat lang.

"Baka naman mga rapist ang mga 'yon tapos sasama pa tayo?"

"Rapist? Si Hezion ba ang tinutukoy mo?" basag ni Cykee habang nakapokus sa kalsada.

"Rapist? I don't know guys but my cousin have touch my feminine part and... and--"

"Isumbong kaya natin sila sa pulis?" putol ko sa sasabihin ni Faith na halos hindi na matapos ang kanyang pangungusap. "Hindi naman pwedeng magpatalo kayo sa kanila, unless you both like what they're doing to your body."

They went silent.

Baka tama ang hinala ko? Na nagugustuhan din nila ang ginagawa ng mga 'yon sa kanila? They wouldn't be called rapist if these two were giving their body voluntarily. That was just the other term of giving those perverted jerks the permission to touch them with sexual desire.

We changed the topic and just forget about it, try to forget about it.

Kung ako ang nasa posisyon ni Faith ay hindi ko alam kung anong magagawa ko. Magkadugo sila, they're cousins. Mukhang mas maayos pa siguro ang sitwasyon ni Cykee dahil stepbrother niya naman. Kapatid niya lang sa papel at hindi sila

magkadugo. Ang kaso ay matanda na si Hezion, magka-edad lang sila ni Law.

The three of us have knew each other for years and we did tell all our secrets. Alam naming kami lang ang magpapalitan ng sekreto at kahit mag-away pa kami ay safe pa rin ang sekreto namin sa isa't isa.

We open up because that's what makes us comfortable and free. Makikinig kami sa isa't isa, this was the reason why we weren't dead. Kapag kinikimkim kasi ang problema ay may posibilidad na makakaisip ang isang tao ng maling solusyon, some would think that they're better off dead and leave earth.

"Outing? Ito ba ang sinasabi niyong outing?" walang ekspresyong sabi ko nang huminto ang sasakyan
saka ako huminga ng malalim at 'di napigilan ang sarili. "This is fucking illegal! What the hell?"

Lahat ng nagaguwapuhang mga lalaki at mga sexy na babae ay napatingin sa direksyon ko.

Sa isang sementadong kalsada sa tabi ng daan ay may malawak na espasyo at ilang metro lang ang layo ay may lumang building na sa tingin ko ay abandonado na.

May maliit na mesa ang nakahilera at may mga...

Nag-iinuman na mga mayayaman na underage.

Ano 'to? Walwalan? Nasa'n na ang sinasabi nilang outing? Bakit dito sila nag-iinuman? Oo nga pala, 'di pa sila makakapasok sa mga bar o 'di kaya'y club.

Paano kung may makakita sa amin dito at tatawag ng pulis? Umagang umaga talaga?

Nakita ko pang kumaway si Eloah sa amin na may hawak na isang shot ng Tanduay? May Emperador, Gin at Bacardi pa.

Ang daming mamahaling kotse ang nakapark sa tabi ng kalsada. Wala naman kasing masyadong sasakyan ang dumadaan dito kaya siguro ito ang napili nilang lokasyon para magsaya.

Wala naman dito 'yong mga pinsan ko. Ako lang kasi ang underage sa amin. Ang pinakabata.

Yeah sure, this thing was kinda part of the word fun and no, I haven't tried it ever. Wine lang ang iniinom ko which was consisted with three percent solution of alcohol only. May ibang wine naman na more than that but hanggang three percent lang talaga ako.

Sa kabila ng katuwaan dito ay inilibot ko ang aking paningin.

Natigilan ako nang may nahagip ang aking mga mata.

Isang lalaki na kanina pa nakatingin sa akin ang nakakuha ng atensyon ko.

He was unfamiliar and I haven't seen him before in school so probably he's one of the guys that Cykee and Faith was talking about earlier. Famous guys from other school.

I got thunderstruck the way his thin sexy lips moved and say no to his friends when one of them offered him a drink. He did it while keeping his gaze on mine, looked like he doesn't have any intentions to take his eyes off me.

How could he eyed me that long?

Lahat sila ay nakasuot lang din ng pambahay na damit. Free huh.

Umiwas ako ng tingin nang naalala ko ang sinabi ni Law.

"Tara, pakilala kita sa kanila, dali na," hinila ako ni Cykee patungo sa kinaroroonan ng lalaking nakita kong nakatingin sa akin kanina. "Hi Rule!"

The handsome guy that have remained staring at me just nodded at Cykee.

So his name was Rule?

"Shit, pre. Tignan mo oh," sabi ng katabi niya at may ipinakita sa cellphone nito saka pa niya pinutol ang pagtingin sa akin at tumingin sa phone ng kanyang katabi. "May graduation gift si Erich kay Laki."

Paano nila nakilala si Kuya Laki at Erich kung hindi naman sila nag-aaral sa school namin? Social media, iba talaga ang magagawa no'n.

Ayokong panoorin pa dahil alam ko naman kung ano 'yon. Another sex scandal of Kuya Laki, si Erich pa talaga ang kasama niya. Nasuwertehan siya, porket hindi pumatol sa kanya si Law ay kay Kuya Laki naman siya.

No comment si Rule sa pinakita ng kaibigan niya at ibinalik lang agad ang tingin sa akin.

What's with my face? Bakit panay ang tingin niya sa akin?

"Faith! Dito!" tawag ni Cykee nang nakitang nag-iba ng pupuntahan si Faith.

Rule wasn't that intimidating but I really had this feeling that he felt like Law. The way he looked at me was the way Law look at me.

Almost five hours later and it's almost four, panay ang pag-iling ko kapag may nag-aaya sa akin na uminom. Hindi nga natuloy ang pagpapakilala nila Cykee at Faith sa akin kay Rule at sa mga kaibigan niya dahil naaliw na sila. Faith and I didn't drink but Cykee does, thirsty like she had never drink a single drop of water for decades but still alive.

Natigilan ang lahat sa pagtatawanan at pag-iinuman nang nakarinig kami ng pamilyar na sirena ng pulis na papalapit dito.

"Oh fuck!" narinig kong umuulan ng mura nang halos lahat sila ay kumaripas ng takbo papunta sa kani-kanilang mga sasakyan.

"Tangina, hayaan niyo na 'yan!" sigaw ng lalaking katabi ni Rule na may tinulungang lasing upang makalakad papunta sa isang sasakyan. "Papahuli pa yata kayo e!"

"Kry? Kryptonite!" I heard Cykee and Faith called me through the chaos of drunk, tipsy and some were sober underage teenagers run for their life and got inside their car.

Muntik na akong napasubsob sa isang maskuladong likod nang may humila sa akin patungo sa isang sasakyan. Mabilis niya akong naipasok sa front seat at gano'n din siya sa driver's side saka pinaatras ang sasakyan upang makaalis na mula sa pagkakapark nito sa tabi ng kalsada.

"Why--wait! 'Yong mga kaibigan ko!"

"No, stay there," sabi ng hindi pamilyar at malalim na boses ng lalaki. "Kaya na nila ang sarili nila."

Tinapunan ko siya ng masamang tingin matapos kong inilibot ang tingin sa labas upang hanapin sila Cykee at Faith. Ngunit nanlambot ang mga mata ko nang nakita kung sino ito.

It was Rule.

His voice, attitude, the way he look and also his posture was like the mild version of Law. Law was the worst anyway.

Naririnig ko pa rin ang ingay na nagmula sa police car na paparating kaya hindi na ako nagtangkang lumabas at hinayaan siyang magmaneho. All of us, all the cars took the opposite road from where we could hear the police siren.

"Who are you? Bakit mo ako hinila?" asik ko habang palipatlipat ang tingin ko sa kanya at sa iba pang mga sasakyan na iisa lang ang tinatahak na daan, 'yon ay ang palayo sa police car na humahabol sa amin.

"Rule Fortaleza."

I avoided his intense gaze when he took a quick glance at me before he fixed his eyes on the road.

Sasakyan niya siguro 'tong gamit namin, mukhang wala naman siyang kasabay kaya siguro hinila niya na lang ako.

My brows furrowed as the car halted, I looked forward and saw that the other cars in front of us had stopped to. Parang na-traffic na tuloy kami rito at baka ay maabutan pa kami.

"What's happening?" kinakabahan akong tumingin sa unahan namin at nakitang may mga pulis. Tumingin din ako sa likod at meron din. "Hindi ako pwedeng makulong! Papagalitan ako ng kuya ko!"

The police were witty. Sinadya nilang gumawa ng ingay para lahat kami ay pupunta sa kabilang daan kung saan ay may naghihintay na rin palang pulis.

"Calm down, Kryptonite," Rule turned down the engine of his car and looked at me with reassurance in his steely eyes. "We're underage. Hindi tayo makukulong."

Para akong naging bobo sa harap niya. Oo nga pala, underage kami pero malalaman pa rin naman ni Law 'to, na nasangkot na naman ako sa gulo.

"Lumabas kayo," narinig kong utos ng police officer na may hawak na device, something like loudspeaker upang marinig naming lahat.

Tatakas ako.

Hindi ako pwedeng mahuli. Hindi pwedeng malaman ni Law 'to.

"No, hindi mo gagawin 'yan," lumingon ako kay Rule na siyang nagsalita. Parang nababasa niya ang nasa isip ko. "Susuko tayo and everything will be fine. Okay?"

Bakit ganito siya? Nakikita ko sa kanya si Law kaya mabilis niyang nakuha ang tiwala ko at inalalayan niya pa ako palabas ng kotse.

All of us, maybe fifty juvenile. The police officers have placed us at the back of their patrol car. It was three patrol car anyway, nagsiksikan kaming lahat doon.

Nakita ko pa si Cykee na nakangisi sa isang patrol car na parang hindi takot mahuli at nag-peace sign sa akin na nakasimangot at katabi si Rule.

Hindi sa police station ang bagsak namin, kung 'di ay sa DSWD. Pinaupo lang kami sa mga plastic long chairs sa isang malawak na parang hall sa loob at may iilang pulis ang nanatili upang magbantay.

Isa-isang sinundo at pinagalitan ang mga nakasama ko rito dahil tinawagan ng mga pulis at staff ng DSWD ang kanilang magulang o 'di kaya'y guardian. I had no phone but unfortunately, they saw Law's number in Cykee and Faith's phone.

Hindi kasi ako makakauwi kapag hindi ako sinundo.

"Shit naman, mother fucker. Bakit si Hezion ang tinawagan niya, puta," bulong ni Cykee habang pinapatay na ang pulis ng nakakamatay na tingin niya, 'yong pulis na tumawag kay Hezion kanina.

Tahimik lang kaming dalawa ni Faith at gano'n din si Rule kasama ang katabi niya kanina, nakaupo sila sa katapat na upuan namin. He was staring at me again.

Nasa bente na lang kami at alas sa is na ng gabi. Madilim na rin sa labas at ang dungis kong tignan sa suot kong pambahay.

Siniko ako ni Cykee kaya nilingon ko siya. Nginusong niya ang pinto kaya tumingin ako roon.

Bigla na lang akong namutla nang maawtoridad na pumasok si Law. He was wearing a plain black tee shirt and dark pants, lalo na ang madilim niyang aura na mas lalong nakakapagdagdag ng pagdilim ng ekspresyon sa mukha niya. Mas lalong tumingkad ang maputing kutis niya.

May sumalubong sa kanya na police na siyang nagsumbong sa kinasasangkutan kong gulo.

Mas matangkad pa si Law sa medyo tabachoy na police kaya bahagya siyang tumungo upang makinig ng maigi sa pinapaliwanag nito sa kanya.

I was tensed. Nanlambot ang mga tuhod ko nang nakita ko ang paglibot ng nakakatakot na tingin ni Law dito. Every person that have landed and caught with his intimidating eyes instantly froze or lower their gaze down at their lap or hands. May ibang nakatulog kaya marahil sa sobrang nalasing ito kaya 'di na nila nakita ang himagsik at pagtagis ng mga nakakatakot na mata ni Law.

Well, except for Rule and Cykee. Mukhang matapang ang dalawa.

"You okay?" tanong ni Rule sa medyo matigas na boses.

I just nodded. Hindi ako nagsalita dahil alam kong nakatingin pa rin sa direksyon ko si Law.

May parang pinirmahan si Law bago tinawag ang buong pangalan ko ng police.

"Kryptonite Cavanaugh."

Tumayo na ako at nagpaalam sa mga kaibigan ko bago ako naglakad papunta sa

kinaroroonan ni Law.

My slippers felt like a magnet, it was heavy and I couldn't walk properly. My instinct was telling me to run, to avoid Law and get rid of him.

Hindi pa nga ako nakakalapit kay Law nang unti-unting tumulo ang mga luha ko. Nakita ko ang paglambot ng matigas niyang ekspresyon sa mukha nang nakita ang pagkinang ng mga mainit kong luha.

"L-Law, I'm sorry... Please huwag kang magalit sa akin," humihikbing sabi ko habang nakatingala sa kanya nang nakalapit na ako at hinawakan ang laylayan ng kanyang kulay itim na damit. Takot akong hawakan ang umiigting na kalamnan sa braso niya. "H-Hindi ko na uulitin, I'm sorry, I'm sorry."

Wala pa nga siyang ginawa, umiyak na ako.

'Yong ibang malapit sa amin ay napatingin sa akin pero 'yong mga nakasama ko ay hindi. Hindi naman kasi nila ako nakikita, nakatalikod ako at medyo malayo na sa kinaroroonan nila.

Naramdaman ko ang kanyang kamay na hinaplos ang buhok ko hanggang sa bumaba ito at hinawakan ang baba ko.

"Open your mouth, little girl," matigas na utos niya sa harap ng mga pulis at DSWD staff.

Bakit?

I bit my lower lip and just obliged.

Nang binuka ko ang aking bibig ay nagulat ako nang bahagyang itinagilid ni Law ang kanyang ulo at bahagyang inilapit ang kanyang mukha sa akin. Itinapat niya ang kanyang matangos na ilong sa bibig kong nakaawang.

I cursed on my mind when I felt his warm and fresh breath hit my lower lip.

Shit. Inamoy niya ang bibig ko?

He smelled my mouth twice before pulling himself away and stood straight in front of me.

"Good girl," komento niya bago siya pormal na nagpaalam sa pulis at iginiya na ako palabas kung saan nakapark ang kanyang sasakyan.

Hindi ba siya galit?

Naalala ko tuloy 'yong mga nakita ko sa kanyang kwarto. May kasalanan nga pala siya sa akin.

Sobbing, he guided me to get inside his car. Pinigilan ko siya nang akmang isasara niya na ang pinto ng front seat. Hinila ko siya sa kanyang simpleng kulay itim na damit upang mas mapalapit siya sa akin.

"A-Ang sabi mo may pasok ka pa? Pero last week lang natapos ang huling semester niyo," tanong ko na halos pumiyok na ang boses ko nang dahil sa paghikbi. Kanina niya pa pinunasan ang mga luha ko pero ayaw pa rin nitong tumigil sa pagtulo. "N-Nagsinungaling ka sa'kin, Law."

Nanghihinang hinampas ko pa ang kanyang matigas at malapad na dibdib bago niya

hinuli ang kamay ko at mariing idinikit ang aking palad sa kanyang malambot at mamasa-masang mga labi.

His intimidating eyes had never been softened. It was just his face, 'yong mga mata niya kung tumingin sa akin ay parang araw-araw may nilalabanan siya.

I was confused when he revealed the truth to me.

"Kailangan kong magtrabaho para may mapakain ako sa'yo, para mabili ko ang lahat ng gusto mo."

Chapter 8

Okay

I was about to knock at Law's door but stopped and hesitate. Just a simple and polite conversation with him won't hurt me, right? No, some of our previous talks about my escapades and how it got me into trouble had a bad end.

Yesterday surprised me and good thing, he didn't spank nor suck my butt for my mistakes. He let me eat and sleep in peace.

He was working for me? For us? Why, I mean, he wouldn't have to work because daddy was giving us money, unless our father had cut off the money in each of our bank account?

If so, then I wanted to work for myself too and not just him. The problem was, my age wasn't suitable to be hired for any legal job. Unless if I wanted to be a drug pusher? Illegal jobs for juvenile. To add it up why I couldn't work aside from being an underage lass that I was. Well, I was naive and tardy, I had no experience of living a hard life, how would I work if I was like this?

He just got home, ten minutes ago, maybe and went directly to his room. I wonder what was his work, why didn't he look tired at all?

Questions, that was why I wanted to get in his room and ask him. When would I get the peace of mind if these thoughts kept on bugging me all night, all day?

Buong araw kaya akong nabagot dito at hindi na ako pinatahimik ng mga iniisip ko. Apart from that, that Rule Fortaleza have occupied one fourth of my thoughts. Rule reminded me of Law. Sa paraan ng pagtingin nito at sa tuwing may kinakausap siya. Paano kung silang dalawa ni Law ang mag-uusap?

I stared blankly at the door and thought that maybe, the right thing to do was just to keep those questions for myself.

But I wanted to ask so badly. The thought was disturbing and annoying. I was hesitant and that was making it more frustrating.

Nakakainit ng ulo. I couldn't decide.

I wasn't that brave to face him. Awfully, I was afraid from the possibility of him violently removing my shorts and underwear again, told to drop on his bed and spank

me. I couldn't control my temper if I'd hear something distasteful from him during our talk and Law wouldn't tolerate it.

Mariin kong ipinikit ang aking mga mata at nang minulat ko ito ay matapang kong sinalubong ng tingin ang kanyang pinto.

Risking and sacrificing could hurt me but I wouldn't get my goal tonight if I was being such a coward.

I'd try. At least I had given it a try.

Squaring my shoulders, I lifted my fist up and knock it three times against the hard wood door. The noise had penetrated the door.

I had received no response.

Kaya pinihit ko na ang doorknob, kumatok naman na ako kaya alam niya na siguro na papasok ako.

Pagpasok ko ay bumungad sa akin ang napakalinis na kwarto ni Law. Gazing around the shades of most likely color brown things, I didn't saw even a footstep of him. Ni kahit anino niya ay 'di ko nakita sa loob.

The bathroom door that was made in blurred hazy glass caught my eyes and attention when I heard the sound of water sprinkling and the noise of soft splash when it hit the human body that I assumed to be Law's.

Kaya naman pala hindi ko narinig ang pagresponde niya sa pagkatok ko ay dahil naliligo naman pala.

Maghihintay na lang siguro ako. Pero saan? Dito o sa labas? Babalik nalang kaya ako sa kwarto ko?

Pinipigilan ko ang aking sarili na maglakad palapit sa pinto ng kanyang banyo. Why does it tempting me to get inside his bathroom? I had this gut feeling that my eyes wanted to see him taking his shower, completely naked and wet.

This ain't good. Why was I tempting? He was my brother for heaven's sake. I shouldn't felt this, I was not that close to him before, we became close because he was the only person who could give time for me and my case of having much trouble in school.

Exactly why I wanted to avoid him. I was... tempting.

I had felt this before, however, I ignored it easily. Hindi ko na siya inisip dahil kapatid ko nga siya kaya bakit ko maramdaman 'yon? Iniisip ko noon na baka ay nagulat lang 'yong katawan ko and whatsoever.

Nawala rin naman agad ang pakiramdam na 'yon.

Pero simula noong pinalo niya ako nang walang suot na underwear ay muli kong naramdaman ang dapat ay hindi ko na maramdaman ulit.

What would he possibly do to me if I get inside the bathroom and watch him taking his shower? Was he going to spank me?

No. Hindi dapat ako papasok. Hindi dapat.

This was against the law.

Hindi ko na napigilan ang sarili ko nang natagpuan ko ang aking sariling mga paa na naglalakad patungo sa pinto ng banyo. Wala akong nagawa upang pigilan ang sarili ko habang may pagkakataon pa nang binuksan ko ang pinto ng banyo.

My breath hitched.

He was inside the shower stall but I could clearly see his bare and masculine back. Nakatalikod siya mula sa akin at hubo't hubad. One hand was leaning on the wall of his shower stall, head down and breathing heavily.

Bakit parang hinihingal siya?

I traveled my eyes at his back down to his—oh so perfect shape of strong butt and strong, muscular long legs. I gulped and couldn't even count how many times I did it. Felt like my mouth had gotten dry even though the sight was forsooth mouthwatering.

Hindi ko nagawang umiwas ng tingin sa kanyang katawan kahit na nakatalikod siya sa akin.

'Yong paraan ng pagdaosdos ng paniguradong malamig na tubig sa kanyang katawan ay parang hinahagit akong pumasok sa loob ng shower stall pero hindi ko ginawa. Parang nag-ugat na ang mga paa ko sa kinatatayuan ko ngayon matapos kong sinara ang pinto ng kanyang banyo at napatitig sa kanyang likod.

He had this chiselled good look. Parang metal sa sobrang tigas ang kanyang katawan kung tignan, ano pa kaya kung hawakan ko 'yon?

What was happening to me? No. I shouldn't have felt this way.

"Gusto mo ba ang mga nakikita mo, Kryptonite?"

Mula sa ibabang bahagi ng kanyang likod ay umangat ang tingin ko sa likod ng kanyang ulo na nakatungo pa rin.

Through the splashing sound of water, I heard what he said, so clear, clearer than the water in the garden of Eden. I was so sure that didn't heard him wrong.

Malinaw na malinaw ang kanyang baritonong boses sa pandinig ko. He sounded more like challenging me, how far I could stop myself.

How? How did he know that I was here? Had he felt my presence or did he heard me entered discreetly?

Hindi ba siya magtatanong kung ano ang ginagawa ko rito? I was undoubtedly invading his privacy.

"Do you want to join me, little girl?" husky and raspy, that was how I heard his voice. It was the first time he talked to me without having an eye contact. "I have reserved all the space for you."

What does that mean? What was he saying? Bakit ganito siya sa akin pero noong kay Dana ay kulang na lang suntukin niya ang babae para tumigil.

"I can be good to you, if you'll be good to me," every single words was like a thunder that had stricken me headshot.

He was trying to play words on my head.

"Good?" tanong ko, sinusubukang itago ang kuryusidad sa boses ko.

"Gusto mo ba ang katawan ko?" the muscles at his back tensed. Nakatungo pa rin siya at hindi ako nilingon.

"Law, you know that this is wrong."

"Yes, wrong," sang-ayon niya sa sinabi ko pero biglang nag-iba ang tono ng kanyang boses. "Then why are you here, in my bathroom? Alam mo'ng naliligo ako tapos pumasok ka pa rin."

He has a point.

Sinasabi kong mali ito pero bakit nandito ako? Naguguluhan na ako sa sarili ko. Hindi ko na maintindihan ang takbo ng isip ko.

Ang dali lang para sa kanya na panindigan ang mga sinasabi niya. Habang ako? Kahit ano na lang ang mga sinasabi ko para lang malusutan siya.

"I just wanna ask—"

"Hindi ba makapaghintay 'yan hanggang sa matapos ako?"

I better shut my mouth. He was gentle talking to me and turned out harsh.

What should I suppose to do? Turn around and leave?

Nandito na rin naman ako, ba't hindi ko nalang itanong sa kanya?

"Gusto kong malaman kung bakit nagtatrabaho ka," I demanded. My gaze went all over his back, down and back to his head. His nude body was distracting me.

"Sinabi ko na sa'yo."

He was referring to his answer yesterday. He was working in behalf of me, for my needs and so I wouldn't die in hunger.

Mukhang may kinalaman ang lahat ng 'to sa pagpunta niya sa mansion at kung bakit natagalan siya sa pag-uwi kaya hindi na siya nakaabot sa moving up ko.

Tumingin ako sa salamin dito sa pader at nasa gilid ko lang kung saan may sink panghugas ng kamay. Side view position of my body, there was only a small size of bulge in my chest, I'd rather look at my own body than crave to touch his.

Nakakagutom kapag tinitigan ko masyado ang kanyang katawan. Mas maganda na rin 'tong pareho kaming hindi nakatingin sa katawan ng isa't isa.

"What happened in the mansion? Nando'n ba si daddy? Nag-away na naman ba kayo?" parang kinakausap at tinatanong ko lang ang sarili ko dahil nakatingin lang ako sa repleksyon ko sa salamin.

Mabilis kong naibalik sa kanya ang tingin nang wala na naman akong natanggap na sagot mula sa kanya.

He turned off the shower.

"Hand me the towel, little girl," nasa gano'ng posisyon pa rin siya, nakatalikod ngunut ngayon ay hindi na nakasandal ang kanyang kamay sa pader, he was combing his

dump and disheveled hair with his hand.

I shifted my look at his white towel, hanging on the hanger at the wall.

Matapang kong sinunod ang kanyang utos at kinuha ang towel. Magaan ang aking mga paa nang naglakad ako papasok sa loob ng shower stall.

I handed him the towel but to my surprise, he didn't accepted it. Iniiwasan ko rin na tumingin sa unahan niya sa baba habang nanatili siyang nakatalikod sa akin.

"Put it around me," he commanded.

My lips pursed and tried hard not to look at his butt. Should I spank him? Gusto ko lang makabawi nang dahil sa ginawa niya sa akin noon.

Pero baka ay magalit siya?

Nakayuko pa rin naman siya na parang tinitigan ang kanyang ari.

I positioned myself at his back and before I wrap the towel around his waist. I flashed a mischievous smirk and did the stupid thing to do.

Pinalo ko ang pwet niya.

Marahas na umangat ang kanyang tingin at lumingon sa akin ngunit nanatili pa ring nakatalikod.

"What was that for?" he asked between gritted teeth and tensed jaw.

I shrugged. "Bored."

"Bored huh?" he snatched the towel from my hand and wrapped it around himself.

Bago pa man siya matapos ay mabilis na ako lumabas ng banyo habang tumatawa. Itinikom ko ang aking bibig at napagpasyahang magtago sa ilalim ng kama niya.

"Halika rito, maglaro tayo," narinig kong sabi niya habang papalabas na rin ng banyo. "Kryptonite."

Mariin kong itinakip ang aking palad sa bibig ko nang hindi ko napigilan ang humagikhihik.

Matapos ang ilang minutong pagtatago ay narinig ko ang pagbukas at sara ng pinto. Hindi ko na rin narinig ang mga yabag ng kanyang paa. Wala akong nakikita sa labas mula rito sa ilalim ng kanyang kama dahil may nakatakip na sheet nito kaya hindi niya rin ako nakita.

Nakiramdam ako sa paligid habang nakadapa rito sa ilalim ng kama at napatili nang may magaspang na kamay ang humawak sa dalawang paa ko at hinila ako palabas.

"Gotcha, little girl."

"Oh my God, no! Law, please? Let me hide somewhere else?" pakiusap ko sa kanya na nasa likuran ko at hawak pa rin ang paa ko. Hindi ako nakatayo at nanatiling nakadapa sa sahig.

"No," walang patawad na sagot nito.

I attempted to crawl back and hide under his bed but ended up dragged back to Law.

Namalayan ko nalang ang sarili ko nang binuhat niya ako mula sa pagkakadapa ko sa sahig at inilapag sa kanyang kama. The addictive scent of his bed enveloped me.

He tricked me and acted like he went outside.

'Yong puting towel lang ang suot niya nang pumwesto siya sa ibabaw ko. Natatawa ako sa ekspresyon ng kanyang mukha imbes na matakot. Marahil ay dahil 'yon sa pagpalo ko sa pwet niya.

His butt felt so soft but masculine against my palm. It was wet because of the cold water dripping on his skin.

I'd rather enjoy this moment.

"Spank or suck?" I asked in a sassy tone. I tried to sound like him but I couldn't copy his baritone voice.

Obviously, I was teasing him.

Tiim bagang tumingin siya sa akin, magkatapat na ang mga mukha namin. "Stop mocking me."

Ngumuso ako nang may iilang patak ng malamig na tubig ang naramdaman ko sa aking leeg mula sa kanyang buhok.

"Okay, seryoso na ako," tumitig ako sa kanyang nagdidilim na mga matang nakatitig din sa akin. "Gusto kong malaman kung ano ang nangyari sa mansion."

Aalisin ko na sana ang iilang hibla ng buhok niya na dumidikit sa kanyang noo ngunit 'di ko nagawa nang hinuli niya ang kamay ko at mariing idinikit sa kama dahilan kung bakit 'di ko siya nahawakan.

"Pinagalitan ako," tipid niyang sagot at dahan-dahang umalis sa ibabaw ko upang umupo sa kama ng maayos.

"Why?" I sat up from the bed, watching him intensely look at me. "Dahil ba sa akin, Law? Lagi ba kayong nag-aaway dahil sa akin? Kaya ba lagi ka nalang galit sa akin—"

"No," his voice once again was intimidating. "Hindi ako galit sa'yo."

"Bakit pinagalitan ka ni daddy?"

"Dahil pinagpipilitan ko 'yong bawal pa sa ngayon," makahulugang sagot niya.

For a moment, I felt like I have stopped from breathing. What does that exactly mean? Anong bawal ang pinagpipilitan niya? Sa ngayon? So may posibilidad ba na ang bawal na 'yon ay magiging pwede na sa paglipas ng panahon?

The thought of it was a haywire on my mind. Was that the reason why he was working so hard and not just for me?

An unfamiliar feeling have gotten inside my nerves and spread throughout my body.

Jealous.

Bigla akong nagselos sa kung ano mang bawal ang pinagpipilitan at pinaglaban niya against kay daddy.

Baka pinagbawalan siyang ipagpatuloy ang pag-aaral ng law? 'Yon lang naman ang alam kong dahilan ng pag-aaway nila at kung bakit siya naglayas noon.

"Bawal?" natanong ko matapos itong naglaro sa isip ko. "Bakit naman bawal? Hayaan mo na si daddy, Law. Para sa akin walang bawal. Gawin mo lahat ng gusto mo, basta't hindi nakakasakit sa'yo at sa ibang tao."

He stilled, rigid.

Hindi siya nakasagot.

Minsan lang kasi talaga ako nagsasabi ng mga gano'ng bagay sa kanya. Concern lang ako dahil mukhang lubos na pinapahirapan talaga siya ni daddy.

Nahulog ang paningin ko sa kanyang mga kamay na unti-unting kumuyom.

"Law?"

"Hm, little girl?"

Mukhang malalim ang iniisip niya habang nakatitig pa rin sa mukha ko.

"Kailan tayo pupunta sa hacienda ni Grandpa Sattie? Sasama ba sila?" I asked referring to our other cousins.

"They're going this month but we can't come with them," he answered, sure of his own decision. "Sa susunod na buwan pa tayo. I'm saving money, little girl."

"But I'm bored here, can I work too?"

"No," he objected abruptly. "Ganito nalang, next week ko na makukuha ang sahod ko. Next week may pupuntahan tayo."

Umangat ang isang kilay ko. He had gotten my interest already, I love going somewhere and not just stay at home like a sick person that had a very serious injury on the leg.

"Saan?" my voice had beamed and my face lit up, a little much excited.

Nawala ang pagiging seryoso niya masyado nang nakita niya ang pagliwanag ng mukha ko. Yet his eyes never changed, it remained intimidating and jaundice. Very unfriendly, I wonder why he had friends to have a group study gathering?

"La Trinidad? Not sure yet," he ran his long and lean fingers through his dump hair, nakatitig pa rin sa akin. "But we'll be out for only a week. We'll check in a hotel or somewhere else we could stay for the whole week of vacation."

Hindi ko napigilan ang pagngiti dahil minsan lang 'to. Aayaw pa ba ako?

"Really? Benguet right? Malamig do'n 'di ba?" I asked out of curiosity. Pero dahan-dahan ding naglaho ang ngiti sa mga labi ko nang may naalala ko. "Baka naman ay maging katulad 'yan noong sa moving up ko, Law."

"I'll make sure it won't, little girl," his voice was certain and was showing a little sanguine expression on his face.

Dumapa ako sa kanyang kama ngunit nakaharap ako sa kanya. My face almost reach his lap, itinukod ko ang dalawang siko sa ibabaw ng unan na kinuha ko malapit sa

headrest ng kama at ipinatong ang aking baba sa aking dalawang palad.

"Saan ka ba nagtatrabaho?"

He watched me looked up at him.

"I work in the market," pormal na naman ang kanyang boses. Parang nasa isang interview lang kami. "Nagbubuhay ako ng mga timba na may lamang mga isda sa umaga, minsan ay tagahiwa ng mga malalaking isda o karne. I chop them. Sa hapon ay delivery guy ng mga pizza."

I shot him an incredulous stare with mouth agape.

"Are you kidding me, Law?" hindi talaga ako makapaniwala. All I had thought of was something light job, such as waiter or anything that didn't have to use much of his strength. "Ba't hindi ka naman amoy malansa sa tuwing umuwi ka? Naliligo ka pa ba bago maging pizza delivery guy? Dala mo pa 'yong kotse? Aabot ba 'yong sahod mo panggastos?"

His chiselled face didn't even moved an inch. Nanatiling matigas at nakakatakot ang ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha pero hindi ko aakalain na bahagyang gumuhit ang tipid na ngiti sa kanyang labi nang dahil sa mga tanong ko.

"I have savings, little girl. Don't worry about money, okay?" he assured. Medyo natuyo na siya rito dahil hindi pa rin siya nagbihis. "Gusto mo bang sumama sa'kin bukas hm?"

"Can I?"

"For my little girl, why not?"

"Yes! Thank you!" napangiti ako ng wala sa oras ngunit pinanatili ko ang aking katawan na nakadapa. "Anong oras tayo aalis?"

I couldn't take another day of boredom. Mas maganda siguro na sumama ako kay Law sa trabaho niya pero hindi ba ako nakakasagabal sa kanya? Baka naman ay istorbo lang ako?

"Five in the morning—"

"What?" that interrupted me from my merriment.

"We're going to the market, little girl. That's why I was making your breakfast 4am so you just have to heat it up in the oven sa oras na magising ka," malinaw na paliwanag niya. I caught sight of the muscles from his arm tensed. "Around 2am, bukas na yata ang mga tindahan sa palengke."

Kaya pala sa oras na magising ako ay madalas hindi ko na siya naaabutan. Nakaalis na pala siya maaga pa lang.

How could he sacrifice his sleep? I knew that he sleep late at night because he was doing something on his laptop and maybe sending Kuya Lazi some email about the Cavanaugh Finance Corp. that was frankly related to business. Sometimes, I caught him reading his books about laws and whatsoever at exactly midnight, it was the time I tried to sneak out of my room and go to the kitchen.

Nagmatigas kasi akong hindi kakain kaya ayon. Nagising ako sa gitna ng gabi dahil sa sobrang gutom.

"Pero magigising ako ay 8am dahil wala na 'yong phone ko, 10am noon," I grumbled, my voice had started to complain. "Alam mo namang hindi ako magigising kahit magpaputok ka pa ng Judas' Belt."

Hindi ako gumalaw sa pagkakadapa ko sa kama, I was getting comfortable on my position.

"Okay," he got up from sitting on his bed and look over at me. He was so tall that I have to crane my neck and look up at him, at his intimidating eyes. "You should sleep beside me tonight. Gigisingin kita bukas, kung hindi ka pa rin magigising..."

"Ano?"

He didn't answer.

Instead he looked at my back, right exactly the location of my butt.

Chapter 9

Cheap

I groaned in my sleep and pressed my eyelids shut. Nakadapa ang posisyon ko sa pagtulog habang yakap ko ang isang unan at nakahiga naman ang gilid ng mukha ko sa isa pang unan.

Frowning, I kept myself to fall back to sleep, yet something was disturbing and distracting me.

Why does my butt felt so heavy like the heaviest thing on earth had just put upon it? Does my butt gained weight after I ate Caprese Pasta Salad last night? Was it even possible?

Kunot noo kong minulat ang aking mga mata at napagtantong hindi nga pala ako sa kwarto ko natulog kagabi.

The familiar masculine addictive scent of Law's pillows, sheets and comforter had engulfed my breathing sense. Shades of color brown greeted me good morning.

I tried to move but why couldn't I move my limbs? I could still feel it and I wasn't numb, there's something on my butt that felt so much weight had put on me. The pajamas that I wore last night was still on, no worries if Law had done something. Speaking about something, I felt there's something hard was clinging around my waist, what was it? A metal belt?

Looking at my back, my gaze dropped on Law's head resting on my butt.

"Oh," mahinang pagsinghap ko nang nakita ang posisyon ni Law sa pwet ko.

Natutulog siya at ginamit niya pa ang pwet ko pang-unan niya. What's the purpose of these pillows scattered messily around me if he didn't use it? He'd rather use my butt?

Nakayakap ang kanyang matigas na braso sa bewang ko, that explain why I felt like

something hard was wrapped around me.

But I felt a little guilty.

Pinatulog niya ako rito sa gitna ng sariling kama niya tapos siya ay halos nahihirapan na sa kanyang posisyon. 'Yong tuhod niya kasi ay hindi na nakabot sa kama, it was hanging at the side of the bed. Halos kalahati lang ng kanyang katawan ang nakahiga sa kama dahil mas pinili niyang gawing unan ang pwet ko kesa tumabi sa akin.

I glanced at his wall clock and took a second glance when I realized what time it was.

Eight in the morning.

Akala ko ba ay maaga kaming pupunta sa palengke tapos siya pa itong tulog mantika na nakahiga sa pwet ko?

I couldn't move much so I stretched out one arm and try to reach for his hair. My hand stopped midair before I could touch his soft hair, I have remembered something.

This would be the second time that I'd have the chance to touch it? Last night he stopped me. Dumidikit kasi sa kanyang noo ang iilang hibla ng kanyang basang buhok kagabi kaya sinubukan kong hawiin pero hinuli niya lang ang kamay ko at idinikit sa kama. Bakit kaya ayaw niyang mahawakan ko ang kanyang buhok?

Either way, I had continued the delayed action. Satisfied of the feeling of his soft hair smoothly brushing against my palm, I ran my lean fingers through it thoroughly before ruffling it to wake him up.

His pointed nose was poking the side cheek of my butt and I couldn't help but let out a little and soft giggles.

"Law... Wake up, Law," hindi ko masyadong nilakasan ang boses ko, sapat lang para marinig niya. "I thought you're going to wake me up? Bakit ako ang gumigising sa'yo ngayon?"

Umungol lang siya sa kanyang pagtulog at hindi pinansin ang paggising ko sa kanya.

"Law," tawag ko ulit at medyo nilakasan na ang boses ko.

Sa tingin ko ay naiingayan siya sa akin, dahilan kung bakit isinubsob niya ang kanyang mukha sa gitna ng pwet ko at humigpit ang pagkakapulupot ng kanyang malakas na braso sa bewang ko.

I let out a frustrated sigh and frowned at him. Though I was wearing my lightweight lower pajama, I could totally feel and see how his evil pointed nose dug deeper into the center hollow line of my butt.

No. Oh my God, why does it felt so good? And no, I would not admit it to him.

Isa lang ang ginawa ko upang maialas ang kanyang mukha sa pagkakasubsob sa pwet ko.

Gripping his soft hair, I've tried and use half of my morning strength to pull his handsome face away from my butt and to my disappointment, I have failed to do so.

I heard him grunted grumpily against my butt.

"Don't do that, little girl," his voice was deep and husky and it even vibrated against my butt.

Gising na pala siya. Pero bakit ba ayaw niyang mahiwalay ang kanyang mukha sa pwet ko?

"Aw, cut it out!" I grimaced and my grip on his hair tightened, naramdaman ko kasing kinagat niya ang pwet ko at medyo masakit kaya. "Don't do what?" demand ko.

"Don't grip and pull my hair like that," sagot niya sabay hawak sa wrist ko at inalis ang aking kamay sa pagkakahawak sa malambot niyang buhok.

Naguguluhan, matapos niyang kinalas ang pagkakayakap sa bewang ko ay humiga ako ng maayos sa kama mula sa pagkakadapa kanina. Nakaupo na siya at nakatingin lang ako sa kanya. I was studying and observing him, he was a morning person. Pero bakit ang tagal niyang nagising ngayon?

"Why? Does it hurt?" worried had painted on my face. I looked down at my hands on my chest, feeling sorry. "I'm sorry."

"No, it doesn't," pagtatama niya sa maling akala ko kaya umangat ang aking paningin at muling sinalubong ang kanyang nakakatakot na paningin. "Do you know women usually grip and pull our hair when they feel pleasure during making love?"

I was surprised, of course, I didn't know that. Nakaligtaan siguro sa pagtuturo at pagpapaliwanag ni Kuya Laki sa akin ang tungkol do'n?

He used the making love term instead of sex or fuck that was informal and vulgar. There's a big difference between making love and sex or fuck, anyway.

I knew that he thought I was innocent. I doubt myself having a virgin mind after I've met Cykee plus I had a very expert brother like Kuya Laki.

"Well, I'm not a woman yet," I was being such a wiseacre. Totoo naman, I wasn't a woman yet kaya ayos lang naman siguro 'yong nagawa ko?

"Kahit na," giit niya bago sinuklay ang kanyang mga daliri sa kaniyang buhok na ginulo ko kanina. "Lalaki ako, Kryptonite. Hindi mo alam kung anong magagawa ko."

"Ano bang magagawa mo?" I mocked.

"Keep asking, I'll answer it with complete demonstration and examples with you," he threatened with that intimidating look he got. "Do you want that?"

Ilang beses akong napalunok nang napagtanto ang ibig niyang sabihin. Alam ko naman kung anong posibleng magagawa niya nang dahil sa ginawa ko, ang katangahan ko minsan ang nakakapagpahamak sa akin.

I shouldn't have ask him about it. What if he'd really do it? I was curious what was the first thing he would do in his demonstration. Was it kissing?

What the hell was I thinking? This ain't no joke, I had to think straight.

"Uhm..." halos 'di ko na makapa ang isip ko upang sabihin ang tamang sagot at salita. "N-No? No."

His chiselled face hardened. "Good, now, get up. What time is it—" he paused and searched for the time on his wristwatch. "Fuck?" mahina ang kanyang boses at parang bulong na 'yon upang 'di ko marinig pero kakalinis ko lang ng tainga ko kagabi kaya

hindi nakatakas sa pandinig ko ang murang 'yon.

In just another blink of an eye, I found myself in his arms, carrying me to get inside the bathroom before I could protest.

"Law! Anong—" hindi ko na natapos pa ang sasabihin ko nang ibinaba niya ako sa loob ng kanyang shower stall and turned on the shower unannounced. "Oh shit! Ang lamig!"

I quivered under the harsh cold water from the shower above me. Yes, I love taking bath but this one wasn't included. My pajamas were still on and it was soaked now.

"Take a bath, I'll prepare our breakfast," even if I knew that he was in a hurry, yet his ever so intimidating baritone voice remained calm.

"Hindi ka ba maliligo?" habol ko nang akmang lalabas na siya ng shower stall.

Baka mahuli siya ng dahil sa akin at isasama niya pa ako kahit na late na siya?

He paused and looked back at me. "Gusto mo'ng samahan kita?" pinasadahan niya pa ng tingin ang nabasang manipis na pajamas ko at alam kong visible na sa kanyang paningin ang suot kong puting panty at ang dibdib ko walang suot na bra. Umiwas siya ng tingin sa katawan ko at nakita ko pa ang paghigpit ng hawak niya sa hamba ng glass shower stall. "Little girl, I'll take a bath after. Magluluto muna ako."

Iniwan niya akong parang isang basang sisiw dito.

Bumaba ang tingin ko sa aking katawan at curious kung bakit naging gano'n na lang ang naging reaksiyon ni Law.

I puffed and tightly wrapped my arms around my shivering body as if Law was still here and staring at my soaking wet pajamas, sticking upon my skin.

Mas malala pa pala ang nakikita ko kesa sa naisip ko kung anong hitsura ko kanina.

Piece by piece, I took off the pair of my soaked pajamas and underwear then tossed it outside the shower stall. Not bothering if where did it go.

Naked, I started cleaning myself up.

Regularly, after taking my refreshing bath, I went out of the bathroom to see a simple pair of clothes comfortably laying on Law's bed. He always prepare it whenever I use his bathroom.

Just dark jeans and dark brown sweatshirt.

Nangialam na naman siguro siya sa closet ko, that's why I had provided myself a secret part of my wardrobe where I could stuff and secure those sexy, daring and exclusively for adults only—gifts that Cykee had given to me.

The time passed by like a blur and now we're heading to the market.

"It's almost ten, Law," wika ko habang hawak ang kanyang kamay at nakatingin sa kanyang wristwatch, medyo mabigat pa nga ang kanyang malaking kamay. His other hand was having control of the wheel. "Hindi ka ba papagalitan?"

"Mabait naman si Manang Sonya," he stole a quick glance at me, sitting on the front seat before focusing his eyes on the road.

"Pero what about your other job? Pizza delivery guy mamayang hapon? Saan tayo

kakain ng lunch?" dagdag tanong ko at binitawan na ang kanyang kamay kaya bumagsak ito sa hita ko.

"Don't worry, may karinderya naman malapit sa palengke," aniya at ni hindi man lang nag-iba ang ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha. Guwapo pa rin ngunit nakakatakot.

"Karinderya? You mean, a restaurant?"

"No, little girl," he pulled back his hand from my lap and hold the wheel with both hands to turn the car to the left direction of the road. "Kainan ng mga taong nagtitipid at may kaya sa buhay."

"A cheap restaurant then?" I guessed.

"Yeah, sort of," tipid na naman siyang ngumiti. Pinapahayag sa akin na natutuwa siya sa pagiging usisera ko.

At least he's improving.

Hindi na ako nagtanong ulit at hinayaan siyang magpokus sa pagmamaneho. I set my eyes outside and eyed every small buildings that we've passed by.

We're getting nearer to the market and I had noticed that some cars ain't like Law's. Mostly, it was just a simple and by color jeepney, jeep, tricycle, old pickup and motors. I could see trucks full of sack and who knows what's inside those sacks. Maybe rice, onion and whatchamacallits.

The wet market was crowded, some people were walking at the side of the road with their own baskets. From where I was, I could see what's inside the wet market. There were small stores or should I say just some tables where they could easily display their for sale goods, fresh fish or seafoods and any other food supplies. There's a scale too so they could weigh it.

My eyes began to form into shining and shimmering hearts when I caught sight of my favorite vegetables.

Nang nakahanap na ng isang space lot si Law dito ay ipinark niya na agad ang kotse para makababa na kami.

"Don't let go of my hand, little girl, okay?" mariing utos niya nang nakababa na kami at agad na hinawakan ang maliit kong kamay gamit ang malaking kamay niya. "Maraming tao, baka mawala ka."

Napalington ako sa mga grupo ng kababaihan na malapit sa amin, they were somewhat I could say, laughing? No, giggling perhaps.

Sinundan ko ng tingin ang kanilang mga mata at nakitang si Law pala ang tinitigan at pinag-uusapan nila. Napaatras pa ako nang nagtagpo ang mga mata namin ni Law na kanina pa pala nakatingin sa akin.

"Kryptonite," he enunciated my name.

"Huh?"

"I said, don't let go of me," mariing sabi niya sa akin saka ko naramdaman ang paghigpit ng pagkakahawak niya sa kamay ko. "Do you understand?" Law emphasized each word for me.

"I understand," masunurin kong sagot. I ignored the girls that I caught, maybe gossiping about Law.

Hinila ako ni Law palayo sa sasakyan at tumawid papunta sa kabilang side ng kalsada kung saan papasok kami sa napakalaki at napakalawak na building. Walang dingding, o kahit ano, nagsiksikan pa nga ang mga nagtitinda rito.

Medyo marami-rami ang mga mamimili kaya natagalan kami sa pag-usad at napapangiwi na lang ako sa tuwing may taong hindi sinasadyang maapakan ang paa ko. I was wearing slippers because that's what Law wanted me to wear. Kakarating lang namin dito pero ang dumi na ng paa ko.

Hindi na rin naman ako nagreklamo, ginusto ko naman 'to. Kaya pala pinasuot niya ako ng hoodie nalang instead sa sweatshirt na hinanda niya kanina. He was just wearing another black plain tee shirt and dark pants, mas malinis kasi tignan kaysa naman sa mga light color na tee shirt at nandito pa kami sa palengke kaya madaling mamantsahan 'yon kung sakaling light color ang sinuot niyang damit.

Cleanliness and we'll organized? That's Law. Daig niya pa ang babae.

Kung kanina ay si Law lang ang nakahawak sa kamay ko, ako na ngayon ang halos kumapit sa maskuladong braso niya.

"Law, malayo pa ba tayo?"

"Malapit na," he answered curtly.

I was somewhat tiptoeing, crane my neck just to see what's in front of us from afar, some people were taller than me. Ang hirap, buti pa si Law ay walang kahirap-hirap na nakikita ang daan na patutunguhan namin.

Bumuntong hininga ako nang sa wakas ay nakarating na kami sa sinasabi niya. Isinandal ko pa ang bahagi ng sentido ko sa itaas na bahagi ng kanyang matigas na braso dahil hindi naabot ng ulo ko ang kanyang balikat.

"Hijo! Akala ko ay hindi ka na makakarating, wala pa naman si Onin, walang magbubuhay ng mga bagong dating na karne," sabi ng medyo matandang babae sa kabilang side ng mesang may nakadisplay na mga karne. Sa likuran niya ay may nakasabit na mga plastic bag, may kulay dilaw na ilaw sa itaas at nakatapat sa mga paninda niya.

"Ako na po, Manang Sonya," magalang na boluntaryo ni Law bago lumipat ang tingin sa akin. "Oo nga pala, si Kryptonite... bunsong kapatid ko."

I was shy and stood perfectly straight in front of the old woman. Really straight in front 'cause I didn't have much size of breast.

"Hi... ahm po?" I tried to be polite too as much as I could and smile. Hindi ako bumaling ng tingin kay Law kahit na alam ko namang nakatingin siya sa akin.

"Ang gandang bata naman nito, baka pagkakaguluhan 'yan ng mga binata rito, hijo?" nakangiting sabi ng matandang babae na siyang tinawag na Manang Sonya ni Law. "Hayok pa naman sa mga magagandang dalaga ang mga 'yon."

I didn't know but a kind smile had painted on my lips.

"Nay, nakabayad na po ako ng renta dito sa puwesto natin."

I shifted my look to the newcomer who had interrupted our conversation.

My smile faded.

Ang bagong dating ay isang babae na sa tingin ko ay ka-edad lang ni Law. Around twenty-one or twenty two? Law was twenty three anyway. Hindi na talaga bumalik ang ngiti ko nang nakita ko ang hubog ng katawan niya kahit na isang fitted at lumang damit lang ang suot niya.

She had a really nice shape and size of boobs. 'Yong tipong bahagyang tumatalbog kapag tumatakbo siya. Her body was fit with those perfect curves.

Hindi ko na nga namalayan na kanina pa pala ako bumitaw mula sa pagkakakapit sa braso ni Law.

Why was I insecure when it comes to women or girls that have blessed with nice breast? Konting arte lang siguro sa katawan niya ay magkakagusto na sa kanya si Law. She's gorgeous and comfortable under her own skin.

"Oh Law? Akala ko ay hindi ka makakapagtrabaho ngayon e, madalas ay maaga ka naman," kaswal na tanong ng babae na sa tingin ko ay anak ni Manang Sonya.

She didn't even notice my presence, she was staring at Law like her world had revolved around him.

"Kailangan kong kumayod, Tira," tanging sagot ni Law.

Si Tira ba ang dahilan kung bakit siya nagmamadali kanina?

Mas madalas silang nagkikita at magkasama dahil araw-araw naman dito si Law simula noong natapos ang kanyang huling semester. Ang sabi pa ni Law ay dito siya nagtrabaho noong naglayas siya.

That means, they had known each other since then. Isang taon ko rin kayang hindi nakita si Law, kaya malay ko ba, baka naging sila ng babaeng 'to or worse may nangyari sa kanila na kababalaghan.

"Anak, si-ano pa nga ulit ang pangalan mo hija?" singit ni Manang Sonya

"Kryptonite po."

It wasn't me. It was Law who answered Manang Sonya's question.

"Si Kryptonite, bunsong kapatid ni Law," pakilala ni Manang Sonya sa akin sa anak niya.

Saka pa ako napansin ni Tira.

"Ba't 'di mo naman naikuwento sa akin na may babaeng kapatid ka pala, Law?" nakakunot ang noo niya at nakasimangot kay Law bago ibinalik ang tingin sa akin. "Hi, ako nga pala si Tira. Sandalan at madalas ay naging yaya na nitong kuya mo."

Gano'n sila kalapit sa isa't isa? Masakit 'yon, 'yong 'di pala ako naikuwento ni Law sa kaibigan niyang ubod ng sexy. Kahiya-hiya ba talaga ako?

"Hello, I'm Kryptonite, ang pinakawalang-kwentang bunsong kapatid ni Law," natatawa kong sabi pero bakas talaga sa boses ko ang pagiging sarkastiko.

I didn't dare to look, let alone glance at Law. Alam kong mas nakakatakot na ang paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin.

Hindi naman na sila nagtanong tungkol sa sinabi ko at sa walang galang na pagtawag ko kay Law.

"Saan nga po pala ang mga timba ng isda na bubuhatin ko, Manang Sonya?" pag-iiba ni Law sa usapan. Mababa ang kanyang boses ngunit malinaw na narinig namin sa kabila ng mga maingay na sigawan ng mga nagtitinda t mamingling nagtatanong.

"Nasa labas, hijo. 'Yong kulay pulang truck?" sagot ni Manang Sonya habang pinapaypayan ang mga paninda niya gamit ang isang stick na may pinagkukumpol-kumpol na mga ginunting na cellophane sa dulo.

Sa labas? Malayo yata 'yon at lalakarin pa niya? Ang lawak at laki naman kasi ng palengke.

"Sige po," Law held my arm and pulled me to walked around the long cemented and tiled table where the fish and meat had displayed.

Nasa loob na kami ng kinaroroonan ni Manang Sonya at nasa tabi niya na ako nakatayo.

"Samahan na kita, Law," habol ni Tira na parang naghahanda na rin upang sumama kay Law.

Wait a second. Bakit ipinasok ako rito ni Law?

"Manang may upuan pa po ba? Dito na muna si Kry—"

"No, I'm coming with you," I cut him off from asking Manang Sonya for another chair for me to sit.

Iiwan niya ako rito tapos sasama sa kanya si Tira? Dapat 'di ba ay manatili rito si Tira at tulungan ang nanay niya sa pagtitinda?

"Kry, medyo malayo ang pupuntahan namin," maikling paliwanag niya. He was holding both of my arms, leaning his face down closer to mine. "It's better if you'll just stay and wait here."

I couldn't explain what I was feeling. Naiinis na naman ako sa kanya at hindi ko alam kung bakit.

"And so I thought I'm safe from boredom," I rolled my eyes at him, showing him how exasperated I was.

Acting like a brat again, was I? I just didn't like the idea of being left alone here, though I wasn't really alone 'cause here was Manang Sonya but still, he was the only person that I know in this crowded place.

Tapos pinagkakatiwala niya ako sa taong ngayon ko pa nakilala? I wasn't judging, I was securing myself from danger. That's all.

"Kryptonite," he warned, voice was stern and fatherlike.

I pursed my lips in anger, chin was tilted up to fight his intimidating stare.

"Fine!" padabog kong sabi at nang nakita ko ang paglagay ni Manang Sonya ng isang malinis na plastic na upuan sa likuran ko ay pabagsak din akong umupo. "Umalis ka na at sana ay hindi ka na makakabalik."

Pinagkrus ko ang aking mga braso at tumingin na lamang sa mga taong dumadaan o 'di kaya'y tumingin sa mga paninda ni Manang Sonya. May ibang katabing nanininda rito na napatingin sa direksyon namin ni Law.

The stench smell of the market irritated my nose. I cringed.

Narinig ko sa gilid ko kung saan nakatayo pa rin si Law ang paghinga niya ng malalim na parang pinapahaba niya ang kanyang pasensya sa akin.

"Okay, fine, little girl," he surrendered. Himala na marahan ang kanyang boses ngayon. "You can come with me."

Hindi ko siya tinignan at nagpatuloy sa pagtingin sa mga taong dumadaan.

"No, thank you," I said in a tone of sarcasm and polite. "I changed my mind, dito nalang ako with Manang Sonya. Ayoko na sa'yo."

Nahagip ng paningin ko si Tira na kanina pa naghihintay kay Law. Medyo naiinip na ang kanyang ekspresyon sa mukha.

"Kry, don't start--"

"Oh hala? Hindi ka ba nahihiya, Law? Hinihintay ka na ni Ate Tira oh," nguso ko sa kinaroroonan ni Tira, nagpapakitang tao lang nang tinawag ko siyang ate.

That's what Law have taught me about Dana. I should call her ate since she's years older than me but why the hell he couldn't taught me to call him kuya instead of the others?

Bakit ganito? Walang dahilan at walang saysay 'tong ginagawa ko. Hindi ko na nga alam kung ano ang nararamdaman ko ngayon.

"Mag-usap tayo pagbalik ko," nakakatakot na ang kanyang boses nang binulong niya sa akin ang mga salitang 'yon.

"Kung makakabalik ka pa," I fired back.

Umirap ako kay Law nang naramdaman ko ang marahang paghalik niya sa noo at tuktok ng ulo ko bago siya bumaling kay Manang Sonya na nakaupo rin sa ibang upuan sa tabi ko. "Manang Sonya, pakibantayan po, baka aalis."

"Walang problema, hijo," sa kabila ng pag-aasikaso ng bagong dating na mamimili ni Manang Sonya ay nagawa niya pa ring sagutin si Law.

Law left with Tira walking beside him. The only thing that I could do was watch them blending through the crowd 'til they're out of sight.

What was I going to do now? Let this ennui kill me or I'd kill it and find something interesting to do?

Almost fifteen minutes had wasted, hindi pa rin nakarating si Law at Tira mula sa kung saang lupalop ng palengke man sila. Minsan kapag dumadami na ang mamimili ni Manang Sonya ay tinutulungan ko siya dahil medyo nahihirapan siya, wala pa rito si Tira dahil mas piniling samahan si Law kaysa tulungan ang nanay niya rito.

"Kryptonite?"

Kakaupo ko pa lang mula sa pagtulong kay Manang Sonya nang may narinig akong

pamilyar na boses ng lalaki. It sounded like the mild version of Law's intimidating voice.

I turned to where the voice came from and I was right.

"Rule?" nanlaki pa ang mga mata ko nang nakita ko siya rito. "What are you doing here?"

He was wearing a dark blue polo shirt and dark pants. Katulad ng lagi niyang ginagawa ay tumingin siya diretso sa mga mata ko. "Shouldn't I be the one who's asking that question to you?"

"Well, I'm here with my brother, he works here," I shrugged, bakas sa boses ko ang pagkabagot habang bahagyang nakanguso.

"Brother? Law Cavanaugh?"

"Yeah," walang ganang sagot ko. Naaalala ko na naman ang nangyari kanina kaya iniba ko ang usapan. "Bakit ka nandito?"

He looked the same the last time that I saw him, at DSWD. Guwapo pa rin pero pagdating sa pangangatawan ay mas brusko at matipuno pa rin talaga si Law. I'd rather talk to him than Law, iba kasi si Law. Mas nakakatakot at mas marahas kapag nilabag o sumuway ako sa mga utos niya.

Rule? I felt like I had a temporary freedom with him.

"Liu-Mart, my mother's family merchandising business, malapit lang dito," wika niya, I could clearly see a little sweat slowly cascading from his forehead down to his temple. "Gusto nilang matuto ako sa pagnenegosyo, kaya heto ako ngayon, summer naman kaya ayos lang."

Alam kong nakarating na si Law na may dalang isang malaking timba na nakapatong sa kanyang kanang balikat, puno ng mga isda ang timba na may ice sa loob. I could see him at the corner of my eyes.

I ignored him, instead I pay more attention to Rule.

"Gusto mo ba'ng sumama sa Liu-Mart?" Rule asked, if I wasn't mistaken, I heard the hope in his voice. Hoping for me to answer yes.

I opened my mouth to say yes but no words have come out from my it when another intimidating and superior voice had interrupted us.

"Kryptonite, sumama ka sa'kin. Kung ayaw mo, hindi na talaga ako babalik."

Chapter 10

Unexpected

I felt sorry for Rule to reject his offer and go with Law. Unpleasantly, Tira have come with us, we left Manang Sonya alone. What kind of daughter was she? Leaving her mother with those bunch of customers. Why does she have to come with us anyway?

What help could she possibly give to Law?

Law could totally handle himself, he's a big man.

His grip on my wrist was so tight, was he afraid that I might get lost? I just thought that he had the intention to break my wrist just by the look and the way he hold it. I was so lucky that the sleeves of my hoodie have reached my wrist, as to my protection from his oh-so-hard and large hand.

'Yong paa ko, ang dumi na at sigurado akong may iilang talsik ng maduming tubig mula sahi ang jeans ko.

How did he survive in this place? The smell was unpleasant and I feel sick and nausea because of the dense people, accidentally hitting their body against me. Thankfully, Law had protected me from them with his large body. He kept me behind him and he'd catch all the different body that was supposed to be crashed against my smaller one.

Naiinitan na rin ako nang dahil sa suot ko pero ang sabi ni Law ay kailangan hindi ko raw dapat alisin 'tong hoodie. Baka ay mairita ang balat ko at mamumula.

Kanina, bago ako hinawakan ni Law ay naghugas pa siya ng kamay. Nadumihan kasi nang dahil sa binuhat niyang malaking timba. He made sure that his hands were clean enough to touch me, I didn't mind anyway. Kahit putik o alikabok pa 'yang nasa kamay niya ay ayos lang naman sa akin na hawakan niya ako.

"Law, are you okay?" it was a sudden question. Nahawakan ko kasi ang damit niya sa likod habang naglalakad kami palabas at naramdamang basang basa 'yon ng pawis niya. "Pwede ba akong tumulong sa pagbubuhat?"

I could help, yes, but the problem was, could I actually carry a large bucket full of fresh fish with ice?

Narinig ko ang mahinang pagtawa ni Tira sa tabi ni Law, nasa likuran kasi ako ni Law. Buti pa siya, kasabay ni Law sa paglalakad habang ako ay nasa likod na parang buntot.

"I'm okay, little girl," nakapokus ang mga mata niya sa daan nang nagsalita siya. "Hindi ka puwedeng magbuhat. Trabaho ko 'to."

"But I wanna help," giit ko, nakaangat ang tingin sa likod ng kanyang ulo.

Judging by the scowl on Tira's face when she turned her head to glance at me, she looked unhappy.

Kanina nang silang dalawa lang ni Law ang magkasama ay ang laki ng ngiti niya sa labi. Gusto niya lang yata ma-solo si Law.

"Sana ay nanatili ka na lang kung gusto mo'ng makatulong sa kuya mo," her sweet voice sounded like she was dictating me of what's the right thing to do. "Mas napapabagal ang trabaho niya dahil sa pagsama mo."

And there I thought that she's a nice woman. Medyo may pagkadijetsahan ang pagkakasabi niya no'n, without knowing that she was already hurting my feelings and pride.

"Sinama ko siya, Tirana," here goes Law's intimidating voice.

The fear was visible on Tira's face. Kahit gano'n ay pinagpatuloy niya pa rin ang

kanyang binabalak na sabihin.

"Bakit mo sinama? Alam mo'ng makakasagabal lang siya, Law. Baka mawala pa siya, problema mo na naman?"

Pinagpipilitan niya ang alam niyang tama at kung tutuusin ay tama naman talaga siya.

I was silently listening even through the noise of the wet market.

Napakuyom ako sa aking kamay kung saan hawak ni Law ang pulsuhan ko. Insulted and offended, how dare she made me easily feel it?

"Sagabal?" I stopped my feet from walking kaya natigilan din sa paglakad si Law at Tira. May tao pa nga'ng nagreklamo nang dahil sa paharang-harang kami sa daan. Pinili nalang nilang dumaan sa gilid namin kesa sa makipag-away pa. Humarap sa akin si Law at mariin na pinag-aralan ang ekspresyon sa mukha niya gamit ang kanyang paraan na pagtitig sa akin. "Sagabal ba ako, Law?"

"No," he shook his head quickly. "No, you're not, little girl."

Inilipat ko ang aking tingin sa likuran namin kung saan kami nanggaling at dumaan. Napakaraming tao at pilit ko inaalala ang daan pabalik.

I wasn't good in directions.

"Hindi niya naman siguro masasabi 'yon kung hindi totoo 'di ba?" muli kong ibinalik ang aking tingin kay Law na naramdaman kong unti-unting lumuluwang ang pagkakahawak sa palapulsuhan ko. I took a quick glance at Tira, waiting for us before staring back at Law. "Babalik nalang ako."

Kasabay ng pagkakasabi ko no'n ay ang mabilis at puwersahan kong paghawig ng kanyang kamay sa wrist ko. His hold on my wrist wasn't that tight anymore, that's why my wrist easily slid off from his grasp.

Mabilis akong tumakbo pabalik sa dinadaan namin kanina kahit na may minsan na tumatama ang katawan ko sa ibang katawan at nabubunggo ko pa ang ibang naglalakad lang na nakakasalubong ko sa masikip at mataong daan.

"Kryptonite," I heard Law called and ran after me. "Kryptonite!"

"Law! Paano na 'yong-" hindi ko na narinig ang susunod na sasabihin ni Tira dahil sa pagtakbo ko palayo sa kanila.

Maingat akong tumakbo dahil madulas 'yong sahig at baka ay maabutan pa ako ni Law.

Hinahabol niya pa rin ba ako? Sana ay hindi dahil may trabaho pa siyang kailangang tapusin at kaya ko naman ang sarili ko. Kakayanin ko.

Isa pa ay gusto ko ring mapag-isa at lumayo sa kanila. Ayoko ma'ng aminin pero inaamin ko na, totoo ang mga sinabi ni Tirana. Sagabal lang ako kay Law.

Where was it again? Shit. I forgot.

Saan ba ako liliko? Sa kanan o kaliwa? Ba't ba kasi ang daming pasikot-sikot dito.

Hinihingan na huminto muna ako sa paglalakad at inilibot ang paningin sa kung nasaang bahagi ng wet market na ako.

I regretted coming with Law. If only I accepted Rule's offer then I wouldn't be in this situation. I was afraid that Law would leave me and never come back, so I chose to come with him.

With all the strength that I got, I was about to walk to the left but was stopped by a familiar large hand, gripped my arm and dragged me back to face its owner.

"Sinuway mo na naman ako, Kryptonite."

He was breathing spasmodically, the sweats from his forehead-and I sure was, also the sweats from his back had multiplied.

Pinanood ko siyang mabilis na humihinga sa harap ko at bahagyang nakaawang ang namumulang mga labi na kanina ay kagat niya pa ang pang-ibabang bahagi no'n. Taas baba ang kanyang dibdib na parang kagagaling niya lang sa isang larong pabilisan ng paglangoy at tagaktak ang malalaking patak ng pawis sa gilid ng kanyang mukha.

"L-Law, bakit mo ako hinabol? Dapat ay tumuloy na kayo, babalik lang naman ako kina Manang Sonya," puno ng kama ang nababalot sa boses ko. I got a feeling that this day would end bad, very bad.

He could intimidate me by the way he look at me, those eyes as hard as metal and stone. That handsome chiselled face and strong jaw that could make my knees wobble and eventually melt.

Today? I wasn't going to be affected by that. I wanted to be like the other women he have been, those fellow females could ignore his tendency to intimidate.

Pero alam kong sa oras na nauubusan ng pasensya si Law ay may mas malala pa sa isang nakakatakot na tingin ang magagawa niya.

I have remembered what he did to Dana. Tinulak niya ang babae nang nahuli niya akong pinapanood sila.

"Babalik?" pag-uulit niya sa sinabi ko. Parang tinanong na din ako kung tama ba ang narinig niya. "Sige, ituro mo nga sa akin 'yong daan pabalik."

Pakiramdam ko ay parang hinahamon niya ako.

I looked away, his intense eyes were burning into mine, if I didn't look away, I might as well end up burning. He had those eyes of a villain in a fairytale.

Looking around the place that's near where I was standing. I surveyed my eyes carefully and could see some displays of various fruits. Just fruits, so where could I possibly find the fish and meat section in this wet market?

Baka nasa unahan lang?

"Uhm... syempre, doon," tinuro ko 'yong kaliwa kung saan sana ako pupunta.

I brought back my gaze to Law and immediately drop it down on the wet floor, on my dirty feet.

Believe me or not, I had witnessed Law's jaw, tensed and clenched. Unfriendly and I knew that it was a terrible sign for me. How wrathful.

Dapat sana hindi nalang ako tumakbo. Nasaktan lang naman kasi ako sa sinabi ni Tirana. Kasalanan ko ba'ng tinakot ako ni Law na kapag hindi ako sumama sa kanya ay hindi na talaga siya babalik?

"Hindi," matigas ang kanyang boses nang sinabi niya 'yon. Parang hinihigit akong tumingin sa kanya kaya ginawa ko. Tumingin ako sa kanya. Mabilis na nagtagpo ang aming paningin at tumitig siya sa kailaliman ng aking mga mata na parang ayaw niyang putulin ang pagtitigan namin sa mata ng isa't isa. Our stare at each other last in just a second, he raised his hand up to point somewhere we've just walked by. Sinundan ko ng tingin sa kung saan nakaturo ang kanyang hintuturo. "Doon ang daan at liliko sa kanan, pagliko mo ay diretso lang hanggang sa pangatlong palikuan ay lumiko ka sa kaliwa at sa kanan ulit tapos nasa pangatlong puwesto ng mga isdaan. Matatagpuan mo ro'n si Manang Sonya."

Napalunok ako nang dahil sa paliwanag niya na iilan lang ulit ang natandaan ko kasi ang dami namang lilikuan?

I was disoriented. My mind was clouded with the thought of Tirana and the truth in her words.

Bizarre feelings attacked my system and I haven't figured what was it. It was odd and I felt embarrassed under Law's scrutiny.

Frankly speaking, I was immature and fragile, easy to hurt and get affected. I wasn't thinking when I ran off and tried to get away from them.

I cleared my throat. "So, malayo pa pala ako?" Thankful that I didn't stuttered, I continued. "Okay, gets ko na. Alis na ako, bumalik ka na-"

"Hindi na ako babalik," ang malalim niyang boses ay parang nagmamadali. "Uuwi na tayo, ngayon."

Hindi pa nga ako nakapagprotesta nang hinila niya ako papunta sa kung saan na siguro ay palabas ng wet market at patungo sa pinagparkehan niya ng kanyang kotse.

"Law!" a familiar sweet but brave voice have called from a distance from behind us. "Saan kayo pupunta?"

Tumigil si Law sa paglalakad kaya natigilan din ako. Humarap siya sa kinaroroonan ng boses na 'yon kahit na may iilang taong dumaan sa gilid at harapan namin ay malinaw naming nakikita si Tirana na parang hinabol ng lion sa sobrang pagmamadaling makahabol sa amin.

"Uuwi na kami, babalik na lang ako bukas ng umaga," walang pag-aalinlangang sagot ni Law nang huminto sa harap namin si Tirana.

Just like Law, she was breathing rapidly and sweats rolling from her temple when she approached us. Looking haggard.

And those boobs of hers, bounced the way she run and move. I wasn't jealous, so what if she had those kind of boobs? At least I can run properly without those heavy thing bouncing. Distracting people from what they're doing.

Humarap ako kay Law kaya nakatalikod na ako kay Tira. "Wait, no. Paano 'yong trabaho mo ngayon? Paano na si Manang Sonya, Law? 'Di ba ay wala nang ibang magbubuhat no'n?"

Hinawakan ko ang braso ni Law gamit ang dalawa kong kamay, nararamdaman ko ang umiigting na kalamnan sa braso niya, siguro ay dahil sa paghabol sa akin.

Nakababa ang tingin niya sa akin, pinapanood ko kung paano ko palihim at marahang hinahaplos ang matigas niyang braso.

I was trying to soothe the tensed muscles on his arm.

"Fine, little girl. Tatapusin ko ang trabaho ko," saad niya, unti-unti na ring nirelax ang kanyang matigas na braso. "Sasama ka sa akin at 'wag na 'wag kang aalis ulit. Alam mo naman siguro kung anong mangyayari 'di ba?"

I knew what he was referring to. The spank or suck and not just that, who knows what he could do to me.

"Pero ayokong maging sagabal sa trabaho mo, Law," I defended my side, apektado pa rin sa sinabi ni Tirana kanina. Pinanood niya lang kami at naghintay.

"Hindi, hindi ka sagabal, okay?" mabilis ang hindi niya pagsang-ayon sa sinabi ko.

"Okay..."

Law guided me, he wasn't just holding me on my wrist but he wrapped his strong arms around me. Kasabay ko na siya sa paglalakad nang nilagpasan namin si Tirana at ngayon ay siya naman ang nakabuntot sa amin.

Nang nakarating kami sa tinuro ni Law na lumiko sa kanan pabalik sa kinaroroonan ni Manang Sonya ay biglang nagsalita si Tira sa likuran namin.

"Ah, Law. Babalik nalang muna ako," pagpapaalam niya dahilan kung bakit lumingon sa kanya si Law. "Ayos lang ba sa inyo?"

"Ayos lang, Tira. Salamat," tipid na sagot ni Law bago ako iginiya ulit papunta sa kung saan upang makalabas patungo sa nasabing kulay pulang truck.

I glanced behind and found Tirana, watching Law walk away from her. She looked disconsolate with those sad eyes.

Did she thought that Law would stop her and convince her to come with us like what he did to me?

Nahuli ako ni Tirana na nakatingin sa kanya habang naglalakad kami palayo ni Law, nahuli ko rin naman ang paraan ng pagtingin niya kay Law. We're even. Siya ang unang umiwas ng tingin at umalis na sa kinatatayuan niya.

Siguro ay napansin niya yata na hindi naman na siya kailangan ni Law kaya mas pinili niya nang umalis.

Ba't ang daming nagkakagusto sa kapatid ko? 'Yong totoo ay masama naman minsan ang ugali ni Law o baka naman ay sa akin niya lang pinapakita ang ugali niyang 'yon dahil pasaway ako at madalas nasasangkot sa gulo?

"Does your feet hurt, little girl?" he asked when I almost stumble on my feet because I wasn't watching where we're going. "Do you want me to carry you?"

His eyes were focused on our way. Buti nalang talaga at nahawakan niya ako ng maayos, kung hindi ay baka kanina pa sumubsob ang mukha ko sa madumi at basang sahig ng wet market.

"No, nakakahiya at ang daming tao, Law."

Saglit na sumulyap siya sa paa ko nang huminto kami sa paglalakad dahil sa huminto rin naman sa paglalakad ang mga taong nasa unahan namin, traffic. Kunot noo siyang tumingin sa mukha ko. "Anong nangyari sa paa mo?"

"I don't know," humawak ako sa kanyang tee shirt nang may nahuli akong iilang lalaki na pinasadahan ng tingin ang katawan at mukha ko. "Ang dami kasing tao but it's okay," I smiled at Law, ignoring the guys.

"Sa susunod magsusuot ka na ng boots sa tuwing sasama ka sa akin dito," buo na ang kanyang desisyon na para namang makikipag-away pa ako sa kanya.

"Isasama mo pa rin ako kahit nakakasagabal na ako?"

"Isasama kita, hindi dahil sa magtatrabaho ako, kung 'di ay dito na ako bibili ng pagkain natin," nagpatuloy kami sa paglalakad nang umusad na ang taong nasa unahan namin. "Hindi na ako magtatrabaho."

"Why?" naguguluhang tanong ko. "Dahil ba sa'kin? Pero ang sabi mo ay kailangan mo'ng magtatrabaho?"

"Tabi! Tabi!"

Mabilis kaming tumabi ni Law. Gano'n din ang mga taong nasa likuran namin.

Hindi niya natuloy ang pagsagot niya sa tanong ko at nanatiling mahigpit ang pagkakapalibot ng kanyang braso sa likod ko.

Dumaan sa gilid namin ang isang matabang lalaki na may tinutulak na bakal na de gulong, parang taga-karga ng mga mabibigat na supply ng mga pagkain.

We walked onward after the fat guy in a haste past by.

Bumalik sa aking isip ang pinag-usapan namin kanina.

Why does he have to quit his job here? Paano na 'yong mga gastusin namin? If daddy closed his bank account then no worries because I still have mine, unless daddy found out about the troubles that I've been in school? May hindi ba sinasabi sa akin si Law?

Pati rin ba ang bank account ko? Kaya ba kailangan niyang kumayod? Kung hihingi nalang kaya kami ng tulong kay Kuya Lazi? He was trained to run the company, the Cavanaugh Finance Corp. How about Grandpa Sattie? I was sure that he's going to help us, sa kanya lang sumusunod si daddy.

"You're my priority, little girl," sabi ni Law nang papalapit na kami sa labasan ng wet market. Mukhang nababasa niya ang nasa isip ko nang dahil sa ekspresyon ko sa mukha. "Trust me, okay? Hindi ka magugutom."

"Pero—"

"Naiintindihan mo ba ako?"

"Yes, Law," agarang sagot ko at hindi na nakipagtalo pa.

The time I stepped foot on the outside cemented ground of the wet market, I inhaled some air, at least it wasn't as unpleasant as the smell inside the wet market yet it was not as fresh as the air in Grandpa Sattie's land either.

Law knew where the aforementioned truck was located. Nang nakarating kami roon ay may mga kalalakihang nagbubuhay at kinukuha ang mga malalaking balde o timba na may lamang isda, pumasok sila sa loob ng wet market upang ihatid 'yon.

"Stay here, okay?" utos ni Law, hinila niya pa ang hood ng hoodie ko upang takpan ang ulo ko bago niya ako iniwan dito sa isang sulok malapit sa kinaroroonan ng truck. Siguro ay kukunin niya lang doon ang mga isdang para kay Manang Sonya?

While waiting, I inspected the place with my eyes.

Busy people. Working hard for their family, katulad nalang ng ginagawa ni Law ngayon.

"Ate, palimos po, pambili lang po ng tinapay."

Muntik na akong napatalon nang naramdaman ko ang isang maliit na kamay na humihila sa laylayan ng hoodie ko.

It was a little boy, mahigpit niyang hawak ang isang musmos na babaeng mas bata sa kanya na parang takot ito na baka ay mawala ang batang babae.

Shaggy and dirty old clothes, that's what I could say of what they're both wearing.

What are they doing in the street of the wet market? They should be at home, playing and enjoying their childhood. But then I realized that not all kids and babies born with fortune and gold.

They must've been very hungry.

I checked my jeans' pockets if I could fish some money or at least coins. I cursed on my mind when I remembered that I haven't brought even one peso coin with me. My wallet was left in Law's car.

"Dito lang kayo, okay? Mabilis lang ako," paalam ko sa batang lalaki at tumango naman ito kaya naglakad na ako papunta sa kukay pulang truck kung saan may kukunin si Law.

Nakatalikod sa kinaroroonan ko si Law kaya marahan kong hinila ang kanyang damit upang makuha ko ang kanyang atensyon.

Agad naman siyang lumingon sa akin na sobrang dilim ng ekspresyon sa mukha, nagulat ako at napaatras. His face somewhat softened when he recognized me, his little girl.

"What did I told you, Kryptonite?" he demanded in a low tone of voice.

Hindi naman ako napapansin ng ibang lalaking nandito, sa laki ng katawan ni Law ay hindi na nila ako makikita.

"May pera ka ba, Law?"

"Para saan?"

Kung sasabihin ko ba'ng para sa mga batang nanghihingi ng pagkain sa akin ay bibigyan niya kaya ako? Kaya lang ay naalala ko ang sinabi niya kanina sa akin. He won't let me starve.

"I'm hungry," I lied. "Please?"

May kinuha siya sa kanyang bulsa at akala ko ay may dala siyang wallet. Pera lang din pala, iniwan niya rin siguro sa kotse ang wallet niya.

"May tindahan doon, malapit lang," turo niya sa isang bakeshop sa kabilang side ng kalsada at malapit lang sa pinag-iwanan niya sa akin. "Bumalik ka agad."

He handed me his money.

Fifty pesos, this was enough for the kids.

"Thank you," nakokonsensyang sabi ko kaya para mawala 'yong guilt na nararamdaman ko ay hinalikan ko siya sa kanyang pisngi, I tiptoed to reach his face dahil sa sobrang tangkad niya bago ako naglakad pabalik sa mga bata.

Dinala ko ang dalawang kawawang bata sa sinabing bakeshop ni Law at binilhan sila ng tig-iisang soft drinks at apat na tinapay.

"Salamat po!" maligayang sabi nito saka ko sila iniwan at bumalik na.

Naghintay ako kay Law hanggang sa dumating na siya na may dalawang timba ang nasa magkabilang balikat niya.

Walang kahirap-hirap niya 'yong binuhat.

"Kumapit ka sa damit ko, Kryptonite," mas lalong nagpapakita ang mga muscles sa kanyang braso nang dahil sa paraan ng pagbuhat niya ng dalawang timba. "I can't hold you, now, hold me, okay?"

I did. Para na akong batang nakakapit sa laylayan ng damit niya at takot na baka ay mawala.

Naglakad na kami pabalik at sa gitna ng napakaraming abalang tao. I didn't expected him to say something.

"Sinabi mo nalang sana sa akin na bibigyan mo 'yong mga batang nanlilimos. Hindi mo naman kailangang nagsinungaling sa akin."

With my downcast eyes, I looked at his butt. Nasa likuran niya kasi ako, nakasunod at nakakapit sa kanyang damit.

I was guilty. Paano niya nalamang ginawa ko 'yon? Siguro ay nakita niya mula sa malayo, akala ko ay hindi niya mapapansin dahil nakatalikod naman siya at abala rin.

"I'm sorry, Law," was the only words that I could say and offer to him, asking for his dear forgiveness.

Natapos ang trabaho niya. Kumain na rin kami sa isang karinderya na sinasabi niya. It was cool anyway, I loved the foods that they serve. It was tasty and worth the money.

Mukhang napatawad na rin naman ako ni Law. Pinagsabihan niya lang ako na huwag na ulit magsinungaling sa kanya.

Sa loob ng kotse niya ay nagbihis siya ng uniporme para sa pagiging pizza delivery guy niyang trabaho sa hapon. Konting punas lang sa katawan niya ay hindi ko na naaamoy ang malansang amoy ng isda kanina.

He let me change my clothes too, I didn't know that he brought wipes, tissue and alcohol with seventy percent solution. Halos naubos 'yon sa pagpupunas niya sa kamay at paa ko.

Pinanatili niya akong malinis kahit na ang kanyang sarili dapat ang mas pagtuonan niya ng pansin.

Pinakiusapan niya pa ang matandang manager niya na gamitin na lang ang kotse niya sa pagdedeliver dahil sa akin kesa sa motorcycle na ginagamit nila, hindi ko akalaing marunong pala siyang magmaneho no'n.

The day was exhausting and I was out of strength to get out of the car and walked the distance to go inside the house when the car stopped right in front of our house's gates.

It was almost six. Medyo madilim na rin.

"Can I sleep here, Law? My feet is aching and I don't wanna walk nor move it," I mumbled with eyes close. Even my lips was so tired to move, my voice was almost inaudible to hear but I know that he could hear me.

I just got in my dreamland thirty minutes ago, but woke up in reality because of the feeling of Law's large hand groping my butt.

"I'll carry you, little girl," he whispered.

"You ain't tired?" I yawned and tried to drift back to sleep. "Nakakapagod kaya 'yon, Law. Tapos may natitira ka pa'ng lakas para buhatin ako?"

Hindi ko na kailangang tumingin sa kanya dahil alam ko namang nasa labas na siya ng kotse at nasa side ko na siya dahil nakaupo at nakasandal pa rin ako rito sa front seat ng sasakyan niya, nakatayo at nakahawak naman siya sa isang braso ko.

I let him carry me but not in a bridal style. We were chest to chest as he parted my legs. Ginamit niya pa ang kanyang malaking kamay upang magmistulang upuan ko, his hands were on my butt to prevent me from falling since I couldn't wrap my limp legs around his waist. I was all weary and I needed rest.

At least ay may konting lakas pa ang mga braso at kamay ko upang kumapit sa kanyang leeg.

His broad chest was definitely hard and sculpted, gently pressed against the average and normal size of my teen boobs.

Parang isang bata lang ang binubuhat niya ngayon nang dahil sa posisyon namin, isinandal ko pa ang gilid na bahagi ng aking ulo sa kanyang matigas na balikat.

I heard a soft thud, indicating that he had closed the door.

Nakapikit ako nang naramdaman ko ang marahan ngunit malalaking hakbang na paglalakad niya papasok sa loob ng bahay.

I sensed that we're already inside the house, but why could I feel something that even if my eyes were close, it felt like the lights of the house were on without Law switching it on?

Did someone has unexpectedly arrived?

"Law, anak—where have you been? What happened to your sister? And why are you carrying her like that?"

Chapter 11

Cried

"Silence, Mom. Little girl is tired and sleeping."

Half asleep and half awake, I didn't move on my position. Merely, I was listening to their voices.

I didn't feel anything, nervous? No. Afraid? Not either. Guilty? Definitely not.

Wala akong ibang naramdaman nang narinig ko ang boses ni Mommy Sai at nahuli kami sa ganitong position.

Law's large hands under my butt was somewhat making me feel assured that everything will be in peace after this. I knew that he carried me in this position because he was just trying to help with no malice. Of course, he's my brother, who would thought bad things about him? He may be intimidating, formal, strict and professional sometimes, but I know that there's a part of him screaming of endless goodness and mercy.

I so wanted to open my eyes and face her. Ask her about daddy, ask her the things that have made me confuse, but my eyes were so tired to move it even a little inch would really hurt.

"What happened, Law? Saan mo ba kasi dinala ang kapatid mo?" the concern in Mommy Sai's softer and low tone of voice was evident.

Hininaan niya talaga ang kanyang boses na parang takot na magising niya ako.

Was this for real? She who was very busy after we left the mansion had concern left for me? I hoped so. It's been how many months since I last saw her and heard her voice. I wanted to have my strength back and take a glimpse of her.

Didn't she sense it? Didn't she know? I was upset. They're not giving the attention and care for their daughter, now, she's acting like we saw each other and had a conversation one hour ago.

Wala akong nakikita kasi nakapikit ako pero naramdaman ko ang pagdikit ng matigas na panga ni Law sa ulo ko na parang isinandal niya ito.

"Don't worry, she's fine," hindi man lang sinabi ni Law ang tungkol sa pagsama ko sa kanya. "Anong dahilan ng pagpunta mo rito, Mom? Sinabi ko naman sa'yo na ayos lang siya, kaya kong alagaan si Kry... mag-isa."

Alam ba ni mommy ang ginawa ni daddy kay Law? Bakit parang wala namang kaalam-alam si mommy? At bakit gano'n nalang makapagsalita si Law sa kanya? Kung magtanong ay parang wala kami sa pamamahay ni mommy.

Where have she been after those months? Didn't she and daddy work in the same company? She doesn't have to work because daddy was giving us money and everything that we need.

Bakit ayaw niya nalang na manatili rito? Bakit ayaw niya nalang kaming bumalik sa mansion?

"Law, I need to talk to you," bakas sa boses ni mommy na sobrang kailangan niya talagang makausap si Law. "It's important, okay?"

"Tungkol saan?"

Nanatiling nakatayo si Law sa kinatatayuan niya habang walang kahirap-hirap na buhat ako. Hindi nga talaga siya napagod sa ginawa namin buong araw.

Naramdaman kong ginamit niya ang kanyang isang maskuladong braso at sinakop ng buo ang pwet ko kaya nagmumukha na akong nakaupo sa braso niya, ang isang braso niya naman ay mahigpit na nakadikit sa likod ko upang hindi ako tuluyang mahulog. He pressed my back closer against him, the reason why my not-so-flat chest squeezed against his hard and broad chest.

I felt like a baby, carried by its father. Legs parted and my feminine part felt the hardness of his abdomen.

"About your father," mommy's voice was stern. Sobrang seryoso na parang isang malaking problema ito para sa kanya. "Why didn't you tell me that he cut off yours and Kryptonite's bank account?"

Totoo nga? Ang mga hinala ko? Bakit hindi sinabi ni Law sa akin? Bakit kailangan niya pa'ng itago at magtrabaho? Dahil ba ay ayaw niyang isipin at problemahin ko ang tungkol do'n kahit na nahihirapan na siya?

Napahigpit ang pagkakapit ko sa kanyang leeg pero hindi naman sobrang higpit na parang sinasakal ko na siya.

"Mamaya na tayo mag-usap, Mom," pagtapos ni Law sa kung ano pa man ang sasabihin sa kanya ni mommy. "Ihahatid ko muna 'to sa kwarto niya."

He was avoiding the subject. Why? Because I was with them and could hear what they're going to talk about? This was definitely not fair.

I could understand how things change and run, now. I knew how to identify what's right or wrong.

Bakit ba kasi tinuturing pa rin ako ni Law na parang limang taong gulang na bata?

Naramdaman ko ang paggalaw ni Law. Naglalakad na siya at alam kong patungo kami sa kinaroroonan ni mommy, he have to walk past her to go to the stairs.

"Okay," mommy agreed. Huminto si Law at kasabay no'n ay naramdaman ko ang isang pamilyar at malambot na daliring humawi sa iilang hibla ng buhok kong medyo natatakpan ang mukha ko. After that, I felt something soft, pressed against my forehead. Mommy kissed me. "I won't spend the night here. May pupuntahan pa akong business trip with your Aunt Zara."

"Ayos lang sa akin," Law's deep voice said.

Pero sa akin, hindi.

"Sige na, mukhang pagod na pagod talaga siya," mahina ang pagkakasabi no'n ni mommy at alam kong nakatingin siya sa mukha ko. "Kumain na ba kayo ng hapunan?" pahabol niya nang nagsimulang maglakad si Law papunta sa hagdan.

"Hindi pa," Law promptly answered, I did not feel his head move to look back at mommy. Hindi niya man lang nilingon si mommy nang sumagot siya at nagpatuloy lang

sa paglalalakad. "Magluluto ako mamaya."

Pahigpit ng pahigpit ang pagkakakapit ko sa leeg ni Law habang papaakyat siya ng hagdan hanggang sa nakarating na kami sa isang kwarto.

Kasabay ng pagsara niya ng pinto ay ang marahang pagmulat ko ng aking mga mata.

I didn't want to face mommy earlier, kaya nawalan ako ng lakas upang imulat ang aking mga mata.

Napagtanto kong hindi ito ang kwarto ko nang binuksan niya ang ilaw.

He brought me inside his room and now, he was standing straight at the edge of his bed.

Nasa likuran ko na ang kama niya ngunit hindi naman niya ako binaba. Buhat niya pa rin ako dahil ayokong bumaba, naramdaman niya ang higpit ng pagkakakapit ko sa kanyang leeg.

"Why did daddy cut off my bank account? Why didn't you tell me?" I asked, disappointed because I knew that he was keeping it from me. That one important thing.

I have never felt this way before. Yes, he have carried me like this when I was a child, but I could tell that doing this at this age was not appropriate. He wasn't used to improper manners and such, somehow, I thought that maybe he's trying to be a good brother to me.

A kind of brother that wasn't thinking about good manners and reputation at all.

Pumikit ako nang naramdaman ko ang kanyang mga labi sa tenga ko.

"Ako ang may hawak ng bank account mo. If Dad cut off mine, madadamay ang sa'yo," he explained, rubbing his soft and thin kissable lips smoothly against my ear, though his answer was not too clear. Alam kong may hindi pa rin siya nababanggit sa akin.

Gano'n pa rin ang higpit ng pagkakakapit ko sa kanyang leeg.

"You're lying," I said with suspicion hanging in my voice.

"I'm not, little girl," he defended. Bahagya niya pa'ng inilayo ang kanyang mukha sa tenga ko, and so I rested my chin on his masculine shoulder. "You're not in the legal age to hold your own bank account. Ako ang lagi mo'ng nakakasama kaya ipinaubaya ni Dad sa akin 'yon. Iniisip niya na baka ay gamitin ko ang pera sa bank account mo kaya niya nagawa 'yon."

The truth was, I didn't have any idea how that bank account runs, what was its system and did he really said it with all honesty? What if it was a lie? What if he was just fabricating a story to tell?

That would piss the hell out of me. I hated liars. Honest people were so rare nowadays, that's why I don't give my trust so easily. They have—must earn it.

"Why would he have to do it? Hindi ba naisip ni daddy kung anong kakainin natin kapag ginawa niya 'yon?" I remained my chin on his shoulder 'cause it felt relaxing.

Curious ako at hindi ko siya titigilan hangga't hindi ko nalalaman ang sagot sa

tanong ko. Lalo na ngayon na sinasagot niya na ang iilang tanong ko, hindi katulad noon na kahit oo o hindi ang sagot ay parang napakahirap pa'ng sabihin para sa kanya.

"I'm old enough to work, little girl. He know that," dahilan niya at ipinatong din ang kanyang matigas na baba sa aking balikat.

"Bakit pinapahirapan ka ni daddy masyado, Law?"

"Kasi nakuha ko na ang gusto ko pero hindi siya sumasang-ayon," bakas ang lungkot sa kanyang boses ngunit hindi rin naman nawala ang lakas ng loob nito.

Oo nakuha niya na. 'Yon ay 'yong kurso niya ngayon o 'yon lang ba talaga?

Pero kung hindi sumasang-ayon si daddy sa gusto niya, paano nakakapag-aral si Law? I was sure that daddy won't give a penny for Law's tuition if he really does disagreed.

What if someone was helping Law? And who could that someone be? Our uncles probably?

I bit my lower lip and pull my chin up from resting on his shoulder, we're now chest to chest and face to face.

Blankly staring at his damn so intimidating and marked with superior eyes, I use my last ticket of strength that I've got to wrap my legs around his waist.

"Anong ginagawa mo?"

"Ayokong bumaba," mariin at mabilis kong sagot kasing diin ng pananalita niya sa tuwing may inuutos siya o 'di kaya'y galit siya sa akin.

I tightened my hold on his neck, but careful to not suffocate him.

"Kryptonite, may pag-uusapan pa kami ni Mom sa baba," kasalungat naman ng marahan na tono ng boses niya ang mga salitang lumalabas sa kanyang bibig. He liked this position, I know he did. "Matulog ka nalang muna, gigisingin kita kapag nakapagluto na ako."

I shook my head many times. Kahit na pagod na pagod ako pati na rin ang mga binti at hita ko ay may natira pa rin pala akong lakas para higgpitan ang pagkakapulupot nito sa kanyang bewang.

"Ayoko nga sabi, Law," pagmamatigas ko na parang batang ayaw mahiwalay sa kanyang ama.

"Ah talaga, little girl?"

I gasped when both of his hands squeezed and gripped my butt before hoisting it up to the upper part of his stomach, almost near the lower part of his chest. I didn't remove my legs around him.

Umangat lang ang katawan ko ng konti dahilan kung bakit kaharap niya na ngayon ang dibdib ko. Hindi na rin ako nakakapit sa kanyang leeg, I balanced myself by leaning and holding both of my hands on his tensed shoulders.

"Law! Anong ginagawa mo?" napahawak pa ako sa kanyang malambot na buhok.

He groaned.

Oh shit. Naalala ko, ayaw niya nga palang hinahawakan ko siya sa kanyang buhok.

Carrying my petite body like it was as light as a feather, his burning eyes fixed on mine, daunting me.

My body stiffened, I couldn't help but tightened my grip on his soft hair. Seeing his chiselled face buried on the middle hollow part of my breast.

At this moment, I was wearing my baby bra and not those nipple pasties that Cykee had given to me. I'd use those precious gift of hers if my current location was in here, in our house.

I did remember Law's words, he didn't want me to wear baby bra. To prevent him from rubbing and do things to my nipple, I should protect myself. That nipple pasties was useful enough for me.

The only problem was, well, what if Law found out about it? I couldn't imagine the possibilities that he might do.

Hindi ko namalayan ang sarili kong hinihingal nang dahil sa paraan ng pagsubsob ng kanyang mukha sa gitnang bahagi ng dibdib ko, ang kanyang kamay na hinihilot at pinapalo ang aking pwet at kung paano niya idiniin ang kanyang katawan sa akin.

Nawala na yata talaga sa isip niya ang tungkol kay mommy.

"L-Law, tama na..." nahihirapan pa ako sa pagsasalita. I have tried to grip his hair and pull his head away but he wouldn't budge. "I'm sorry, hindi ko na uulitin."

Dahil hindi ko sinunod ang gusto niya, ito ang makukuha ko sa kanya?

Part of disciplining me. How could he be so dominant?

Siya na mismo ang nag-alis ng mga binti kong nakapulupot sa likod niya. Tumalbog ang katawan ko sa kanyang kama nang binagsak niya ako roon.

Soft and cozy, his bed was making my aching muscles relax. Even the addictive scent of his bed made my whole system calm from my delirium of desirous excitement.

No. I shouldn't feel this. As much as I wanted to ignore it, I couldn't. The feeling have disrupted all my thoughts about our main problem and the certainty inside me that Law have left important information untold.

Haven't I told myself about this?

Ako dapat ang nagpipigil sa kanya, hindi 'yon ako pa ang nagtutulak sa kanya na gawin sa akin 'to.

"Wag mo kasi akong simulan, Kryptonite," pagbabanta niya bago hinubad ang kanyang suot na tee shirt, kanina nang natapos kami Sa pagdedeliver ay nagbihis agad siya. Ang dami nga talagang nagamit niyang damit sa isang araw. Nasa akin ang buong atensyon niya, nakatitig diretso sa aking mga mata. "Sa susunod na gawin mo sa akin 'yon, asahan mo'ng hindi na ako titigil."

Shirtless, his hard and sculpted six packs flaunted in front me. Stood straight like a statue at the edge of the bed, eyeing my body with his godlike intimidating eyes. The ambience have changed and it was something hot as hell could be.

The distracting sight of his gorgeous body was unlawful in my eyes. I felt awful for myself.

I realized that what I did earlier was one of a shit iniquitous stupid action. What a shame.

"Hindi ko na uulitin," I emphasized each one of the words that I said.

Nakahilata pa rin ako sa kanyang kama, sa harap niya. Kanina pa ako hindi gumagalaw dahil medyo masakit nga ang buong katawan ko.

"Good for you," aniya, bakas sa boses ang hindi ko maipaliwanag na emosyon. "Iligtas mo ang sarili mo sa akin dahil hindi ko nailigtas ang sarili ko sa lahat ng kahibangang 'to."

That confuse me more than I could think of.

Anong ibig niyang sabihin? Or was it, he have experienced it? Kaya ganito ang ginagawa niya sa akin, kaya naging ganito ang paraan ng pagdidisiplina niya?

"Bakit? Sinasaktan ka ba ni daddy noon, Law? Pinapalo ka ba sa pwet kapag may kasalanan ka?" sunod-sunod kong tanong bago siya inirapan. "Ikaw kaya ang paluin ko sa pwet," I mumbled it, sinadya kong hinaan ang boses upang 'di niya masyadong marinig.

Regrettably, I shouldn't have said that because it didn't escape from his hearing distance.

"Sumasagot ka na naman sa'kin," nagdilim ang kanyang mukha, kaya lang ay madalas kong napapatingin sa kanyang katawan kaya hindi ako masyadong nakaramdam ng takot.

Umiwas ako ng tingin nang nahuli niya ang ginawa kong pagsulyap ng ilang segundo sa kanyang matigas na tiyan. Gusto ko pa sana'ng ibaba ang tingin ko sa kung saan 'yong pinakabribadong parte ng kanyang katawan nagtatago.

I failed though, his eyes were guarding me, searching and judging every move that I did.

So proud to display his well-toned body. Why does he have to be this—this sexy, seductive and erotic? He's alluring me.

Tangina. Kailangan ko na talagang pigilan ang sarili ko. Lumalala na ako.

"Ano naman ngayon? Nandito si Mommy, isusumbong kita kapag gugustuhin ko," I snapped my head to shot him a glare after gaining my old self back.

"Isumbong mo'ko at baka ay hindi mo na ako makikita ulit, Kryptonite," pananakot niya. Dinaganan niya ako pero hindi ko naman maramdaman ang kanyang katawan dahil nakatukod ang kanyang mga kamay sa kama upang magkaroon ng distansya sa pagitan ng katawan namin. "Gusto mo ba 'yon? Hinding-hindi mo na ako makikita ulit."

Kinakausap niya ako na parang bata talaga ang kausap niya.

"Why? Anong namang gagawin nila sa'yo? Hindi ka naman nila sasaktan, Law!" I shouted at his face, that handsome chiselled face had only an inch apart on mine. "Pagsasabihan ka lang ni mommy at daddy."

"No, not just that, little girl."

"Then what?" asik ko, nagdedemand ng sagot. "Tell me..."

I tilted my chin, challenging him. Ang buong akala ko ay aatras na siya pero hindi niya ginawa dahil kung bakit muntik nang lumapat ang aking mga labi sa kanya.

He angled his head to the left before bringing down his lips on the top corner of my lips. It didn't really touch my lips, he was teasing me. I didn't move, I was afraid so.

Dapat ngayon ay nandidiri na ako sa kanya, nandidiri na ako sa sarili ko.

Ang gulo na ng utak ko. Hindi ko na alam talaga kung anong dapat kong gawin. Ayokong aminin dahil nilalabanan ko pa ito, kapag inamin ko sa sarili ko ang totoong nararamdaman ko ay parang sinasabi ko na ring sumusuko na ako.

"Ilalayo ka nila sa'kin, ipapakulong nila ako, gusto mo ba'ng mangyari 'yon hm?"

"They can't do that, Law," giit ko. Pinagpipilitan kung ano ang tanging nalalaman at nauunawan ko. "Hindi naman kita isusumbong sa police, it's just mommy and daddy."

"Totoo ang mga sinasabi ko, Kry," kanina niya pa hindi inilayo sa akin ang kanyang paningin.

"You're just saying it para hindi kita isumbong 'di ba? You sucks, Law!" tinulak ko siya sa matigas niyang dibdib pero hindi siya nagpatinag at ako lang ang nasaktan sa ginaw ko. I hissed in frustration. "Bakit ka naman ipapakulong ng sarili nating magulang? Siguro ay maniniwala pa ako kung ilalayo nila ako sa'yo pero ipapakulong? That's just impossible!"

Ang hirap lang paniwalaan ng lahat ng sinabi niya. Those misunderstanding between Law and daddy wasn't that worse enough. I knew that they care for each other. Kahit gano'n sila ay malaki ang paniniwala kong hindi siya kayang ipakulong ni daddy.

Knowing daddy? He doesn't want to have a dirt on his precious name. Makakasira sa pangalan ng pamilya naman kapag nakulong si Law.

About Kuya Laki? Hindi ko alam kung bakit hindi pa rin siya tinatakwil ni daddy bilang anak niya. Sa dinami-raming scandal niya, buti ay hindi nakarating kay daddy ang tungkol do'n. I wonder kung ano ang magiging trabaho niya paglaki.

"Why are you doubting me? Pinag-aralan ko ang lahat ng batas, Kryptonite," the lowering expression on Law's face had gotten more dangerous, stern and grim.

Pareho naman kaming galit at mukhang nagpapaligsahan pa kami kung sino ang mas galit.

"That! Alam mo, may alam ka sa lahat kaya 'yong iba ay gawa-gawa mo nalang!" marahas ang boses ko pero hindi kasing rahas ng sa kanya. "Ano? Gagawa ka ng sarili mo'ng batas?"

"Oo, kung kinakailangan kong gumawa ng sarili kong batas, gagawin ko," sobrang tigas ng boses niya nang sinabi niya 'yon bago inilayo ang kanyang sarili sa akin.

Nakatayo na naman siya sa harap ko at pakiramdam ko ay parang gusto ko siyang bumalik sa gano'ng posisyon. 'Yong malapit sa akin.

"See? Now you're saying that you're telling me a lie!" kahit masakit ang katawan ko ay nagawa ko pa ring umupo sa kama nang tinalikuran niya ako at naglakad papunta sa

nakasarang pinto ng kanyang kwarto. "Saan ka pupunta? Hindi pa tayo tapos, Law!"

"Yes, little girl," narinig kong sabi niya, I saw how the muscles from his back flexed when he reach for the doorknob. "Pupuntahan ko lang si Mom, ako na mismo ang magsasabi sa kanya ng lahat ng ginawa ko sa'yo."

Bakit bigla akong hindi mapakali? Kanina lang ay gusto ko siyang isumbong hangga't may pagkakataon ako kasi ang tagal ko na talagang gustong makausap si mommy tungkol dito pero baka ay totoo rin ang mga sinabi ni Law sa akin?

I wanted him to stop from disciplining me in a violent way yet I didn't want him to land in jail either.

"W-Wait!" pagpigil ko sa akmang pagpihit niya sa doorknob ng pinto.

"Hm?" he stopped and turned to face me. "You should start packing your things now, Kry."

Napakagat ako sa labi ko nang dahil sa sinabi niya. Totoo na ba talagang ilalayo nila ako sa kanya at makukulong siya? Kapatid ko siya kaya may natitira pa naman akong awa para kay Law.

Ayokong makulong siya at ayoko rin naman lumayo sa kanya. Noong mga panahong wala ang mga magulang namin ay siya lang ang tanging tao na nagbigay ng atensyon sa akin.

I want his attention now because I know that I wouldn't have my parents' attention. Kahit anong kalokohan at pagpapapansin pa ang gagawin ko, si Law lang talaga ang tumatama sa lahat ng pagkakamali ko.

"Kapag ilalayo ba nila ako sa'yo, sino na ang makakasama ko? Pareho silang busy sa trabaho, Law," said my worried voice.

"Maids, of course," he replied curtly.

"What?" mabilis akong umiling habang nag-aalalang nakatingin sa kanya. "No, no."

'Yong mga katulong naman sa mansyon ay nagpapakitang tao lang. I knew from the very beginning that they didn't like me. Noon ay madalas ko nga silang nahuhuli sa kusina na pinag-uusapan ako at madalas din silang pinapagalitan ni Law dahil do'n.

Kung tutuusin ay mas gusto ko pa'ng si Law ang kasama ko. Kailangan ko lang talagang magpakabait at sundin ang lahat ng utos niya para maiwasan ang dapat iwasan.

"Sila ang makakasama mo at ang magbabantay sa'yo," paglilinaw niya. Nakita ko ang iilang ugat sa kanyang braso nang humigpit ang pagkakahawak niya sa doorknob. "Malayo sa akin."

"N-No, Law. Please don't do this to me," hindi ko na nakikilala ang boses ko dahil parang kanina lang ay sinisigawan ko siya. "Fine, magpapakabait na ako. Just please don't tell Mom about it."

Shit. Bakit ganito ang nangyari? Ang bilis bumalikad ng sitwasyon.

How did he turned the tables that clever and fast?

"Pack your things now, Kryptonite."

He's serious.

"No! Ayoko!" may kinuha pa akong unan dito sa kama at hinagis sa direksyon niya.
"Law, please? Gusto kong ikaw ang magbabantay at mag-aalaga sa'kin."

Natigilan lang ako sa pagmamakaawa nang narinig ko ang huling sinabi niya bago siya lumabas at iniwan ako.

Hindi ko napigilan ang pagtulo ng nangingilid na luha sa mga mata ko.

I cried on his bed.

"Gusto kong umalis ka, Kryptonite."

Chapter 12

Stop

Paano nangyaring nag-iba agad ang ihip ng hangin? How did he expeditiously change his mind? Does he even thought about it? Did he weigh the advantages and disadvantages of his actions? There's only one way to know.

Ask, but hardly, I couldn't go out of his room, interrupt or butt in their serious talk and ask him with bloodshot eyes, tears streaming down my face, sobbing and pleading in front of our mother. What would mommy think if she'd see me like this?

I would look like a person out of its sanity. Unbelievable, I was the victim, but I'd be the one who'd beg to stay.

Law was the only family and person that had given me the attention that I needed. I didn't want to lose him, didn't want to be away from him. I could surely prevent Law's violent doings by behaving like a prim and proper young lady. An educated and respectable daughter of a Cavanaugh.

Unmistakably, Law would stop.

Kung tutuusin nga ay mas malala pa si Kuya Laki kesa sa akin pero ang sabi nga nila. Lalaki siya at ako ay babae, natural na raw kuno sa mga lalaki ang pagiging gago at tarantado pero kapag ang babae gano'n ay huhusgahan na agad.

I have remained myself virgin for the past sixteen years of my life. Bakit gano'n ang mga tao? Kapag ang lalaki ay hindi na virgin, wala lang, pero kapag nabalitaan ang isang babae na hindi na virgin ay pagsasalitaan agad ng mga masasamang salita.

Parang ako lang, ang dami kong ginawang magandang bagay pero nakagawa lang ako ng isang masamang bagay ay parang naglaho na parang bula sa paningin ng mga tao ang mga magagandang bagay na nagawa ko.

The Earth was fair, but everything was unfair. It was unfair for me, unfair for you and unfair for the others. It was definitely fairly unfair.

I was crying on his bed for the past fifteen minutes the time he left the room.

Waiting, I was waiting for what would happen for the next seconds, minutes and mind it hour.

Noise of heavy and light footsteps outside have made me cautious to my surroundings.

Baka ay biglang bubukas ang pinto at kaladkarin ako ni Law palabas, baka ay kukunin na ako ni mommy at iiwan sa mansyon.

I did want to go back to the mansion but I didn't feel like it if Law wouldn't be with me, including my cousins. I have used to see and live with them together in the mansion.

Ngayon ay nagkandaleche na ang buhay namin. Wala akong alam sa kung ano ba talaga ang problema pero hindi naman ako manhid para hindi ko maramdaman 'yon. Alam kong may malaking problema ang kinakaharap ng pamilya namin.

Si Grandpa naman ay madalas sa mansyon ngayon, he's healthy naman, pero siguro kapag hindi niya na kakayanin ang atmosphere at mga stress sa mansyon? I bet that he'd leave and just stay in his hacienda.

The noise outside have come to a stop and it was followed by the sounds of the door, opened by someone.

"Kry, anak? Kry baby, why are you crying hm?" marahang tawag ni mommy sa akin ngunit hindi ko siya pinansin at nanatiling nakasubsob ang mukha sa mga unan ni Law. She was trying to have my attention, but when she failed she burst out. "Totoo nga, Law? Sinasaktan mo ang kapatid mo, kaya siya umiiyak ngayon? Are you out of your mind, Law?"

Nandito rin pala si Law. Hindi niya siguro inaasahang iiyak ako.

"Dinidisiplina ko lang siya," his voice was so cold and that added to how he was so much of an intimidating person.

"Dinidisiplina? Law, siguraduhin mo'ng hindi 'to makakarating sa daddy mo! Anak, ano ba'ng nangyayari sa'yo?" mommy was losing her temper with that moderate high-pitched tone of her voice. "Please tell me what your dad did to you. Is it because of him why you're acting like this? Ano bang nangyari?"

Mommy was clueless too? Impossible. How could she be like this? Outdated and does she even care? All she did since Law left years ago was to work, after a year, she had convinced Law to come back.

"No."

"'Yan nalang ba lagi ang isasagot mo sa akin, anak?" bakas sa boses ni mommy na nauubusan na siya ng pasensya. "Fine, go, pack her things. We're leaving in an hour."

Nang narinig ko ang mga mabibigat na yabag ng mga paa ni Law palabas ng kuwarto ay wala pang isang segundo na tumingin ako sa may pinto.

Law's broad back was facing me, I heard mommy's voice at my side. I didn't pay much attention to her. I was looking at Law, walking out of the room to personally pack my things.

He really does want to spare me out of here?

I was heavy-hearted at the thought. Hurriedly, I swatted mommy's hand away from me when she attempted to touch some strands of my hair covering half of my face to tuck it behind my ear.

Giving her a sour expression on my face, I jump out of bed and run to Law before he could walk out of the room.

Mahigpit kong hinawakan ang isang daliri ni Law nang naabutan ko siya dahil kung bakit hindi siya natuloy sa pagbabalak na lumabas ng kwarto.

He wasn't wearing his tee shirt. Hinubad niya 'yon kanina. Natatakot akong hawakan ang kanyang braso, ayoko namang hawakan ang kanyang pants, it's awkward at hindi ko rin naman mahawakan ng buo ang kanyang malaking kamay kaya pinili kong hawakan ang hintuturo niya gamit ang isang kamay ko.

I was sobbing rapidly, marahas ang pagtaas baba ng dibdib at balik at ko nang dahil sa paghikbi. Nakatingala ako sa kanya nang bumaba ang kanyang nakakatakot na tingin sa akin.

"L-Law... I-I-" hindi ko na natapos ang sasabihin ko dahil bumuhos na naman 'yong mga nagbabadyang luhanang pilit kong pigilan.

There's a lump in my throat, making it hard for me to say a word. My eyes narrowed and my sight was hazy and blur, now, if I wasn't mistaken, I saw a glimpse of his intimidating eyes... soften.

"Kry, come here, anak," mommy interrupted from behind. Nakaupo pa rin sa gilid ng kama ni Law. "Mag-iimpake lang si kuya sa mga gamit mo."

Umiling ako, nakaangat pa rin ang tingin kay Law. "N-No, mommy..."

"Kryptonite, do'n ka na muna sa mansyon, okay?" parang hinahaplos ng boses ni mommy ang nanginginig kong kalamnan. "Sige na, Law. Pack her things, kailangan na naming makaalis. May pupuntahan pa ako."

I snapped my head to her direction. "N-No! No, mommy. Dito lang ako!" I vociferated. Sobrang lakas ng pagkakasabi ko no'n kaya naramdaman ko kaagad ang sakit sa lalamunan ko na parang mapapaos ako pagkatapos nito.

Hinigpitan ko ang pagkakahawak sa hintuturo ni Law at hinayaan niya naman ako.

Kanina pa siya tahimik at nakababa ang tingin sa akin.

"L-Law, please. Sabihin mo kay mommy na hindi ako aalis, dito lang ako. Ayokong umalis, Law..." kahit namamaos na ang boses ko ay pinilit ko pa ring magsalita.

Bakit biglaan naman yata 'tong naging desisyon ni Law? Hindi ko inakalang totoo niya talaga. Kanina lang ay nagtatalo pa kami.

Natatakot ako sa sobrang tahimik niya.

Anxiously, I brought up my other hand up and hold on to his masculine arm—where my other hand was gripping his index finger.

I let my guard down and I hope that he'd do the same. I didn't want to be away from him.

"Law, sige na. Ako na ang bahala sa kanya," boses ni mommy na puno ng pag-aalala.

Dahan-dahang bumba ang tingin ko sa aking mga kamay na nakahawak sa braso at daliri niya nang hinawakan niya ako at marahang hinawi ang pagkakahawak ko sa kanya.

He left without saying a word.

"Kryptonite," tawag ni mommy nang dalawang minuto na ang nakalipas at nanatili pa rin akong nakatayo sa kinatatayuan ko. "Come here, mag-usap tayo."

Instead of walking back to Law's bed and talk to her, I stormed out of the room and went directly to my room where I know Law was starting to pack my things.

I found him at my wardrobe, holding a rolling suitcase and stuffing my clothes inside it.

Mabilis akong nakalapit sa kanya at imbes na sigawan siya na ihinto ang kanyang ginagawang pag-iimpake ay mas pinili kong manahimik dahil baka bukas ay hindi ko na marinig ang boses ko. Namamaos na nga ito, sisigawan ko pa siya?

'Yong mga damit ko na ipinasok niya sa loob ng suitcase ay kinuha ko at ibinalik ko sa dating kinalalagyan nito, natigilan siya sa pag-iimpake at pinanood akong ibinalik lahat ng damit na pinasok niya sa loob ng suitcase.

"I-I wanna stay here, why don't you let me?" I protested against him.

"Alam mo na kung bakit, Kryptonite."

I stopped shoving my clothes back to its place and shot him my confused look. "P-Para hindi mo na ako masasaktan?"

A minute of silence have enveloped us before he spoke.

"Natatakot akong angkinin ka," he revealed, eyes were darkening when it bore into me.

"A-Angkinin?" naguguluhan kong tanong kahit na may ideya na ako sa kung ano ang ibig niyang sabihin. "Natatakot? Wala ka pa'ng kinakatakutan, Law. Kahit si daddy ay kinakalaban mo."

"You have no idea, little girl," he shook his head gently and his eyes were slowly showing worry and anger. "Please? Just obey me."

Stubbornly, a scowl plastered on my face. "A-Ayaw."

"Do you want me to spank you here? You're disobeying me," sa isang segundo ay nawala ang pag-aalala sa kanyang mga mata. Tuluyan na itong sinakop ng galit.

"T-Then do it!" I roared, continuously crying, but still suffering from my hoarse voice that have come into a sore throat. "Spank me, please... Please, spank me, Law."

If it was the only way for me to stay then I'd rather let him spank me. I would gladly take it, endure the pain and feel his large, rough and violent hand slamming against my butt like a hammer to its nail.

Stay, I just wanted to stay to the only person that had given me his time and effort. For fetching and dropping me by at school. If only I didn't acted like a badass and uneducated girl digging its own grave, thereupon, he wouldn't discipline me like that.

It was all my fault anyway.

Sinundan ko siya ng tingin nang lumabas siya sa wardrobe ko at sinara ang pinto ng aking kwarto bago siya bumalik.

My wardrobe had the size of a small room. Kaya magkakasya kaming dalawa sa loob na puno ng mga damit at gamit ko sa mga gilid nito.

Nang nakapasok na siya sa loob ng walk-in wardrobe ko ay agad niyang sinara ang pinto. Tiim bagang hinarap ako.

"Face the wall," turo niya sa likuran ko. Isang kulay puting pader. It was the only wall here, kasi ang nasa kaliwa at kanan ko ay mga lagayan na ng damit at sapatos.

I was happy to oblige even though I was crying.

Nakatalikod na ako sa kanya at nakaharap sa pader nang naramdaman ko ang kanyang malaking kamay sa waistband ng shorts ko, including my panty.

Marahas niyang hinila 'yon pababa dahilan kung bakit kusang gumalaw at yumanig ang buong katawan ko nang dahil sa karahasan niya. Hindi niya naman tuluyang hinubad ang suot ko, hanggang tuhod ko lang.

I didn't feel embarrassed when my butt had its exposure.

Bumaba ang aking tingin sa kanyang maskuladong braso na sumakop sa buong tiyan ko. Leaning my body down by his strong arm supporting me, I closed my eyes, waiting for him to start.

"Do you want this, little girl?" maawtoridad niyang tanong. Napakalapit niya na halos maramadaman ko na ang kanyang matigas na hita sa gilid ko.

"Y-Yes."

"Do you want this?"

"Yes, Law."

Napakapit ang mga kamay ko sa kanyang matigas na braso sa tiyan ko nang buong lakas niyang pinalo ang pwet ko. My butt bounced at the impact of his rough palm.

Imbes na makaramdam ako ng sakit, katulad noon, ngayon ay hindi na ito sakit.

The pain diverted into pleasure, after the first spank he rub his palm against my butt, making me feel better.

"Ugh, m-more. I want more..." I mumbled.

He did it again. Giving me what I had requested to.

"Say my name, little girl," utos niya sa gitna ng paulit-ulit na pagpalo at paghimas niya sa pwet ko.

"Hm, L-Law, oh..."

Pleased with those spanks he had given me, my nails almost dug on the skin of his muscular arm upon my stomach.

In the middle of it, I felt those familiar soft lips pressing and the tongue

gliding on my nape after he placed my hair to my right shoulder.

Umuungol, dumadaing at mariing nakapikit, ngayon ko pa napagtantong huminto na pala sa pagtulo ang mga luha ko.

Naninindig ang balahibo ko nang naramdamang hindi niya na rin pinapalo ang pwet ko. Pinipisil niya na ito at hinahaplos kasabay ng kanyang mga labing lumalapat, dumidikit sa batok at sa gilid na bahagi ng aking leeg. Hinahalikan ang bawat sulok ng balat ko.

"Utusan mo'ko," he commanded, hard and husky, hinahalikan pa rin ang batok ko at inangat ang laylayan ng damit ko. "Kahit ano."

"I want you to let me stay here with you," nanghihinang utos ko sa kanya, nilalaspang ang sarap na pinaparamdam ng kanyang mga makasalanang kamay. "A-And my butt..."

"Hm?"

"I want your mouth on it."

Wala pang isang segundo nang narinig niya ang sinabi ko ay marahas niyang tinulak ang likod ko. He nailed me on the wall while facing it, and my left cheek just met and touched the cold surface of the wall.

Nasaksihan ko ang pagluhod niya sa likuran ko habang mahigpit na nakahawak ang kanyang dalawang kamay sa balakang ko.

I slammed my hands against the wall the moment I felt his moist and soft lips touched my bottom, kissing, licking, sucking and lapping my skin. Different sensations of pleasure but still not satisfied had sent shivers down my spine.

Unsatisfied, I reached for his hair at my back and gripped it, pulling it to come closer to my derriere.

I want more. More of his lips, more of his tongue, more of his touch, more of him.

And I've forgotten about who we were.

"Oh, ah, Law... Law..." I panted, calling for him, moaning his wonderful name.

Wala na akong ibang inisip pa. Nawawala na ako sa katinuan at ang tanging nasa isip ko lang ay si Law.

Naging mas marahas ang kanyang mga labi, ang kanyang dila at ang kanyang ngipin na bahagyang kinakagat ang isang pisngi ng aking pwet.

"Are you going to obey me after this, little girl?"

"Y-Yes, Law, please, please..." hinihingal kong sagot sa kanya, huminto siya sa paghalik kaya nagmamakaawa akong ipagpatuloy niya. "Please, kuya..."

Naitikom ko ang aking bibig nang dahil sa isang salitang nasabi ko, isang salitang naging dahilan kung bakit natigilan si Law sa kanyang ginagawa.

Five minutes, we were still in the same position yet we're both silent.

Pagkatapos ay umalis siya.

Pero bago niya ako iniwan dito ay nagawa niya pang hilahin ang waistband ng shorts

at panty ko mula sa tuhod paangat sa bewang ko upang muling matakpan ang aking pwet.

And there I remembered that he's my brother.

Inayos ko ang aking sarili at lumabas na rin ng wardrobe, patungo at palabas ng kwarto ko.

Nakita ko si Law at mommy sa labas ng kwarto ni Law kaya magmadali akong lumapit sa kanila. Nakatalikod mula sa direksyon ko si mommy na kaharap si Law kaya kitang-kita ako ni Law na paparating.

I walked past mommy and hugged Law, snaking my arms around his waist. He's shirtless, so I really felt how hard his body was against my petite one.

"Mommy, hindi naman ako sinasaktan ni Law," pagsisinungaling ko kay mommy, takot na baka ay paaalisin na talaga ako ni Law dito. "Please? I wanna stay here."

"Kryptonite, darling, how many times do I have to tell you? I know that you're not used to it, calling Law your kuya but it's a sign of respect and you must--"

"Mom, it's fine," iritadong pagputol ni Law sa sasabihin ni mommy sa akin.

Hawak ng isang kamay niya ang aking likod, soothing and calming my nerves.

"Are you sure, you wanna stay here?" mommy asked me again, naninigurado.

I nodded, tightening my hug to Law's hard body.

"Okay then, I'll go ahead," ani mommy at lumapit sa akin, sa amin ni Law upang halikan ang noo ko at marahang hinaplos ang buhok ko. "Akala ko talaga noon ay lalaki kang daddy's girl. That I was wrong, lumaki kang kuya's girl."

I just gave her a genuine but weak smile.

Paano ako magiging daddy's girl kung halos isang araw sa isang buwan ko lang naman siya nakikita?

"Law, 'yong isang bank account na 'yon ay galing sa akin, use it," bilin ni mommy habang nakatingin sa isang kamay ni Law na may hawak na isang card. Ngayon ko pa nakita, hindi ko namalayan. "I've transferred five hundred thousand to your new bank account for the rest of the summer. We don't need your daddy's money."

Kunot noo akong tumingin kay mommy nang dahil sa sinabi niya. Parang may mali sa kanilang dalawa ni daddy.

I didn't dare to ask. Baka ay nag-away sila at hindi nagkakaintindihan. Misunderstanding gano'n.

"Okay," was all Law's response.

Nakayakap pa rin ako sa kanya at hindi ako bibitiw hangga't nandito pa si mommy.

"Enjoy your summer, babies," paalam niya sabay halik ulit sa noo ko at hinalikan niya rin sa pisngi si Law. At dahil mas matangkad, sobrang tangkad ni Law kesa kay mommy na nakasuot pa nga ng heels ay kailangan pang bahagyang yumuko pababa si Law. "Law, just call me if the money wouldn't be enough, okay? Magtatransfer agad ako ng pera."

Sadly, I really didn't need their money. I just need them here with me, when would I experience a complete and contented family?

Pero at least, hindi na kailangang magtrabaho ni Law sa wet market at maging pizza delivery guy sa hapon. Through all of being the neglected child of Mr. Zacharias and Mrs. Ysa Cavanaugh, isang bagay lang ang hindi sila nagkulang sa amin.

Pera. Hindi sila nagkulang sa pera at sobra-sobra pa nga.

Nakaalis na si mommy kaya agad na akong bumitiw mula sa pagkakayakap kay Law at kaswal na naglakad papasok sa loob ng kanyang kwarto.

Narinig kong sumunod siya sa akin.

Hanggang sa loob ng kanyang banyo ay nakasunod pa rin siya. I wanted to take a bath in his bathroom.

Nakatalikod ako sa kanya nang hinubad ko ang aking damit kaya ang tanging nakikita niya lang ay ang aking pwet at likod.

I could feel how his intimidating eyes roam around my naked back.

"What do you think you're doing?" nagtataakang tanong nito mula sa likuran ko.

"I'm going to take a bath," kaswal kong sagot na parang walang nangyari kanina. Though my voice was hoarse.

"In my bathroom, little girl?"

"Why not, Law?" I snapped before stepping inside the shower stall. "Besides, I'm your sister."

Narinig ko ang mabigat at malalim niyang paghinga, parang may pinipigilang gawin.

Afraid of what I might see if I look back at him or at my butt, I just head straight and placed my body under the shower.

Sigurado akong grabe ang pamumula ng pwet ko.

"Magluluto muna ako kaya bilisan mo," narinig kong sabi niya sa labas ng shower stall before I turned on the shower. "Kapag natapos ako at naabutan kitang naliligo pa rin, asahan mo'ng ako na mismo ang magpapaligo sa'yo."

He left. Leaving me with the lulling sounds of the water from the shower, the cold water that have made my warm body wet and refreshing. Rinsing off the dirt I've got from all the work that Law and I had gone through the rest of the day.

Kinabukasan, nagising ako sa sariling kwarto ko. Kunot noo kong inilibot ang aking tingin sa buong paligid dahil sa pagkakaalala ko kagabi, pagkatapos kong kumain dahil hindi naman ako nadatnan ni Law na naliligo pa rin ay dumiretso ako sa kanyang kwarto at nagpahinga sandali bago natulog sa kanyang kama.

Did he carry me out of his bed and return me in my own room? Why? I had used to sleep on his bed, in his room and he never transferred me back to my room.

What has gotten into him?

Naligo muna ako bago napagdesisyunang lumabas ng kwarto at sakto namang dumaan si Law nang binuksan ko ang pinto ng aking kwarto.

He was wearing those clothes that he'd wear if he's going somewhere. Dark pants and a simple white tee shirt.

May lakad siya?

"Bakit nilipat mo ako?"

Tumigil siya sa paglalakad at hinarap ako. "May sarili kang kwarto, Kryptonite."

Nabaguhan ako sa nakikita ko sa kanyang mukha. Balik na naman siya sa dati, 'yong nakakatakot pero ngayon ay parang mas lumala yata siya. Kahit ang tono ng kanyang boses ay nag-iba.

He became... distant.

What the hell? Iniiwasan niya ba ako? Akala ko ba ay ayaw niyang iniiwasan ko siya? Tapos ngayon ay siya na ang umiiwas sa akin?

What happened to him?

"Where are you going?" muli ko pa'ng tinignan ang kanyang suot bago ibinalik ang tingin sa kanyang mga mata. "What's for breakfast?"

"Tuna sandwich," he answered curtly. Didn't bother to answer my first question.

His voice was cold yet stern and authoritative.

Bakit ganito ang mga nangyayari? Ang lahat ay biglaan at hindi ko inaasahan. Did I do something that's why he's acting like this?

"Law? Are you done?"

I froze on my spot when I heard that familiar girlish voice downstairs. Hindi ako makapaniwalang tumingin kay Law.

"Yes, Dana, wait a second," sagot naman ni Law sa tamang lakas ng boses na maririnig ni Dana sa baba habang titig na titig sa akin ang kanyang mga mata.

"Sasama siya sa'yo?" I asked instead of saying sasama ako sa'yo. "Where?"

"May lakad kami, pool party sa bahay ng kaibigan namin," malamig ang kanyang boses nang sinagot niya ang tanong ko. "I left one thousand pesos on the dining table. Magpadeliver ka nalang ng gusto mo'ng lunch at dinner. Mamayang alas diyes ng gabi pa ako uuwi."

Tinitigan ko siyang mabuti ngunit mas lalo lang akong nanlamig nang dahil sa paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin.

Ang sabi niya ay next week magbabakasyon kami sa La Trinidad. Pero bakit pakiramdam ko ay hindi na matutuloy 'yon? Limang araw nalang.

Nakaramdam ako ng kirot at paninikip ng dibdib ko nang tinalikuran niya ako.

"And you're not allowed to go outside."

Those words were the last thing that I've heard from him before he went downstairs. Stilled, I didn't move—no, I could not move 'til I heard the sound of his car

outside. Leaving the house with Dana.

Leaving me alone in this hell of a boring house, dazed and confused.

Anong gagawin ko? Ni hindi niya ako hinalikan sa noo bago siya umalis katulad ng nakasanayan niyang gawin.

Susundin ko ba ang utos niyang manatili ako rito sa bahay? Bakit siya ay malaya namang makakaalis?

Pero kapag sumuway ako ay baka siya na mismo ang maghahatid at iiwan ako sa mansyon? I told him last night that I would obey him after the spank and suck.

Would he know if I'd be out of the house? After all, he's with Dana and their friends, plus he'd be coming home late. It wouldn't hurt me if I try to venture out in an hour or so more than that? Maybe three hours would do.

At least he wouldn't be going out with Dana alone right? They're with their friends. No worries.

And why would I be worried? Ano naman ngayon kahit na silang dalawa lang ang magkasama at kahit hindi na nila kasama ang kanilang mga kaibigan?

I heaved a deep breath and went back inside my room to change my clothes.

Half an hour had quickly passed, I was now walking towards a Watsons branch here in a mall. I didn't know what to buy and maybe I'd just look around somewhere to find something to buy.

I only had three thousand cash in my wallet. Two thousand was what had left in my school allowance and one thousand from Law.

"Oh my God!" I exclaimed. Muntik na akong nabangga sa kung sino, hindi kasi nakatingin sa dinadaan niya. I turned my head to that someone. "What the he-oh?"

"Hoy gaga, na-miss kita," pambungad ni Cykee sa akin. Hinihinala na parang hinahabol ng isang K-9 na aso rito sa loob ng mall.

"Anong nangyari sa'yo?"

"Si Hezion kasi, hinahabol ako. Ayokong umuwi kasi ang ingay sa bahay, may pa-pool party na nagaganap," kumakalma na siya mula sa malalim at mabilis na paghinga. And now she was ranting, nilalabas ang mga hinanakit sa puso sa akin. "It's hot kasi ang daming abs pero-duh? Like ew? Nakasuot ang mga kaibigan niyang babae ng swimsuit and it can't take my eyes seeing some stretch marks! I mean wala naman talaga akong nakikitang stretch marks kasi hindi naman sila mataba o 'di kaya'y galing sa panganganak but you know what? Nakakainggit at ayokong mainggit!"

Gusto ko siyang tawanan pero pinigilan ko ang sarili ko. Mamaya nalang kapag natapos na siya.

"Kasi maganda ang body figure nila?" hirit ko.

"Sinabi mo pa talaga? I can't believe you!" namumula na nga ang kanyang mukha at minsan ay napapatingin sa direksyon namin ang mga tao rito sa mall. Iniisip siguro nila na nababaliw na si Cykee at ako namang kaibigan na nakikinig sa kanya ay syempre nagmumukha ring baliw. I didn't care anyway, I loved my best friend. "Mature lang ang pangangatawan nila, wait for me 'til I get mature like mommy," she added with irritation in her voice.

It's eleven at ten ng umaga nagbubukas ang mga mall. I woke up earlier 10:30 marahil ay dahil sa sobrang pagod kahapon.

I studied her from head to toes. "Your body is nice," I commented before I said my critique. "A little taller than me and petite yet sexy. Average size of boobs, average size of butt. The only problem is... your curves, it isn't that curve enough."

"Sabihin mo na kasing wala akong curves, nahiya ka pa."

"Okay, wala ka nga talagang curves."

"Ay, ina mo," malutong na mura niya at inirapan ako.

Saka pa ako tumawa na kanina ko pa talaga pinipigilan.

Nahinto ako sa pagtawa nang nakita ko si Hezion, may kausap sa phone na nakadikit sa kanyang tenga, madilim ang ekspresyon sa mukha at tiim bagang naglalakad palapit sa amin mula sa likuran ni Cykee kaya hindi niya nakita.

Pero para sa akin? Mas nakakatakot pa rin kapag si Law ang nagagalit.

Huli na nang sabihin ko kay Cykee dahil agad na hinawakan siya ni Hezion sa kanyang braso.

"Oh shit! No! Let go of me, Hezion!" pagpupumiglas ni Cykee.

Hindi ko alam kung anong gagawin ko. Tutulungan ba si Cykee o hayaan nalang si Hezion na tangayin ang kawawang kaibigan ko?

At sino naman itong kausap ni Hezion sa phone niya? Hindi niya pa kasi binaba ang tawag kahit na nahuli niya na si Cykee.

"Wait! Kuya Hezion, baka pwedeng magpasama ako kay Cykee? May bibilhin lang sana ako," singit ko at magalang pa ang pagkakasabi ko sa kanya no'n.

I saw the relief on Cykee's face but I didn't have my own relief. Voluntarily, I took a step back when Hezion's eyes landed on me.

Recognized me.

He smirked before speaking to the other line of the call.

"Law. I saw your little girl."

Chapter 13

Jealousy

In front of the unfamiliar very large-humongous house and outside of its red coloured metal gates, I stood there, heart was palpitating so fast like someone was pounding a rock against my chest so hard, really, I felt it was a rush of

adrenaline. I was certainly facing the danger.

Okay, I had to calm myself. Inarguably, it was my fault why I ended up here. Nothing bad would happen, I hoped so.

Looking forward to my own anticipation, I looked to my side to see Cykee, same as me, we're both holding a paper bag. Inside it was the swimsuits that we bought in the mall before Hezion brought us here.

May nagbukas ng mas maliit na gate kung saan kami daraan at may nagbukas din sa isa pang malaking gate kung saan ipapasok ni Hezion ang kanyang kotse.

How villainous, he forced Cykee to come home and he told Law about me.

Oh I need justice. What's with the two of them?

"Good morning, Ma'am," bati ng nagbukas ng gate para sa min ni Cykee. Mukhang bata pa at nakasuot ng uniporme ng mga katulong.

This wasn't Cykee's house, I've been in their house before. This incredible huge size of a house in front of me was her stepfather's abode. The Puertollano's place.

Simula noong lumipat si Cykee at ang mommy niya rito sa mas malaking bahay ay hindi na kami nakakapagbonding masyado.

Iginiya kami ng katulong patungo sa loob hanggang sa malaking pinto ng bahay.

"Psh, sabihin mo kay Hezion 'yong fuck you ko sa kanya," Cykee blatantly said to the maid.

Napaatras pa ang katulong at kumurap pero tumango rin naman.

Until here, mas lalo lang akong kinakabahan. 'Yong tipong kaba na parang sasabog na ang puso ko.

"Cyk, pwede ba'ng magkulong sa loob ng kwarto mo?" tanong ko nang nagsimula na kaming umakyat sa kanilang magarang hagdan.

"Pwede naman pero nandito ang kapatid mo kaya ano pa'ng magagawa natin? Magkikita rin naman kayo, pinapatagal mo pa," she answered, so much of a straightforward person. "Ayokong sumali sa party nila dahil hindi naman ako makakasabay, eventually, his friends will just ignore me after pero si Hezion kasi, nakakainis."

I wrinkled my nose, unhappy and irritated at the situation. We're both stuck.

"Why don't we invite someone to come over? 'Yong mga ka-edad lang natin," I suggested, nasa harap na kami ng kulay puting pinto na sa tingin ko ay kwarto niya.

Cykee was about to open the door but stop her hand midair and turned to me. "Oh my fuck! You're so brilliant, Kry!"

Hindi na ako nakapagreact pa nang tinulak niya ako papasok sa loob ng kanyang kwarto.

"Let's invite Faith!" excitement had attacked her in an instant. This was another rush of adrenaline, it was more of excitement than being nervous earlier. "And oh! The guys from the other school! Remember the sexy Rule and his gorgeous friends?"

Naalala ko na naman ang mukha ni Rule noong nasa palengke kami. He was totally

sexy, but Law's body was mature and sculpted than Rule.

I wouldn't judge for now, I haven't seen Rule naked nor half naked anyway.

I changed my clothes first because Cykee was busy calling someone through her phone. Where or from whom did she get their phone number? Well, it doesn't matter, she could call them through social media anyway without using phone number and load. They had internet here, same in our house though I couldn't use the internet because my phone just had its funeral last month, if I wasn't mistaken, Law destroyed my phone last month. The world has high technology.

Within fifteen minutes inside her bathroom, at last, I've finished dressing myself up in a maroon crisscross ruched backless one piece swimsuit. Sounds daring, evil and sexy.

I did not use baby bra, Cykee had provided me some of her nipple pasties. It gave a huge avail to me since I was wearing a blackless swimsuit.

Nang lumabas ako ng banyo ay agad na bumungad sa akin si Cykee na kasama si Faith. Almost twenty minutes pala ako sa loob ng banyo? Siguro ay hinatid so Faith ng pinsan niya rito?

"You know I'm not used to this kind of swimwear, right?" umiiling na reklamo ni Faith pero tinanggap din naman ang bagong biniling swimsuit ni Cykee. "I'll wear it anyway, tsk."

Napilitan siyang pumasok sa loob ng banyo.

Cykee was mischievously smirking at me when she sauntered to come near me. "Rule and his friends are at the living room. You wanna see them? Ang hot nila kahit na nakasuot lang sila ng tee shirt at swim trunks, maiba si Rule kasi plain black ang suot niya tapos 'yong mga kaibigan niya ay puti."

Bakit parang pakiramdam ko ay nirereto niya ako kay Rule? Well, maybe it was just a gut feeling.

Just ten minutes went by and the three of us were ready. Actually, we looked like models preparing for a worldwide fashion show for swimsuits.

Cykee was wearing her black U-plunged belted low back one piece and Faith was wearing a sexy backless halter one piece swimsuit.

It was exciting but when I thought of Law, that we're in the same place yet he's with other people or someone maybe, my blood run cold and drained.

Pakiramdam ko ay puputok na ang ugat ko anumang oras na magkita kami ni Law.

"Wait! I have bathrobes here, suotin muna natin. May laro kasi ako," an evil goat-laugh came out from Cykee's mouth.

"Ano na namang pakulo 'to?" Faith complained and pouted.

I smirked to wipe out the nervousness that have started to show on my face. "Game," said I.

Nagsuot kaming tatlo ng kulang puting bathrobe bago lumabas at bumaba.

Pababa pa lamang kami ng hagdan ay ramdam ko na ang mga matang halos kahawig ni Law.

"Whoa? Hindi ko pa nga nakikita ang nasa loob, bruh, pero nakakatawn on na agad," I heard one of the five guys mumbled, talking to the other guy at his side, sitting pretty on the white and long sofa.

Tinapunan ko ng isang masamang tingin si Cykee nang nakitang walang ibang babaeng kasama ang limang lalaki.

Kaming tatlo lang ang babae.

"This way, boys," Cykee called them with a very alluring sweetness in her voice.

What the hell? She's going wild.

Pinasadahan ko ng tingin ang mga pamilyar na lalaking nakita ko noong sinama ako nila Cykee at Faith sa kung saan nag-iinuman ang mga underage.

Those familiar eyes met mine.

Natigilan ako sa paglalakad at tinignan ang kanyang suot. A black plain tee shirt and a grey swim trunks, the other guys were wearing trunks too but with another colour.

Sa simpleng suot niyang 'yon ay nakikita ko ang kanyang biceps. It was visible really, if only my eyes had x-ray then I would see if he really does have any abs.

Hindi naman 'yon ang habol ko. Pero just a single look at his arms, masasabi kong may abs siya but maybe not formed and sculpted as Law.

Why was I comparing the two? Ridiculous. I should appreciate Rule and not comparing him to my devil of a brother. They were different, they're not the same person.

Tahimik na tumitig sa akin si Rule kahit na nauna nang umalis ang mga kasama namin.

I was holding my breath the moment he raised his hand and carefully, gently touch my back, giving me his message to walk forward.

Tahimik kaming sumunod sa kanila at ni hindi man lang nagsalita si Rule sa tabi ko, na kasabay ko sa paglalakad.

His hand was very light against my back. It felt so comfortable, unlike Law's rough and harsh hands that would force me to do something he wanted me to do.

Papalapit na kami sa isang malaking pinto, it was a door made of glass and I could hear those splashing sounds of water outside from where we were. Girly laughs and giggles, I could sense the lively atmosphere.

Nang humakbang kaming dalawa ni Rule palabas ay agad akong umiwas ng tingin sa pool at idiniretso ko na lamang ang tingin sa patutunguhan naming magkatapat na dalawang mahabang sofa sa gilid, medyo ilang metro lang ang layo mula sa pool.

"JP, Enrique, 'di ba muna kayo kakain?" tanong ng lalaking 'di ko pa nakilala. Akmang aalis na kasi ang dalawang kaibigan nila.

"Gusto kong lumangoy sa ilalim at makasilip man lang," sagot ng isa at nagpatuloy na sa paglalakad patungo sa pool

"Mamaya na, silip muna kami ni Enrique," dugtong naman ng lalaking sa tingin ko ay si JP sabay kindat pa bago sumunod kay Enrique.

Mga gwapo nga, manyak naman.

"Shon! Halika, tabi tayo!" aya ni Cykee sa lalaking nagtanong kanina at siya na nga mismo ang humila kay Shon. "CJ, pakisamahan naman si Faith."

Pakiramdam ko ay hihimatayin ako ngayon nang umupo ako sa upuan kung saan nakatalikod ako sa pool at nakaupo naman ang tahimik na si Rule sa tapat ko.

Hindi lang isang pares ng mga nakakatakot na mata ang nararamdaman ko. The first one was Rule's and I know the second.

It was Law's. I knew that his intimidating eyes were burning at my back, creating invisible holes that would made me shudder.

I didn't catch up to their friendly conversation, my mind was preoccupied.

Bakit ako umiwas ng tingin sa bahagi ng pool kanina? Nahuli ko lang naman si Dana na nakaupo sa mga balikat ni Law, 'yong pagkababae niya ay nakadikit sa batok ni Law. They're playing something I didn't know. Nasa pitong babae ang nakita kong kasama nila, including Dana at limang lalaki, include Hezion and Law.

Saka pa ako bumaling ng tingin kay Rule nang narinig ko ang kanyang boses at nakatitig pa sa akin.

"Para sa akin?" he started, voice was mildly deep and intensely staring at me. "Ayokong hubarin mo ang bathrobe na 'yan."

With my eyebrows raised and forehead creased, my gaze dropped down at the bathrobe that I was wearing.

"Oh my God, Rule! Why so possessive?" tili ni Cykee at buti nalang ay hindi kami magkatabi dahil baka ay kanina niya pa hinampas ang braso ko. "Hindi naman siya ang maghuhubad ng bathrobe na suot niya."

Mas lalo akong naguguluhan sa mga pinag-uusapan nila kasi hindi naman ako nakinig kanina.

"What do you mean?" I asked to Cykee, curious.

She didn't answer me, instead she turned to Rule and grinned like an old perverted Cheshire cat. "Ikaw, Rule. Ikaw ang maghuhubad ng suot niya," she stated before pointing me with her index finger that was fine manicured. "Siya naman ang maghuhubad ng suot mo'ng tee shirt."

My eyes widened. I wasn't expecting this, it was supposed to be a game.

"Anong klaseng laro 'to?" kinakabahang tanong ni Faith at napatingin sa kanyang katabi na si CJ.

"Stripping each other," Cykee replied casually. "Hindi lang naman si Kry at Rule and gagawa. Susunod tayo."

Faith just slumped back against the cushion of the long sofa.

I just shrugged my shoulders and stood up right in front of Rule that had remained sitting on his seat. Staring up at me.

"Would you do me a favor and strip me, Mr. Rule Fortaleza?" there was a challenge

hanging at the end of my voice, leaning down and forward to Rule, I heard the noise and laughter behind me vanished.

Mukhang huminto na muna sila sandali sa kanilang paglalaro at umupo sa side ng pool, hindi pa rin naman umaahon si JP at Enrique kaya kaming anim pa rin ang nakaupo sa pwestong 'to.

Rule stared deeper and longer into my eyes before I also got up straight, so I took one step back to keep a little tiny distance between us. He was towering over me, taller than me 'cause at least my forehead reach his strong jaw.

Magkaiba kay Law na hanggang balikang talaga ang ulo ko.

"I would like you to strip me first, Ms. Kryptonite Cavanaugh,"

"Huhubaran na 'yan! Huhubaran na 'yan!" I heard the CJ, Shon and Cykee cheered and chanted. Narinig ko rin ang boses ni JP at Enrique na nakisali na rin sa pagcheer mula sa pool. While Faith just gave us a facepalm.

I knew that Law, Hezion and their friends heard it.

Hindi ko alam kung anong pumasok sa isip ko at tinupad ko ang gusto nilang mangyari.

Mariing nakatitig sa akin si Rule, pinagmamasdan ako nang hinawakan ko ang laylayan ng kanyang damit at unti-unting inaangat 'yon.

Nakababa ang tingin ko sa kanyang tiyan at hindi napigilang napakagat sa aking pang-ibabang labi nang nakita ito.

He had six packs, at the age of seventeen, I guess. His body was wonderful.

Narinig ko ang hiyawan nila nang walang pasabing umupo si Rule sa gitna ng pag-angat ko ng kanyang kulay itim na tee shirt, nasa dibdib niya pa nga ang tee shirt kaya muntik na akong nahigit at napaupo sa kanyang hita, buti na lang at nabalanse ko ang sarili ko sa pamamagitan ng paghawak sa kanyang hita bilang suporta.

Umayos ako sa pagtayo sa kanyang harapan.

He raised his arms up. "Hindi mo naman maabot kaya ako umupo," dahilan niya at may punto rin naman siya.

Sobrang seryoso ng mukha ni Rule na parang any time ay mangangain siya ng tao.

I continued to pull up his black tee shirt 'til I finally removed it.

Hindi na ako nagulat nang tumayo siya ulit kaya tumingala ako upang tumingin sa kanyang mukha. Hindi ko nga namalayan na kanina niya pa pala kinalas ang pagkakatali ng bathrobe sa bewang ko.

And know he's sliding the bathrobe off my shoulders, my gaze landed on his hand at the right shoulder, removing the bathrobe.

At the corner of my eyes, I saw someone behind, at the poolside.

It was Law.

Wala siyang ibang ginawa kung 'di ay ang panoorin ako, kami ni Rule na hinuhubaran ang isa't isa.

Hindi niya ba pipigilan si Rule? Hindi ba siya magagalit?

Naibalik ko lang ang atensyon ko kay Rule at kumunot ang noo ko sa pagtataka nang nakitang ibinalik niya sa dating gawi ang suot kong bathrobe bago pa man makita ng iba ang suot ko. Tinali niya 'yong lace at nang natapos siya ay pinulot niya ang kanyang damit na nasa sofa.

"I'm sorry, Kryptonite, but I highly respect you," Rule whispered, kahit na sa paraan ng pagbulong niya ay para siyang si Law. Pero ang susunod niyang sinabi ay hindi niya binulong sa akin, it was like he made sure that everyone in its hearing range could hear his point. "I can't do this to you right now, not in front of our audience 'cause I want it to happen privately. Just the two of us when the right time comes."

Nagulat ako sa sunod niyang ginawa. Hinalikan niya ang noo ko bago naglakad pabalik sa loob ng bahay dala ang kanyang tee shirt.

What was that? Was it an indirect confession that he has something special for me?

"Kryptonite? May tinatago ka ba sa amin? Kayo na ba ni Rule?" agad na tumayo si Cykee at lumapit sa akin. Tumayo rin si Shon at CJ mula sa kinauupuan nila at sumunod na pumasok sa loob ng bahay para siguro sundan si Rule. "Ang sweet niya! Pwedeng akin nalang siya, Kry? Sana all may Rule."

Unable to speak, I didn't answer Cykee. I wasn't shock about what had Rule told me, what he had publicly announced.

I wanted to move from where I was standing, to go after Rule but to no avail, I turned my head just inch to take a look at the folks at the poolside.

Puzzled and lost in my thoughts, I was immobilized seeing Law didn't even care if someone male would try to touch me the other way around. I was like a jealous statue, though real statue didn't have feelings.

He wasn't angry at all, looking hot at the poolside and next to him was Dana clinging at his strong and wet arm. His muscles were tensed.

I knew I was affected to see him like this, but why so sudden? What's with his sudden changes? I didn't understand.

Apparently, Dana and Law looked good at each other. Both had a sexy body, mature, taking up law—I would just keep the rest of my comments to myself. It got me irritated and insecure.

Bakit naman ako magiging insecure? Bakit ko ba iniisip ang tungkol sa kanila? Dapat ay si Rule ang iniisip ko.

The time goes by and I hadn't forgotten what just happened earlier. I just couldn't get it off my head and chest.

Enjoyment had left my zone, I didn't take a swim nor remove my bathrobe. I remained myself wrapped up with that thing 'til 9pm came and we all prepare, change our clothes to go home.

Kumain na rin kami kaninang alas syete ng gabi. Hindi man lang ako pinansin ni Law. Si Rule lang ang madalas kong nakakausap kahit na minsan lang din naman siyang magsalita. We talked like nothing happened.

"Men the same size of penis, fucks together?" I heard from a distance when we started our way out of the house to go to their own car that was parked at the side of the road near the gates.

There I thought it was birds in the same feather flocks together.

"Ang laswa, bading ka ba?"

"Ano ba'ng pagkakaintindi mo sa fucks together ha? Ibang fuck ang ibig kong sabihin, ulol," asik ng lalaking nagsalita kanina na siyang isa sa mga kaibigan ni Law at Hezion.

Does he mean the other fuck, the fuck that means they messed up and not the fuck thing?

Law and Hezion was downright fucked up men.

Kanina pa ako nakasimangot dahil halos hindi na talaga mahiwalay so Dana kay Law. Parang linta lang.

Kung umakto siya ay parang wala ako rito. Parang hindi niya ako kapatid.

Saan naman ako sasakay ngayon? Rule offered me a ride pero hindi na ako pumayag dahil nandiyan naman si Law pero magkasama sila ni Dana kaya baka naman ay makaistorbo lang ako?

Naunang umalis ang mga kaibigan nila Hezion at ang nagpaiwan lang ay sina Law at Dana. Sumunod na rin na umalis sila Faith na sinundo pa ng kanyang pinsan. Umalis na rin sila Rule at ang kanyang mga kaibigan.

Mariin kong ipinikit ang aking mga mata nang nakitang pinagbuksan pa ni Law ng pinto si Dana at nang sinara niya 'yon, umangat ang tingin niya sa akin na ilang metro lang ang layo sa kanya.

Our eyes met, but his were blankly intimidating.

"Get in," blankong utos niya, hindi man lang ako pinagbuksan ng pinto kahit sa backseat.

But why in the hell did I shook my head saying no? "May pupuntahan pa ako."

Ang buong akala ko ay magtatanong siya kung saan ako pupunta o 'di kaya'y magagalit siya at kakaladkarin ako papasok sa loob ng kotse niya pero parang gusto kong umiyak at sumigaw nang mas lalong bumigat ang naninikip kong dibdib sa segundong tumango siya at naglakad na papunta sa driver's seat.

Bumagsak ang mga balikat ko nang hindi man lang siya nagpaalam. I watched his car run until it's out of sight.

"Hey? You okay? Do you want to spend the night here? Malaki naman ang kama ko," narinig kong nag-aalalang sabi ni Cykee sa likuran ko.

Nakita kong pumasok na rin sa loob ng bahay nila si Hezion kaya kaming dalawa nalang ni Cykee ang nandito sa labas. Malamig pa ang ihip ng hangin at wala pa akong suot na jacket.

"I'm fine, pupunta nalang ako sa apartment ni Kuya Ruin," bumuntong hininga ako at timing naman na may taxi na huminto. "Thank you, Cyk."

"Wag kang mag-ingat ah?"

"Ewan ko sa'yo," pabiro kong sabi matapos ko siyang niyakap at pumasok na sa loob ng taxi. "Bye!"

Sinabi ko sa driver ang address ng pupuntahan ko at nang natahimik na, na ang tanging naririnig ko nalang ay ang makina ng taxi at ang mga ingay sa labas ng taxi ay napatulala ako sa kawalan.

Does he still care for me? It was almost ten in the evening, almost curfew and he let me go out all by myself? He didn't even ask me if where I'd like to go so that he could drop me there and that?

Syempre, kasama niya na si Dana at baka naman ay mas priority niya pa ang babaeng 'yon, kaya kailangan niya munang unahin. Safe na maihatid sa bahay nila.

How about me? His sister. He just left me without any company of someone I could trust my life to.

Maybe, he had enough of me? Had enough of all my complaints and the troubles that I've been. My decision of staying here with him was wrong and I was starting to regret.

I tapped the doorbell of Kuya Ruin's apartment.

As usual, nang nakita nila ako ay agad nilang sinara ang pinto upang makapag-ayos ng kanilang sarili. 'Di pa nila ako pinapasok dahil parang may inaasikaso pa sila sa loob. May kasama yata sila.

Sampung minuto ang nagdaan nang biglang bumukas ang pinto at lumabas ang apat na babaeng hindi pa naayos ang pagkakasuot ng kanyang damit saka ako hinila ni Kuya Laki papasok sa loob ng kanilang apartment at pinaupo sa mahabang sofa.

"Princess, naparito ka?"

"Gabi na, bunso. Nasa'n si Kuya Law?"

The two of them were standing in front of me. May suot ng desenteng damit at parehong nakapameywang sa harap ko.

Buti pa sila, inuuna ako bago ang mga babae nila. Kasi, hindi sila seryoso sa mga babaeng 'yon baka si Law ay seryosong-seryoso kay Dana?

"Kuya, can I stay here tonight? Dito nalang ako matutulog sa sofa, please? May kasama kasing ibang babae si Law," pinipigilan ko talaga ang sarili kong mautal. Ayokong umiyak, hindi rito at hindi sa iba pa'ng lugar.

Bakit naman ako iiyak na may babae si Law? Baka ay gusto niyang magpakasal since nasa tamang edad naman siya? He's twenty three years old. Pero paano naman ang pag-aaral niya kung gano'n?

"Babae?" hindi makapaniwalang nagkatinginan silang dalawa.

"Okay, you can sleep beside me, bunso. Mahirap matulog sa sofa," sabi ni Kuya Laki at umupo sa tabi ko. "Alam ba ni Law na nandito ka?"

I was hesitant to say no, I knew what would happen next. They would call Law and tell him that I'd sleep here.

Ayokong maistorbo si Law kung ayos naman na ako rito.

"Yes, kuya," I lied.

"Kumain ka na ba? May extra akong damit sa loob, suotin mo muna," I could hear the genuine concern and care in Kuya Laki's baritone voice.

"Kumain na ako, kuya. I'm tired and I wanna sleep," I said leisurely before standing up to go to his room and change my clothes. He had given me the permission to borrow his extra tee shirt anyway.

I was only wearing my black cycling shorts and Kuya Laki's blue oversized tee shirt. Exhausted, I my body limply slumped to the bed after I changed my clothes and when I had not enough energy to crawl up to it.

Automatically, I drifted off to sleep.

It was I guess in the middle of the night when some baritone voices outside the room had disturbed me from my sleep.

Nakapikit pa rin ako at niyakap nalang ang isang unan sa tabi ko para bumalik sa pagtulog ngunit parang biglang nawala ang antok ko nang narinig ko ang mga pinag-uusapan sa labas ng mga baritonong boses na 'yon.

I opened one eye to take a glimpse of the window and I was right why I could hear the voices outside.

Nakaawang ang pinto at sa tingin ko ay lumabas si Kuya Laki. Mukhang 'di siya nakatulog sa tabi ko kasi naman ang likot kong matulog, kaya ba noong natulog ako sa kama ni Law ay mas pinili niyang higaan ang pwet ko at yakapin ang bewang ko upang 'di na ako makagalaw?

I groaned and closed my eyes again.

"Bakit hindi niyo ako tinawagan?"

I was stiffened the seconds that I've heard his intimidating voice and recognized it.

"Kuya Law, tinanong ko 'yong bata kung alam mo'ng nandito siya at ang sabi niya naman ay oo kaya 'di na ako nag-abalang tumawag sa'yo," narinig kong paliwanag ni Kuya Laki, medyo kinakabahan pa ang kanyang boses.

"Fuck."

"Ano ba'ng nangyari, kuya?" Kuya Laki asked, curious and worried. "She looked upset earlier. Ang sabi niya pa ay may kasama ka raw na ibang babae."

There was a moment of intimidating and deafening silence before I heard another baritone voice.

"May girlfriend ka na ba, kuya? Nagseselos yata si princess dahil inaagaw ng girlfriend mo ang atensyon mo," boses ni Kuya Ruin.

Napamura ako sa isip ko nang narinig ang sinabi ni Kuya Ruin.

Was there any possibility that I was indeed jealous?

"Wala akong girlfriend," parang nabunutan ako ng tinik sa puso at nakahinga ng maluwag nang narinig ang matigas na boses ni Law. "Nasa'n siya?"

"Nasa kwarto ko, kuya. Natutulog."

"Ano?" his hard and deep voice was unnerving. "Nagtabi kayo?"

"Oo, kuya. Bakit? Hindi ko naman gagawan ng masama ang bunso natin," depensa ni Kuya Laki.

"Kahit na, Laki. Tangina," hindi ako makapaniwalang nagmumura pala talaga si Law dahil kapag ako naman ang kasama at kausap niya ay pinipigilan niya naman ang kanyang sarili na magmura.

Mabibigat at mabilis na yabag ng mga paa ang narinig kong papalapit sa rito.

"Pero, kuya, natutulog pa siya—"

"I don't fucking care, she's coming home with me," Law violently said and it was followed by the harsh sound of the door flew open.

Naramdaman ko sa aking katawan ang dalawang matigas at malaking braso sa likod at likod ng tuhod ko.

Feeling unconscious, I felt that he was about to carry me in a bridal style but then I moved my body and rolled back to bed. I could feel his frightening presence at the side of the bed, stood straight and empty-handed.

"Hm, Kuya Laki..." I murmured, pretending that I was still in deep sleep.

"What the fuck did you do to her, Laki?" mababa lang ang boses ni Law pero random ko ang galit.

"Ha? Wala naman, kuya," gulatang tanong ni Kuya Laki na siyang pinagbuntunan ng galit ni Law.

"Why is she moaning your name in her sleep?"

"H-Hindi ko alam."

With my conscience slowly killing me, I felt sorry for Kuya Laki. Law was suspecting him to a crime that I did.

Wala na akong ibang narinig nang buong puwersa akong kinarga ni Law. But not in a bridal style anymore, 'yong paraan ng pagkakabuhat niya sa akin ngayon ay ang paraan ng pagkakabuhat niya sa akin noong araw na nahuli kami ni mommy.

I could feel Kuya Laki's comforter had remained covering my body. Si Law na nga rin mismo ang naglagay ng mga kamay ko sa kanyang leeg kahit na hindi naman ako kumapit, nakapatong lang sa kanyang balikat ang braso ko. Sa kanyang balikat talaga kung saan nakaupo kanina si Dana.

The tensed muscles on his body relaxed at the very second that he finally carried me, took a tight hold at my back and making his one rugged good arm under my butt.

Sobrang tensyunado ng kanyang katawan kanina pero ngayong karga niya na ako ay parang kumalma ang kanyang buong sistema.

Naramdaman kong naglakad na siya palabas na parang isang taong ninakawan at sa

wakas ay nabawi niya na rin ang bagay na kanyang pag-aari.

Nakapikit pa rin ako at nang nasigurado kong nakalabas na talaga kami ng apartment ay kusang kumapit ako sa kanyang leeg dahilan kung bakit natigilan siya sa paglalakad.

"Y-You don't care about me anymore, Law. You chose Dana over me..." I didn't expected that my voice would turned out broken and trembling. "Why are you here? Siguro kung ganito rin naman ang gagawin mo, binabalewala ako ay gusto ko nalang lumipat sa apartment ni Kuya Ruin like Kuya Laki."

He didn't speak, didn't even continue to walk forward so I tried again.

"Y-You're so mean, iwan mo nalang ako sa apartment ni Kuya Ruin. Buti pa sila may paki sa akin," drama ko. Wala na talaga akong pakialam kung ang drama ko ngayon. Nakakasakit na siya. "That's why I love them more than you. I know you don't love me, you're just forced to take care of me because mommy and daddy can't do it and you're always hurting me... I-I hate you, Law. I hate you."

Sa kabila ng naghahalong emosyon na nararamdaman ko ay hinigpitan ko pa lalo ang pagkakakapit sa kanyang leeg at isiniksik ant aking mukha sa gilid ng kanyang leeg upang itago ito. Ang kaninang luha na pinipigilan ko simula noong iniwan niya ako sa labas ng bahay nila Cykee ay tuluyan na nga'ng tumulo.

It was almost five minutes before he expressed his words.

"Stop saying that, little girl. Nagseselos din ako."

Chapter 14

Virgin

Two days had past sprinted like a blur.

La Trinidad, there's no hour that I wouldn't think of it. I expected the two of us to go there, he promised me and I had never forgotten about it. It's just that, I didn't want him to repeat what he did at my moving up day. He was supposed to be with me that day, apparently and to the painful truth, he wasn't, he didn't arrive, he broke his words.

What if? What if that we would really go to La Trinidad, but... Dana would have to come and join us?

No.

I wouldn't let that happen.

I'd rather stay at home for sure.

Speaking of staying at home, the house felt so disgusting and strange. Dana was coming now and then, talking and flirting with Law, watching movies and so forth. Just the only two of them. Where was I? I have remained myself lock up in my room.

I could totally read her precise modus operandi the way she's manipulating and flirting with Law. Who wouldn't know her intentions? She's a flirt. She wanted to have sex with Law and what? They would end up in an ideal and dreamy relationship that every girl would come and dream of? Gross. They would do the sex even though they're not married yet? That's illegal and abominable in the eye of the church.

Honestly, yes, I'm virgin. I had kissed only one guy and that was Zsolt Guanzon. I hadn't taken such experience about sex and any activities including touching and groping the private parts of a human body not except for Law. Admittedly, I had known some ideas and what's what that has something to do during sex.

Inexperienced yet I did have some knowledge. Not literally some, the right word would be lots of knowledge. Thanks to Kuya Laki and Cykee again.

Parang gusto kong sabunutan ang sarili ko hanggang sa makalbo ako. Dalawang araw nalang kasi at malapit na ang next week na sinasabi ni Law.

At heto sila ngayon, nandito na naman sa bahay si Dana.

Hearing her annoying sweet and soft laughs reverberating against the walls of the house, it gave me the urge and wanna drown my head in the deepest part of the bathtub filled with cold water 'til my lungs surrender, out of air and the only thing that I could breathe was the cold water, destroying my respiratory system to a helpless death.

Bakit ako nandidiri sa kanila? Dapat ay nandidiri ako kay Law at sa mga nagawa niya sa akin. I should be thankful and happy that Dana's here.

In that way, hindi na mauulit 'yong mga nagawa ni Law sa akin.

Pero bakit ganito? Parang mas lalo akong nauuhaw sa kagustuhang hawakan ako ulit ni Law.

Seriously, I guess that I have really lost my mind. Where's my mind anyway? I wanted Law to find it and just keep it for himself.

Naisip na siguro ni Law na mali ang mga ginagawa niya sa akin noon kaya naghahanap siya ng paraan upang hindi niya na mauulit 'yon.

Si Dana pa talaga. Wala na ba'ng ibang babae bukod sa haliparot na 'yon? Malay ko baka may mas karapatdapat na babae para kay Law kesa kay Dana. And who would that be?

Nakadapa at pinipilit ang sariling matulog dito sa loob ng sariling kwarto ko nang narinig ko ang pagbukas ng pinto.

"Kryptonite, tanghali na."

He didn't knock before opening the door. I wonder where's his manners too.

As the good girl that I previously was, I didn't move on the bed. Nagmatigas ako at mas lalo lang idiniin ang aking mukha sa isang unan ko.

Sino ba namang gustong lumabas? Kung ang bubungad sa akin ay ang paglalalandian nila ni Dana.

I thought we're good after he took me from Kuya Ruin's apartment in the middle of the night and after he told me that he was jealous too.

A thought would always forever be a thought.

"Get up, Kryptonite," ang tigang talaga ng boses niya, maawtoridad. "Hindi mo pa kinain ang breakfast mo."

'Yong nakakatakot na boses niya na hindi ko magawang sumuway.

I was brave enough to disobey him. Nanatili ako sa kama at nagbibingibingihan. Alam kong hindi niya na ako papaluin sa pwet kaya ano pa'ng ibang dahilan ko para sundin siya?

"Argh, will you please shut up?" I grunted with disrespect and rude response. "Natutulog ako, ano ba."

Ibinaon ko pa lalo ang mukha ko sa unan.

I was heartily aware of the sudden changes of my attitude the past two days. Actually, it didn't change, this was my natural attitude, I was undeniably unfriendly sassy girl. It got worse.

"Kryptonite—" ever since he told me that he was jealous too, he never called me little girl anymore. It was the last. "Gusto mo ba'ng buhusan kita ng malamig na tubig?"

Akala ko ay sasabihin niya na, na gusto ko ba'ng paluin niya ako sa pwet.

Gusto ko pa naman 'yon.

"Bakit ako ang dinidiligan mo? Nasa baba naman si Dana, siya nalang ang buhusan mo," walang galang kong sabi sa kanya. My words had deep meaning and I knew that he had an idea what I was saying.

"Kryptonite."

"Present."

"Get your pretty ass out of bed and eat your breakfast," he exploded in a calm yet scary manner. "Now."

Itinagilid ko ang aking ulo upang makita siyang nag-iisang nakatayo sa may pinto ng kwarto ko. Hindi pala siya pumasok.

Hindi ako tumingin sa kanyang mukha o mata.

I examined his body seductively. Kahit na nakasuot siya ng manipis na tee shirt at shorts. Buti naman ay hindi niya naisipang magsuot ng boxers lang? Like he used to.

With tender sleepy and narrowed eyes, the left corner of my lips curved up in a half smirk. "What if..." I trailed my morning husky voice. "I don't? What would you do with my pretty ass?"

Umangat ang tingin ko sa kanyang mukha after I've done lingering my gaze at the huge bulge on the middle part of his shorts.

I was searching something into his eyes as he held my gaze.

Provocatively, I studied his face, the dark and dangerous expression on it. I had found what I was looking for, but it only lasted for a minute or two before it faded like it was a golden dust blown by the wind.

Lust.

I've found lust.

"Law? The movie is starting," narinig ko malanding tawag ni Dana mula sa baba.

Hindi niya ako nilubayan ng tingin nang sumagot siya sa bruha. "Give me a minute, Dana. May aasikasuhin lang muna ako sandali."

Kasabay no'n ay ang paghakbang niya papasok sa loob ng kwarto ko at ang pagsara niya sa pinto sa likuran niya. Hindi niya na nga rin hinintay ang pagsagot ni Dana.

Pinanood ko siyang maawtoridad na naglakad palapit sa kama ko, sa akin.

I felt a little anxious by his intimidating presence and still have managed to widen my taunting smirk regardless.

I have craved for something torrid.

"Alam mo'ng sinusubukan ko lang pigilan ang sarili ko," panimula niya at huminto sa gilid lang ng kama, matuwid na nakatayo at nakababa ang seryosong tingin sa akin.

Nakadapa pa rin naman ako kaya alam kong kitang-kita niya ang dalawang malaman na umbok sa pwet ko.

Had no regrets that I woke up at six in the morning and take a long sweet stimulatingly hot shower. The scent of my strawberry shower gel have fulfilled and spread throughout my room now.

Proud to flaunt my body and only wearing a peach coloured tank top paired with black dolphin shorts, I didn't dare to move on my spot.

Pakiramdam ko ay para akong isang pagkain na iaalay sa isang mabangis na lion.

"Hm? I don't know what you're talking about, kuya," pagmaang-maangan ko. Hindi ko nga napigilan ang sariling sumulyap sa kanyang shorts dahil medyo magkatapat lang ito sa mukha ko. "Perhaps, you should go to your Dana and talk about it, will you? Don't mind me if you're hesitating to fuck her, I'm all good."

I caught a glimpse of his fist clenched before focusing my eyes up at him.

"Enough, Kryptonite."

"Enough, Kryptonite," I mimicked, trying to sound like him while still smirking.

Okay, that was pretty much of an immature action.

Hindi ko napigilan ang pagsinghap nang mabilis siyang lumapit at pumaibabaw sa akin habang nakadapa pa rin ako.

Sinadya niya pa talagang idikit masyado ang kanyang katawan sa likod ko dahilan kung bakit mas naipit ang katawan ko sa pagitan ng malambot na kama at ng kanyang matigas na katawan.

"Alam ko kung anong binabalak mo, Kry," ramdam ko ang kanyang mainit na hininga na parang hinahaplos ang gilid na bahagi ng batok ko nang bumulong siya.

"Pinapahirapan mo na naman ako."

Kusang umawang ang mga labi ko at mariing ipinikit ang mga mata nang naramdaman ko ang marahang pagdampi ng kanyang mainit at mamasa-masang mga labi sa batok ko.

Earlier, I had tied up my hair in a messy bun after I used the blower to dry it, that's why he had the access to kiss or whatever he wanted to do with my exposed nape.

The proximity of his hard body to mine had made me feel different warm sensations, hot affection and burning desire. My hands were itching to touch him and rip all his clothes, my blood was boiling and it wasn't because of anger, it was because of excitement.

He's tempted and I was too.

I couldn't deny the fact that my body was aching for him, to feel him inside me.

Hilarious, why was I feeling this toward my older brother? Unless he's not my brother. I needed to stop and now I was starting to hate myself 'cause I could not.

Ano bang pumasok sa isip ko? Nababaliw na yata talaga ako. Gusto ko lang naman makuha ang atensyon niya dahil lagi nalang si Dana ang kasama, nakakausap at inaasikaso niya. Daig pa ni Dana ang musmos na batang kailangan alagaan ni Law.

Feel at home masyado si ate niyo.

"Hindi kita pinapahirapan, Law," asik ko, sinusubukang gawing marahas ang boses ko.

"Pero nahihirapan ako, Kryptonite," he groaned, pressing his tensed body against my back. Giving my body both pressure and pleasure. "Ano ba talaga ang gusto mo? Hindi ba ito naman? Ang lumayo ako sa'yo at iwasan ang lahat ng kabaliwang 'to? Ang sabi mo, mali 'to."

"Totoo naman, mali—"

"Mali? At ano 'tong ginagawa mo sa akin ngayon? Tama?" he immediately cut my nonsense words. "You want me to spank you huh?"

Kahit ako ay naguguluhan at hindi na rin sigurado sa lahat ng pumapasok sa isip ko.

Habang nakadapa pa rin ay mariin na naman akong pumikit at kusang umawang ang mga labi ko nang naramdaman ko na naman ang kanyang mga labing nanunukso sa batok ko.

"Hm, I don't know," my seductive smirk vanished, making myself calm as I've felt the fear that have tried to control my system. "Unless you want to spank me?"

Fear. Why was I afraid? Was it because of the way he lick and suck the skin at the corner side of my nape?

Unexpectedly, I gasped, loud enough that he could hear the air squeezed out of my lungs. He kept enough distance between our body, grabbed one of my shoulder and made me face him.

Nakaawang ang mga labi ko habang nakatitig sa kanya, nakahiga na ako ng maayos sa kama ngunit nakadagan pa rin siya sa akin.

"Hindi lang naman palo ang gusto kong gawin sa'yo," ang kanyang boses ay puno ng dahas at gano'n din ang nakakatakot na paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin. "Gusto kong angkinin ang katawan mo."

Angered by the thought of that claiming my body that and those whatsoever, I pursed my lips and glared at him, however, my death glare wasn't enough to knock him down. He wasn't glaring at me but why does his eyes looked so intimidating?

He's effortlessly intimidating.

"Ayaw mo ba sa katawan ni Dana? Great size of boobs and butt, hourglass shape of body, don't you want that, Law? Every men wants that, you're so lucky to have her—"

"Hindi 'yan ang habol ko sa isang babae."

"Oh so, you love her now?" pahabol kong tanong.

Frustratedly, he pressed the lower part of his body against me. "Narinig mo ba ang sinabi ko kanina, Kryptonite?" nauubusan ng pasensya na tanong niya. "Gusto kong mapasakin ang katawan mo."

He didn't nailed my wrist on the bed. At least he had given me the freedom to push his broad chest if I wanted to.

"Ano ba'ng meron sa katawan ko, Law, at parang ikamamatay mo kung hindi mo 'to makukuha?" naguguluhan kong tanong, nakakunot ang noo at hindi maipaliwanag ang nararamdaman. "Sa anong paraan mo naman ito makukuha—"

"Devirginize you."

Those two words silenced me.

One minute, two minutes—until five minutes. I was totally speechless.

What to do? What to say? Ask him what was the meaning of those words and pretend to be innocent? No. First, I was undisputably using my brain, able to think straight and that I fully understand what he meant to say, and second, I was no innocent.

"W-Well, uhm..." wala na akong ibang makapang salita na sasabihin ko. Parang lahat ng salitang nasa isip ko ay nagsipagtakbuhan na. "May I know how big and long you are?"

Wala sa sariling agad kong naitikom ang aking bibig nang napagtantong hindi makatarungan anh mga salitang kusang lumabas dito.

Sa sobrang hiya ay yumuko ako at hinila ang kanyang damit sa bahagi ng kanyang dibdib upang takpan at itago ang namumulang mukha ko. Nagpapasalamat ako dahil hinayaan niya naman ako.

"Gusto mo ba'ng makita?"

"N-Natatakot ako, Law," I mumbled, stuttering as I buried my face against the soft fabric of his tee shirt, gripping and pulling it close.

Bakit naman ako matatakot? Si Dana nga ay parang gusto nang nakawin 'yon at angkinin.

This was the proof and evidence that I was really scared and a cry baby. I wasn't mature like Dana and Tirana.

"Hindi ka pa handa," mariing wika ni Law kaya't inalis ko ang kanyang damit na itinakip ko sa aking mukha at tumingin sa kanyang seryosong mukha. "Sa susunod na

gawin mo sa akin 'to, siguraduhin mo'ng handa ka na sa anumang mangyari, Kryptonite, dahil sawa na akong magpigil."

"B-But you're my brother, Law," I said against him, making it all clear to him. "You wanna have sex with me? Hindi ba mali 'to? Paano mo nasisikmura ang—"

"It's not just sex, little girl," tiim bagang pagputol niya sa sasabihin ko. "Itigil mo na ang kakasabing mali 'to dahil hindi naman talaga mali ang lahat ng 'to."

I didn't understand myself. I just wanted to have his attention earlier and I didn't have any intentions of making him think that I wanted him to spank me.

At first, the conversation had ran smooth and easy earlier and now—I didn't wanna think of it anymore. Well, I, of course wanted to think that I am certainly off limits with those kind of stuff—er sexual activities, because I am in fact an underage girl.

But why did Law made it feel to me that I am not? That I could do sex any time I wanted? And yes I knew that I could do it with him, only with him and no one else.

"Pero kahit saan mo tignan, Law. Mali 'to, mali ka, mali tayo—u-ugh..." napa-ungol ako nang may naramdaman akong matigas sa hita ko na parang tinutuosok ako. "I-It's just lust."

Shit. He's pushing himself hard against me.

Hindi ako mapakali nang bumaba ang tingin ko sa aking hita at nakita ang pagdiin ng umbok ng shorts niya roon.

Ibinalik ko ang tingin sa kanyang mga mata ngunit humigpit lang ang pagkakahawak ko sa kanyang tee shirt nang nakita ang galit sa kanyang guwapong mukha.

He shook his head angrily. "It's not just lust," he said, voice was hard and harsh. I stared deeper into his eyes, and sadly, he was mad and looking violent. "It's not just a fucking lust, Kryptonite."

He said it like he was telling himself and not me that it wasn't just lust.

Natakot ako sa kanya biglang pagsabi no'n kaya kinagat ko ang aking pang-ibabang labi upang pigilan ang pagnginig nito.

Umiwas ako ng tingin sa kanya at mas piniling tumingin sa nakasarang pinto ng aking kwarto.

"I'm sorry, I didn't mean to say bad word to you, little girl. I'm sorry," mababa at marahan ang kanyang boses nang muli siyang nagsalita matapos ang ilang minutong katahimikan.

"Hindi kita maintindihan, Law," sabi ko kahit na mas lalo akong nagiging komportable sa posisyon namin. "Why are you saying all of this to me? That you wanna have sex with me yet you're dating Dana?"

"Sinusubukan ko lang kalimutan ang nararamdaman ko sa'yo," pag-aamin niya. Not specifically what kind of feeling was it.

It was true? He didn't denied that they were dating?

"Anong nangyari?" I demanded

"Mas lumala lang," matigas niyang sagot.

Obviously, there might have been something happened to them in the past days that they've started dating and hanging out. They're adults and mature enough to do the sexual intercourse.

The last time they were together was they almost did the thing. Almost and I did feel pity for Dana. It was because of me why they hadn't finished what they've started.

Sinubukan kong igalaw ang isang hita ko kung saan parang may tinutusok doon pero 'di ko natuloy ang paggalaw dahil parang mas lalong tumigas 'yon.

Bakit ba kasi kailangang nasa ganitong posisyon pa kami mag-usap?

"Siguro ay may nangyari na sa inyo?" wika ko at pilit na binabalewala ang pakiramdam ng matigas na bagay naa tumutusok sa hita ko. "Knowing her? She wants your uhm—your manhood."

"Walang nangyari sa amin," kalmado at kaswal niyang sagot. Ni hindi niya man lang hinawakan ang braso o kahit na anong parte ng katawan ko.

Nagpipigil kasi siya.

Unsatisfied, I have came into an idea. A stupid idea, I know.

"Bakit hindi mo subukan? Malay mo, siya pala talaga ang gusto mo'ng angkinin at naguguluhan ka lang sa nararamdaman mo," I meant to say it like I was the most expert idiotic sister in the whole universe that would give him an advise. "Just make sure of it, Law. Baka pagsisihan mo'ng may mangyari sa atin."

Who would know? Maybe it's just pure infatuation, a feeling that would eventually fade and left nothing but a dark hollow with horror in his brain. What would I do next if ever he'd discover something about that temporary sensations?

Nada.

My intuition about what his feelings backed out when I saw how those dark orbs in his eyes changed into something more darker and terrifying.

"You're doubting me," his voice was stern and harder than my ears could hear. "Alam ko kung sino ang gusto ko at kung sino ang hindi ko gusto."

"W-Why don't you try it, Law?" I always wanted to cut my tongue for being so clumsy and end up stammering.

Parang gusto ko nalang na lamunin ako ng kama nang mas tumindi ang nakikita kong pagiging seryoso ng kanyang mga mata.

"Gusto mo ba talagang subukan ko?" panghahamon niya kaya't hindi agad ako nakasagot. "Sagutin mo ako, Kryptonite."

I forced myself to express a single nod.

In just a split second, he left, rampaged out of the room. Fuming and sexually erect.

Nagdaan ang kalahating oras at takot pa rin akong lumabas ng kwarto ko. My empty

stomach was complaining and demanding for me to eat some nutritious food and healthy fruit juice.

Pero paano kung lumabas ako at bubungad sa akin ang mga kahalayang maaaring nangyayari sa living room ngayon?

Probably, the live porn outside was still on going. Maybe it's best to stay here and wait until I could assure myself that they're done rocking each other's body for approximately another half an hour.

Hindi ko naman narinig na dumaan sila at doon ginawa ang kahalayan nila sa mismong kwarto ni Law. Or maybe, they were in his room and did it silently?

Oh poor Dana, she could hardly express a single moan let alone shout Law's name that personally originated from the pleasure that he's giving her. I was curious though, how to have sex discreetly? Only Dana knew that.

I should have preserve my innocent mind back then and now I couldn't clean it back from being dirty.

It was quicker than one second would pass when I was done waiting for half an hour.

Binuksan ko ang pinto ng kwarto ko at hindi pa nga ako tuluyang humakbang palabas nang narinig ko ang pagbukas ng pinto sa katabing kwarto ko.

"Okay," narinig kong boses ni Dana na siyang lumabas mula sa loob ng kwarto ni Law.

I stepped out of my room simultaneously when I heard Dana closed Law's door.

Facing her, that had me taken aback the exact moment I saw what she was wearing.

An oversized tee shirt of Law, the tee shirt that Law had worn earlier, the tee shirt that I clung unto, the tee shirt where I buried my face because of embarrassment.

He let her wear his tee shirt?

How nice of him to
be so kind. Was he running out of extra tee shirt to provide Dana some?

Sinuri ko ng tingin ang kabuuan ni Dana mula sa magulo niyang buhok pababa sa kanyang paa na suot ang islander ni Law kaya medyo nahihirapan siyang maglakad dahil sa mas malaki size ng islander ni Law kesa sa paa niya.

Agad niyang inayos ang kanyang sarili, especially her ruffled hair that looked like a bird's nest.

"Hi, Kry," she approached me, genuinely smiling, feeling close and it was absolutely awkward when she's wearing someone's tee shirt inside someone's house. "Pinaglutuan ka na namin ng breakfast at lunch ni Law, ahm, nasa kusina."

"Oh," I raised one eyebrow at her before saying my apologies in a rude way possible. "Sorry, I lost my interest in food when you're the one who made it. I'd rather eat exotic food such as worms, insects, bats than eat your shit of a fucking dish."

Her face turned sour. "Ano ba'ng nagawa ko sa'yo? I'm trying to be nice--"

"You're fake," I snapped.

Sa segundong 'yon ay tama nga ang hinala ko nang nakita ko ang unti-unting pagangat ng gilid ng mga labi niya habang nakatingin sa akin.

It was a sarcastic smile.

Lumabas din ang totooang siya. From the word that she said trying to be nice. How hard that she tried to be nice and tolerate my attitude when Law was in front of her?

"Bakit ba ang init ng dugo mo sa'kin, Kryptonite?" mahinahon ang kanyang boses, mukhang ayaw niyang marinig kami ni Law. "Just accept the fact that I will be your sister-in-law soon."

"Keep dreaming," bara ko sa kanya, taas noo at pinapantayan ang paraan ng kanyang pagngiti. "Baka malalaman ko nalang na nagsleepwalk ka sa aisle ng simbahan mag-isa? Nakulangan ka ba sa tulog? O kulang sa aruga?"

Nawala ang ngiti niya nang dahil sa pagtataray ko sa kanya. Mariin niyang idinikit ang kanyang mga labi na parang nauubusan na ng pasensya o nauubusan na ng salitang ibabato sa akin?

"Tell me what's your problem, Kryptonite. Ayokong pumatol sa mga away bata mo," bakas sa kanyang boses ang panlalait at pagmamaliit sa akin.

Adults were always underestimating what a young teenager like me could do. Yes, my words and actions were unladylike and disrespectful—she deserved it.

Why would I respect her? Because she's older than me? To hell with that. She had swallowed her dignity as a female just the time she took a step inside this house and started flirting with Law.

"Anyways," pagkuha niya sa atensyon ko nang akmang sasagot na sana ako sa sinabi niya kanina. "Do you know why I'm wearing your brother's clothes?"

"Not really," I replied quickly, mocking her.

Alam ko naman kung bakit suot niya ang damit ni Law kaya ayokong isipin pa. Ginusto ko naman 'yon kaya kailangan ay wala akong ibang maramdaman.

Gusto ko lang naman ay konting atensyon ni Law. 'Di niya pa maibigay sa akin.

Dana grinned at me, gripped the shoulder part of the tee shirt and brought it up to her pointed nose. Smelling Law's addictive masculine scent.

"We just had sex and you know what? Your brother was bigger and longer than I thought," she told me in a very annoying tone of her voice. "Buti nakakalakad pa ako."

"Kasi hindi ka na virgin nang may nangyari sa inyo," I said, straightforward.

"Bastos ka ah," nanggagalaiti na siya sa galit nang humakbang siya palapit sa akin at hindi man lang ako umatras. "Alam mo ba kung ano ang sinasabi ni Law sa akin tungkol sa'yo? Pwes gusto kong malaman mo na pinagtitiisan ka lang niya, ayaw niyang magbantay ng batang katulad mo."

Naninikip ang dibdib ko nang dahil sa sinabi niya.

Bakit parang ang sakit naman na marinig 'yon? Dahil 'yon din naman kasi ang pumasok sa isip ko noong kinuha ako ni Law sa apartment ni Kuya Ruin.

What if she's lying? She's just playing on my mind?

"Kanina 'di ba ay nag-away kayo? Galit na galit siya, so I tried to calm him down. Sex is the best stress reliever, Kryptonite. Kaya nagawa namin 'yon—"

Natigilan siya nang biglang bumukas ang pinto ng kwarto ni Law. Bumungad sa amin ang nagbabagang galit ng madilim na ekspresyon sa mukha ni Law.

"What are you saying, Dana?"

Chapter 15

Relationship

What happened yesterday was out of the border.

Ang sabi ni Law sa akin sa mismong harap ni Dana ay walang nangyari sa kanila.

She just accidentally spilled the juice on her clothes that's why Law let her borrow his and also the islander, Dana's feet were aching because of her heels. Stupid, why would she wear heels if she's just going to a friend's house and not in a fashion show? And also Law allowed her to change her clothes in his own bathroom so that she wouldn't have to waste her time with her damn feet aching, going back downstairs and use the restroom near the kitchen.

If I could only file a case to a liar? If there was and if it was possible, then I would absolutely love to file a case against her with no second thought.

Kahit na gano'n ang nangyari ay bakit hanggang ngayon, hinahayaan niya pa ring pumunta rito si Dana?

Siguro ay naisip niya na sinimulan niya rin naman ito, ba't hindi nalang niya ituloy? Pero ang tanong, kailan niya tatapusin?

Pero paano na ang pagpunta namin sa La Trinidad?

Last night, I could hardly sleep thinking about him. I wanted to get inside his room and soon my body would collapse on his bed, and at last I would have the sleep that I needed. I had missed smelling the aroma of his room, the masculine scent of his bed and shower.

Here I was, staring at my reflection in the mirror—of course, inside my own room since I was afraid to get inside Law's room without his permission. Ever since Dana and him started dating, he had secured and lock his room.

The least that I could do was to patiently wait for him to invite me in. How I hated waiting.

How about him? Have he experienced waiting? How long?

I grabbed the black elastic band and tied up my hair into a messy updo then sighed when I stared at my stressful face again in the mirror.

Pale face, dark circles under my tired eyes, one small pinkish pimple at my forehead and unnoticeable tiny dark spots at my nose. Looked like I need a fresh lemon and rub its juice on the dark spots, I'd add and place two slices of cucumber to my eyes, too.

This was horrible.

Wala na ako sa tamang huwisyo. Ang hirap kasing matulog, parang gusto kong doon matulog a kwarto ni Law.

Ano ba'ng nangyayari sa akin? Sa katawan ko? Bakit ganito? Sobra na 'tong epekto ni Law sa akin at mukhang tama nga naman talaga siya.

The more we avoid each other, the more our feeling of lust grow. It felt like we had a bond, something that would never ever break us apart even how hard we tried to prevent touching each other nor having an eye contact for only more than fifteen seconds.

When I was finish polishing my appearance right in front of the mirror, I decided to go out of the room and have my lunch.

Parading my body in this house as I walk my way downstairs, wearing a dark green loose crop top with black booty shorts—shorts that looked like a panty or probably considered as underwear because of the very short length of it, it was also fit and tight. It hugged my butt so perfectly. Why not wear it? After all, there's no other guys in the house.

It would be beyond my imagination if I'd see other men here except for Law, my other two older brothers if they'd come and give us a visit here and of course, I wouldn't forget about my cousins. They were the only exception.

Nang nakababa na ako ay hindi ko napigilan ang sariling umirap sa kawalan nang narinig ko na naman ang malanding hagikhihik ni Dana mula sa kusina.

Namumuro na talaga siya sa pagpunta rito. Ano 'to? Pangalawang bahay niya? Mukha ba'ng paaralan 'tong bahay namin para ituring niyang pangalawang bahay?

Hindi ba siya nahiya? Araw gabi siyang nandito, wala kaming budget para sa pagkain niya.

I guess Law used our money for her? That's just so unreasonable, it was not our or his money. It was mommy's and why would he pay her needs just because she's always here? It's not like he's responsible for her stay here. It's her choice to stay here so she should be the one who's paying the water and electric bill since she's using it too.

Thick faced woman. What if I'd try to slap a metal tray at her face? So sure that she would cry and call for her mommy.

"Please? Next month punta tayo sa Compostela Valley and you'll going to introduce me to your Grandpa. Pretty please?" narinig kong daldal ng matinis na boses ni Dana mula sa kusina. "Hindi pa ako nakapunta sa Compostela Valley, Law. Please? I'm curious about your Grandpa."

Naglakad ako papunta sa kusina dahil kakain na rin naman ako ng lunch.

Pati ba naman si Grandpa Sattie ay titirahin niya? Walang hiya. Ano? Pupunta siya roon tapos magpapalakas kay Grandpa?

Pinipilit niya pa talaga si Law. Hindi naman halatang desperada?

The moment that I entered the room, Dana stopped from begging for Law about them going to Grandpa Sattie's hacienda. I had no hopes for this woman, look at me? Law's sister and he didn't even let me have my vacation at Grandpa Sattie's hacienda, what more her?

She should stop hoping. There's no hope and I could tell that our vacation to La Trinidad would be temporarily postpone until the crow turned white—except for the rare Albino Crow that had white feathers, pink feet and legs.

Pinagkrus ko ang aking mga braso sa ibabang bahagi ng dibdib ko habang tinatapunan ng masamang tingin ang dalawa.

Hinahanda ni Law ang mga plato at niluto niyang lunch sa mesa habang si Dana naman nangungulit sa kanya at nakakapit sa isang matigas niyang braso na umiigting ang kalamnan.

"Oh, Kry! You're awake, I have good news for you," masiglang wika ni Dana na parang nakajackpot sa lotto. She then tiptoed and kissed Law's cheek. "We're in a relationship."

Nakita ko ang paraan ng pagtitig sa akin ni Law imbes na tumingin siya sa kanyang girlfriend.

Palihim akong huminga ng malalim, 'yong walang ingay na paraan ng paghinga nang hindi ko namalayang kanina pa pala akong hindi humihinga.

I saw a glimpse of a sudden movement at his jaw when his intense eyes took all my appearance in.

Turned on?

Hindi ko alam pero 'yon ang unang pumasok sa isip ko. Nabuhay ang nag-aapoy na init sa kanyang katawan nang nakita ang suot at ang hitsura ko.

Oh sorry for him but I would not let him touch me in any way. He had a girlfriend.

Ang bilis niya naman magkaroon ng girlfriend samantalang ako ay pinagbabawalan niya pa'ng magkaroon ng boyfriend. Siya pa mismo ang nagbabawal. He's not fair.

"Congratulations, should I throw a party for the two of you?" bakas ang pagkatuyo ng aking boses nang sinabi ko 'yon.

If he's giving me the cold shoulder then I'd give him my dry replies in return.

"Thank you, baby girl, but you don't have to do that," hindi talaga mabura ang tuwa sa boses ni Dana. "I appreciate your kindness though."

I grimaced in distaste because of the use of her own invented endearment.

"What are you wearing?"

Doon lang kami natigilan pareho ni Dana mula sa mga pekeng pakikitungo namin sa isa't isa nang si Law na ang nagsalita.

"Damit," I said it in a curt reply.

"Wala ka na ba'ng ibang damit?" tanong niya ulit na parang nag-iimbestiga.

"Yes, naubusan na ako ng damit, Law," nakangisi kong tugon habang pinagmamasdan ang mga kamay ni Dana na nakapulupot sa braso ni Law. "Would you let me borrow yours?"

Inangat ko ang aking tingin kay Law at gano'n nalang ang pagpipigil kong palawakin ang pagngisi ko nang dahil sa ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha.

His handsome chiselled face had become more intimidating yet aloof. I knew that he's keeping a safe distance away from me.

Pero hindi niya pa rin ako tuluyang maiwasan. To think na nasa iisang bahay lang kaming dalawa nakatira?

"It's okay, baby girl," singit ni Dana nang hindi nagsalita si Law. She plastered a fake smile at her pretty face, showing superiority against me. "May mga patapon naman akong damit sa bahay. I can donate it to you."

I could still hold my temper. Hindi ako magpapatalo sa babaeng 'to.

I shrugged my shoulders, shut my lips from grinning ear to ear and look at her with pure and genuine pity from sincerely yours. "No, thank you. 'Yong damit mo kasi parang ikaw," I paused and smirked, pressing one index finger at my lower lip. "Patapon."

"Kryptonite."

I lost my self-control when I heard Law's stern baritone voice.

Marahas na lumipat ang paningin ko kay Law mula sa girlfriend niya. "Ako na naman, Law? Kinakawawa niya ako! Can't you see it? Anong klaseng kapatid ka kung gano'n? Lagi nalang siya ang kinakampihan mo."

"Wala akong kinakampihan."

"Oh really?" nang dahil sa sobrang galit ko at lumapit ako sa mesa at kinuha ang isang plato na walang lamang pagkain, 'yong plato na dapat ay para sa akin sa lunch na 'to.

I held the glass plate up in the air and let go of it, causing an ear-splitting noise when it come to an impact on the marbled floor.

"Oh my God!" Dana shrieked, startled at the noise that I've done.

Bumagsak ang plato malapit sa paa ko kaya naglakat agad ang lahat ng bubog no'n sa paligid ko. Ininda ko ang kirot at hapdi na namumuo sa kanang paa kong sa tingin ko ay natalstikan ng bubog at bumaon ito sa balat ko.

Nasa tapat ko lang silang dalawa, sa kabilang bahagi ng mesa kaya hindi umabot sa kanila ang mga nagkalat na bubog.

"It's either break up with her or I'll say yes to one of my suitors!" pagbabanta ko, nanliliit ang mga mata at nilalabanan ng tingin ang nakakatakot at seryosong mga mata ni Law. "Pakabusog kayo, tangina niyo," pahabol ko bago mabilis na umalis at umakyat upang pumasok sa loob ng kwarto ko.

Kung makapaglakad ay parang hindi nasugatan. Nakita ko pa nga ang iilang bakas ng

dugo sa sahig mula sa sugat sa paa ko.

But when I entered my room? That's when the time that I felt the sting on my right foot. Discomfort have embraced me because I didn't know what to do.

My gaze went down on the floor, at the bleeding small cut on my right foot just below my ankle. And yes, I was right. There's a piece from the broken glass plate that have found its way
to dig right through my skin, my flesh.

It was painful to see it.

Naalala ko noong bata pa ako, six years old. Minsan na akong nasugatan at ang unang gagawin ni Law ay hugasan 'yon ng malinis at maligamgam na tubig.

Pero iba 'yon at ngayon. Mukhang malalim kasi ang sugat sa paa ko.

Kinakabahan na ako dahil patuloy ang pagdurugo nito kahit na hindi ko naman inalis ang bubog na bumaon doon. Siguro ay dahil 'yon sa puwersahang paglakad ko kanina?

Paano kung-kung maubusan ako ng dugo? Gusto ko, color green ang kabaong ko.

I made sure that the door was lock before I sat on the cold floor of my room. Ayokong umupo sa kama dahil baka ay magkaroon ng mantsa ng dugo ko. Hindi rin pwede sa sofa.

Siguro ay maghihilom din ang sugat ko after one week kapag nalinisan ko ito ng maayos? Pero masakit, ang hapdi at hindi ko pa naalis ang bubog.

Marahas akong huminga ng malalim bago hinawakan ang paa kong may sugat gamit ang nanginginig at nanlalamig kong mga kamay.

Napadaing ako nang nasagi ng kamay ko ang bubog dahilan kung bakit mas lalong bumaon ito.

Ang bilis naman ng karma ko nang dahil sa ginawa ko.

Lakas loob at matapang kong hinawakan ang dulo na bahagi ng bubog na bumaon sa paa ko, kalahati pa nga ang nailabas ko ngunit tumutulo na ang luha ko nang dahil sa sobrang sakit nito.

Couldn't I make this any faster? It's just too painful. Bakit kanina ay hindi naman masakit nang naglakad ako pabalik dito sa kwarto ko? Kung kailan mag-isa nalang ako ay saka ko pa naramdaman ang sakit.

I tried again, careful and gentle. Once again, with my shaking and sweating cold fingers, I slowly remove it. My rapid breathing calmed down.

Sighing at the feeling of great relief, I helped myself up, giving most of the weight in my body at my left foot where there's no cut, bruise nor wound.

In such disdain, I looked around my room, searching for something that would help me but when I tried to move my feet—I ended up fell back on my butt.

Napamura ako nang naramdamang hindi lang ang sugat sa paa ko ang masakit, pati na rin ang pwet ko.

Hindi na ako nag-abalang lumingon sa likuran ko kung saan narinig ko ang pagbukas ng pinto at ang tunog ng iilang susi.

Oh right, bakit hindi pumasok sa isip ko na may spare key pala siya?

"I don't need your help, Law," inunahan ko na siya bago pa man siya magsalita.
"Umalis ka na."

Kumunot ang noo ko nang wala akong narinig na sagot mula sa kanya at ilang segundo lang ang lumipas nang naramdaman ko ang malaking kamay na mahigpit na humawak sa bewang ko at akmang bubuhatin ako mula sa pagkakaupo sa malamig na sahig.

Pero hindi siya nagtagumpay nang marahas kong hinawi at inalis ang kanyang mga kamay sa bewang ko.

"Wag mo nga akong hawakan!" sighal ko at nagpapasalamat akong hindi na tumutulo ang luha ko. "Alis! Do'n ka na sa Dana mo!"

Did I sound like a jealous wife? So what? I was a bitch, being a bitch and I'd like to stand on my own without him.

He was independent and I was dependent on him.

And I wanted to change that.

Maybe I could say and predict that after two years I'd be living on my own house, apartment or condo. Any kind of comfortable place to live. Hopefully, I wished that after two years I could cook my own breakfast, lunch and dinner. And I could wash the dishes, wash my own clothes—I didn't have to go to the laundry shop. Most importantly, I would learn to drive my own car to go to the places I wanted to. Everything that I could not do today, I was hoping to learn and do it on my own for the next two years when I turn eighteen.

I would leave this place soon. Just like what Kuya Lazi and Kuya Laki did.

I would leave Law.

Today and for the next day and for the other day and for the coming days in the future, I didn't have to care about this load of shit that I was feeling toward him.

Stupid. I was stupid for provoking him and I should stop. He already had a girlfriend. I wouldn't be a hindrance to their relationship, would I?

"Hey, let me help you, little girl," gentle. His voice was so much better, gentle and sweet.

I didn't notice that he's in front of me because I was in deep thought and which I thought that he left the room because silence fell on us a minute earlier.

"N-No..." nanginginig ang boses ko at pakiramdam ko ay parang may umuudyok sa aking umiyak sa harap niya. "Umalis ka na kasi, Law."

Buo na ang desisyon ko. Mas maganda sigurong babalik nalang ako sa mansyon.

My purpose why I chose to stay here because Law was giving me his full attention. At kung ganito rin naman pala ang mangyayari, binabalewala niya ako dahil may girlfriend na siya. Hindi ba mas magandang umalis nalang ako? Siguro sa mansyon ay may tsansa pa akong makasama si Grandpa Sattie at si daddy.

"Hindi ako aalis," pagmamatigas niya at sinubukan niya pa akong hawakan sa braso

pero hinampas ko lang ang kanyang kamay palayo.

"J-Just leave, Law! Hindi kita kailangan!" I shouted and felt the heavy feeling on my chest.

Nakatungo ako, nakatingin sa kanyang malapad na dibdib sa harap ko dahil ayokong tumingin sa mga mata niya. Isa 'yon sa ayaw niya kapag kinakausap ko siya at hindi ako nakatingin sa kanya.

"Kailangan mo ako, Kryptonite. Bawiin mo ang sinabi mo," giit niya ngunit marahan pa rin ang tono ng kanyang boses.

"H-Hindi kita kailangan," nahihirapan pa ako sa pagsabi ng unang salita bago ko nakakuha ng lakas. "Hindi kita kailangan, Law! Umalis ka na sabi!"

Ang akala ko ay magagalit siya sa akin nang dahil sa sinabi ko pero hindi nang umangat ang tingin ko sa kanyang mukha.

"Please, little girl, don't say that," I could trace that his voice was begging. The way his eyes softened.

Pero kahit gano'n ang ekspresyon sa mukha niya ay hindi pa rin maalís ang takot ko sa kanya. He's still intimidating and hostile.

I pushed his hard chest when I realized that he's getting closer to me. "I will say it, over and over again if it will be the only way for you to get out of my room and leave me alone!"

"But you're hurt, I won't leave you."

"Kung hindi ka aalis," tinuro ko pa ang kanyang matigas na dibdib habang nakaangat ang tingin sa kanya. "Ako nalang ang aalis."

I forced my body to stand up through the pain that I felt on my right foot, moved about-face and took a few steps on my way to the door, leaving him in my room.

Almost, I almost reach the doorway when a pair of athletic muscular hands and arm caught me, lifting my feet off the ground, carried me in a bridal style.

"Law! Hindi mo ba maintindihan? Nagsasayang ka lang ng oras dito sa akin! Mas mabuti pa sigurong asikasuhin mo muna 'yong girlfriend mo!"

He sat at the edge of my bed and placed me on his lap. "Ituro mo sa akin kung nasa'n ang masakit. Go on, little girl."

Alam kong alam niya kung nasa'n ang masakit at ang sugat sa bahagi ng paa ko. Sa laki ba naman ng sugat ko ay imposibleng hindi niya makikita 'yon pero tinanong niya pa talaga ako na parang bata at katulad ng lagi niyang ginagawa sa akin noong nasusugatan ako. Napapakalma niya kasi ako sa gano'ng paraan.

Nandito na naman ako. Nag-iinit na naman ang sulok ng mga mata ko at nangingilid ang mga luha.

"Ituro mo na, Kryptonite," he whispered over my ear, voice was never been so soft like this and it scare the hell out of me.

Siya lang yata ang kaisa-isang taong nakakaintindi at pinagtitiisan ang ugali kong mas masahol pa sa masamang tao.

Napakalma niya na sana ako at ituturo ko na rin sana ang sugat ko ngunit bigla na namang pumasok sa isip ko ang nangyari kanina.

Abruptly, I pounded my fists against his stone-hard chest. "No! I don't need you, I don't need you!"

Nang hindi ako tumigil sa kakasuntok sa kanyang dibdib hanggang sa namumula na ang mga kamay ko ay saka niya pa hinuli ang mga ito at idinikit sa kanyang dibdib bago niya ako niyakap ng napakahigpit upang hindi na makagalaw pa.

Binalak kong gumalaw at kumawala sa kanya ngunit ang higpit lang masyado ng pagkakayakap niya kaya nang nawalan na ako ng lakas ay idinaan ko nalang sa iyak.

Ito ang unang beses na ginawa niya sa akin 'to dahil kahit noong bata pa ako ay hinahayaan niya naman akong umalis kung gugustuhin ko at kapag nagagalit ako sa kanya. Hindi niya pa ako niyakap ng ganito kahigpit noon, sobrang higpit na hindi niya talaga ako bibigyan ng kalayaan.

"A-Ang sama mo, Law," sabi ko sa gitna ng paghikbi habang nakasubsob ang mukha sa dibdib niya.

"Masama talaga ako, Kryptonite," sang-ayon niya pa ngunit nawala na ang pagiging marahan sa boses niya. "Lalo na kapag sinusubukan kong magpakabait sa'yo pero hindi mo man lang pinapahalagahan 'yon."

Kaya takot akong marinig ang pag-iba ng boses niya kanina. It was more intimidating when he's gentle and I didn't know why it affects me so much.

We're both breathing heavily, hard. Our chest moved in the same time and rhythm.

I felt something soft and warm landed at the fabric of my clothes on the shoulder part of it.

He kissed my shoulder repeatedly and up to the corner of my neck while I was busy sobbing against his chest. I couldn't push him away since he had wrapped his muscular arms around me in an airtight hug. He made me remain unable to move.

"B-Bakit ba kasi hindi mo nalang puntahan ang girlfriend mo?" hindi na naman ako makapagsalita ng maayos. "D-Dahil lang sa mas malakas ka ginaganito mo na ako? H-Hindi mo ba naisip na babae ako, Law? Syempre... hindi kita malalabanan."

"Para saan pa ang lakas ko kung hindi ko gagamitin, hm?"

"A-Ang daya mo naman."

Nasa gano'ng posisyon kami sa loob ng sampung minuto. Tahimik lang at hindi na rin naman ako nagtangkang lumaban sa paraan ng pagkakayakap niya sa akin.

What else could I do if I tried to oppose him? I'd choose to do nothing because I know that I would receive another pain on my body if I'd try to fight against him.

Sa wakas ay napakalma ko na ang katawan ko, unti-unting nawawala na 'yong paghikbi ko at dahil nga sa ilang gabi nang hindi ako maayos na makatulog, mahapdi at namumugto

ang mga mata ko kaya hinayaan ko nalang ang sarili kong makatulog sa mga bisig ni Law.

Pero bago ako tuluyang nilamon ng antok ay narinig ko pa ang muling pagsalita niya habang patuloy na hinahalikan ang aking balikat at leeg.

"Sleep, my little girl."

Napabalikwas ako nang marinig ko ang paulit-ulit na pagbanggit ng malalim na boses ni Law ang mga salitang 'yon sa panaginip ko.

Anxiously, my gaze landed on my clothes. I was wearing a pair of light blue pajamas now and when I remove the duvet off my feet which I couldn't forget about my wound there. I saw the white bandage around my right foot, secured at the very part of where the wound was.

I got distracted at the familiar addictive masculine scent of Law but when I look around I was still and clearly in my room, so how come did I smell it? Could it be a pseudo scent that was just playing on my nostrils? Making me believe that I was in his room, laying on his bed?

Was I still dreaming? Does my sense of smell got affected if ever I was hallucinating?

Muling bumaba ang tingin ko sa aking kawawang paa at ngayon ko pa napagtantong iba na ang kulay ng sheets dito sa kama ko at kahit 'yong comforter at unan ay iba na rin.

I knew that Law has different kinds of bedsheets, duvet and pillowcase with various shades of brown and this one on my bed looked new—not those sheets that he was currently using on his own bed. I didn't care if it wasn't the exact things that he was using, for me, this was enough, at least I could smell his scent.

Feeling relax at the things surrounded me that smell like him, I let my body collapse back on to the bedsheet that has light shades of brown in a stripe pattern.

Ayos na 'to, parang gusto ko na ulit matulog dahil hinihila na naman ako ng antok. Ang bango naman kasi ng hinihigaan ko. Parang ayoko na tuloy sa strawberry scent ng shower gel ko.

Bakit naman kaya pinalitan ni Law 'to? Baka ay nabahiran ng dugo? Kulay puti pa naman 'yon.

Akmang pipikit na ulit ako pero agad kong naimulat ang aking mga mata nang naalala ko ang buong nangyari.

"Nasa'n kaya siya?" I asked to myself, wondering and then I pouted. "Baka kasama ang girlfriend niya."

Hindi ko alam kung anong oras na pero nang tumingin ako sa bintana at sa nakasarang kurtina nito ay alam ko na agad na gabi na at umuulan.

Gabi na kaya alam kong kaming dalawa nalang ni Law ang nandito at umuwi na siguro si Dana.

Kahit masakit pa sa paa ay nagpursige akong naglakad upang lumabas ng kwarto.

"Dana, may kotse naman ako, pwede naman kitang ihatid," narinig kong boses ni Law nang binuksan ko ang pinto ng aking kwarto. Mula sa labas ng katabing kwarto ko ang narinig kong boses niya.

Dana? She's still here?

"Pero gabi na, Law. Umuulan pa, dito nalang kaya ako magpapalipas ng gabi? Natatakot ako baka may mangyaring disgrasya sa atin sa labas kapag pinilit mo pa, Law," bakas ang pag-aalala sa matinis na boses ni Dana. Her worried voice sounds exaggerated in my ear.

"Walang mangyayaring masama, Dana," seryoso ang boses ni Law. Buong-buo na ang desisyon na ihatid at paalisin si Dana rito.

Serves her right.

"Just this night, baby, please? Besides, I'm your girlfriend," Dana was using that flirty tone of her slutty voice again.

I got a feeling that Law wouldn't let her when all that I could hear after almost five minutes of silence was silence itself.

"Fine."

What? Ba't ang bilis sumuko ni Law? Tinawag lang na baby? Marupok.

Nakakainis, bakit ba ako nagagalit? Gusto kong ihampas ang pinto upang maitulak pasara o 'di kaya'y sipain pero 'wag nalang kasi may sugat pa ako. I usually use my right foot when it comes to kicking something or someone but right now, I couldn't use it. The poor thing was injured.

Saan naman matutulog si Dana kung gano'n?

May tatlong kwarto pa naman pero hindi pa nalilininisan 'yon. It was Kuya Laki and Kuya Lazi's room, the last was the master's bedroom that's supposed to be mommy and daddy's room. We didn't have guestroom, I had no idea why, maybe because my parents or Law didn't accept any guest to stay.

Paano kung patutuluyin niya sa sariling kwarto niya si Dana? Unfair, ako nga ay hindi niya na papasukin.

Kahit nahihirapan sa paglalakad at nakasuporta pa ang isang kamay ko sa pader ay lumabas ako ng kwarto ko at hindi pinansin ang dalawa nang dumaan ako sa tabi nila at pumasok sa nakabukas na kwarto ni Law.

Buti ay hindi naman ako sinaway ni Law.

"Kryptonite, do you want something to eat?" narinig kong sumunod sa akin si Law papasok sa loob ng kwarto.

Naalala ko, hindi pa pala ako kumain simula kaninang lunch. Kaya naman pala 'yan agad ang pambungad ni Law.

"Mamaya na ako kakain pagbalik mo," I said and sat on his bed, lifting my feet off the ground and rested it on the mattress. "Ihatid mo muna si Dana."

"Oh, baby girl, your kuya won't do that because I'm staying here to spend the night, for good," nang-iinis ang boses niya at ang kapal ng mukhang pumasok din dito sa loob.

Gusto kong irapan siya pero mas pinili kong ngumiti nang huminto siya sa tabi ni Law.

"Okay, you can borrow one of my comforter and you can sleep on the sofa downstairs," I showed her the kindest smile I could express. "Beware of the ghost

and flying cockroaches."

I told her to scare her, kahit 'yong totoo ay wala naman talagang multo o 'di kaya'y lumilipad na ipis dito. Magaling kaya maglinis ang taga-linis ng bahay na 'to kahit twice a week lang 'yong general cleaning.

"Oh no, no, 'wag ka ng mag-abala pa," aniya sabay kapit sa isang braso ni Law. "I'm sleeping beside your kuya."

Kunot noong bumaling ako ng tingin kay Law.

"Law? Is that true?"

"Tell her, Law," utos ni Dana nang hindi agad sumagot si Law.

Bakit gano'n nalang kung makautos sa kanya si Dana? Did she successfully wrap Law around her fingers? Napaikot niya ba ang napakagaling kong kapatid?

"Yes."

My smile eventually turned into a scowl.

Agad akong umalis sa kama at padabog na lumabas sa kwarto niya upang bumalik sa loob ng kwarto ko.

One hour, it was past nine in the evening. I couldn't hear anything outside but the heavy rain violently falling.

Gutom na ako pero siguro ay mamayang hating gabi na ako lalabas at kakain.

Walang pakialam 'yon si Law kasi hindi niya man lang ako kinatok at pinilit na kumain.

Pinatay ko 'yong ilaw kanina kaya madilim dito sa loob ng kwarto ko habang nakahiga ako sa kama ko. Inaamoy ang mabangong amoy nito.

I need to hold on my word. Hindi na ako magiging hadlang sa kanila, bahala sila sa kung ano man ang gagawin nila. Malaki naman na sila.

Kalahating oras ang nagdaan at naghihintay pa rin ako na dumating ang hating gabi kahit na gusto ko ng matulog dahil sa amoy ni Law na dumidikit sa damit ko mula sa mga pillowcase, comforter at bedsheets.

Nakatagilid ang posisyon ng pagkakahiga ko, nakatalikod sa pinto at nakaharap sa bintana, pinagmamasdan ang ulan nang hinawi ko ang mga kurtina na nakatakip doon kanina.

Kumunot ang noo ko nang may pumasok na ilaw dito sa madilim kong kwarto mula sa pintong hindi ko man lang narinig na bumukas nang dahil sa malakas na ulan na patuloy na bumubuhos sa labas.

Nawala rin naman ang ilaw nang sumura ang pinto.

Halos bente segundo lang simula kaninang sumara ang pinto nang may naramdaman akong malamig at basang malaking kamay na humawak sa braso ko.

It was dark but I could feel how my bed bounced underneath and the movement of someone on top of me, pinning me against my bed.

Malamig at basa ang dalawang kamay nito na nakahawak sa palapulsuhan ko. May naramdaman pa akong iilang patak ng malamig na tubig sa mukha ko na tsansa ko ay galing sa buhok ng taong pumaibabaw sa akin.

Sinubukan kong lumaban pero naestatwa ang katawan ko sa susunod nitong ginawa.

Isang malamig, malambot at mamasa-masang bagay ang naramdaman kong pumisil sa mainit na labi ko.

Kusang pumikit ang mga mata ko nang naramdaman ko ang paggalaw ng mapang-angking mga labi nito sa labi ko. Inaangkin ang bawat sulok nito.

I felt his warm tongue slipped out of his mouth, making my lips as wet and moist as his. I could hear the soft and erotic sounds that had come from his wet tongue and lips whenever he lick, suck and bite my lower lip.

My back arched because of the rising heat in my body when one of his hand released my wrist and suddenly I felt the presence of his one large arm at my butt, squeezing and massaging it.

Stunned, I didn't even bother to kiss him back.

Nang isang minuto na ang nakalipas at naramdaman niyang kusang gumagalaw ang katawan ko sa ilalim niya ay agad niyang inilayo ang kanyang mga labi sa akin.

Kahit na hindi ko naman siya hinalikan pabalik ay pareho pa rin kaming hinihinal.

"Hinatatid ko na siya sa bahay nila," mariing bulong niya at hinihinal pa rin.

Naninindig ang mga balahibo ko sa batok at patungo sa braso nang naramdaman ko ang mainit niyang hininga nang tumama ito sa leeg ko.

Parang robot ang katawan ko at ni hindi man lang ako gumalaw nang naramdaman ko ang paghila niya ng pang-ibabang pajama ko hanggang sa inalis niya na ito sa katawan ko at hindi na nakapagpigil.

I closed my eyes and bit my lower lip to stop myself from moaning.

In the middle of squeezing and massaging my butt inside my underwear, he said some words that I would never expect from him.

"I broke up with her and I want you to be in a relationship with me."

Chapter 16

Mature Content Warning. This chapter may contain content of an adult nature. If you are easily offended or are under the age of 18, just ignore and skip some scenes. Some words within are intended for adults only and may include scenes of sexual content, strong languages, violence etc.

Boyfriend

"I want a label and I don't want you as my sister."

I adjusted my vision until my eyes had used to the darkness of my room, until I could finally get a clearer and visible image of Law's handsome chiselled face and those steely look in his eyes. It made me what to think that maybe it's better that I should hide from it, stay away from it because of the danger and trouble that I would possibly get. Although I appreciate how intimidating could he be in my eyes and I would be the hideous one that no one would try and take a single peak yet Law stared at me like I was the most expensive stone in the universe that he would want-desperately and greedy to claim.

Menacing and forbidden. I know.

Mula sa pagkakaawang ng mga labi ko nang dahil sa biglaang paghalik niya sa akin kanina ay marahan ko itong itinikom. Nakita ko kung paano niya pinanood ang maingat at marahang paggalaw ng mga labi ko. Nakuha ko na naman ang atensyon niya.

Hawak niya pa rin ang pwet ko gamit ang isang kamay habang ang isa niya pang kamay ay nakahawak sa palapulsuhan ko, idinidiin 'yon sa kama sa tabi ng ulo ko.

Dear me. Could somebody dictate my mind to do something in the name of righteousness? It would be my honour to obey.

I need air. This darn son of a Cavanaugh on top of me was driving me close to insanity.

Hypnotized by the heavenly sight of Law's face, my free hand moved up like it had its own mind to do so.

Bumaba ang aking tingin mula sa kanyang nagdidilim na mga mata pababa sa namumula at mamasa-masang labi niya.

Ginamit ko ang aking hinalalaki at hinaplos ang kanyang pang-ibabang labi. Hinayaan niya naman ako na parang pag-aari ko siya.

Kanina ay malamig 'yon pero nang matapos niya akong halikan ay nararamdaman ko na ang namumuong init do'n. Naramdaman kong basa rin ang suot niya damit, siguro ay sumugod siya sa ulan nang hinatid niya si Dana sa kanila?

Pero may kotse naman siya? Siguro hindi na siya gumamit ng payong patungo sa kotse niya at dahil din siguro sa pagmamadaling pumasok dito sa bahay nang nakabalik na siya.

Ginapang niya pa talaga ako sa sarili kong kama.

"But Law, this is wrong..." masuyong bulong ko habang patuloy na hinahaplos ang kanyang mainit at mamasa-masang pang-ibabang labi gamit ang hinlalaki ko. "... and incest."

Binitiwang niya ang isang kamay ko at pinanood ko siyang hinuli ang kamay kong pinaglalaruan ang kanyang namumulang labi.

He pulled my hand away from it.

"Mas masarap ang bawal, 'di ba? 'Yon ang lagi mo'ng ginagawa kaya mo ako laging sinusuway at kaya lagi kang nirereport sa guidance," matigas at bakas ang dahas sa boses niya. "Gusto ko lang naman tikman ang bawal, Kryptonite."

Malumanay ang mga mata ko nang hindi na ito mahinto sa panonood sa kanya, lalo na

nang inangat niya ang kamay kong hawak niya paangat sa kanyang labi.

I witnessed how his warm mouth took my thumb in. Eat it, lick and suck it like a sweet lollipop or melting ice cream. For me, I felt that he was punishing my thumb that I just rubbed across his lower lip earlier.

"Enlighten me please..." I said, trying to get back to the main topic after the distraction that he made.

He pulled out my thumb out of his mouth and I saw it glisten because of some of his warm and sweet saliva that left and kept sticking upon my skin.

"Gusto ko ng bawal at ikaw 'yon."

Saka niya muling kinain ang hinalalaki ko na parang isang sanggol na sobrang gutom.

Natatakot at kinakabahan ako sa paraan ng pagkakasabi niya no'n. Sa kanyang mababa at mariing tono ng maawtoridad niyang boses at sa mga mapang-akin niyang mga matang hindi na ako nilulubayan ng tingin.

Ngumiwi ako nang naramdaman ang patuloy na paghimas niya sa pwet ko. Hindi niya talaga tinantanan ang bahaging 'yon. Pinagdidiskitahan niya talaga ang pwet ko.

"T-Tikim lang naman, 'di ba, Law?" how I wanted to desperately cut my tongue. I couldn't help but stutter, I was nervous and scared. "Isang gabi lang naman 'di ba?"

"Sa ngayon, tikim lang muna," he replied after sliding his warm tongue around my thumb.

"Sa ngayon? Paano bukas o sa susunod na gabi?"

"Kakainin ko na."

Napalunok ako.

How did this happen? And why was I asking him questions as if I was going to agree with him and those label-relationship that he wanted us to be?

Incest. It's incest.

Unwisely and now I need the presence of my brain to help me decide. I knew that my possible decisions and actions-also his would affect our family name, our parent's reputation in Philippines' high society.

Well, I just thought that if we'd be in a relationship then do we have to do it secretly? In a manner that no one else would know but us, just the two of us.

But that wouldn't be easy.

Sinundan ko siya ng tingin nang lumayo siya at umalis mula sa pagkakadagan sa akin at nakaluhod na sa kama sa tabi ko.

"Dapa," gamit niya na naman ang kanyang boses na hindi ko magawang sumuway.

I was no and not close to being an obedient girl. Most of the time and days, I chose to disobey him. Delighted for this night, just this once, I obliged and wanted to follow more of his orders.

Nang gumalaw ako para dumapa ay agad siyang puwesto sa nakadikit kong mga binti at marahas na hinila pababa ang underwear ko. Niyakap ng kanyang maskuladong braso ang bewang ko at saka ko naramdaman ang pagbaba at pagdikit ng kanyang matigas na panga sa isang pisngi ng pwet ko.

I bit the inside of my cheeks the moment his lips drew closer to the soft and bouncy surface of my butt. "What kind of relationship is it, Law?" I could barely compose another question. "Sexual relationship?"

"I don't like it when you think of me that way, little girl," sagot niya mula sa likuran ko at saglit na inilayo ang mukha sa pwet ko. "Hindi sex ang habol ko sa'yo."

"Pero 'yon ang gusto mo 'di ba?" I retorted.

"Kapag galit ako, 'yon ang gusto ko," wala pa'ng isang segundong sagot niya.

"Galit ka ba ngayon?"

"Sobra..."

Gusto kong sumigaw at magmura nang hindi man lang siya nagpaalam na sisimulan niya na ang pagkagat, sipsip at pagdila ng pwet ko.

I think this was enough, the hickeys would be invisible on my butt and not on my neck. That just means that I didn't need a scarf nor turtle neck clothes to hide it because it's already hidden. It's on my butt. This would be a good advantage to me.

Burying my face hard against my pillow, I breathe the addictive masculine scent that came from the pillowcase and moaned. Alam ko namang hindi niya maririnig dahil sa pagsubsob ng mukha ko sa aking unan at idagdag na rin ang napakalakas na ingay mula sa labas dahil sa patuloy na pagbagsak ng ulan.

Wala akong ibang ginawa at hinayaan ko siyang patuloy na dinidilaan, marahang kinakagat at sinisipsip ang balat sa pwet ko. Palipatlipat ang kanyang mga labi at dila sa iba't ibang bahagi ng pwet ko.

Wild and had no mercy. His lips and tongue was so expert, it would made me think that he had done this to the other girls or one of his past women. I didn't really know if he had one. Everybody in our family knows that he's not interested of having such kind of passionate relationship.

Now, here he was, convincing me to be in a relationship with him.

Mukhang hindi uso sa kanya ang panliligaw. Gano'n din naman kasi noon si Kuya Lazi kay Ate Francesca. Nagulat nga ako nang nabalitaang sila na pala agad.

Hindi na magkamayaw ang paraan ng paghinga ko. Mabigat at mabilis nang naramdaman kong may nasagi ang kanyang dila sa ibabang parte ng pwet ko.

Hot. I felt so hot.

Akala ko ay lulubuyan niya na ang parte ng pagkababae ko, sa ibaba lang ng pwet ko, sa sulok nito na aksidenteng nasagi ng matalim na dulo ng kanyang mapangahas na dila pero napaangat nalang bigla ang ulo ko mula sa pagkakasubsob ng mukha ko sa unan nang muli kong naramdaman ang kanyang dila roon.

Hindi na aksidente 'yon, sinadya niya na talaga.

Agad na umaksyon ang isang kamay ko at mahigpit na hinawakan ang kanyang malambot na buhok.

Hinila ko ang kanyang buhok at sinubukang ilayo ang kanyang mukha roon nang mas lalo niya itong isiniksik sa pwet ko. His warm and moist tongue was teasing my feminine part and I could feel the tip of his pointed nose poking the center hollow in my butt.

Hindi na matahimik ang bibig ko sa sunod-sunod na pag-ungol at ang kusang paggalaw ng katawan ko upang mailayo ang pwet ko sa kanyang mukha.

"O-Oh my God! Law! Stop!" I shouted and got embarrassed that I wanted to shake his head away from my butt. "Stop please, please, stop. D-Don't be so harsh on me, Law!"

Kahit na hindi naman masyadong naabot ng kanyang dila ang pagkababae ko ay nakakakiliti pa rin sa pakiramdam ang kanyang nagwawalang matulis na dila roon. Kahit saan-saan nalang dumadapo at lumalapat ang kanyang mamasa-masang dila sa bawat sulok no'n.

Parang nagugustuhan niya pang sinusubukan kong itulak ang kanyang noo palayo pero hindi siya nagpatinag.

Yes, it felt good. So good. Pero nahihiya pa rin ako sa ginagawa niya sa akin at sa walang awang paglaplap niya sa bawat sulok ng pwet ko.

Ang init. Lalo na ang kanyang dila at labi.

I gripped and pulled his soft hair again, away from my butt and look what did he just do when I failed to pull his head away?

He laughed.

Napamura ako dahil tinawanan niya lang ako at naramdaman ko pa sa pwet ko ang pag-angat ng sulok ng kanyang mga labi.

He's so evil. Alam niyang nahihirapan na ako sa pag-alis ng kanyang mukha sa pwet ko pero tinawanan at nginitian niya lang ako.

"U-Ugh... You're so bad, Law!"

Nainis ako dahil biglang umangat ang kanyang ulo mula sa pwet ko, kung kailan hindi ko na siya hinihila palayo dahil biglang nag-iba ang nararamdaman ko.

Binibitin niya ba ako?

"What?" he intimidatingly voiced out with deep chuckles. "Kryptonite, you should moan you're so good and not you're so bad."

Binitin niya nga talaga ako nang hinila niya na paangat ang aking underwear kasama na rin ang pajama kong siya na mismo ang nagsuot sa katawan ko para sa akin bago lumayo sa akin pero nakaupo pa rin naman sa kama.

While my body was on the same position, I waited and waited and waited but he didn't continued what he did.

There's no chance now that he'd do it again because I was wearing my underwear and pajamas, he pulled it back up on my body to hide my generous derriere. I knew that

he mean it that way, it's the other way of him telling me that he's done and he wouldn't do it again if I didn't agree to his proposal. Damn him.

Was it really just a free taste?

Hopelessly, I rolled my body to lay on my back and shifted the irritation look in my eyes to the devil.

"May gusto akong hawakan, Law. Ayoko munang makita dahil... hindi pa ako handa pero gusto kong hawakan, please?" kinapalan ko na talaga ang mukha ko kahit na nakakahiya na sinasabi ko sa kanya 'to.

I just wanted us to get even.

From the darkness, I saw his brows raised. "Name it."

Breathing in so deep that I could almost filled with air every corner of my lungs, I exhaled.

"Y-Your... penis."

He groaned as his response and I was afraid that he dislike the idea of me touching his manhood. And again, Dana's face appeared on my mind, I remember the time that she attempted to touch his private sexual organ.

The result was she didn't succeed from her attempt. Law told her that it's not hers to touch.

Would he let me? It's not mine and I didn't have the right to touch it.

"A-Ayos lang naman kung ayaw mo, Law. Hindi naman kita pinipilit-"

"No," he stopped me. The tone of his darkening voice was so hard and low. "You can touch it, little girl. Nagdadalawang-isip lang ako dahil hindi ko alam kung ano ang magiging kinalalabasan nito sa oras na hinawakan mo."

"Hawak lang naman, hindi ko naman puputulin," nakangusong sabi ko habang nakababa ang tingin sa kanyang pants kahit sa gitna ng dilim ay nakikita kong parang nadagdagan ang laki ng umbok nito sa gitna. "Ilang inch ba 'yan, Law? Ang sabi ni Dana, malaki at mahaba raw."

I thought that he's going to scold me about why I was asking those things straight to the point. Unexpectedly, he didn't.

Once again, I heard his alluring and sexy deep laugh.

Malalim at mababa ang tono ng kanyang paraan ng pagtawa nang dahil sa tanong ko. Lalaking lalaki sa pandinig ko. "Oh fuck."

"Law? Are you okay? Bakit natawa ka?" kunot noo at inosenteng tanong ko.

I heard him stop from sexily laughing. "Little girl, you look so curious," he answered pulling my fine left foot close to him, careful not to accidentally touch the other injured foot. "Get up. Kakain ka na ng dinner mo pagkatapos nito."

No way? I thought he's my dinner?

"Okay," sinadya kong gawing mas masunurin sa pandinig niya ang boses ko.

Sinundan ko siya ng tingin nang naglakad siya papunta sa switch ng ilaw dito sa kwarto ko.

Hearing the instant click from the switch right when Law turned the light on, from the average size of chandelier hanging from the center part of the ceiling-the light from it illuminated my whole room.

Law's appearance greeted me right after.

Wet, sexy, hot, wild, oh name it all. The white tee shirt that he's wearing was soaked and sticking up on his skin like it was glued. It was as clear as the day because the white tee shirt looked almost transparent, his broad and hard chest was very visible in my eyes, most especially the lower part of it. The six packs, I mean.

He looked really delicious for a dinner. If he'd be an appetizer? Then he'd be the most appetizing hors d'oeuvre in the whole universe.

I would like to devour him.

Minura ko na talaga ang sarili ko at umiwas ng tingin sa kanyang katawan. Dapat ay lagi kong tatandaan na kapatid ko siya. Kapatid ko siya.

Pero paano ko magagawa 'yon kung siya mismo, 'yong mas nakakatanda at siya pa 'yong mas mature mag-isip ay parang tuluyan na nga'ng nabura sa isip niya na kapatid niya ako.

Should I do the same way? Because honestly, I felt the same pleasure every time that he's touching me possessively and although most of the time it was aggressive and a little bit obsessive when it comes to my dear butt.

My eyes-that was I guess looked at him hungrily, starving for him to come close to me-darted directly and instantly at him, watched him leisurely walking back to where I was sitting.

Bakit pinapatagal niya pa ang paglalakad niya? Sinasadya niya ba 'to?

Nakaangat ang tingin ko sa kanya nang huminto siya sa dulo ng kama, nanatiling nakatayo sa harap ko. Matangkad siya kaya kalebel ng ulo ko ang kanyang matigas na tiyan.

Nakatitig siya sa akin nang bumaba ang tingin ko sa kanyang pants na marahan niyang inaalis ang pagkakabutones ng malaking butones sa gitna at pati na rin ang zipper nito.

"Close your eyes if you're not ready to see it," he instructed, sounded like those strict professors at school. "'Wag lang masyadong higpitan ang pagkakahawak, okay?"

I was trying to hide the anxiety and excitement that rushed throughout my whole system. "Okay," nodding, I was so glad that I didn't stammer.

Ayokong pumikit pero natatakot naman ako sa maaaring bumungad sa akin kaya mas maganda na siguro 'yong nakapikit.

Pumikit ako kahit na alam kong pagsisisihan kong hindi ko makita 'yon.

"Give me your hand, please," utos ni Law, parang naninigurado lang kung desidido na ba talaga akong hawakan 'yon at hindi lang napipilitan.

Inangat ko ang kanang kamay ko at naramdaman ko kaagad ang malaking kamay na sumakop sa kabuuan ng maliit kong kamay kumpara sa kanya.

Abot hininga na ang ginagawa ko-hindi, hindi na nga talaga ako siguro humihinga nang narinig ko ang kaluskos ng kanyang pants at underwear na marahang ibinaba niya na.

Siguro ay hindi lang ang mukha ko 'yong namumutla. Pati na rin siguro ang mga kamay ko.

Gusto kong makita. Sino ba namang hindi? Pero seryoso ako, natatakot pa akong makakita ng actual penis.

Law guided my hand to the location of his manhood and when just I felt one of my fingers have came a few seconds contact on its soft skin, my hand flinched on its own and I almost withdraw it off Law's grasp.

On my mind, I think that I have called all the saints. I couldn't say a word.

Buti nalang talaga at hindi binitiwang ni Law ang kamay ko at pinagpatuloy ang paghila nito.

Ayokong magmura, hindi ako dapat magmura.

Nang nahawakan ko na talaga siya, napakagat ako sa pang-ibabang labi ko dahil ang buong akala ko ay 'yong buo na talaga ang nahawakan ko ngunit hindi pa pala nang hinila ni Law ang kamay ko papunta sa pinakadulo nito.

Malambot pero matigas. My fingers wrapped around it like I was just holding the thickest and largest version of a fairy grandmother's wand.

Ngayon ko pa napagtantong hindi ko 'yon mahawakan ng buo gamit ang isang kamay lang, lalo na sa dulong bahagi nito. 'Yong sinasabi nilang pangalawang ulo ng mga lalaki.

Mainit ang palad ko at mainit din ang pagkalalaki niya. Nakakatakot hawakan 'yong dulong parte dahil parang pakiramdam ko ay tutuklawin ako.

Hindi ko sinubukang imulat ang mga mata ko dahil nakakatakot na nga kapag hawakan, ano pa kaya kung nakikita ko na ang hitsura nito?

All of a sudden, I realized that all about Law, his presence, his voice, his expressions, his face and every part of him was scary. Intimidating, and so does his manhood too. I just thought that this must be oversized. His immense and monstrous manhood effortlessly intimidated me.

I slid my hand up back to the top part of his manhood, marahan lang ang bawat paggalaw ng kamay ko pero kahit marahan lang 'yon ay pakiramdam ko patagal ng patagal ay mas lumalaki ang laki nito kaya sa sobrang gulat ko na parang nakatayo na yata sa harap ko ang kanyang pagkalalaki ay hinigpitan ko ang pagkakahawak do'n dahil baka ay kumalma siya at bumalik sa dati kapag hinigpitan ko.

"Kryptonite, little girl, 'wag masyadong higpitan," narinig kong bakas sa boses ni Law na parang nahihirapan siya.

Did I hurt him? Hindi naman mahaba ng kuko ko katulad ng kay Dana.

With my eyes closed, I pouted my lips. "L-Law. Natatakot ako..."

"Magpipigil ako, okay? Magpipigil ako," his soft deep voice was reassuring me. Pero 'di pa rin nawala sa boses niya na parang nahihirapan siya at nasasaktan.

Unti-unti kong niluwagan ang pagkakahawak sa kanyang pagkalalaki pero hindi pa rin naman ito bumabalik sa dati.

Where did my knowledge about these things go? I couldn't think what to do, what must not do. Lahat yata ng nalaman ko mula kay Kuya Laki at Cykee ay nakalimutan ko bigla.

"Law?"

"Hm?"

"Bakit masyadong matigas?" I asked, nevermind about anything else. "Ang sabi ni Kuya Laki-"

"Wag ka ng makipag-usap kay Laki ulit."

Wala pa'ng isang segundo nang naitikom ko ang aking bibig nang dahil sa biglang pagbabago ng tono ng kanyang boses.

Kanina ay marahan 'yon pero ngayon ay parang galit.

Right after he snapped those words at me, his manhood was getting harder and larger.

Hawak ko pa rin ang kanyang pagkalalaki nang huminto ako sa paggalaw ng aking mga kamay pataas baba nito. May naalala lang akong sinabi niya kanina.

Gusto niya lang makipag-sex kapag galit siya.

Galit naman talaga siya pero iba na 'to ngayon. I think his anger directed at me.

Isang minuto lang yata akong nakahawak sa kanyang pagkalalaki habang nakapikit pa rin at hindi na ginagalaw ang aking kamay na nakahawak sa kanya.

Minulat ko ang mga mata ko at hindi na nag-abala pang tumingin sa hawak ko. Nakatingala ako sa kanya at sakto naman palang kanina pa siya nakatitig sa akin, pinagmamasdan ako.

"No, Kryptonite," tiim bagang sabi niya at marahang umiling na nakatungo sa akin, parang nababasa niya ang posibleng nasa isip ko. "Ang sabi mo, hawak lang, 'di ba-oh fuck! Goddammit!"

Marahas siyang napasuklay sa kanyang buhok gamit ang mga daliri nang mabilis at marahas kong ginalaw ang kamay kong nakahawak sa kanyang pagkalalaki. Taas baba, mainit, mabilis at hindi ko hininto ang ginawa ko.

I wasn't satisfied, he was just too large to handle with one hand so I used my other hand and work with it.

"Kryptonite, little

girl, please, stop it," kahit na bakas ang pagmamakaawa sa kanyang boses ay hindi pa rin nawala ang nakakatakot na tono nito. "Tangina, 'yong pagpipigil ko."

Why didn't he just push me away? Just like what he did to Dana.

Hindi ako huminto.

"I know you're mad at me, Law. Hindi ko kaya nakakalimutan ang sinabi mo sa akin kanina," sabi ko habang patuloy pa rin na taas babang iginalaw ang aking dalawang kamay na mahigpit na nakahawak sa kanyang matigas na pagkalalaki. "Gusto mo'ng makipag-sex kapag galit ka 'di ba?"

"I'm not mad, okay?" pagkaklaro niya habang mariing nakapikit ang mga mata bago minulat 'yon at malumanay na tumingin sa akin. "I'm not mad, little girl. Now, stop it before I lose my self-control."

Nakita ko sa kanyang braso ang umiigting na kalamnan at ugat nito, nakakuyom din ang kanyang kamay. Pinipigilan talaga ang sarili na hawakan ako.

"No," nakangiting pagmamatigas ko at mas binilisan pa ang pagtaas baba ng dalawang kamay ko sa matigas na pagkalalaki niya.

He growled furiously.

"Fuck myself, fuck," bulong niya sa sarili niya, mahina lang pero narinig ko naman.

Wala pa nga'ng isang minuto nang hinuli niya ang mapaglarong dalawang kamay ko gamit ang isang kamay niya lang at inalis mula sa pagkakahawak ko sa kanyang pagkalalaki.

His other hand found its way to my nape and he leaned down, forward and closer to my face claiming my lips.

I didn't respond to his torrid kiss after thirty seconds but when I did, he immediately ended the kiss by pulling himself away from me and before he brought himself a meter distance, he left a long and soft kiss on my forehead.

Mabilis siyang tumalikod sa akin kaya hindi talaga ako nakakuha ng pagkakataong makita 'yong hinawakan ko. Malalaking hakbang ang ginawa niya patungo sa banyo ko.

Bumaba ang tingin ko sa aking dalawang kamay at natulala.

I didn't regret what I did. Kaya naman pala ang daming naghahabol kay Law, isama ko na pati ang mga bakla.

Nakakatakot ang laki no'n. Iniisip ko palang na ipasok niya sa akin 'yon ay parang hindi ko na kaya, parang hindi kakasya.

Nang tumayo 'yon kanina ay parang lagpas pusod niya pa yata 'yong haba.

What should I do when the day comes and he decided to devirginize me? I haven't said my approval to him. Should it be much better if I back out and stop all the bullshit?

He's my older brother. In the first place we shouldn't have done this.

But if he's determined to have a relationship with me and the feeling was mutual, so, what was I waiting for?

That incest thing was bugging me.

Kung hindi ako papayag, hindi ako patatahimikin ni Law at kapag papayag naman ako, hindi ako patatahimikin ng konsensya ko.

Bakit ba kasi hindi ko naramdaman ang pandidiring dapat ay maramdaman ko? Kaya ba

noong bata pa ako ay hindi masyadong malapit ang loob ni Law sa akin dahil may nararamdaman na pala siyang kakaiba?

Instead of killing my mind of thinking about Law, I decided to go downstairs with care in every step that I take, my right foot wasn't fully healed yet. I ate my dinner alone, how I love devouring some fresh lettuce.

After that, I went back to my room and found Law comfortably sleeping on my bed, naked but he left his boxers on. Of course he removed his wet clothes and lazy to get another in his room. I had no choice but to sleep beside him.

"Law, please? Please? I want this, these, that and those," pamimilit ko habang may hawak na isang damit sa kaliwang kamay at tatlong damit sa kanang kamay sabay turo pa sa ibang damit na nabighani ng mga mata ko.

It's been one week and three days. He cancelled our vacation to La Trinidad because of my right foot and now that it's okay, very fine, he decided to buy us things that we need here in the mall, for us to go to La Trinidad.

He's not bored following me wherever I go, even in this women's clothes boutique. Law was so patient.

Nope, I didn't trust how so much of a patient person he was. It made him look more intimidating.

"U-Uhm, Ma'am. Is this all?" kinakabahang tanong ng saleslady na siyang lumapit at tumulong sa akin.

"Yes, and oh, he'll be paying it," sagot ko, tinutukoy si Law na nasa likuran ko lang at nauna ng naglakad patungo sa kinaroroonan ng cashier upang magbayad.

Umangat ang kilay ko nang imbes na sumunod ang saleslady patungo sa kinaroroonan ng cashier ay mas lumapit pa ito para bumulong.

"Ma'am, may I ask if he's your friend, cousin or-"

"He's my brother," I dismissed her with a kind smile. Kahit sa kaloob-looban ko ay gusto ko na siyang hatakin sa buhok.

Alam ko kaya kung bakit siya ang lumapit sa amin para tulungan kami. Kanina pa kasi nakatingin sa aming dalawa ni Law ang iba pa'ng saleslady dito at siya lang ang naglakas loob na lumapit.

Nanatili ako sa pwesto ko upang mamili ng iba pang magugustuhan kong damit habang nagbabayad pa si Law. Iniwan na rin naman ako ng saleslady mag-isa rito.

Law was carrying the bags when we're finally done and go to the next boutique.

Paglabas na paglabas pa lang namin ay ang sama na ng timpla ng kanyang mukha. Tiim bagang naglalakad at nakasunod sa akin.

"I'm your boyfriend, Kryptonite. Why did you told the saleslady that I'm your brother?"

Sleepover

Pumayag ako kaya gano'n nalang ang naging reaksiyon ni Law, siguro ay kinausap siya ng saleslady kaya nalaman niya 'yon.

Sa susunod na araw na ang alis namin at wala pa rin akong ideya kung saang bahagi ng La Trinidad kami pupunta.

I heard the news that our cousins would be going to Compostela Valley next week if I wasn't mistaken, they'll be having their vacation at Grandpa Sattie's hacienda for the rest of April and be back here first week of May. Honestly, I wanted to go with them because I really missed the fresh breeze of air and the sweet farm of Grandpa.

Enough of this dreaming to go back and visit Grandpa Sattie's hacienda because Law wouldn't allow me to come with them.

I'd just have to wait until the last week of April.

"Law bakit ba kasi ayaw mo'ng sumabay nalang tayo sa kanila? Pupunta rin naman tayo roon, bakit hindi nalang ngayong April?" bakas sa nainip kong boses na hindi lang ako nagtatanong, kung 'di ay namimilit na rin. "Uuwi na sila sa May that means tayong dalawa nalang ang huling makakabisita roon?"

Turning my head to the driver's side from looking out at the car's window, I saw him took a quick glance at me. His body was rigid, and the tensed muscles on his arms from the way he held the wheel had given me more amazement.

Impressive, he have experienced working in the wet market and just by carrying lots of buckets full of fish and ice, his physical appearance grew more muscular and tough.

"Don't worry, little girl," aniya habang nakapokus pa rin ang kanyang mga mata sa daan. "Grandpa will visit the hacienda this coming May."

Nakaangat ang isang kilay ko habang pinagmamasdan siyang nagmamaneho. "Kaya ba mas gusto mo'ng sa May nalang tayo pupunta? Nasa mansyon ba ngayon si Grandpa Sattie?"

"Yes," he confirmed, very serious at the subject. "Gusto kong makausap si Grandpa."

Ano naman kaya ang pag-uusapan nila?

"Why didn't you talk to him last time you visit the mansion?"

"He's busy and I was there to talk to Dad," said his hard tone with a grim expression on his chiselled face.

Nakakatakot siya kaya ibinalik ko nalang ang tingin sa labas ng kotse niya. "Law..." I spoke, enunciating his name. "Pwede ba'ng ayusin niyo na ni daddy kung ano man 'yang pinag-aawayan niyo? Ayokong magkasakitan kayong dalawa ni daddy."

"Susubukan ko," and now his voice became darker.

Not bad, at least he'd give it a try. That's a big effort from him.

Alam ko namang ayaw niyang makipagbati kay daddy na parang ang laki ng kasalanan ni

daddy sa kanya.

Sa sobrang lalim ng mga iniisip ko ay humantong ito ulit tungkol sa nangyari noong gabing nakipaghiwalay siya kay Dana.

"How's Dana after the break up?" I blurted out and shut my mouth as fast as I talk, embarrassed at my sudden question.

Hindi ko napigilang magtanong kasi simula noong huling gabi ni Dana sa bahay ay wala na talaga akong iba pang narinig na balita tungkol sa kanya.

Ang bilis naging sila, kasing bilis ng paghihiwalay nila.

To shoo away the uncomfortable and awkward feeling on my chest, I lifted up my feet off the car floor and rested it comfortably up on the dashboard of his expensive car.

"I don't know," walang pakialam na sagot niya at sumulyap sa paa kong nakapatong sa dashboard ng kotse niya. "Kryptonite, little girl, get your feet off the dashboard and sit properly."

How sweet, his dark voice was controlling me and himself from scolding me. It was very unladylike but have I ever tried acting like a lady my whole life? No. I could describe myself as a girl or a female, just a female, and not a respectable lady, much less an independent woman.

Hindi ko ibinaba ang paa ko. Komportable na ako at nagpapasalamat na naghilom na rin 'yong sugat ko. Malaya na akong nakakasuot ng mga rubber shoes, heels and so on.

"But I like it. Hayaan mo na nga ako, Law," I resisted, and in a stubborn manner, I asked another question again. "Where are we going anyway?"

"Cafe. May kakausapin lang ako, mabilis lang 'to," hindi naman bakas ang pagod sa kanyang matigas na boses sa sobrang dami kong tanong ay matiyaga niya iyong sinasagot. "I said, your feet, little girl."

I frowned, crossed my arms on my chest and didn't follow his order. "Why are you so damn commanding, Law?"

"No swearing," sobrang awtoridad ang nakabalot sa kanyang boses. "You know I don't tolerate you saying bad words, right?"

"You're so annoying," himutok ko at ibinaba na rin ang mga paa ko bago niya pa ako sesermonan.

It's four in the afternoon and according to what he said earlier, we're going to a cafe and have a talk to his nameless friend. I was expecting that it would be one of the guys in their circle of friends, hoping that his friend wouldn't turn out to be a female.

Don't get me wrong, I hate to say that it makes me feel unimportant seeing him talking to other female species.

Basta hindi ako nagseselos.

Tungkol naman sa susunod na araw na pagpunta namin sa La Trinidad ay hindi na ako makapaghintay kahit na hindi ko naman alam kung saang sulok o bahagi ng La Trinidad kami pupunta.

Pero bakit may pakiramdam ako na parang may iba pa'ng mangyayari aside sa pagbabakasyon lang doon? This gut feeling was killing me.

Bumaba tuloy ang tingin ko sa pants ni Law habang abala siya sa pagmamaneho. Hindi niya naman siguro ako mahahalatang nakatingin sa bahagi ng umbok na 'yon dahil nakapokus naman siya sa pagmamaneho.

Wala pa namang nangyari sa amin. He didn't devirginize me, these past days felt like heaven to me. Huli niyang nahawakan ang pwet ko ay 'yong gabing hinawakan ko ang pagkalalaki niya.

Pakiramdam ko talaga ay parang may pinaghahandaan siya.

Dapat na ba akong kabahan?

My eyes widened while staring at the bulge on his pants and saw it tightened. What happened?

Parang may nagagalit na naman sa loob no'n.

"Don't stare at it, Kryptonite," I heard his husky voice said. "Baka labasan ako, little girl."

Startled at his words. Mula sa pagtitig sa umbok ng pants niya ay tumingin ako sa kanyang mukha. "Huh? Pwede ba 'yon? Kahit hindi hinahawakan o hinahagod?"

Kahit na nalulunod na ako sa kahihiyan dahil nahuli niya akong nakatitig do'n ay nagawa ko pa ring magtanong.

So what? I had functional mouth, tongue and voice to utter.

"Hinahagod mo ng tingin kaya tigilan mo 'yan," he warned. Parang nagpipigil na naman nang nakita ko ang paghigpit ng hawak niya sa manibela.

Nanliit ang mga mata ko habang nakatingin sa kanya. "Ang daming ibang babaeng hinahagod 'yan ng tingin, nilabasan ka ba?"

"Hindi," he answered shortly. "Sa'yo lang 'to nilalabasan."

Dumfounded, I gasped. "Are you kidding me?"

"No."

'Yong pakiramdam na gusto kong tumalon sa bintana ng kotse habang tumatakbo ito? Kulang nalang mababaliw na ako.

"Law, kapatid mo ba talaga ako? Kasi feeling ko parang hindi," hindi ko na talaga maalís ang pagtataka kahit na may halong biro naman 'yong tanong ko.

"Wag mo'ng isipin na magkapatid tayo dahil hinding-hindi kita ituturing na kapatid."

That got my mouth shut like it had been muted for a moment. His words were quite painful for my part as his little sister.

"Paano mo nasabi 'yan? Ang sama mo talaga," I glared at him. Natigilan ako at tumingin sa labas nang inihinto niya ang kotse sa tabi ng kalsada. "Anong ginagawa mo? Bakit mo hininto ang sasakyan?"

Tiim bagang bumaling siya sa akin. "May relasyon na tayo, Kryptonite. Karelasyon mo ako," matigas at mariin niyang saad na pinapaalala sa akin kung ano ulit ang posisyon namin sa isa't isa. "Sinasabi ko lang ang totoo kaya isipin mo nalang na hindi tayo magkapatid."

Bumagsak ang mga balikat ko sa narinig. Pinagpipilitan niya talaga ang tungkol diyan.

"Pero 'yon naman ang totoo. Magkapatid tayo," giit ko, pilit na ginigising siya sa katotohanan.

I didn't see him as my brother but I never treated him like he wasn't, same as he didn't see or treat me as his sister.

Down, I felt so bad for myself.

Pero nandito na, pumayag ako sa gusto niya dahil alam kong sa sarili ko ay gusto ko rin 'to. Bakit ba pinag-aawayan pa namin ang tungkol dito? Gusto ko lang naman linawin ang lahat, hindi pa namin napag-usapan ang tungkol dito.

Hangga't maaga pa ay gusto kong malinaw ang lahat sa akin.

Umiwas ako ng tingin sa kanya at bumagsak ang paningin ko sa aking kamay na nasa hita ko.

"I'm sorry, little girl," he apologized, sincere and stern. "I didn't mean to be so rude."

Kahit sa paghingi ng tawad ay nakakatakot pa rin siya at ang kanyang maawtoridad na boses. Nagdadalawang-isip na nga ako kung kakausapin ko pa ba siya pagkatapos ng nangyaring sagutan namin.

I wanted to blame myself for bringing up that subject. I didn't regret it anyway, this was my chance to talk about it with him.

"I know that this won't end up good, Law. Maghihiwalay din naman tayo sa oras na malaman nila mommy at daddy ang tungkol sa atin," hindi ako nagtangkang tumingin sa kanyang mga mata. Natatakot ako sa maaaring makita ko roon. "Hindi natin maiiwasan 'yon."

"Kaya nga pupunta tayo sa hacienda," I could hear no worries in his intimidating voice. Sa tingin ko ay nakaplano na para sa kanya ang lahat.

The only missing piece of his plan was me. My trust for him, my presence to stay with him so he could start and stick to his plans.

"No way..." mariin kong itinikom ang bibig ko bago inilipat ang tingin mula sa kamay ko pabalik sa mukha ni Law. "Is this why—wait, don't tell me. Don't tell me that you're going to confess our relationship to Grandpa Sattie?"

One minute of silence became so intense for me.

"Yes."

"Are you out of your mind, Law?" I bursted, gusto ko na siyang sigawan pero natatakot ako. He's calm so I should be too. "Ano nalang ang sasabihin ni Grandpa kapag malaman niya? Papagalitan niya tayo."

Wala akong nakuhang sagot mula sa kanya dahil imbes na sagutin niya ang tanong ko ay inabot niya ang isang kamay ko.

He kissed the center part of my palm so gently, he's kissing it while the hardened expression that I could see in his eyes watched me.

Would I be so lucky to have Law? Other girls, mostly women was chasing and could kill just to have him, to touch that enormous and lengthy manhood down there. Above all of them, why did he find to choose me? Would I want him to be my brother or lover?

I wasn't ready to admit it.

"Isipin mo nalang na hindi tayo magkapatid," pag-uulit niya at may pahabol pa'ng halik sa palapulsuhan ko bago niya ibinalik ang kamay ko sa aking hita.

Muli niyang binuhay ang makina ng kotse at pinatakbo na ito.

Starting today, I need to practice myself about that. It has something to do with my normal mental state, to set it up on my mind and just think that we're not blood related, that he's not my brother? It's not easy.

Although, all that I felt was he's not really my brother and he, making me feel that I wasn't his sister. That's a little bit more easier, pretending was more effective though, I suggest because I really couldn't mark on my mind that he's not my brother knowing the truth that he really was.

After about another five minutes, we had arrived at the cafe where his friend was waiting.

Pumasok kami sa loob ng cafe at sa pagpasok pa lang namin ay nakita ko ang isang taong masakit sa mata tignan. Kahit na magkaka-sore eyes pa ako dahil sa pagtingin ko sa kanya ay hindi ako umiwas ng tingin.

Talunan lang ang umiwas ng tingin.

She did. Umiwas siya ng tingin sa akin at tumingin kay Law na kasabay ko sa paglalakad.

Around the light ambience of the cafe, pastel coloured walls with the aroma of coffee and tea mixing in the refreshing air, it felt so warm to be here but not except the mild cold feeling on my skin because the cafe was obviously air-conditioned. I looked at the counter for a moment which I saw some displays of snacks and baked goods such as cookies, biscuits, cupcakes and more sweets.

I have known for living with Law in the past years that he's a coffee addict and maybe I think that was why he loves every shades of brown.

May white at black coffee naman? Ayaw niya?

Naglakad kami ni Law patungo sa kinaroroonan ng dalawa niyang kaibigan. Nakaupo sila sa isang pang-apatang mesa kaya sakto lang talaga.

I liked the cafe because their seats wasn't just a simple chair, unlike those plastic or metal chair from some other cafe, the chairs here had cushion and look like a two seater sofa. So relaxing to sit on one of it while sipping some hot or iced coffee.

"Hindi ko akalaing isasama mo pala ang kapatid mo," bakas ang pagrereklamo sa boses ni Dana nang umupo kami pareho ni Law.

Unfortunately, my side of the seat was facing Dana and beside me, Law was facing his other guy friend.

"Bakit naman hindi? Kapatid ako, kaibigan ka lang," mataray kong sabi bago kinuha ang menu sa harap ko na nakalapag sa mesa.

I wanted to say; girlfriend niya ako, kaibigan ka lang. But that wouldn't be nice to hear from me, his precious hardheaded sister and I knew that friends were more important than girlfriends or boyfriends. For me, I'd definitely choose my friends over boyfriend.

What if she'd find out about our relationship? Sure, I couldn't suppress a hearty laugh. She'd probably smash her head against the table and go on hysteric to that matter of fact that I became Law's girlfriend for almost two weeks and looking forward for another week and month and year, what about her? Their relationship didn't even last for twenty four hours.

Somehow, I wasn't that reckless to say it straightaway.

Ako lang ata ang nakakakita ng mga puting usok na lumalabas sa ilong at tenga ni Dana nang dahil sa pagtataray ko sa kanya.

Wala kaya siyang laban sa akin. Kaharap namin si Law.

Nakaangat ang isang kilay na ibinaba ko ang tingin sa hawak kong menu at hinayaan si Dana na nanggagalaiti sa galit at inis.

"Gal, ano ba'ng gusto mo'ng pag-usapan natin?" narinig kong boses ni Law na kinakausap ang kaharap niyang lalaki. "May lakad pa kami ng kapatid ko kaya hindi na ako magtatagal."

Hindi ko alam na may lakad kami?

"Hindi mo ba ipapakilala sa akin ang kapatid mo?"

Doon na nila nakuha ang atensyon ko kaya't mabilis akong bumaling sa lalaking nagngangalang Gal mula sa pagbabasa ko ng mga pagkain na nakalista sa menu.

In my opinion, he's just a random guy with handsome face, smiling at me and he thought that he look cute wearing that kind of smile? Positively, he was, he looked exactly like a cute skinned bulldog.

"Kryptonite," matipid kong pakilala sa sarili ko dahil alam ko namang hindi nagsasayang ng oras si Law sa mga introduction na 'yan kung 'yong purpose ng lalaki ay landi lang at hindi pang-propesyunal na intensyon.

"Yeah, Gal, pagpasensyahan mo na. She's not really that friendly," pagsingit ng babaeng mabaho ang singit. Hindi ko inamoy pero umaalingasaw talaga ang baho, amoy patay na daga.

I smiled at her. "Ikaw kasi, masyado kang friendly kaya kahit sino nalang ang pumapasok sa'yo—I mean sa buhay mo," I shrugged my shoulders and scanned the menu.

Mas lalong lumapad ang ngiti ko nang nakita ang kanyang kamay na nakalapag sa mesa ay mahigpit niyang kinuyom.

Buti nalang at hindi ako sinasaway ni Law. Ang hinhin naman kasi ng boses ko na hindi halatang tinatarayan ko ang ex girlfriend niya.

May nakita akong sa tingin ko ay magugustuhan kong pagkain kaya umusog ako ng konti palapit kay Law sabay kapit sa matigas niyang braso.

"I want to eat this Vanilla Cupcake with Coffee Buttercream, please?" I requested, so desperate to taste it.

If only I had brought my money with me—if and only if I still have money in my wallet then I should've be calling some waiter by now and bring me what I want to eat, instead I was here begging for Law to buy me some. He's managing the money that mommy gave to us.

"Ugh, spoiled brat," I heard Dana's low voice.

I completely ignored her.

After ten minutes—one minute of begging Law and two minutes of dealing with the waiter plus seven minutes of waiting for the cupcakes to serve.

Now, I could finally eat it.

Mag-usap sila Gal at Law at hindi na ako nakinig pa since abala ako sa pagkain ng cupcakes. Milktea naman ang pinagkakaabalahan ni Dana pero 'yong dalawang lalaki ay hindi man lang nag-abalang bumili ng mainom o makakain.

May Iced Coffee naman ako, just in case na baka ay mabulunan ako. Mahirap na dahil baka tawanan pa ako ng bruha.

"Sleepover?"

Nagpantig ang mga tenga ko like that elephant Dumbo I had seen in a movie.

"Ngayon gabi lang, Law. It's summer, kaya kailangan magpakasya tayo dahil maiistress na naman tayo pagdating ng pasukan," Dana interfered as she sip her milktea.

"Sa bahay ko magaganap ang sleepover at nasabihan ko na rin ang iba," dugtong ni Gal, malalim din ang kanyang boses pero hindi naman nakakatuwa ang tono nito sa pandinig ko. "Ano? Game?"

Naramdaman kong bumaling ng tingin sa akin si Law kahit na hindi ko naman sila sinusulyapan dahil abala ako sa paglantzak ng mga cupcakes.

"No—"

"It's okay, Law. Sumali ka na, you should have fun with them," hindi ko na pinatapos si Law sa pagsasalita dahil alam ko namang 'yon talaga ang magiging sagot niya. "Sa susunod na araw pa naman ang alis natin papuntang La Trinidad, 'di ba?"

Ilang segundo lang yata na nagtagal ang madilim na paraan ng pagtingin ni Law sa akin bago niya hinarap si Gal.

"Sige," matigas ang boses na payag nito. "Pero isasama ko si Kryptonite."

Muntik nang nabulunan sa iniinom niyang milktea si Dana nang dahil sa huling sinabi ni Law.

"It's just a sleepover for us, college students and not with a high school girl, Law," pagdadahilan niya pa. She's obviously convincing and trying to stop Law from bringing me with him at their sleepover. "She doesn't belong there."

I doubt her.

Wiping some little buttercream off the corner of my lips, I scoffed. "Unless your definition of sleepover is having sex? Eating dick or was it called blowjob?" I let out a soft and genuine sarcastic laugh. "I sure am doesn't belong."

"Language, Kryptonite," hindi na rin pala napigilan ni Law ang pagsaway sa akin.

Bumaling ako kay Gal and I saw amazement in his eyes while staring at me, examining me.

"Hindi na ako sasama, Law."

"May nasabi ka ring maganda," nakangiting komento ni Dana sa sinabi ko.

I smiled back at her before facing Law and snaking my arms around his muscular arm. "Hindi ka na rin sasali sa kanila, Law."

"Bitch," Dana muttered, nauubusan na ng pasensya.

"Dana. Wala naman akong sinabing hindi siya pwedeng sumali sa sleepover," ani Gal na bakas pa ang inis sa kanyang malalim na boses. "You can join us, Kryptonite. May pinsan naman akong high school din, she's staying in the house for a month kaya hindi magiging boring o awkward sa'yo ang sleepover namin."

"Okay," I said and didn't let go of Law's arms.

"Anong susuotin para sa sleepover?" narinig kong tanong ni Law.

Hindi ako nakatingin sa kanila nang nagpatuloy sa pinag-uusapan nila si Law at Gal, hindi na rin naman ako nakinig sa pinag-uusapan nila dahil abala ako sa pakikipaglaban ng tingin ni Dana.

Alam kong madalas na napapasulyap sa akin si Law habang nakakapit pa rin ako sa kanyang braso kaya nang dumating ang minuto na hindi na nakatingin sa akin si Law ay ngumisi ako.

I raised up one middle finger at Dana, my revenge for calling me bitch. How I love Kuya Laki for teaching me those tricks, he said that it will burn my enemy to the pits of anger.

Gulat siya at agad ko ring ibinaba ang daliri ko nang sumulyap sa direksyon ko si Law. Buti hindi niya nakita dahil baka ay kagatin niya ang middle finger ko.

May iba rin palang nakakita sa ginawa ko. Nakakakuha na rin kami ng atensyon mula sa ibang customer dito. Napapatingin sa banda namin.

Natapos sila sa pag-uusap at babalik na kami ni Law sa bahay para kumuha ng mga damit, damit para sa sleepover.

Habang papalabas kami ng cafe ay nakakapit pa rin ako sa maskuladong braso ni Law, nakasunod naman sa amin sina Dana at Gal.

"Law, bilhan mo naman ako ng phone, please? Paano kung may kikidnap sa akin? Paano kita matatawagan? Gagahasain nila ako tapos

papatayin at itatapon sa ilog nang walang nakakaalam, gusto mo ba 'yon, Law?" kahapon ko pa talaga siya pinipilit na bilhan niya ako ng cellphone pero hanggang ngayon ay ayaw niya pa rin.

"No," matigas niyang tugon. "I know you're bored sometimes, you can use my phone, little girl."

"Ayoko, baka may porn diyan," sabi ko nang naghiwalay na kami ng dinadaan nila Dana at Gal.

We're heading towards Law's car now. It was parked at the parking space of the cafe.

"I don't download porn videos or photos, Kryptonite," bawat salitang naririnig ko mula sa kanyang matigas at nakakatakot na boses ay may diin. "I don't need porn if I can undress you when we get home."

Natahimik niya ako do'n at hindi na nagsalita hanggang sa nakarating na kami sa kinaroroonan ng kanyang kotse.

He opened the front seat door for me. "Pasok."

His intimidating voice was starting to make my knees tremble. He's probably angry because of what I had mentioned about the porn thing.

Silently and pouting my lips, I got inside the car.

Kinakabahan ako pero nang nakarating na kami sa bahay ay buong pasasalamat ko na wala naman siyang ginawa pagpasok namin sa loob ng bahay.

Marahan niya lang pinalo ang pwet ko habang papaakyat kami ng hagdan dahil nakasunod kasi siya sa akin at ang bagal ng paghakbang ko at 'yon lang wala ng iba.

Shit, I had prepared myself in the car ride earlier and this was all he did? A gentle and soft spank on my butt? How disappointing. He just wasted my preparation and it was just a false alarm?

Why was I disappointed? I shouldn't have to, I should be glad. Oh God, my mind was dirty, disgusting and awful.

Nandito kami ngayon sa kanyang kwarto matapos siyang pumili ng susuotin ko sa kwarto ko. Siya naman ang namimili ng susuotin niya.

Kumunot ang noo ko nang nakitang hindi pajamas ang ipinasok niya sa loob ng kulay black na bag.

It was just two black boxers, three extra tee shirts, two pants and one shorts. The pajamas were missing, well, I hadn't seen him wearing a pair of pajamas. Except to our childhood days but ever since he turned thirteen, he started wearing boxers every time he go to bed. The pajamas were long unused.

His maturity started at the age thirteen. Too early to be.

"Law, bakit boxers?"

"'Yon ang sabi ni Gal," sagot niya sabay sara ng zipper ng bag.

Nakatayo ako sa tabi niya at pinapanood siya. Wala akong ibang nagawa dahil siya na mismo ang nag-aasikaso sa lahat ng kakailanganin namin.

"Bakit pajamas 'yong sa akin? How about panty short?" suhestiyon ko at napangiti na lang sa sarili.

"I won't allow that, little girl," bakas ang namumuong dahas sa kanyang boses dahil kung bakit nawala ang ngiti ko sa labi. "'Wag ng matigas ang ulo."

Law rested his large arms at the small of my back, gently pushing me towards the door of his room to go out, his other hand was carrying the bag with our things in it.

Inisip ko palang na may ibang makakakita sa malaking umbok ni Law kapag boxers ang suot niya ay naiirita na ako.

Mabilis lang ang biyahe papunta sa bahay ni Gal, alas singko na ng gabi nang nakarating kami sa kanila. Malaki rin naman ang bahay nila, kasing laki rin ng bahay kung saan nakatira si Zsolt Guanzon.

Pagpasok namin sa loob ay bumungad sa amin ang mga kaibigan niyang babae at lalaki. Hindi pa naman sila nakasuot ng pajamas o boxers. They're wearing their normal clothes.

Nakita ko si Hezion at nakakapagtaka lang dahil hindi niya kasama si Cykee.

"Law! Buti naman at nakarating ka!" tumayo ang isang maganda at maputing babae na nakaupo sa isang sofa saka lumapit kay Law.

Pakiramdam ko ay namumula na ako sa sobrang inis at galit nang nakitang hinawakan niya ang kabilang braso ni Law. She even tiptoed and kiss Law on his cheek unannounced.

Hindi man lang nakailag si Law nang dahil sa mabilisang ginawa niya.

What the hell?

I pursed my lips and it formed into a thin line. Now, I hate this.

Dapat sana ay nanatili nalang ako sa bahay 'di ba?

Bumaling ako ng tingin kay Dana na nakatayo malapit sa hagdanan, ang talim din ng tingin niya sa babaeng humalik kay Law.

Pero nang bumaling ako ng tingin kay Hezion ay nahuli ko siyang nakatingin sa akin. Inoobserbahan ako.

"Stop that, Kirsten," tiim bagang inalis ni Law ang kamay ng babaeng nagngangalang Kirsten mula sa pagkakahawak nito sa braso niya. "May girlfriend na ako."

She stepped back with a huge smile plastered on her pretty face. "Oh really? Wala naman dito ang girlfriend mo. Hindi niya malalaman kahit na may mangyari pa sa atin ngayong gabi," she whispered, it's useless 'cause I could hear her clearly and then she shifted her look at me, blinking with her long and thick eyelashes. "Hindi naman siguro ako isusumbong ng cute mo'ng little sister 'di ba?"

Mas malala pa yata 'to kay Dana at paano niya naman nalaman na kapatid ako ni Law?

She complimented me on purpose, para syempre hindi ko siya isumbong sa girlfriend kuno ni Law na wala rito.

"Actually, I can tell her," basag ko kaya't gano'n nalang ang paglaho ng kanyang malapad at matamis na ngiting para sa akin. "She hates a cheating boyfriend and I won't tolerate my brother to do such thing as that."

Ramdam ko ang pagkaestatwa ni Law sa tabi ko nang marahas kong inalis ang kanyang isang braso na hindi hinawakan ni Kirsten kanina, inalis ko 'yon mula sa palihim na paghawak niya sa likod ko.

"Nandito na pala kayo, wait, I'll call my cousin," boses ni Gal ang nagsalita mula sa hagdanan na mukhang kakababa pa lang at bumalik naman ulit sa pag-akyat.

Umingay ulit ang mga kaibigan ni Law na lahat ay nakaupo sa sofa at 'yong iba ay sa mat na nakalapag sa sahig.

Bumalik na si Kirsten sa kinauupuan niya kanina matapos niya akong palihim na pinandilatan.

I gave Law's friends a smile after swatting his hand away from me for the second attempt to touch my back.

"Nagbake ako ng cookies, nasa dining room, sinong gusto?" anunsyo ng isang matandang babaeng nakasuot ng apron na lumabas mula sa isang pinto sa 'di kalayuan.

"Oh thank you po, manang."

"The best ka talaga, manang."

Marahil ay ilang beses na silang nakapunta rito kaya parang gano'n na rin sila kalapit sa katulong.

Halos lahat ng mga kaibigan ni Law ay pumunta na sa dining room, nagpaiwan ni Hezion na pinapanood kaming nakatayo pa rin, si Dana naman ay nagpahuli at sumunod na rin naman sa mga kaibigan niya. Napagtanto niya na sigurong wala rin naman siyang silbi kapag nanatili pa siya rito.

Iniwas ko ang aking ulo nang akmang hahalikan ako ni Law kaya natigilan din siya.

"Are you mad, little girl?"

Nanindig ang balahibo ko sa katawan nang narinig kung gaano ka rahan ang kanyang boses.

I heaved a deep breath and gritted my teeth with my tight closed lip. "Yes."

"Sabihin mo kung anong gagawin ko," tiim bagang utos nito at gamit niya na naman ang kanyang maawtoridad na boses na hindi ko magawang suwayin.

I pushed his broad chest when he got closer to me. "Makipaglandian ka sa kanila," I said, irritated. "Isipin mo nalang na hindi mo ako girlfriend at wala ako rito."

Narinig ko pa ang malalim na pagtawa ni Hezion mula sa kinauupuan niya.

Hindi ko na narinig ang malutong na pagmura ni Law nang muli kong narinig ang boses ni Gal na pababa ng hagdan kasama ang isang babae.

The girl looked like a half Chinese. Singkit ang mga mata at napakaputi ng balat. Maiksi ang buhok na hanggang balik at lang.

"Kryptonite, meet my cousin. Ashley."

Chapter 18

Mature Content Warning (Mild). This chapter may contain content of an adult nature. If you are easily offended or are under the age of 18, just ignore and skip some scenes. Some words within are intended for adults only and may include scenes of sexual content, strong languages, violence etc.

Mature

"Hi Ashley," I greeted back after what, perhaps thirty seconds of handshaking. Flashing a glint of wondrous smile at her, I had never been this lucky my whole life.

Their arrival was just a perfect timing, if Gal and Ashley didn't arrive? Law must've been did something prohibited by law, and worse? It would be in front of our only witness, of course, it was none other than Hezion. He was slightly creepy because of the way he smirk at us, teasing? Mocking us? Like a spooky vulture ready to fly down and chase its target.

"Kilala na kita," matipid na ngumiti si Ashley sa akin bago niya inilipat ang paningin kay Gal. "Kuya Gal, kilala ko na siya. We're in the same school."

"Oh, hindi kita napansin?" I asked, not really interested but I have to, just so Law wouldn't do anything.

"Yeah, madalas lang ako sa senior high building, I rarely visit your department. Junior high right? First year of senior na ako," she was so kind to answer me, kahit nakikita niya sa mukha ko ang na hindi ako interesado ay pinagpatuloy niya pa rin para mas mapahaba ang usapan.

Maybe, she sensed something strange? That's why she's helping me out of it.

Gusto kong mag-iskandalo rito nang naramdaman ko ang isang malaki at matigas na palad ang marahan at palihim na humawak sa isang pisngi ng pwet ko, pinipisil at hinihimas 'yon, nararamdaman ko na rin ang malapad na dibdib nito na dumikit sa likod ko upang maitago sa mga mata ng ibang tao ang kahalayang ginagawa niya sa pwet ko.

I shut my eyes closed when I felt something strange on my head and when I opened my eyes, I caught Ashley confused while looking at the person behind me, kissing my head.

In the eyes of other people, the kiss was meant to be a brotherly love but for me, it was never felt like that.

Hell, I know why he's doing this.

Nagpapansin lang siya at hindi naglalambing. Alam niyang hindi ko siya papansinin nang dahil sa nangyari kaya siya na ang gumawa ng aksyon.

Awkwardly, I smiled at Ashley when she shifted her gaze back at me and at the very same time, I had managed to discreetly swat Law's rough hand off my butt and it was followed by a groan of disapproval.

On my mind, I tried to think of a new topic and subtract my full smile into a sad half smile. "Mahirap ba ang senior high?"

I just think that this topic would be helpful for me, as an incoming senior high student.

"Lahat ng strand sa senior high, mahirap," she started, getting hooked to the topic that I could say, I just caught her interest. "It depends on the student how they handle it. If you're a responsible student then it won't be that hard."

I nodded, "I'll remember that."

Nauubusan na talaga ako ng pasensya nang naramdaman ko ang muling pagbabalik ng kanyang isang kamay sa pwet ko. Palihim niyang marahang na pinipisil ang pwet ko.

Sa pagkakataong ito ay nagawa kong alisin ang kanyang kamay at marahang lumayo sa kanya, mas lumapit ako sa kinatatayuan ni Ashley na tahimik lang.

As fortunate as I could be at this moment, I could tell that I was finally safe from the devil.

Or so I thought.

"Gal, pwede bang pumasok sa kwarto mo? I need to talk to this little girl privately," ani Law sa nakakatakot na boses nang humakbang siya palapit sa akin at hinila ang isang braso ko.

"Walang problema, Law."

Namutla ako nang narinig ang agarang pagsagot ni Gal. Hindi naman masakit ang pagkakahawak ni Law sa braso ko pero sobrang higpit na parang wala na siyang balak pa'ng pakawalan ako.

Law dragged me to go upstairs and I could hear the teasing baritone voice of Hezion downstairs.

"Seryoso, Gal," natatawang sabi nito. "Sesermonan niya lang naman ang little girl niya. Kawawa naman, 'di mo sana pinayagan si Law."

Parang may ibang kahulugan pa ang ibig sabihin niya sa salitang sesermonan dahil bakit naman ako sesermonan ni Law? Wala naman akong nagawang kasalanan, siya pa nga 'tong hinahayaan si Kirsten na halikan siya sa pisngi.

Hinila ako ni Law papasok sa isang kwarto nang nakarating kami sa second floor ng bahay. Sa tingin ko ay ito na ang kwarto ni Gal, mostly, grey at black ang mga nakikita kong gamit dito sa kwarto niya.

Law shut the door and turned the lock before facing me, displeased and disgruntled. It was because I kept on removing his hand off my butt and not allowing him to touch me earlier.

He disliked that.

"Face the wall, little girl," his voice hardened and his intimidating eyes darkened.

"No," pagmamatigas ko.

"Wag mo'kong galitin, Kryptonite," lumapit siya sa akin at gamit ang isang kamay ay hinawakan niya ang beywang ko. Gripping the fabric of my clothes at the waist part, he glowered at me. "I want you to face the wall, now."

Umiling ako habang nakatingala sa kanyang nagdidilim na ekspresyon sa napakagwapong mukha niya. "Ayokong humarap sa pader. Period," I tried to sound like him, hard and authoritative but my voice couldn't. "Ikaw? Baka gusto mo'ng humarap sa pader, Law."

Kunot noong pinanood ko siya nang dahan-dahan siyang lumuhod sa mismong harap ko pero muntik na akong napatili nang bigla niyang inangat ang laylayan ng suot kong damit nang nakaluhod na siya sa harap ko.

He's tall kaya kahit nakaluhod siya ay abot ng kanyang mukha ang dibdib ko.

Bumungad sa kanya ang dibdib ko at agad akong napalunok nang tumitig siya roon na pakiramdam ko ay parang mas liliit ito sa sobrang takot na tinitigan siya ni Law.

At first, Law was stunned at the sight of it. He was shock to see that I wasn't wearing my baby bra, that's the reason why my not-so-flat chest was fully exposed.

Except for my nipples where I pasted the nipple pasties with the same color as my skin to avoid it from creating a little nipple mark or a two tiny-itsy-bitsy bulge on my clothes. Thanks to Cykee again, I wouldn't be irritated to wear my baby bras after taking a bath because I hate the fact that there's no size of cup that would fit my breast.

"Holy fuck..." ang tanging narinig ko mula kay Law habang titig na titig siya sa dibdib ko at hindi makapaniwala sa mga nakikita niya.

He couldn't restrain himself from saying his bad expression into a profanity.

Sinubukan kong alisin ang dalawa niyang malalaking kamay na sumakop sa bawat gilid ng bewang ko pero sa kasamaang palad ay hindi ako nagtagumpay. He tightened his hold on my waist.

"Law, wala tayo sa kwarto mo," saway ko at nang hindi ko naalis ang kanyang kamay sa bewang ko ay hinawakan ko nalang ang kanyang balikat at marahang tinulak.

"Ang importante walang makakakita sa atin," aniya, matigas pa rin ang boses.

"Ano na naman ba'ng gagawin mo?" I demanded and shook my head when I saw a glimpse of lust in his darkening eyes. "Hindi ako papayag, manigas ka, Law. 'Di ba? Narinig ko, may mangyayari pa sa inyo ni Kirsten."

"Walang mangyayari sa amin," ni hindi siya tumingin sa akin at nakatitig lang sa dibdib ko.

The way he stared at my breasts, it looked like he would devour the one whole of my breast since it wasn't that big, not that flat at all, it would be easy for him to bring the whole one of it inside his warm and menacing mouth to discipline me. A punishment.

But I would not let him, if I could still try to stop him then why not? I would stop him.

"Ayos lang naman kahit may mangyari sa inyo, Law," my soft voice had turned into sarcastic. "Hindi kita isusumbong sa girlfriend mo."

Hindi ko alam na makukuha ko ang atensyon niya mula sa pagtitig at pagsuri niya na bawat sulok ng dibdib ko nang dahil sa huling sinabi ko.

He snapped his head up to look at me. I could feel the vibration of his anger at my waist as he tightened his hold on it, too tight that it made his hand tremble.

I thought, that action, trembling or shaking to be exact was for those people who were frightened, scared, afraid and state it all that may be the possible effects from having the presence of fear or anxiety in their chest. No, Law showed me that anger or frustration could 'cause a person's body to tremble and not just fear.

"You're my girlfriend, little girl," he growled pulling me close to him and resulted the center and lower part of my chest smashed against his hard chin as he was currently gazing up at me. "What do you want? Do you want to go home? Uuwi tayo agad, sabihin mo lang."

"Ayokong umuwi," mas lalo akong nagmatigas.

Sa sobrang galit na nararamdaman niya at parang wala na nga talagang natitirang pasensya sa kanya ay ibinalik niya ang kanyang tingin sa aking dibdib.

"Tiisin mo 'to," I saw how his jaw tensed, I had triggered him. "May dala ka pa bang ganito?"

Napalunok ako nang dahil sa sinabi niya at sa tinutukoy niya. He's referring to those disposable nipple pasties pasted on my nipple.

"Y-Yes," kinakabahang sagot ko pero hindi ko masyadong pinapahalata sa kanya syempre.

I brought some extra nipple pasties, I hid it inside my jeans' pocket.

"Very good," he said it sternly, praising my good response. "Magkano ba 'to? Bibilhan kita ng marami at gagamitin mo lang kapag ako ang kasama mo."

"I don't know, Cykee gave those things to me," I answered with all the honesty that I still have with me.

"I'll ask Hezion," matiim siyang tumitig sa nipple pasties na parang maya't maya ay pupunitin niya 'yon mula sa pagkakadikit sa nipple ko. "May iba pa ba'ng binigay sa'yo ang kaibigan mo?"

I had a feeling that he knows something about those things that Cykee had given to me, those things that I stuffed and locked inside the secret part and corner of my wardrobe.

I was afraid that Hezion must've informed Law about it. That guy was obviously addicted to Cykee and that means, he knows what Cykee's do's and don't's and her whereabouts. What if, some of those things that she gave to Faith and me wasn't really from her mommy? What if it was really hers and Hezion didn't allow her to wear nor have those things inside her closet that's why she just gave it away to us?

But I believe that some of it really came from her mommy, a gift for us.

"U-Uhm..." I was trying hard

to find the right words to say and just give up. "Meron."

Why do I have to lie? Alam kong may alam na siya, magsisinungaling pa ba ako? Baka mas lalo lang madagdagan ang kasalanan ko.

"Gusto kong makita pag-uwi natin bukas," anunsyo niya at saka ko naramdaman ang kanyang mga kamay na mula sa mahigpit na pagkakahawak sa beywang ko ay bumaba papunta sa likod ko.

His rough hands crawled like an anaconda 'til it reach its destination.

To my butt.

"Hindi pwede," angal ko bago huminga ng malalim nang sinimulan niya na ang pagpisil sa pwet ko.

"Dumapa ka sa kama pagkatapos nito," he commanded.

Hindi ko alam kung ano ang tinutukoy niyang pagkatapos nito not until he answered the questions on my mind without using words.

Napadaing ako nang marahas niyang inalis ang nipples pasties gamit ang kanyang ngipin at binitawan 'yon hanggang sa nahulog sa sahig. Gano'n din ang ginawa niya sa kabila.

Kahit na hindi pa naman siya nagsisimula ay parang nauubusan na ako ng hangin dito sa loob ng kwarto. Malalim at mabibigat ang bawat paghinga ko.

My head tilted and I look up at the white ceiling of Gal's room.

Mariin kong pinikit ang mga mata ko nang naramdaman ang pagsakop ng kanyang mainit at mamasa-masang bibig sa kaliwang dibdib ko. Halos maisiksik niya na sa loob ng kanyang mapangahas na bibig ng buong-buo ang kaliwang dibdib ko.

Pinipigilan ko ang sarili kong higpitan ang pagkakahawak sa kanyang balikat dahil baka ay mapunit ko ang kanyang damit. Hindi ko napigilan ang sarili ko at hinigpitan ko nga lalo ang pagkakahawak ko roon nang naramdaman ko ang matalim niyang dila na pinaglalaruan ang nipple ko sa loob ng kanyang bibig.

Sobrang init sa pakiramdam ang ginagawa niya sa akin, kahit 'yong dibdib at tiyan ko ay sumasabay na gumalaw sa paraan ng mabilis na paghinga ko.

"A-Ah, Law..."

I bit my shameless tongue to prevent from making erotic noises, moans and groans of pleasure. I didn't want him to think that I like it, I was mad because someone had kissed him on his cheek. I shouldn't be moaning his name. I should punish him too.

How so? If I couldn't even fight him, well, on the other hand, I could indeed spank him if he let me.

I would think that those halcyon times that he kept his hands for himself and let all those uncountable troubles passed even though my name got involve was the sign that he's just restraining himself to violently discipline me.

Now that he couldn't swallow my reckless exploit at school, during class hours and whenever he's around to witness me do those things he dislike, he would nail me against anywhere he wanted and castigate me.

Mula sa pagkakahawak ko sa kanyang balikat ay kusang gumalaw ang mga kamay ko at natagpuan ko na lamang ang isang kamay ko na tinutulak ang kanyang batok upang mas dumiin ang kanyang pagsipsip at pagkagat sa nipple ko.

Hindi ko na rin napigilan ang isa ko pa'ng kamay na sabunutan ang kanyang malambot na buhok nang dahil sa sobrang sarap na hatid ng kanyang paglaplap sa kaliwang dibdib ko.

"O-Oh... Law," kahit ang boses ko ay nanginginig na parang sumasabay sa paggalaw ng katawan ko na patuloy niya pa ring pinipisil ang pwet ko dahilang kung bakit marahang gumagalaw ang buong katawan ko.

No. No, I have to take that back. I shouldn't be moaning his name but I couldn't stop myself. His tongue was like a sabre sword, like it was playing fencing against my nipple, challenging my nipple to fight back and now it was hard. My little light pinkish nipple was hard for him.

Parang dudugo na ang mga labi ko dahil sa paraan ng pagkagat ko roon. Mula sa kisame ng kwarto ay bumaba ang tingin ko sa mukha ni Law na bahagyang kinakagat, marahas na sinisipsip at mabilis na nilalaplap ang nipple ko.

Pinagdidiskitahan niya talaga 'yong bahagi na 'yon hanggang sa napagtanto niyang may isang nipple pa pala sa kanan na hindi niya pa nagagalaw. Kahit na mukhang gusto niya pang sipsipin 'yong kaliwa at 'di pa talaga nagsawa o 'di kaya'y maawa man lang sa nipple ko, lumipat siya sa kanan na parang isang gutom na tigre.

Malinaw kong naririnig ang ingay ng pagtama ng kanyang mamasa-masang mainit na bibig sa kanang dibdib ko. Lalo na ang maingay na pagsipsip niya roon sa tuwing kinakagat niya ang nipple ko at hihilahin hanggang sa makawala sa pagitan ng mga ngipin niya.

I inspected my left breast with my eyes and grimaced when I saw how hard and swollen it was. It was so red, all over the corner part of my poor little nipple.

Panting, I forced to pull his hair and try to get his mouth off my right breast because even if I want and love what he's doing to me, I was still in the complete state of normality that this wasn't the right place to perform this kind of activity.

"T-That's enough, Law," mariin kong utos, hinihinal pa rin at nararamdaman ko pa rin ang namumuog init sa kaibuturan ko.

Hindi siya nagpatinag at pinagpatuloy lang ang kanyang ginagawa, kahit sa paghimas at pagpisil niya sa pwet ko ay mas naging marahas.

Kulang nalang talaga ay matanggal 'yong nipple ko nang dahil sa paraan ng pagkagat at sipsip niya roon. Mas masahol pa siya sa isang nagugutom na sanggol kung sumuso.

"Law, that's enough, please," pag-uulit ko at marahang hinimas ang buhok niya, umaasang mapapakalma ko siya sa ganitong paraan. Hindi pa rin kasi siya humihinto sa pagkain no'n na parang takot na may aagaw sa kanya. "Tama na 'yan, you can have it all tomorrow, I promise. We're in someone else's house for our sake, Law, stop."

I purposely made my voice smooth and soft in his hearing range.

Because of it, slowly and unexpectedly, he calmed. Pero patuloy pa rin ang pagpisil niya sa pwet ko at pati na rin ang paglaplap niya sa kanang dibdib ko ngunit sa pagkakataong ito ay marahan na.

"Gusto lang naman kitang hawakan kanina, Kryptonite," ang kanyang boses ay mababa ngunit bakas pa rin ang dahas. Marahang idinadampi niya na lamang ang kanyang labi sa dibdib ko habang nagsasalita. Sinasabi sa akin ang kanyang hinaing. "Kung ayaw mo'ng mangyari ulit 'to, hayaan mo ako sa kung ano man ang gusto kong gawin."

I so desperately wanted to protest.

Bakit gano'n? Nagagalit siya kapag pinagbabawalan o hindi ko siya hinahayaang gawin ang gusto niya tapos kapag ako naman ang may gustong gawin na ayaw niya ay hindi naman ako magagalit ng ganito.

Hindi na ako umangal pa dahil baka ay hahaba lang ang usapan. Gusto ko na talagang lumabas. Nakakahiya sa may-ari ng bahay na 'to, rito pa talaga ginawa ni Law.

"Okay, okay, I won't do it again, Law," my calm voice was trying to convince him, soothe his anger away. "Huminto ka na, please."

Tumingala siya sa akin at tumitig sa mga mata ko. Parang tinatakot ako ng mga nagdidilim ng mga mata na puno ng kasakiman.

Umaasa akong hihinto siya dahil napakalma ko na siya at pilit ko pa'ng intindihin ang ugali niyang ganito pagdating sa akin.

"Pero hindi pa ako tapos," matigas niyang sabi at pinagpatuloy ang ginagawa niya kanina.

Gusto kong sabunutan ang sarili ko pero wala akong ibang nagawa kung 'di ang pumikit at higpitan ang pagkakahawak sa kanya, na sana ay maging maayos ang lahat pagkatapos nito. Hindi ko naman siya magawang itulak kasi ayaw niya naman magpatinag.

Bakit ang segurista niya? Hindi ba pwedeng ipagpaliban 'to.

Uawang ang mga labi ko nang katulad ng ginawa niya sa kaliwang dibdib ko ay gano'n din ang ginawa niya sa kanang dibdib ko.

The wetness and warmth of his saliva covered my breast like a blanket to a human body, unlike the blanket, the blanket was comfortable to cover on but his hot saliva wasn't. It felt more like my breast was submerged in a flowing lava, burning and sparkling with fire flakes.

His merciless tongue rummaged across my breast, gliding it and lapping my nipple aggressively. My heart hammered inside my chest, beating so fast that it would possibly hurt my ribs and break one.

After about another ten minutes, he eventually stopped but the lustful gaze remained in the orbs of his eyes. He couldn't get enough of me, he craved for more than that.

I let my body collapse afterwards.

Nang dahil sa sobrang panghihina dahil sa sobra-sobrang sarap na pinaparamdam niya sa akin ay pinaupo niya ako sa isang sofa at siya na nga rin mismo ang naglagay ng panibagong nipple pasties sa nipple ko bago niya ako binihisan ng pajamas na kulay kape.

He disposed the pasties that he removed from my nipple earlier by inserting it inside his pockets, he left no evidence.

"Little girl, are you okay?"

Gusto kong batukan si Law. Hindi ba halata? Kahit bakas ang pag-aalala sa boses niya ay masasapak ko siya nang wala sa oras.

He just tortured my breast with his ruthless tongue and I would think that he had the intention to mince my nipple into pieces like a mincemeat and using only his strong set of white teeth. How rude that he still had the guts to ask that.

"My breast feel sore..." mapupungay ang mga mata ko habang nakatingin sa kanya, pakiramdam ko ay nilasing niya ako at hindi ko na tinangkang pandilatan o irapan si Law nang dahil sa ginawa niya. Naubos na ang lakas ko. "I wanna rest, I wanna take a nap, Law."

Inalalayan ako ni Law na humiga sa sofa at parang siya pa ang may-ari ng kwarto dahil kumuha siya ng kumot mula sa loob ng isang aparador.

"Sleep," he whispered, covering my body with a grey coloured blanket designed with a different patterns of squares and rectangles before planting a soft and long kiss on my forehead.

Before I close my eyes, I saw him left the room.

Bakit gano'n? Nakakapagod ang ginawa niya sa akin, parang mamamatay ako at mauubusan ng hangin sa sarap. It was my first time, siya ang unang umangkin ng gano'n sa akin kahit hindi pa buong-buo.

Kinakabahan ako. Unti-unti niya na akong inaangkin. 'Yong una ay 'yong pwet ko tapos ngayon naman ay 'yong dibdib ko, natatakot ako sa kasunod nito.

'Yon pa nga ang ginawa niya. Parang hindi ko na kinaya kanina, ano pa kaya kung tuluyan niya na nga'ng angkinin ang buong katawan ko?

Siguro hindi lang ako mahihimatay. Comatose nga yata ang labas no'n.

Nang dahil sa pagod at pag-iisip ng kung anu-ano ay mabilis akong nakatulog.

Nagising ako nang may narinig na hiyawan at ingay, hindi naman nanggaling ang ingay dito sa loob ng kwarto, sa labas, sa baba.

I opened my eyes, groaning and getting up from laying on the large sofa. My body was petite so it was not that hard for me to sleep on it, unless if Law would try to sleep on this sofa then he could barely sleep because the sofa would be so small for his large figure.

Rubbing my eyes to adjust my vision from the light, I heard a familiar voice of a girl from the direction of the bed.

"How's your sleep?"

Nakita ko si Ashley na may hawak na cellphone at hindi niya man lang ako sinulyapan dahil abala siya sa pinapanood sa phone na hawak niya.

Sitting properly on the sofa, I made myself comfortable on it. "Sleep? It was just a nap," I corrected.

"Nap?" saka pa siya saglit na bumaling ng tingin sa akin at binalik din naman agad ang tingin sa screen ng phone. "You're six hours sleeping on that sofa and a nap is

supposedly half an hour or an hour."

"What time is it?"

"Twelve midnight."

Muntik na akong nahulog sa sofa nang dahil sa sagot niya. Ibig sabihin ay nakatulog ako kaninang alas saís ng gabi?

I turned my head to the door and saw that it was widely open. That's why I heard the noise downstairs.

Dumiretso ako sa restroom dito upang umihi at agad ding lumabas pagkatapos kong manghilamos.

Nagkatinginan kami ni Ashley nang nakalabas na ako, hindi naman siya umalis sa kinauupuan niya. Bahagya pang tumalbog ang dulo ng kanyang maikling buhok nang marahang gumalaw ang kanyang ulo.

"Anong ginagawa nila sa baba?" tanong ko at lumapit sa sofa kung saan ako natulog kanina para itabi ang kumot na ginamit ko, I didn't bother to fold it. "Slumber party?"

"Not really."

"Ano nga?" naiinip kong tanong ulit.

"Naglalaro sila," sagot niya na puno ng pasensya. "Something na may kasamang drinks? Ewan."

"Ba't 'di ka sumali? Sali tayo, dali," yaya ko at agad na lumapit sa kanya para hilahin siya.

"Ugh, hindi mo magugustuhan ang laro nila promise," pigil niya sa akin at hinila pabalik ang kanyang braso na hahatakin ko na sana. "Ate Dana said that it was just for mature people, adults, yeah."

"Papatalo ka ba sa Dana na 'yon?" asik ko at muling hinila ang braso niya. "Mature na tayo, ano ka ba."

Nagpahila siya sa akin pero nang palabas na kami sa loob ng kwarto ay pinigilan niya ako at sinara ang pinto.

"May sasabihin ako sa'yo," she started while tapping something against the screen of her phone. "Don't get mad at me, okay?"

"Ano naman 'yon?"

Instead of answering my question, she lifted her phone up for me to see what's in it.

A recorded video and I think it happened a few hours ago.

"I have a relationship with Kryptonite, hindi pwedeng basta-basta nalang lumapit sa akin ang ibang babae... My little girl gets jealous easily. Tulungan mo ako mamaya. Tangina naman. Hindi nila sinabi sa akin na maglalaro ng gano'ng klaseng laro mamaya."

Nakita ko sa video si Law na nakatalikod at kaharap si Hezion, nasa isang sulok

sila at sa tingin ko ay sa kusina ito nangyari.

"Walang problema," boses ni Hezion ang narinig ko bago ilang minuto ang lumipas hanggang sa umalis na 'yong dalawa at nakita ko ilang minuto na naman ang lumipas nang dumating si Ashley, uminom pa ng gatas at walang kaalam-alam na may kumukuha pala sa kanya ng video bago niya nakita ang phone at pinutol 'yong video.

Hindi makapaniwalang umangat ang tingin ko kay Ashley at namutla.

Alam niya, may alam na siya ngayon tungkol sa amin ni Law. Isusumbong niya ba kami sa iba pa'ng kaibigan ni Law?

"Don't worry, I won't tell a soul," she promised, sincere and serious.

"You recorded the video?" kinakabahang tanong ko.

She shook her head that cause her short her to bounce at the end part of it. "No," she answered before tapping something against the screen of her phone. "Nagv-vlog si Kirsten kanina at naiwan ang cellphone niya sa island ng kusina. I went in the kitchen to drink my milk and saw this, I transferred the video to my phone and deleted the original one from her phone. I just want to let you watch it because they were talking about you."

"Oh," ang tanging lumabas sa bibig ko.

"Delete it for yourself," sabi niya sabay abot ng kanyang cellphone sa akin. "Wala akong ginawang copy ng video na 'yan."

Tinanggap ko ang kanyang cellphone at ginawa ang gusto niya. Kahit sa Recycle Bin nito ay dinelete ko na rin 'yong video bago ko ibinalik sa kanya ang phone niya.

"Thank you," medyo nahihiyang sabi ko at matipid na ngumiti.

"Tara na? Gusto mo'ng maglaro 'di ba?" aya ni Ashley sabay bukas ng pinto at muli ko na namang narinig ang ingay mula sa baba.

Ashley manoeuvre me to go downstairs. Scattered mats, blankets and pillows greeted us.

I saw Law watched me walk towards him and while I was on my way to him, I caught sight of the drinks with chips on the center table that was now placed at the corner of the living room instead at the center.

Makalat dito at lahat ng mga lalaki ngayon ay nakasuot nalang ng boxers. 'Yong babae? Nakasuot sila ng pajamas pero may iba talagang nilaladlad ang kanilang cleavage dahil may iilang butones sa itaas nito ang hinayaan nilang nakabukas.

I greeted Law a soft embrace and let him kiss me on my head. Glancing at Ashley, I smiled when she nodded at me.

"Oh my God! Law is next!" narinig kong tili ng isang babaeng may hawak na isang bowl na may nakatuping maliit na papel sa loob nito. She shook the bowl like she was performing a beach dance. "Masuwerte ang babaeng mapili nito."

Magsasalita na sana si Hezion pero natigilan siya nang nag-angat ako ng isang kamay.

"Gusto kong sumali," anunsyo ko na nakapagtigil sa lahat.

"Sure! Ako na ang magsusulat sa pangalan mo," Hezion volunteered, na siyang unang nakabawi sa sinabi ko.

"Law, papayagan mo ba ang kapatid mo? The game wasn't suitable for her," angal ni Dana, mukhang concern kahit hindi naman talaga.

Madilim ang ekspresyon sa mukha ni Law nang tumingin siya sa direksyon ni Hezion.

Hezion just gave him a friendly and manly wink before dropping a little folded paper to the bowl.

"Shake! Shake!" they all chant like a troops.

Muling nag-ingay ang lahat habang ang babaeng may hawak ng dalawang bowl na ngayon ay sumasayaw sa gitna at marahang niyuyugyog 'yong bowl.

Kunot noo at palihim kong sinuri si Hezion na lumapit kay Law at may palihim na inabot na isang hindi ko malaman kung anong bagay 'yon bago bumulong at nanunuksong tumatawa pabalik sa kinauupuan niya kanina.

"Girls, out of the way! Sigurado akong ako 'yan!" Kirsten exclaimed, excitement was playing on her red lips.

Ano ba kasi ang mangyayari kapag napili?

Pinabunot na nila si Law sa unang bowl at naghiyawan sila nang nabasa ang nakasulat doon.

"Top slice of the butt."

A body part? Nagpapakita ba ng pwet si Law? Why didn't they told me a little orientation about their game? Siguro ay dahil malalaman ko rin naman kapag nakita ko na.

Sa pangalawang bowl ay bumunot si Law na diretso lang ang tingin sa kanyang mga kaibigan. Ni hindi siya sumulyap sa loob ng bowl dahil bawal daw.

Pero may napansin lang akong kakaiba sa kamay ni Law dahil mas malapit ako sa kanya at 'yong ibang kaibigan niya ay malayo kaya siguro 'di nila napansin ang pangdarayang ginawa ni Law.

May nakaipit na palang maliit na papel sa kanyang daliri bago siya nagkunwaring bumubunot. Ibig sabihin ay walang pangalan ang nakasulat sa papel na inilagay ni Hezion? O baka naman ay pangalan ni Ashley ang sinulat niya roon?

I assumed that my name was written on that cheating piece of a paper.

He handed the paper to Kirsten, siya kasi ang nagmamadaling lumapit at kumuha no'n.

Mula sa abot langit na pag-ngisi niya ay siya namang pagbagsak ng mga labi niya sa impyerno.

"Kryptonite."

"What? Hindi pwede! Magkapatid sila!" pagtutol ni Dana.

May ibang nagkibitbalikat lang at isa na si Hezion do'n at may iba namang tutol, gustong ulitin ang pagbunot.

"Ayos lang naman, it's up to him kung gusto niyang bumunot ulit," Gal said and the other guys nodded.

"Drop on the mat, little girl," utos ni Law at iginiya ako papunta sa mat na nakalapag sa gitna kung saan nakapalibot ang mga kaibigan niya para manood.

"Hm? Law, anong gagawin natin? Am I going to perform push-up? Or yoga?" inosenteng tanong ko pero sumunod din naman sa utos niya.

Narinig ko ang reklamo ng mga babae nang pumwesto agad si Law sa likod ng hita ko dahil nakadapa na ako sa mat.

I had no idea what he would going to do next.

Pero kumunot ang noo ko nang marahan niyang ibinaba ang suot kong pajama sa pwet na bahagi dahil kung bakit na-expose na ang itaas na parte nito. Alam kong sa mga oras na ito ay nakikita na nila ang itaas na hiwa ng pwet ko. Law didn't revealed the whole of it, 'yong itaas na hiwa lang.

"Law, what on hell--"

"Cover your eyes," he commanded.

I obeyed. Gamit ang dalawa nagkrus na braso sa harap ko habang nakadapa ay ipinatong ko ang aking noo sa braso ko. Para na akong natutulog sa posisyon ko.

Naramdaman ko ang isang malakingg kamay ni Law na parang mas pinagdikit lalo ang pwet ko upang magkaroon ng parang malalim na parte sa itaas na parte ng hiwa nito.

Ilang segundo lang ang nagdaan nang nang may naramdaman akong malamig na likido sa bahaging malalim na parte na ginawa ni Law sa paraan ng pag-ipit ng dalawang pisngi sa ibabaw na parte ng pwet ko.

"'Yong asin at calamansi," narinig kong boses ni Hezion na sa tingin ko ay nasa tabi lang ni Law.

Shit. Tequila? Nilagyan ba nila ng tequila ang pwet ko?

Naramdaman ko rin ang iilang patak ng asin na nakapalibot sa malamig na likidong pumirme sa malalim na parte ng pwet ko.

Hindi ko napigilan ang pagkagat ng labi ko nang naghiyawan ang lahat ng lalaki kasabay no'n ay naramdaman ko ang mga pamilyar na labi at dila na iniinom at sinisipsip

ang likido sa pwet ko, dinidilaan ang asin hanggang sa wala na siyang ibang malasahan pa at agad na tinakpan ang maliit ng parte na na-expose kong pwet.

Nang nag-angat ako ng tingin at tumingin sa likuran ko ay nakita ko ang pagtitig ng makasalanan at nakakatakot na mga mata ni Law sa akin habang pinipiga niya ang katas ng calamansi sa kanyang bibig, iniinom 'yon bago iniluwa ng kanyang bibig ang mga buto no'n sa loob ng isang babasaging baso na may iilang buto na rin pala ng calamansi sa loob.

Tumayo kami ni Law mula sa mat na parang walang nangyari at umupo siya sa pang-isahang sofa, he let me sit on the armrest of it since he couldn't let me sit on his lap in front of his friends.

Nag-ingay ulit ang lahat at nakita kong wala na sa paligid si Ashley, baka umakyat ulit.

I felt Law's muscular arms wrapped at the small of my back and I couldn't hide the nervous smile on my face the moment he whispered some words.

"I want to devirginize you in La Trinidad."

Chapter 19

Strawberry

"Law," I called him, as he walk his way outside of our house, clutching a black backpack where which he packed our clothes, so I followed suit.

Today is the day. I'm afraid, this might be the last day of me, being a virgin.

Hindi pa rin talaga maalis sa isip ko ang tungkol sa sinabi niya sa akin kahapon. Kaya ba parang kinakabahan na ako sa isiping pupunta kami sa La Trinidad?

Eyeing Law's back, I stood upright close to him, literally at his side. He tossed the bag inside the baggage compartment of his car before closing it and face me.

"Hm?" tumungo siya sa akin habang nakatingala naman ako sa kanya nang marahan niyang hinalikan ang noo ko.

"Matagal ba ang biyahe natin papuntang La Trinidad?" tanong ko at humawak sa kanyang damit, he's wearing a black hoodie for our travel and so was I. A maroon hoodie.

"From here, Manila to Benguet, La Trinidad. It would take four or five hours, little girl," kalmado niyang sagot sabay hawak sa likod ko. "Depende kung traffic or hihinto tayo saglit para kumain."

He guided me to the front seat side, and he opened the door for me. I didn't get inside yet, I was not done of telling him my concerns and needs.

"Okay," tinalikuran ko ang front seat at humarap sa kanya. "Bili tayo ng foods, please? Like popcorn, fries or chips, so I won't get bored in our ride."

He gave me a single nod. "Sure, little girl," and he gestured his hand for me to get inside the front seat. "Pasok na."

Pero hindi pa rin ako pumasok.

"Wait," inilahad ko ang kamay ko sa harap niya. "Phone please?"

With no complaints, he fished his phone out of his pants' pocket and handed it to me.

Napapadalas na talaga ang pagsabi ko ng salitang please. Alam ko kasing hindi ibibigay ni Law ang gusto ko without saying that word.

Pumasok na ako sa loob ng front seat habang abala sa pagpipindot sa kanyang phone. Bago niya sinara ang pinto ay may pahabol pa siyang halik sa pisngi ko.

I glanced at him outside of the car, before browsing back at his phone and entered my password and username to log in my account.

Hindi pa siya pumasok, baka ay ni-lock niya pa ang pinto ng bahay at 'yong gate.

I heard the driver's side door opened and from the very corner of my eyes, I caught sight of Law getting in before closing the door with a soft thud.

Silently, without a single word, I scrolled down at my news feed and at the same time, Law turned on the engine and moved the car forward to the road.

In the presence of peaceful silence between Law and I, except for the car's noise, nevertheless, it wasn't awkward at all, it gives me comfort.

My thumb abruptly stopped from scrolling when I saw something.

It was certainly Rule Fortaleza's photo with some of his friends.

Someone, maybe one of my friends in this account tagged him on that post. Kaya rin siguro dumaan sa news feed ko ang litrato ni Rule.

Ilang weeks na rin simula noong huli ko siyang nakita. Pero bakit nakikita ko ang dalawa kong pinsan sa litrato ni Rule?

Kuya Saul and Kuya Daumier. Magkapatid sila, Uncle Augustus and Aunt Lauren's sons. Magkakilala yata sila ni Rule dahil nakita ko sila roon pareho sa photo kasama si Rule. Bakit mukha silang close?

"Law?" pagkuha ko sa atensyon ni Law na nakapokus ang tingin sa daan. "May kilala ba sila Kuya Saul na Rule Fortaleza?"

I tapped the log out button on the phone's screen, turning off the data so I wouldn't waste his internet GB and placed his phone on the dashboard, I turned to look at his side.

Seeing the muscles on his arms tensed, I guess that my question just got him out of his good mood.

"Yes," his voice hardened and the way he clutch the wheel so tight seemed like he could break it off at any moment by now. "He's Aunt Lauren's nephew, anak ng pinsan niya."

I ignored the way his physical appearance-definitely and most specially his tensed muscles reacted and responded to my question which made me almost shudder on my seat of so much intimidation that he's making me feel.

Cowardice was attacking my mind again, controlling my actions, but it wouldn't hurt me if I ask one last question again, don't you think?

Seemed like stubbornness turned down the cowardice in me. Well, what's the purpose of being a wayward daughter of a Cavanaugh?

"So, basically, magpinsan sila Kuya Saul, Kuya Daumier at Rule?" I asked once again, my voice was timid and the least that I could do was to restrain myself from asking. I was just curious. "I can't remember, Fortaleza pala ang maiden surname ni Aunt Lauren?"

"Oo," he replied curtly.

Kahit isang sulyap sa banda ko ay hindi niya nagawa.

"Bakit hindi ko nakita si Rule sa mga family parties? I think Aunt Lauren would invite them since she came from a wealthy family as well," I said, voicing out my own opinion. I knew that I was insensitive to say it to him, kahit na alam kong hindi niya na nagugustuhan ang mga lumalabas sa bibig ko.

Perhaps I should start to think twice and double check if it really bring us to a good result.

Or maybe not.

"I don't know, little girl," ang lalim at tigas ng boses niya, nakakatakot pero syempre hindi ako kailangang magpaapekto. "Ayokong pag-usapan natin ang ibang lalaki."

"I'm just asking, Law. What's wrong with that?" I defended and stand on my ground defiantly.

"Ayokong magalit ngayon, Kryptonite," I could hear him gritted his teeth for a second. Nagsisimula na naman siyang magalit. "Baka hindi pa tayo nakakarating sa La Trinidad ay naangkin na kita."

My expression turned sour. "Nagtatanong nga lang ako, bakit ka naman magagalit?"

Nakakakaba talaga kapag siya na ang magsasalita, alam ko namang hindi lang ako ang nakakaramdam nito. Kahit si Kuya Laki at Kuya Lazi, at 'yong iba pa'ng pinsan namin ay natatakot sa kanya.

Ako lang talaga yata ang may lakas ng loob na sumuway minsan sa kanya.

"Ako ang kasama mo tapos ibang lalaki ang nasa isip mo," he said it in a voice so strict before turning the wheel, holding it firmly.

"It's not like that, Law," marahan akong umiling na parang iniisip na nahihibang na siya, I gave up and I couldn't just give up my virginity at the moment so I have to understand him. "Fine, 'di na ako magtatanong tungkol sa ibang lalaki," pagsuko ko at tumingin na lang sa labas ng sasakyan.

Now, I couldn't really get Rule off my head. It was like those pictures that I saw on my news feed etched on my mind. Questions flooded and clouded my thoughts.

Maybe Rule was one of Aunt Lauren's nephews that had lived and grew in Florida? I just heard it from my cousin's gossips. Maybe that's why I didn't see him at any event of our family, plus he doesn't even look familiar to me.

Tahimik kaming dalawa ni Law nang bumaba kami ng sasakyan matapos niyang hininto ito sa gilid ng isang store. Nakabuntot lang ako sa kanya habang hawak ko ang kanyang hintuturo kasi pakiramdam ko kapag hahawakan niya ang kamay ko ay madudurog ang mga daliri ko.

Nandito na naman ako sa part na halos lahat ng babaeng nadadaan ni Law ay napapalingon sa kanya.

Inilibot ko ang buong paningin sa loob ng store at napamura nang may nahagip ang mga mata kong mga pamilyar na mata sa may entrance ng store at papasok ito sa loob, kasunod namin ni Law.

Those eyes that stared at me like how Law stared at me.

Rule.

Hindi man lang siya ngumiti nang nakita ako, mas lalo lang siyang tumitig sa akin at mabuti na lang ay nakatalikod si Law.

"Kryptonite."

Wala na. Kahit na nakatalikod pa si Law habang naglalalakad kami at may iilang tao na namimili ng bibilhin dito sa loob ng store ay alam kong malinaw na narinig ni Law ang pagtawag ni Rule sa akin dahilan kung bakit huminto siya sa paglalakad at gano'n din ako para tuluyan kaming humarap sa papalapit na si Rule.

Nonchalantly, I let go of Law's index finger but before I could do it, he caught my small hand compared to his large and rough one, and he held it tight. Keeping me at his side.

"Hi, Rule," I greeted with a kind smile plastered on my face, but after a seconds of smiling at Rule my face almost twisted in annoyance when I felt Law tightened his hold on my hand, gripping it.

I forced a smile again after regaining my strength.

Naalala ko tuloy 'yong sa video na pinakita sa akin ni Ashley. Ginawa ni Law ang lahat upang hindi ako magselos so I should do the same right? I should avoid Rule at all cost.

"Let's go, little girl," iritadong aya ni Law at marahang hinila ang kamay ko. "Baka maabutan pa tayo ng gabi bago makarating sa Benguet."

"Benguet?" seryosong tanong ni Rule na parang nasa isang appointment kami kasama ang presidente ng Pilipinas.

I swallowed to witness such horrible scene as this, I swear, I couldn't survive standing under their dark and intimidating gazes but I could tell that Law's gaze had almost got me on my knees. Rule's eyes wasn't that severe, I could endure it for another minute or two.

"Yes, Rule. My boy-" I bit my tongue hard enough that it I could possibly taste my own blood just to stop myself from continuing to say the word. I cleared my throat. "Brother. My brother and I will have a vacation there. Why do you ask?"

Mukhang hindi naman nahalata ni Rule ang pag-iba ng boses ko na parang natataranta.

Tumingin lang siya sa likuran ko kung nasaan matuwid at matigas na nakatayo si Law.

Matapos ang ilang segundong mariin lang siyang nakatingin kay Law ay tumango siya bago nagpaalam sa akin na may hahanapin pa siyang kailangan niyang bilhin dito sa store.

Did Law threatened him?

Hinila na rin ako ni Law papunta sa kung saan nakadisplay ang mga chips at iba pa'ng pagkain na makakain namin sa biyahe.

The expression on his chiselled face darkened, and I couldn't even count how many times his hard and strong jaw tensed. I knew that I could do something to lessen

his anger, I didn't want this day to be difficult for us.

With a sly smile painted on my face, I tiptoed while Law was busy picking and choosing something somewhere in this section of chips and junk food.

I reached up to plant a swift kiss on his tensed jaw since I couldn't get higher and farther than that, he didn't lean down to me and so I could reach his cheek.

Natigilan siya sa pagpili bago inilipat ang tingin sa akin.

"Galit pa rin ako, Kryptonite," magkaiba naman sa nanlalambot na ekspresyon sa mukha niya ang kanyang sinabi.

Speaking of galit, nang bumaba ang tingin ko sa kanyang pants ay napakapit ako sa kanyang matigas na braso nang wala sa oras.

Nang nakabili na kami ay siya na mismo ang naglagay ng mga pagkaing binili namin sa loob ng backseat, hinatid niya na naman ako papasok sa loob ng front seat bago siya pumasok sa driver's side.

Akmang bubuhayin niya na ang makina ng sasakyan ngunit hindi niya natuloy nang mabilis akong lumapit sa kanya at kahit na nahihirapan ay pinilit ko pa rin ang sarili hanggang sa tinulungan niya na akong makaupo sa kanyang matigas na hita.

I struggled to get on a perfect position on his lap, facing him with my legs apart and was placed at both side of him. Nothing to worry about someone would caught us, the windows were up and heavily tinted.

His arms tightly wrapped around me, caging me.

"Little girl," his steely voice didn't back me down from doing my intentions. "Ano sa tingin mo ang ginagawa mo ngayon hm?"

Instead of answering him, I brought both my hands up to touch his hard jaw, caressing it. I stared at his kissable lips which was tempting me more.

Sa ganito kalapit ng katawan namin ay agad na uminit ang kaibuturan ko, ang buong katawan ko.

Ginamit ko ang isang kamay ko at hinaplos ang aking hinlalaki sa kanyang malambot na pang-ibabang labi.

Umangat ang tingin ko mula sa kanyang labi hanggang sa kanyang mga matang pinapanood ang bawat galaw ko. Nagtagpo ang aming mainit na paningin, nakikita ko pa sa kanyang mga mata ang nag-aapoy na init doon.

Muli kong ibinaba ang tingin sa kanyang labi at hindi na nagsayang ng isang segundo, marahan kong idinampi ang aking mga labi sa kanyang mga labi kasabay no'n ang pagpikit naming dalawa.

Hindi pa siya tumugon sa halik ko kaya kinagat ko ang kanyang pang-ibabang labi at hinila hanggang sa kumawala ito sa pagitan ng mga ngipin ko bago ako muling humalik sa kanya.

Sa muling paghalik ko sa kanyang labi, kasabay no'n ang pagtugon niya at ang paglaban ng kanyang dila sa akin.

I snaked one arm around his nape and one hand remained against his strong jaw. I angled my head to deepen the torrid kiss.

Sobrang higpit ng pagkakahawak niya sa akin habang gumagalaw ako sa kanyang hita. Nararamdaman ko ang marahas niyang dila na pinaparusahan ang bibig ko.

Heatedly, I rubbed and grind myself against him, hard and fast, rocking my body and moving at the same rhythm of the kiss. Showing him what I got and what I could do.

Nang nasa gitna na kami ng sobrang init at lalim ng paghahalikan namin ay saka ko pa tinulak ang kanyang matigas na dibdib at binigyang konting distansya sa pagitan namin. Hinabol pa ng kanyang labi ang labi ko pero hindi siya nagtagumpay.

Breathing rapidly, we both catch up some air to breathe.

"Why did you stop?" malalim ang paghinga na demand ng matigas na boses ni Law. "Gusto ko pa."

"Paano kung ayaw mo na?" marahan kong tanong habang hinahaplos ang buhok niya sa ibabaw na parte ng kanyang batok.

"Hindi pa rin ako titigil," kalmado ngunit bakas ang pagka-inis sa maawtoridad niyang boses.

Staring at his swollen lips, I slowly opened my mouth again to speak and not to kiss him. "Pero ayaw mo na 'di ba? Dapat ay tumigil ka na."

"Hindi ibig sabihin na ayaw ko na ay magsasawa na rin ako," tiim bagang sabi nito at halos mapunit niya na ang suot kong hoodie nang mas lalong humigpit ang pagkakahawak niya sa akin. "Ayaw ko na kasi gusto ko pa at ayaw ko na... nabibitin ako, Kryptonite."

"Ang labo mo," natatawang sabi ko bago kinagat ang pang-ibabang labi ko.

He looked so pissed when I didn't move to kiss him and I knew that he's patiently waiting for me.

Could anybody imagine this man having his own humour when all that surrounded him in the mansion before and his life had fallen out to be humourless? I have never seen him before as active as this, I lived with him for years, got away from him for one year and he seemed so lonely before until us happened.

Most of my cousins and brothers were afraid of him. He didn't hang out with them, they would have a rare conversation if my cousins and brothers did something bad in those years that we're living in the mansion together.

He's responsible to our behaviour because he's the eldest and most of the time, the absence of our parents would lead us to do something unacceptable to the high society but he never did one. His work of thinking and mentality had began to be mature at the early age. He's independent and respectable.

Until now, our parents, my aunt and uncle were all busy to manage our family business.

Ako lang 'yong minsan na lumalapit sa kanya kahit natatakot ako sa kanya noong bata pa ako sa tuwing nakikita ko siyang nag-iisang nakaupo sa isang sulok at malalim ang iniisip.

He would let me sit on his lap and tell me to behave.

Here we are again doing the same thing from the past, but in contrast to the innocent me and the responsible him before, we had became passionate and lecherous

now.

"Isa pa," demand niya nang hindi pa rin ako gumalaw at tumitig lang sa kanyang mga labi.

I showed him my half smirk and looked away from his lips. Tumingin ako sa labas ng kotse.

"Baka gabihin tayo, Law?" dahilan ko katulad ng dahilan niya kanina nang nag-usap kami ni Rule sa store.

I smiled triumphantly, as I felt his muscular arms that's tightly wrapped around me slowly loosened and help me place myself back to the front seat. I stretched one arm to the back seat and grabbed one of the chips and tear it open.

Intimidatingly, he drive our way to La Trinidad, Benguet in a safe speed with that very dark expression on his face. And I? I popped up a piece of chip into my mouth and munch it with so much satisfaction for today.

Iniisip ko sa buong biyahe namin kung bakit sa La Trinidad ang napili niya at kung saang banda ng La Trinidad kami pupunta. Alam ko namang maraming tourist spot doon pero hindi ko talaga alam kung saan. Nando'n nga yata 'yong narinig kong Mines View Observation Deck, tourist attraction at Baguio, Benguet.

Nakatulog din akong dalawang oras at nagising lang nang may naramdaman ako sa ilalim ng pwet ko, gumagalaw na parang alimango'ng naupuan ko, pinipisil ang pwet ko habang may nararamdaman akong malambot na bagay na marahang dumadampi sa gilid ng labi ko.

This man. One more attempt of touching and squeezing my butt I would think that he's kinda obsessed to it.

"Nandito na tayo. Let's go? You can continue your sleep in our hotel room," marahang sabi ng malalim na boses ni Law.

Kinusot ko ang mga mata ko bago umayos ng upo at tumingin kay Law na nasa gilid ko, sa labas ng kotse.

"Our hotel room?" I echoed, worried and anxious at the idea that we would check in the same hotel room and not separately. "Law, what would other people think?"

"Walang nakakakilala sa atin dito," kaswal niyang sagot.

Pinakatitigan ko siya bago ako bumaba at tinulungan niya naman ako.

Almost five hours of just sitting would hurt my feet and legs if I'd try to walk straight. It felt like I was new to walking, legs was slightly trembling, same as those mermaids in a story or movie that turned to magic their tail into legs and that they couldn't walk.

I gaze around the whole place and I realized that it was dark now, but the hotel building's light somewhat illuminated the nearby dark places.

The hotel almost reached the standards of a skyscraper, not so far to being called as skyscraper. For me, it was tall enough for a hotel.

"Law, how much is it?" tukoy ko sa hotel habang naglalakad na kami papasok sa loob at ngayon ko pa napagtantong dala niya na pala ang bag namin.

I didn't really mind how much it cost for a one week stay here but we both know that we're saving money. We don't have much for the rest of the summer and I didn't want Law to waste it just to provide me an expensive hotel room to stay for this vacation. A simple and clean hotel, motel or inn would do.

"Four thousand five hundred for one night," sagot niya, tapat at walang halong na biro.

"What?" I gasped, stopped on my track and snapped my head to shot him a glare. "Ang mahal!"

Four thousand five hundred times seven? Because we would stay here for one week and that's equivalent to seven nights.

"May sariling pera rin naman ako, Kry," mahinahon niya tugon at iginiya na ako patungo sa loob ng hotel. "Pinag-ipunan ko 'to ng ilang taon simula noong naglayas ako."

"Bakit kung magkapagtrabaho ka sa palengke noon ay parang nauubusan ka na ng pera?" I hissed and even tried to nail my heels on the ground to stop from walking.

"Sh," he hushed me. Patuloy pa rin sa paglalakad at marahang pagtulak ng likod ko habang hawak ng isang kamay niya ang isang braso ko, in case na baka ay mawalan ako ng balanse at madapa pa. "We'll talk about that inside."

The glass double doors of the hotel's entrance opened followed by a two receptionist that uttered a warm greetings to us, saying have a good evening.

The temperature here wasn't hot. As for my own sense of touch or feeling, it's just an average low temperature. Not too cold.

"Good evening Mr. and Mrs. Cavanaugh, we have received your room reservation online, here's the card."

Mariin akong tumitig sa isang babaeng nagsalita sa likod ng isang tiled na parang kitchen island nang dahil sa sinabi niya.

Cavanaugh nga ang apilyedo ko pero bakit tinawag niya kaming Mr. and Mrs.?

With my creased forehead I raised my gaze up to Law. "Law, what-"

He shut me by gently squeezing my arm before he accepted the dark blue card and guided me to the elevator without saying thank you to the girl.

"We have the same last name. I won't be surprise if she assumed that we're married," aniya nang nakapasok na kami sa loob ng elevator.

Napasinghap na naman ako nang dahil sa sinabi niya, nakita niya ang reaksiyon sa mukha ko at narinig ko pa ang malalim na pagtawa niya kaya sinuntok ko ang kanyang braso na lalong pinagsisisihan ko dahil ako lang ang nasaktan.

Nang nakarating kami sa hotel room na 'di niya man lang sinabi sa akin na may hotel reservation pala nito online at nakapagbayad na siya.

My eyes widened and not because the room was massive and elegant but because the hotel room was only consisted with one large bed.

"Don't tell me..." hindi ko na matapos 'yong sasabihin ko at lumington kay Law na nanatiling nakatayo malapit sa nakasarang pinto ng hotel room.

Matipid siyang ngumiti sa akin pero bakas sa ngiti na 'yon ang panunukso. "Why not? Lagi ka namang natutulog sa kama ko at isa pa, mag-asawa naman tayo 'di ba?"

"Law! Nagkamali lang 'yong babae e!" giit ko kahit na sa kaloob-looban ko ay parang sasabog na ang puso ko sa sobrang bilis ng pagtibok nito.

Natigilan ako nang nasaksihan ko ang paglaho ng matipid na ngiti sa kanyang labi.

"Sana nga hindi na lang siya nagkamali," his voice softened along with his intimidating eyes, and I could also feel how sad that tone was. "Sana nga totoong mag-asawa talaga tayo."

"Law..."

"Hindi ako makokontento sa relasyong 'to, Kryptonite," mariing nakatitig ang kanyang mga mata sa akin kahit na ilang metro ang layo niya sa akin. "Gusto kitang matali sa akin."

Marahan akong umiling at napalunok. "Pero imposible 'yan, Law," mababa lang ang boses ko at ako na mismo ang lumapit sa kanya. "M-Magkapatid tayo at sixteen pa lang ako."

"Maghihintay ako," desidido ang kanyang boses na parang wala ng ibang makakapagpabago sa kanyang desisyon.

Nakita ko na naman ang ganitong side niya. Alam ko namang nasasaktan siya pero bakit pinagpipilitan niya pa? Wala naman siyang magagawa, lalo na kapag dumating ang oras na malaman ng nila mommy at daddy ang tungkol dito.

What about Grandpa? I knew that he's a good man but why did he choose to ask his help? He's our grandfather, he's not a fairy grandmother that could make his wish come true.

Magkapatid kami at wala ng iba pang makakapagpabago ng katotohanang 'yon.

Pero kahit gano'n ay niyakap ko si Law ng sobrang higpit. He hugged me back, tighter than mine.

"Okay," ang tanging nasabi ko kahit na ako rin ay naguguluhan na at hindi malaman kung anong gagawin.

Sinabi ko lang 'yon para mapakalma siya.

I trust his decisions and all, but I just couldn't stop myself from thinking that what he wanted us to be was as impossible as to figure how the universe was created. What? Was he planning to make a theory about our situation that having the same blood running through our veins couldn't affect us if we get married?

On the other hand, because he's a lawyer, then maybe he's going to make his own law about lovers that were blood related and that they could finally marry each other because blood doesn't matter? Even the seven years of our age gap did matter.

Among all of us, he's the only Cavanaugh that have remained his reputation clean and untainted with his impeccable manner.

But what if, people, our family would discover about our relationship? I couldn't imagine it, I didn't want to be away from him. Mommy and daddy would definitely take me away from him because they know that they couldn't take Law away from me.

Law could fight physically and I could not.

They would take his weakness.

Kinabukasan ay alas kuwatro na ng hapon ay umalis kami ng hotel dahil may pupuntahan daw kami.

Kagabi ay syempre sa tuwing natutulog kami, ginagawa niyang unan ang pwet ko. We had our dinner at the hotel and I really liked the food that they serve, 'yong breakfast naman kanina ay free lang. Mas malamig pala sa umaga rito kesa sa gabi.

"Law, saan ba kasi tayo pupunta?" tanong ko, ilang beses ko ng tinanong 'to at kung bakit alas kwatro pa talaga kami pupunta sa kung saan man kami pupunta.

Baka abutan kami ng gabi.

"Strawberry Farm."

Nanlaki ang mga mata ko nang sa wakas ay nasagot na rin ang tanong ko.

"Really?" hindi makapaniwalang tanong ko ulit dahil baka ay nagkamali lang ang pandinig ko. "Magkano 'yong entrance fee?"

"Walang entrance fee," kaswal niyang sagot at iniliko ang kotse papunta sa isang daan na hindi na sementado. "If you wanna go for strawberry picking, kailangan pa nating magbayad. May napagtanungan na ako, five hundred ang isang kilo para sa strawberry picking nila."

"This is gonna be fun," I chirped with so much excitement overtaking my mind and soul. "Pero bakit alas kwatro ng hapon? Hindi ba magsasara na sila or something whatsoever?"

"Open sila ng 7am at magsasara ng 7pm."

"Gagabihin nga tayo?"

"Yes, little girl," he confirmed.

Hindi ko talaga mapigilang mas lalong ma-excite. Ano kayang hitsura ng Strawberry Farm sa gabi? 'Yong nasa alas sais lang ng gabi.

How did he know that I love strawberries despite of my addiction towards green plants and vegetables? Well, I shouldn't have to be surprise, my room smell like strawberry because of my shower gel.

May napakalaking half statue ng strawberry na naka-horizontal position with those tourists, busy taking some pictures at the statue, 'yon ang bumungad sa amin nang bumaba kami ng kotse, medyo malayo sa kung saan niya pinark ang kanyang sasakyan.

Sa gilid ng statue, ilang metro ang layo ay may mga nakahilerang tindahan, lahat ng tinitinda nila ay mga may kinalaman sa strawberry or strawberry itself, there I saw most of it was the famous strawberry jam.

I did some research about what month was strawberry picking season, earlier at our ride, he let me borrow his phone anyway and Google's answer was November to May.

"Malapit na tayo," sabi ni Law nang dumaan kami sa isang elevated part ng lupa.

Strawberries were planted in a perfect array, lined up in their green leaves and

stem, and of course, the red coloured fruit that almost looked like red rose when seeing it from afar.

Naaaliw ang mga mata ko sa mga nakikita ko. At least hindi na mga matatayog na buildings o mga maiingay na sasakyan ang mga nakikita ko, this environment is healthy for us.

"Manong? Ito na po ba?" narinig kong tanong ng malalim na boses ni Law kaya tumingin na ako sa kung sino man ang nasa harap namin.

"Oo, ilang kilo ba ang bibilhin niyo, hijo?" sagot ng isang matandang lalaki.

"Dalawang kilo po."

That means, one thousand ang babayaran niya? Ang gastos talaga ni Law.

Sino kaya ang kausap niya? Baka ang may-ari ng parte ng strawberry farm na 'to?

"Come here, little girl," tawag ni Law at binigyan ako ng isang basket at gunting, may hawak din naman siya para sa sarili niya.

Humakbang ako pababa nang nauna na si Law upang alalayan ako, nakatayo siya sa gilid ng napakahabang taniman ng mga strawberries.

May iilang taong kumukuha ng strawberry saka ipapasok nila sa loob ng basket at karamihan ay kumukuha ng litrato at nagv-vlog. May iilang grupo pa nga ng babae na sinasadyang magpicture na siguradong makukunan si Law do'n nang hindi nito nalalaman.

Inilabas ko 'yong phone ni Law na nasa loob ng bulsa ko at dahil naiinggit ako sa kanila aba'y dapat sa akin na sila mainggit ngayon.

"Come closer, Law," utos ko at nahagip pa ng mga mata ko ang pagtingin ng mga grupo ng babae sa direksyon namin.

Hindi naman umangal si Law at lumapit na sa akin, hinawakan pa nga ako sa bewang ko.

I took a picture of us before we get started picking strawberries.

Matipid pa rin ang ngiti ni Law sa lahat ng litrato but that's okay.

Madalas ay hindi ko maiwasang mapakagat labi dahil gusto ko na talagang kainin ang mga nakuha ko pero pinigilan ko ang sarili ko dahil hindi pa 'to tinimbang. Unfair naman sa nagmamay-ari.

Natapos na ang iba, at may iilang umuwi na. Nagkukulay kahel na ang kalangitan at nag-aagaw na ang dilim at liwanag, mukhang gagabi na pero hindi pa rin kami tapos ni Law.

"Manong? 'Yong usapan po natin?" narinig kong boses ni Law mula sa likuran ko habang ako rito ay halos luluhuran ko na ang mga strawberries at ginunting ang stem nito upang tuluyan ko ng maipasok sa loob ng basket ang nakuha ko.

"Walang problema hijo," bakas pa ang tuwa sa boses ni manong. "Dumiretso lang kayo sa bandang 'yon tapos lumiko kayo. May makikita kayong greenhouse doon."

"Sigurado po ba kayong walang tao sa bandang 'yon, Manong?"

Bakit gano'n magsalita si Law? Ano namang meron kung may tao?

Nagpatuloy na lamang ako sa pagkukuha ng mga strawberries at inilagay sa loob ng basket ko na konti nalang talaga at mapupuno na ito.

"Oo, hijo, gumagabi na at wala pa namang tanim sa greenhouse na 'yon pero may inihanda ng mga flower pot o mga bed para sa pagtatanim," paniguradong sagot ni manong at hindi ko maiwasang makinig sa kanilang pinag-uusapan.

"Salamat po," magalang naman ang boses ni Law.

What are they talking about? What are they? An old friends?

Nakaramdam na naman ako ng kaba na parang may kung anong umuudyok sa akin na umuwi nalang pabalik sa hotel at isa pa ay dumidilim na rin.

"Oh siya sige na, maghihintay nalang ako sa labas, hinihintay ko rin kasi ang misis ko, mamayang alas otso pa magsasara ang tindahan ng misis ko riyan lang sa labas," paalam ni manong dahilang kung bakit nanlamig ang mga kamay ko na parang ayokong maiwan mag-isa rito kasama si Law. "Pagbutihan mo, hijo."

Anong pagbutihan ni Law?

Narinig ko ang ingay ng mga paa ni manong paalis at patungo sa kung saan kami dumaan kanina ni Law papunta rito.

"That's enough, little girl," narinig kong utos ni Law sabay kuha ng hawak kong gunting at basket na puno ng strawberries. Ipinasok niya pa ang dalawang gunting sa basket.

He's holding the two baskets full of strawberry with only one hand because the other hand was holding my wrist, pulling me somewhere out of the strawberry field.

Confused at the opposite direction that we're taking. I didn't ask where we're going but when we got far away from where we should be walking back to the exit, I couldn't stop myself but ask him.

"Law? Hindi pa ba tayo uuwi? Paano na ang mga strawberries? Nabayaran mo na ba? Bakit umalis na si manong?" bakas ang kaba sa boses ko nang halos wala na akong nakikitang liwanag sa kalangitan. "Uwi na tayo, Law. Hindi mo ba nakikita? Tayo na nga lang siguro ang natirang tao rito."

"No, may pupuntahan pa tayo," masyadong seryoso ang boses ni Law at parang may kakaiba sa kanya.

Ang layo na ng nalakad namin at lumiko na kami kanina.

"Sa greenhouse ba?" I assumed because I just thought about manong told him the direction to the location of the greenhouse and we're exactly heading to it. "Ano namang gagawin natin sa greenhouse?"

Bago niya pa man sagutin ang tanong ko ay binuksan niya ang parang kulay green na net na pinto ng greenhouse at pumasok kami sa loob.

He silently placed the baskets in a huge empty flower pot before facing me, I looked at him with innocent confusion in my eyes.

"Aangkinin na kita."

Chapter 20

Mature Content Warning. This chapter may contain content of an adult nature. If you are easily offended or are under the age of 18, just ignore and skip some scenes. Some words within are intended for adults only and may include scenes of sexual content, strong languages, violence etc.

Devirginized

"Nasa tamang pag-iisip ka pa ba, Law?" suminghap ako ng malalim at hindi makapaniwalang sinuri siya kahit na medyo madilim na rito ay malinaw ko pa ring nakikita ang kanyang mukha at katawan. "Baka may lamok dito at gabi na, balik nalang tayo sa hotel."

Halos atakihin na ako ng kaba nang makita ang paraan ng pagngiti niya, maliban sa hindi 'yon matipid na ngiti ay nakakatakot siya na parang may binabalak talaga.

"Kalma lang, little girl, okay?" kakaiba rin ang pagiging marahan sa pagkakasabi niya ng mga salitang'yon gamit ang kanyang matigas at malalim na boses. "Isipin mo nalang na ako si Adam at ikaw si Eve."

"What the hell, Law? 'Wag mo akong ituring na parang bata pa rin at tinuturu-turuan mo lang susunod na agad sa'yo," bakas ang galit sa boses ko na hindi ko na napigilan pa. "Tapos ano? Iisipin ko na itong greenhouse ay 'yong Garden of Eden? Nababaliw ka na ba talaga?"

Pwede namang sa hotel namin 'to gagawin para makapaghanda pa ako sa kotse, bakit dito pa? Hindi na ba talaga siya makapagpigil? Hindi naman siya galit, bakit ganito?

"Kryptonite," sambit niya sa pangalan ko at nakikita ko sa kabila ng dilim ay nawala na ang ngiti sa kanyang labi.

"Paano kung may makakita sa atin?" marahan kong sabi matapos ang ilang segundong pagpapakalma sa sarili ko.

"Si Manong Protacio ang nagmamay-ari ng greenhouse na 'to kaya walang ibang makakapasok dito," hindi ko na naririnig ang pagiging marahan sa boses niya ngayon. "Magkaibigan sila ni Grandpa."

Maigi ko siyang tinitigan na nanatiling nakatayo malapit sa kulay green na net na pinto ng greenhouse.

Nanlamig ang mga kamay ko nang nakitang hindi niya na nagugustuhan ang mga pangyayari, na pinapahaba ko lalo ang usapan.

"Okay, fine, fine," inangat ko pa ang dalawa kong kamay na kalebel ng ulo ko na parang isang suspek na sumusuko sa harap niya. "Ito ang gusto mo'ng lugar 'di ba? Wala ba silang farmhouse dito? Doon nalang tayo."

"Ayoko."

Bumagsak ang mga nakaangat kong kamay nang dahil sa narinig kaya nag-isip ako ng panibagong tanong.

"At akala ko ba ay walang nakakakilala sa atin dito?" I asked, smooth and hoping for his kind consideration, trying to be as deceiving as I could be.

"Ang alam lang ni Manong Protacio ay tatlo kaming anak ni dad, hindi ka niya nakilala," matiyaga niyang sagot.

Siguro ay bata pa sila noon at nasa loob pa siguro ako ng sinapupunan ni mommy.

Hindi ko maiwasang manginig sa kinatatayuan ko dahil maliban sa pakiramdam ko ay parang lumalamig ang paligid, napapaso naman ako sa napakainit at nagbabagang paraan ng pagtingin ni Law sa akin.

"Oh," I expressed, I look around the internal of this infernal greenhouse before fixing my gaze back to him. "Why here of all places, Law? Dito pa talaga?"

"Magandang gawin dito," matigas na naman ang kanyang boses habang sinusuri ang mukha ko na parang may hinahanap at gustong makita. "Pang-fertilize sa pananim nila."

Seryoso siya nang sinabi niya 'yon.

Gusto kong kumaripas ng takbo palabas at pabalik sa kotse namin pero alam kong hindi ako makakalayo dahil maliban sa malambot ang iilang parte ng lupa sa strawberry farm ay mas malaki ang distansyang humakbang si Law. 'Yong pinakamabilis na pagtakbo ko ay jogging lang para sa kanya.

Naging tahimik kaming dalawa ng halos limang minuto at parehong nakatayo ng ilang metro.

Pinakiramdaman ko siya saglit kung may sasabihin o gagawin pa ba siya at nang wala ay hindi na ako nagsayang ng oras.

Tumakbo ako at dumaan sa gilid niya patungo sa pinto ng greenhouse, bubuksan ko na sana ang pinto ngunit sa inaasahang pagkakataon ay may pumigil sa akin.

Matigas at malalaking dalawang braso ang mabilis na yumakap sa maliit kong pigura.

Nagpumiglas ako at sinuntok ko pa ang kanyang maskuladong braso pero mas lalo niya lang hinigpitan ang pagkakayakap sa akin katulad noong ginawa niya sa akin nang nasugatan ako sa paa.

"Law! Bumalik na kasi tayo sa hotel! Wala namang kama rito e!" giit ko at hangga't sa may natitira pa akong lakas ay sinubukan kong lumaban sa kanya. "Sa hotel nalang tayo please?"

"Sh, calm down, little girl," maawtoridad niyang utos na halos pigain na ang katawan ko para hindi na ako makagalaw pa.

Napagtanto kong hindi ko siya kakayaning labanan kaya huminto ako sa pagpumiglas at isa pa ay nauubusan na ako ng lakas habang siya naman ay pinanatiling mahigpit ang pagkakayakap mula sa likuran ko.

Idinidiin ni Law ang kanyang matigas na katawan sa likod ko, idinidiin ang matigas na umbok ng kanyang pagkalalaki sa hiwa ng pwet ko. Kahit na may suot pa rin kaming damit ay pakiramdam ko tumatagos pa rin ang init na namumuo sa aming katawan.

Natatakot ako, natatakot ako sa ano man ang maaaring mangyari pagkatapos nito.

"Law, hindi tama 'to," suminghap ako ng hangin upang makabawi ng lakas habang nararamdaman ko ang kanyang agresibong labi na hinahalikan ang buhok ko, inaamoy ito. "Hindi ito ang tamang lugar at mali ang gawin natin 'to!"

"Walang mali sa gagawin natin, Kryptonite," naririnig ko mula sa kanyang nakakatakot na boses ang matinding galit.

Mariin akong napapikit nang hinigit niya ang isang hita ko palapit sa kanya dahilan kung bakit ako napaatas sa kanya at muntik ko ng naapakan ang kanyang sapatos.

Sa tingin ko ngayon ay nakaawang na ang hiwa sa pwet ko nang dahil sa mas, idinidikit, idinidiin at isiniksik niya ang kanyang matigas na umbok. Parang dragon na pilit kumakawala sa loob ng pants niya ang kanyang pagkalalaki na parang binubugahan ng apoy ang pwet ko nang dahil sa sobrang init na dulot nito.

"P-Pero magkapatid tayo kaya itigil na natin 'to please?" hinimas ko ang umiigting na kalamnan sa kanyang braso para ipahayag sa kanya na mali ang lahat ng 'to. "I want you too but we can't do this..."

Parang bigla lang akong bumalik sa matinong pag-iisip, akala ko no'ng una ay sinasabi niya lang ang tungkol sa pag-angkin sa akin dahil tinatakot niya lang ako.

Malamig ang paligid at pakiramdam ko ay nauubusan ako ng hangin kapag huminto ako ng kahit isang segundo sa paghinga.

"Hayaan mo muna akong gawin ang gusto ko, Kry. Sampung minuto lang ang kailangan ko," angil niya, galit na galit ang matigas at malalim niyang boses. Alam kong hindi lang boses ang galit sa kanya. "Kapag basa ang kinalalabasan ay ipagpapatuloy ko pero kapag hindi ay babalik na tayo sa hotel."

"A-Anong basa?" kabadong tanong ko habang nakapalibot pa rin ang kanyang isang brusong braso sa tiyan ko at ang isang kamay naman ay hawak ang hita ko.

"Your strawberry," walang pag-aalinlangang sagot niya.

Naghintay ako sa kung ano man ang sinasabi niyang gagawin niya sa loob ng sampung minuto.

Bumabaon ang mga daliri ko sa umiigting na kalamnan ng kanyang brasong nakapulupot sa tiyan ko nang napahigpit ang pagkakahawak ko roon.

Nanatili siya sa likuran ko, isinasaksak sa hiwa ng pwet ko ang kanyang umbok ng pagkalalaki nang naramdaman ko ang paggapang ng kanyang kamay na parang alakdan na handa ng lasunin ako, paangat ito mula sa hita ko hanggang sa umabot ito sa pagkababae ko.

"L-Law..." malalim ang bawat paghinga ko nang naramdaman ko ang tuluyang pagsakop ng kanyang malaki at magaspang na palad sa pagkababae ko, ramdam na ramdam ko siya kahit na suot ko pa rin ang jeans ko. "A-Anong gagawin mo? Maawa ka naman Law, please."

"Ikaw ba? Naawa ka ba sa akin, little girl?" bulong niya, ni hindi man lang nabawasan ang kanyang galit sa kabila ng pagiging mahinahon ko ngayon. "Kapag may ginagawa kang kalokohan sa school, alam mo ba'ng hindi lang 'yong ulo ko ang sumasakit? Sumasakit din ang puson ko."

Umawang ang mga labi ko nang naramdaman ko ang pagbaba ng kanyang mukha mula sa tuktok ng ulo ko hanggang sa tainga at panga ko.

Tumama ang likod ko sa kanyang malapad na dibdib nang umatras ako dahil sa paggalaw ng kanyang gitnang daliri na nakasakop sa pagkababae ko.

Hindi ko iniwas ang aking ulo nang hinalikan niya ang panga ko, sinisipsip ang balat ko, hinihigop ang dumidikit at natitira niyang mainit na laway sa balat ko na parang humihigop lang siya ng mainit na sabaw.

Ang ingay ng kanyang bibig at dila sa tuwing dinidilaan niya ang panga ko pababa sa leeg ko.

Nakakapaso, napapaso ako sa tuwing lumalapat ang kanyang dila sa nanlalamig kong balat.

Hinawakan ko ang kanyang ulo nang halos napapaatras na 'yong ulo ko sa paraan ng pagsunggab niya sa akin ng halik sa leeg ko.

Habang abala siya sa matinding paghalik sa leeg ko ay nakaawang ang mga labi ko upang huminga ng malalim gamit ang ilong at bibig ko.

Bumaba ang aking tingin sa kanyang malaking kamay na parang nagsisilbing kutsara sa pagkababae ko, kinukutsara ito sa paraan ng pagkakahawak niya. Parang scoop ng ice cream.

Mainit ang binubuga kong hangin nang naramdaman ko ang paggalaw ng kanyang gitnang daliri roon kahit sa kabila ng jeans na suot ko ay nagawa niyang hagurin ang pagkababae ko, tinutukso ito sa paraan ng marahang pagtusok niya sa kanyang gitnang daliri.

Tumatagos iyon sa pakiramdam ko kahit imposible namang mapupunit ng kanyang daliri ang jeans ko.

Parang blade sa sobrang talim ng kanyang dila at hindi ko na napigilan ang pag-ungol nang bumilis ang paghagod ng kanyang gitnang daliri sa pagkababae ko.

"O-Oh, ah... uhm, Law, Law," taas baba ang dibdib at tiyan ko nang dahil sa sobrang pagbilis ng paghinga ko, humigpit pa lalo ang pagkakahawak ng isang braso niya sa tiyan ko nang narinig niya ang pag-ungol ko sa kanyang pangalan. "L-Law, please. Itigil na muna natin 'to-ugh, ah..."

"May sinasabi ka, little girl?" marahas niyang bulong sa tainga ko.

Hindi ko na alam kung saan humawak o kung anong kakagatin ko, ang labi ko ba o ang dila ko nang dahil sa mas matinding bilis ng paghagod ng gitnang daliri ni Law sa pagkababae ko.

Pabagsak kong isinandal ang aking ulo sa mas itaas na parte ng kanyang matigas na dibdib dahil hindi naman umabot ang ulo ko sa kanyang balikat na dapat ay doon ko isasandal.

Pakiramdam ko ay isang malaki at magaspang na bato ang naipit sa hiwa ng pwet ko nang dahil sa mas lalo lang tumigas ang kanyang malaking umbok na pagkalalaki roon, siguro ay resulta 'yon ng pag-ungol ko sa kanyang pangalan.

Namamanhid na ang balat ko sa init at hindi ko na nararamdaman ang lamig sa buong paligid.

Sa tingin ko ay nagtagal ng pitong minuto ang kanyang patuloy na mabilis na paghagod sa pagkababae ko habang kagat-kagat niya ang aking tainga.

"L-Law! A-Ah..." sigaw ni nang paranf may naramdaman akong sumasagitsit na konting likido mula sa kaibuturan ko.

I was so sure that I didn't urinate. It was something a little damp feeling in my underwear.

Saka pa ako huminga ng malalim at unti-unting nagrelax ang katawan ko habang nakasandal sa matigas na katawan ni Law at binalewala ang pakiramdam ng matigas na umbok ng kanyang pagkalalaki sa pwet ko, ngayong ay marahan na ang kanyang paghimas sa pagkababae ko na parang pinapakalma rin 'yon matapos ang marahas na paghagod niya roon.

"Feeling good?" walang pinagkaiba ang matigas at galit na boses niya ngayon at kanina. "Sumagot ka, Kryptonite."

"Y-Yes," hinihinala kong sagot at lumuwag na rin ang pagkakahawak ko sa kanyang braso.

Isang minuto lang akong nakahinga ng maluwag nang humigpit na naman ang pagkakahawak ko sa kanyang braso nang naramdaman ko ang muling paggalaw ng kanyang magaspang na kamay sa pagkababae ko.

"L-Law naman..." reklamo ko nang sinimulan niya na ang pagbukas ng zipper ng jeans ko. "Pagod pa ako."

"It's okay, little girl," panigurado niya sa akin na sa tingin ko ay scam naman. "Wala akong gagawin. Hahawakan ko lang kung basa ba."

"Hindi naman na siguro importante 'yon, Law," giit ko at bahagyang niyugyog ang kanyang brasong umiigting pa rin ang kalamnan. "Balik na tayo sa hotel, please? Gusto ko ng magshower."

"Hindi pa tayo tapos sa usapan," aniya at agad kong naramdaman ang marahang pagdila niya sa likod ng aking tainga. "I wanna know if your strawberry is wet."

"H-Hindi pwede," kinakabahan kong hinawakan ang kanyang palapulsuhan nang akmang ipapasok niya na sa loob ng underwear ko ang kanyang kamay. "Hindi naman basa, Law. Naramdaman ko, hindi naman. Maniwala ka sa akin, please? Uwi na tayo, tara na," pilit ko siyang kinukumbinsi at mabilis ko pa siyang hinalikan sa kanyang pisngi habang nanatiling nakababa ang kanyang ulo sa akin.

Marahas akong napasinghap nang hindi siya nagpapigil sa akin.

Nakatitig sa akin ang kanyang mga matang nagbabaga ng apoy sa galit nang tagumpay niyang naipasok sa loob ng jeans at underwear ko ang kanyang magaspang na kamay. Seryoso ang kanyang mukha at sobrang lapit nito sa mukha ko na parang isang maling salita na lang ay mahahalikan niya na ako.

Humiinga ako pero bakit parang wala namang hangin ang pumapasok sa ilong ko?

Kinagat ko ang aking mga labi nang naramdaman ko ang paghawak niya ng tuluyan sa pagkakabae ko, nang walang nakaharang na jeans o underwear.

Ramdam ko ang kanyang magaspang na palad na dumikit doon at ang marahang pagpasok ng kanyang daliri roon, naramdaman ko nga'ng dumikit ang kanyang matigas na daliri sa mabasang singit ko, parang hinahalughog niya ang pagkababae ko upang mas lalong

masiguradong tama ba ang nararamdaman niya.

Dumudulas ang kaniyang gitnang daliri mula sa ibabang bahagi ng pagkababae ko hanggang sa itaas nito.

"You lied, little girl," mas maawtoridad at nakakatakot ang kanyang boses habang titig na titig siya sa akin. "Ang sabi mo, hindi basa? Ginagalit mo ba talaga ako?"

"Pero hindi naman 'yon gano'n kanina," pilit akong lumulusot sa problema, marahan lang ang boses, takot na baka kung ano pa ang gagawin ni Law sa akin kapag sisigawan ko siya. "Hinawakan mo kasi," pangbibintang ko.

Naramdaman kong hinihila niya na palabas ang kanyang kamay ngunit hindi ko inasahan ang susunod niyang ginawa.

Pinanood ko siya nang dinilaan at sinisipsip niya ang kanyang gitnang daliri sa mismong harap ako.

"A-Anong lasa?" nakangiwing tanong ko, kuryuso.

Pero hindi niya ako sinagot, mas lalo lang nagdilim ang kanyang ekspresyon sa mukha.

"Basta, masarap," ang tanging nasabi niya.

Bakit 'yong aksidenteng narinig ko ang pinag-usapan nila Kuya Laki at Kuya Ruin noong elementary pa lang ako, sa pagkakatanda ko ay maalat-alat na medyo manamis-tamis na ewan daw ang lasa no'n?

"Jesus," malutong at matigas na sambit ni Law habang nakatitig pa rin sa mukha ko. "That innocent curiosity on your face is turning me on, little girl. Stop that."

Halata nga dahil nakikita ko ang paghihirap na may halong galit na ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha, idagdag pa ang kanyang matigas na umbok na isiniksik niya sa hiwa ng pwet ko nang naramdaman kong parang sinusundot at kinakalabit nito ang pwet ko.

Naramdaman kong dahan-dahan niya akong binitiwang at pinaharap ako sa kanya, hindi niya man lang sinara ang zipper ng jeans ko. Kahit hindi na siya nakayakap sa akin ay wala pa rin akong kawala dahil hawak niya naman ang palapulsuhan ko.

"Babalik na ba tayo sa hotel, Law?" umaasang tanong ko habang nakatingala sa kanya. Buti ay may natitira pa akong lakas upang makatayo ng maayos matapos ang nangyari kanina. "Balik na tayo, Law."

Pinulupot ko pa ang mga kamay ko sa kanyang matigas na braso at marahan siyang hinila patungo sa malapit na pinto ng greenhouse.

Pero hindi siya nagpatinag sa hila ko. Ako pa ang hinila niya patungo sa gitna ng maluwa at malaking greenhouse.

Nagulat ako nang may nakitang malaking raised bed garden sa gitna. Malaki siya na parang magmistulang kama talaga nang dahil sa laki no'n, 'yong mukhang kabaong ng mga bampira, rectangular nga lang ang hugis nito at gawa sa kahoy. Kahit sa gitna ng dilim ay nakikita ko ang kulay itim at malaking plastic, mukhang garbage bag ang kulay nito at nakabalot pa sa surface ng raised bed garden.

Wala pa'ng matabang lupa ang inilagay nila roon, mukhang kakagawa pa lang ng raised bed garden na 'to.

"Humiga ka muna," utos niya at iginiya pa ako palapit sa malaking raised bed garden.

"Ayoko," huminto ako at hinarap siya ng maayos. "Gusto ko ng bumalik sa hotel, Law."

"Nakalimutan mo na ba ang usapan natin kanina, Kryptonite?"

"Ang daya mo kasi," giit ko na naman, pinanatiling mababa ang boses, takot na baka ay may maaaring makarinig sa amin kahit na wala namang ibang tao sa labas. "Baka pasmado 'yang kamay mo at pinagpawisan kaya nang hinawakan mo ay dumulas," inirapan ko siya sa gitna ng dilim.

"Hindi pasmado ang kamay ko," marahas ang boses na wika niya, nakatungo sa akin.

"Baka-"

"Enough," galit na pagputol niya sa akmang sasabihin ko. "Humiga ka na."

Nakanguso ako nang sinunod ko ang kanyang gusto. Humiga ako sa raised bed garden at mas malaki pa pala ito kesa sa katawan ko.

Akala ko ay dadaganaan ako ni Law pero kumunot ang noo ko nang nakitang kumuha siya ng isang strawberry sa loob ng basket sa tabi na kanina ay inilagay niya sa loob ng flower pot.

Mariin kong itinikom ang aking labi nang nakitang kinain niya 'yong fresh strawberry na kinuha ko kanina nang nagstrawberry picking kami.

"Bakit mo kinain ang strawberry ko, Law?" nagpipigil ng galit na tanong ko habang nakahiga sa matigas na kahoy ng raised bed garden. Pakiramdam ko ay sasakit ang likod ko nito.

"Appetizer muna," kaswal niyang sagot bago sinubo ang huling piraso ng strawberry, galit pa rin ang tono ng kanyang boses.

Kaya niya ba ako pinahiga saglit? Para makapagpahinga ng ilang minuto matapos ang ginawa niya sa akin kanina?

"Tumayo ka na," utos niya na naman matapos ang halos sampung minutong nakahiga lang ako.

Sumunod ako sa sinabi niya, baka ay pinapatayo niya ako dahil babalik na kami sa hotel.

"Law, babalik na ba tayo sa hotel?"

"Nadumihan ang damit mo, little girl," aniya kahit na hindi naman siya tumingin sa suot ko o 'di kaya'y sumulyap man lang. "Hubarin mo."

"Hindi mo ako mauuto, Law," nakapameywang kong sabi at nilalabanan ang kanyang matigas na paraan ng pagtingin sa akin. "Seryoso ako, mali 'to. Kapatid kita, okay? Pwede naman kitang ituring na boyfriend ko, Law. We can hug, cuddle, kiss but we can never have sex."

"I don't do sex, Kryptonite," iritado at parang mas lalo ko lang ginatungan ang galit niya. "I make love."

Kasabay ng huling salita niyang sinabi ay ang marahas niyang paghigit sa braso ko,

palapit sa kanya.

Hindi ko alam kung gaano siya kalakas at kung paano niya pinunit ang suot kong damit, narinig ko pa ang tunog ng kaliskis na pagkapunit ng damit ko.

"What do you think you're doing, Law?" I hissed, sinubukan ko pa siyang pigilan at itulak pero huli na ang lahat dahil ang tanging pangitaas na suot ko nalang ay ang dalawang pasties na nakadikit sa nipple ko.

Muntik na akong nawalan ng balanse nang halos yumanig ang katawan ko nang lumuhod siya sa harap ko at dulot ng dahas niya'y mabilis niyang nahubad ang suot kong jeans at panty.

Ipinatong niya ang sirang damit, jeans at underwear ko sa flower pot, doon lang sa ibabaw ng basket na puno ng strawberries. Nanatili siyang nakaluhod dito sa loob ng raised bed garden.

Hubo't hubad na ako sa harap niya ngunit ang mas lalong ikinagugulat ko ay bigla siyang umupo mula sa pagkakaluhod kaya kaharap niya na ang pagkababae ko saka niya hinubad ang kanyang pangitaas na damit.

Nakatungo akong nakatingin sa kanya habang nakatayo pa rin ako sa harap niya.

Gusto kong umiyak nang dahil sa sobrang karahasan niya pero pinipigilan ko ang sarili ko dahil kahit anong pagpipigil ang gagawin ko sa kanya ay gusto ko rin naman 'to.

"L-Law, galit ka ba sa akin?" nanginginig ang mga tuhod ko habang nakatingin ako sa kanya na nakaupo, 'yong posisyon ng indian sit.

"Galit lang ako pero hindi ako galit sa'yo," nakatingala siya sa akin, gano'n pa rin ang boses, puno ng dahas at galit. "Come closer, little girl."

Kahit sa gitna ng nanginginig na tuhod ay humakbang ako palapit sa kanya, agad akong napahawak sa kanyang balikat nang gamit ang dalawang magaspang at malaking kamay niya ay hinawakan niya ang pwet ko at hinila ako palapit sa kanya.

My legs parted as he pulled me by my butt towards him. Nasa gilid niya na ang mga binti ko at ngumiwi ako nang naramdaman ang pagtama ng kanyang mukha sa pagkababae ko, alam kong sinasadya niya 'yon.

"Law, dahan-dahan naman..." mahinahon kong reklamo.

Gentle, should I inform him that this simple word had existed for a long time? It was first known use in thirteenth century. Should I state to him what's the definition of it and how to express it? No need. He knew it all along, he's smart and intelligent, but he chose to do the opposite of it. The rearmost of its antonyms.

Mula sa mahigpit na pagkakahawak ko sa kanyang balikat ay lumipad ang mga kamay ko sa kanyang buhok nang tinulak niya ang pwet ko dahilan kung bakit halos nakaupo na ako sa kalahating ibabang bahagi ng kanyang mukha.

"Law!" sinubukan kong umatras ngunit 'di ko nagawa dahil pumipigil ang kanyang mga kamay na pinipisil ang magkabilang pisngi ng pwet ko. "O-Oh-Oh my God! Law!"

Muli niyang binuhay ang init ng katawan ko nang dahil sa kamandag ng kanyang matalim at malupit na dilang biglang lumabas sa kanyang bibig at dinilaan ang

singit ko.

Ang higpit na ng pagkakahawak ko sa kanyang malambot na buhok. Mas lalo lang nanginig ang mga tuhod ko nang hinimod niya ang mamasa-masang pagkababae ko, sinisipsip at pinaglalaruan ang pagkababae ko at may minsan pa'ng iniipit niya ito sa pagitan ng kanyang malambot na labi at gamit ang kanyang mapangahas na dila ay parang kinakalabit niya 'yon, tinutukso.

"U-Ugh..." halinghing ko nang dahil sa kakaibang sensasyong binibigay nito sa akin.

I wanted to get mad at Law because why do we have to perform this kind of position? I looked indeed a judge in a talent contest and sure, there's the contestant, certainly the only contestant that I have here with was Law and he got me impressed so that resulted me to stand and shout, scream or moan my proud proclamation without critiques about his eloquent, demonstrative and inspirational performance.

Standing ovation.

Patuloy ang pagpisil niya sa pwet ko, madalas ay hinahampas niya pa ang kanyang palad doon, pinapalo ako at medyo marahas niya pang niyuyugyog ang katawan ko dahil kung bakit mas lalo siyang nasisiyahan sa pagdila at pagsipsip ng katas mula sa pagkababae ko.

Parehong pinagdidiskitahan niya ang dalawang pisngi ng pwet ko gamit ang magaspang at malaki niyang kamay, lalo na ang pagkababae ko na halos hindi niya na tinitigilan sa pagsipsip at paglaplap.

Abot abot ang paraan ng paghinga ko. Mabilis, malalim at mainit din ang hanging binubuga ko. Nararamdaman kong sa kabila ng malamig na klima rito ay pinagpapawisan pa ako, kaming dalawa.

Kahit ang kanyang buhok na halos sinasabunutan ko na ay medyo nababasa na rin ng sarili niyang pawis, may iilan ding butil ng pawis sa kanyang noo.

"L-Law, ugh! O-Oh yes, yes, Law, ah," nakaawang ang bibig ko nang umungol ako ng mas malakas at sinasabayan ko na ang paggalaw ng mga balakang ko sa paraan ng paggalaw ng kanyang ulo. "More, more, please-ugh..."

Hindi ko na makilala ang sarili kong boses nang dahil sa mga hinihiling kong gawin niya.

Negatively thinking, we shouldn't be doing this, this thing was absolutely forbidden and against the crucial law, even so, it's against the natural law. Apart from that, how could I stop him? He's unstoppable and his mind was unchangeable. How could I conquer that? And I was here, giving up, wouldn't expect myself to be more than a cooperative person with him.

Nakatitig siya sa akin habang patuloy na ninanamnam ang katas ng pagkababae ko. Pakiramdam ko nga ay parang tumatarak na ang kanyang dila sa pagkababae ko na parang kutsilyo sa sobrang tulis.

Maingay at kahit na nagsisimula ng mag-ingay ang mga kuliglig sa labas at paligid na parang sinasabayan ako sa pag-ungol ay mas nananaig pa talaga ang ingay na nagagawa ng basang dila at bibig ni Law sa tuwing tumatama ito sa basang pagkababae ko.

Mas lalong nakakainit ng katawan ang ginagawa niya lalo na sa tuwing pinipisil niya ang pwet ko at parang may kung anong namumuo sa kaibuturan ko.

Hanggang sa narating ko na ang kasukdulan ay ang akala ko, titigil na si Law, pero hindi. Walang pagod na muli niyang sinimulan ang pagdila at pagsipsip sa pagkababae ko, paulit-ulit at walang tigil.

Bumagsak ang katawan ko sa kanya dahilang kung bakit napaupo ako sa kanyang matigas na hita nang natapos ang pangatlong beses na nilabasan ako.

Sinandal ko ang aking ulo sa kanyang balikat, since nakaupo ako sa kanyang hita ay abot ko na 'yon. Hinihingal at medyo nanginginig ang katawan, nagpahinga ako. Sinusubukang bumawi ng lakas.

Drained and lacking of enough strength, I have come into a conclusion that making love with Law wasn't easy, he's so ungentle, austere, rough and intimidating. I used the term making love because according to Law, he mentioned earlier that he didn't do sex. Aside from those, I have to bare with his overbearing tongue and mouth. I didn't have the stamina to stay upright any more longer.

Would this end before long?

Naalerto ako nang naramdaman ang isang kamay ni Law na binubuksan ang zipper ng kanyang pants habang ang kanyang isang braso ay nakahawak sa likod ko, sinusuportahan ang pinagod niyang katawan ko.

Bumaba agad ang paningin ko sa kanyang pagkalalaki nang nakitang nailabas niya na ito, at kahit sa gitna ng dilim, malinaw ko 'yong nakikita.

"L-Law maybe we should-"

"Get on your knees," utos niya.

"Pero kakaupo ko lang," pagdadahilan ko, nakaupo pa rin sa hita niya habang nakatitig sa kanyang pagkalalaki na tama nga ang hinala ko. "Mamaya nalang kapag medyo lumiit na 'yan."

Lagpas pa yata sa pusod niya, mukhang mas mataba pa nga yata 'to kesa sa palapulsohan ko at matuwid na nakatayo pa sa pagitan namin.

"Please, little girl," parang hindi naman siya nagmamakaawa dahil nababakas pa rin ang dahas sa kanyang matigas na boses. "I'm hard."

"H-Hindi naman siguro 'yan kakasya sa akin, Law," puno ng pagod ang boses ko. "Hanap ka na lang ng iba, 'yong may malaking butas na."

"Jesus," malutong niyang sambit kasabay ng paghigpit ng hawak niya sa likod ko at ang marahas na pagtingin niya sa akin.

"Baka 'yong butas sa flower pot, Law. Try mo," kahit kinakabahan ay umaasa pa rin ako na baka ay tanggapin niya ang suhestiyon ko.

I just heard again from Kuya Laki, he said that as long as there's a hole, including the anus and mouth, they could survive. In addition, some men tends to thrust their manhood into something, disgusting for me to say but they also thrust it into the hole of some poor animals. How inhumane. The innocent animals didn't deserve to be treated like that. We should take care of them as they take care of our nature.

Isang minuto ang nagdaan nang naramdaman ko ang paggapang ng dalawang magaspang na kamay ni Law sa pwet ko.

Napasinghap ako nang puwersahan at marahas niya akong pinaluhod, ang dalawang tuhod ko ay magkahiwalay na nasa gilid niya kaya kumapit ako sa kanyang leeg nang naramdaman ko ang pagsagi ng dulo ng kanyang magkalalaki sa pagkababae ko.

Isinubsob ko ang mukha ko sa kanyang leeg nang naramdaman ko ang marahas na paghalughog ng dulo ng kanyang pagkalalaki roon. Parang binabasa niya ang dulo nito gamit ang katas ng pagkababae ko bago ko naramdaman ang marahas at biglaang pag-baba niya sa balakang ko dahilan ng pagpasok ng kalahati ng kanyang pagkalalaki sa akin.

Hindi ko napigilan ang pag-iyak nang dahil sa sakit at kirot na parang may napunit sa pagkababae ko kahit na kalahati pa naman ang kanyang naipasok.

"Hush, little girl, I'm sorry," bulong niya habang marahang dumadampi ang mainit niyang labi sa balikat ko.

Napakagat ako sa kanyang matigas na balikat nang halos nawasak na ang pagkababae ko sa oras na binaba niya pa lalo ang balakang ko.

Nararamdaman ko na siya ng buong-buo, halos humahagulgol na ako sa sobrang sakit na parang pakiramdam ko ay parang tinatarak ng libo-libong kutsilyo ang pagkababae ko.

Hindi ko na rin mahabol ang bilis at bigat ng paghinga ko, sobrang init ng binubuga kong hangin na parang sinasaniban ako ng dragon. Hindi naman siya nagreklamo sa paraan ng pagkagat ko sa kanyang balikat, hinahayaan niya ako habang naririnig ko ang malalim at mahina na pagdaing at ungol niya.

"Move your hips, little girl," he instructed.

Parang sinturon na nakapalibot sa kanyang pagkalalaki ang pagkababae ko sa sobrang higpit at sikip nito. Sinasakal siya na dahilan kung bakit nanlaban ang kanyang pagkalalaki na mas lalong tumigas.

Sinunod ko ang kanyang utos at marahan kong iginalaw ang aking balakang. Dahan-dahan, taas baba pero tumigil din ako dahil hindi pa rin nawawala ang kirot, hapdi at sakit ng pagkababae ko.

"F-Fuck... don't stop, Kryptonite," matigas niyang utos habang patuloy pa rin sa paghalik sa balikat ko habang kagat ko pa rin ang balikat niya. "Move, little girl."

"I-I can't, Law," nanghihinang sabi ko, nanginginig ang katawan sa sobrang init ng nararamdaman, parang binuhusan lang ako ng kumukulong mainit na tubig. "Masyadong masakit at pagod na ako..."

Pagkatapos na pagkatapos ng sinabi ko ay nagulat na lang ako nang umangat ang kanyang mga kamay mula sa balakang ko hanggang sa sinakop ng kanyang buong maskuladong braso ang likod ko.

Marahas niya akong itinumba pahiga sa sahig ng raised bed garden, hindi naman masakit sa likod ko kasi parang nagsisilbing unan ang kanyang braso roon. Nanatiling nasa loob ng pagkababae ko ang kaniyang matigas at mahabang pagkalalaki.

Awtomatikong nakadagan siya sa akin at hindi pa nga ako nakakabawi sa pag-iba ng posisyon namin ay nagsimula na siyang marahas na bumayo sa akin.

Tumatalbog ang katawan ko sa tuwing tumatama ang kanyang pagkalalaki papasok pailalim sa akin.

Inabala niya ang kanyang sarili nang hindi ko namalayang naalis niya na pala ang pasties sa nipple ko, doon na naman lumalaplap at sumisipsip ang kanyang mapangahas na dila.

Abot abot na ang paghinga ko at ang pag-ungol ko, halos kakalibuhin ko na siya sa sobrang higpit ng pagkakahawak ko sa kanyang buhok. Hindi niya naman mapigilan ang kamay ko dahil nagmistulang unan ang kanyang dalawang braso sa likod ko. Vertical position ang kanyang braso kaya ramdam kong nakaabot ang kanyang dalawang kamay sa magkabilang balikat ko.

"Moan my name, little girl," aniya sa gitna ng marahang pagkagat sa nipple ko. "I wanna hear it. Moan my name."

"Ugh... Law, ah," ungol ko, nakaawang ang mga labi at bumubuga ng mainit na hangin na naghahalo sa malamig na hangin sa paligid.

Patagal ng patagal ay pabilis ng pabilis ang kanyang paglabas masok sa pagkababae ko. Unti-unti na ring napapalitan ang sakit ng makamandag na sarap, dulot ng malaking pagkalalaki niya.

Mas lalo lang nanaig ang lakas ng pag-ungol ko kasabay ng paglakas ng ingay ng mga kuliglig sa paligid, naramdaman ko na naman na parang may namumuo sa kaibuturan ko.

Parang gano'n din si Law dahil tumigil siya sa pagsipsip ng nipple ko at isiniksik niya na lang ang kanyang mukha sa leeg ko, patuloy pa rin ang mabilis at marahas na pagbayo. Sagad na may bakas ng kanyang dahas.

After another thirty seconds, I felt something hot liquid exploded and rushed inside me as I felt myself came simultaneously.

Hindi kami gumalaw, hinihingal pa rin hanggang sa naramdaman ko ang mga labi ni Law sa akin. Hinahalikan ako, marahan na parang pinapakalma ang buong sistema ko.

"I want another round in the hotel," demand niya at siya na mismo ang nagsuot sa akin ng damit.

I was wearing his clothes, oversized for my petite body and my jeans. He's topless and just wearing his pants as he carried me back and out of the strawberry farm, didn't even bother the low temperature. He carried me in the same position before when he took me from Kuya Ruin's apartment in the middle of the night and when mommy caught us.

The whole time was tiring and I couldn't even move my legs, yes, even a little inch would excruciatingly hurt my feminine part.

Hindi man lang siya nahirapan sa pagbuhat sa akin dahil 'yong isang kamay niya ay hawak din ang dalawang basket na puno ng strawberries na tinakpan niya ng nasira kong damit na may bahid ng konting dugo. Pinunas niya kasi 'yon sa kanyang pagkalalaki na may dugo. The blood was from my feminine part.

"Hijo? Anong nangyari sa'yo at bakit wala ka ng suot na damit?" narinig kong boses ng isang matandang babae. "Sino itong kasama mo?"

"Asawa ko po, manang," magalang na sagot ni Law.

Mas pagod pa ako kesa noong nangyari nang sumama ako sa kanya sa palengke. Hindi na nga ako makakapit ng maayos sa kanyang leeg nang dahil sa sobrang pagod, pakiramdam ko ay namamanhid na ang buong katawan ko.

"Klarita, hayaan mo na 'yang mga bata," boses naman ng matandang lalaki na sa pagkakaalala ko ay si Manong Protacio. "Sa susunod na buwan dadami at tataba na ang pananim natin."

"Bakit? May pambili ka na ba ng fertilizer, ha, Protacio? Nakakahiya ka naman, mangungutang ka na naman ba kay Pareng Saturnino? 'Wag ka nga'ng kuripot, alam kong may pera ka."

"Hindi na kailangan ng fertilizer, mahal ko," kahit na hindi ko sila nakikita dahil nakatalikod ako sa kanila ay naiisip ko na ang pilyong ngiti sa labi ni Manong Protacio. "Tara na, gabi na. Mauna na kami ng misis ko, hijo, mag-ingat kayo sa daan pauwi."

Narinig ko pa ang pagtatalo ng dalawang matanda hanggang sa naglaho ito nang nakalayo na. Naramdaman kong naglakad na naman si Law patungo siguro sa kinaroroonan ng kotse namin.

I thought that he's going to place me inside the front seat but he didn't. He dropped the basket at the backseat, closing the door and opening the driver's side before he hoisted himself up to get us both inside the driver's seat and immediately close the door.

Carefully, he let my bottom sit on his lap and he started the engine, driving the car back to the hotel.

Pinakiramdaman ko siya habang nakaharap na nakaupo ako sa kanyang hita, isang kamay lang ang gamit niya sa paghawak at pagkontrol ng manibela at ang isang braso ay nakaalalay sa likod ko. Isiniksik ko ang aking mukha sa kanyang leeg habang nakapatong ang aking kamay sa kanyang braso na nasa gilid ko, kumukulong sa akin.

Bumabalik sa isip ko ang lahat ng nangyari hanggang sa may naalala ako.

"Law... did you use condom?"

"I didn't."

Nanlamig ang buong katawan ko, mas malamig pa sa patay at halos naubusan ako ng dugo nang dahil sa narinig ko.

"P-Paano kung..." ang hirap magsalita, lalo na kung hindi ko alam kung ano ang sasabihin ko.

Heaven, definitely it was. How he did things passionately and erotically, although, he's rough and hard, nevertheless, I love it and that strange desire, the greediness to claim me like I was worth a life.

All of it would demolish by our parents as if it was hit by an avalanche and they would probably isolate me in an islet or in a desert if possible that he really got me pregnant.

I almost cried when he said what's on his mind.

"Sinadya ko 'yon. Kung sakaling nabuntis nga kita, 'yang batang dinadala mo ang totoong Cavanaugh at hindi ikaw."

...

Ito nga pala 'yong nagmistulang kama nila. Copyright to Lovely Greens.

Chapter 21

Intentions

Matapos ang gabing 'yon ay ngayon naman, buong araw akong nakahilata sa kama.

So much unendurable, unpleasant sensations and soreness had corrupted from the core and throughout my body. Amidst all of the pain that I had gone through, this one seemed to have me shut down.

Exhausted, I leaned my hands on the soft mattress and tried to pull myself upward but to no avail, my body plunked down with a slight bounce against the cushions.

This stinging pain in the ass, sore in my pearl of femininity, ache at the small of my back and suchlike sickening sensations I had felt after making love with Law was infuriating. Neither did I think of this. Pain and frustration, I could see that I look absolutely like a disabled veteran after surviving the war of lust between me and a vigorous masculine angel from hell.

Not bad? No way, this was the damnable experience that I ever had, I suppose. Could I do it again with him? Though I was like a sheath where he keep thrusting his sharp and long sword in, securing it, or was it like securing me?

I'm afraid that I would have my damnation earlier than expected.

"Little girl? Anong gusto mo'ng kainin?"

Nang dahil sa nagmamay-ari ng maawtoridad at matigas na boses na 'yon ay nagkaganito ako. Kasalanan ng lalaking 'to kung bakit halos magdadalawang araw na ako rito sa loob ng hotel room namin.

Lumipat ang paningin ko sa may pintuan ng banyo kung saan lumabas si Law, may kulay puting tuwalya pa ang nakatapis sa kanyang beywang.

How his body glistened when it was hit by the light because of some drops of cold water dripping, slowly cascading down the tensed muscles of his body? I didn't know.

But I'd like to touch those hard six packs over there.

Pero sa gitna ng magandang tanawin na meron siya ay naaalala ko na naman ang sinabi niya sa akin noong nakaraang gabi.

Ilang beses ko na siyang tinanong ulit pero hindi niya naman ako sinasagot. Ano ba'ng ibig niyang sabihin? Na kung sakaling nabuntis niya nga ako ay itong sanggol na dinadala ko ang totoong Cavanaugh at hindi ako?

Imposibleng mangyari 'yon.

Nakita ko ang mga litrato ko noong akay pa ako ni mommy sa ospital. She's dressed with a hospital dress and the little me was sleeping in her arms.

That couldn't be a joke, right? Where could they take a picture of that if I wasn't from her?

Hindi ko sinagot ang tanong ni Law, sa halip ay nagtanong din ako.

"Law, am I not a real Cavanaugh?" with a genuine tenderness tailing in my voice, hoping for an honest answer to receive from him. "Answer me, please?"

Isang minuto lang ang itinagal bago siya sumagot na parang pinag-isipan niya pa talaga kung ano ang tamang sagot sa tanong ko.

"You're my sister, little girl," maawtoridad niyang sabi sabay gulo ng kanyang basang buhok habang patuloy na nakatitig sa akin. "You're a Cavanaugh."

He's confusing me. I didn't know if I would believe him or not because he seemed so honest by directly staring into my eyes without even blinking.

A sign that he's not guilty behind his lies, if he really did lie. Anyhow, I've never heard Law utter a single lie to me, he'd rather ignore my questions and inquiry for some reasons that I didn't even have the chance to know.

In any or every circumstances, he'd rather be silent than telling and feeding me lies.

Yet, I wasn't convinced.

Hindi ko alam pero parang may nagtutulak sa akin na alamin pa ang iilang impormasyong konektado sa tanong ko.

Unsmiling, I set my eyes on him with somber expression on my face by the discomfort of my condition at the moment. "At anong ibig mo'ng sabihin sa sinabi mo'ng hindi ako ang totoong Cavanaugh? Ano? Kapag sakaling nabuntis mo ako ay pipilitin mo sila mommy at daddy na ipaampon ako sa ibang tao para magkaiba na ang apilyedo natin at magagawa mo na ang gusto mo?" I said bluntly and without a trace of respect for him. "It won't work! Magkadugo pa rin tayo!"

"Minimize your voice, Kryptonite," he warned, stilled and rigid, standing near by the bathroom's door.

"Really? Is that all you can say?" my voice turned sarcastic, taunting him nonchalantly. Bumuga ako ng marahas na hangin at kinalma ang sarili bago nagsalita. "Alam mo? Hindi ako magdadalawang-isip na ipalaglag 'to kung sakaling nabuntis mo nga ako."

Hindi ko naman talaga gagawin 'yon, hindang-hindi ko 'to ipapalaglag kung sakaling may nabuo nga. Anong klaseng babae ako kung gano'n? At isa pa ay pareho naman naming ginusto ang ginawa namin, sa parte ko ay hindi ko gugustuhing mabuntis ng maaga. Kapag natutop na talaga ng apoy ang katawan ng dalawang tao ay hindi na makakapag-isip ng maayos. Hindi pumasok sa isip ko ang tungkol sa mga maaaring mangyari pagkatapos ng lahat ng 'yon.

Tinatakot ko lang siya para sagutin niya ako ng maayos nang hindi nagsisinungaling.

Pero mukhang mali yata ang sabihin 'yon sa harap ng lalaking desperadong magiging ama nito.

Nakita ko kung paano niya kinuyom ang kanyang kanang kamay, mahigpit at nakakatakot na parang ilang segundo nalang at kapag magsasalita pa ako ng mga salitang hindi

niya magugustuhan ay baka may masuntok pa siya.

His steely eyes turned deadly severe and stern. Those could be so grueling on my part, apparently, his eyes lingered at me. I felt like I was the last piece of meat and that the king of the jungle—the lion could fight and kill every animal who'd attempt to steal me and destroy every living things what his eyes could see just to have and devour me for himself.

Nanlambot ang mga tuhod ko nang naglakad siya palapit dito sa kama, kung saan ako kasalukuyang nakahiga at nagpapahinga pero parang hindi ako makakapaghinga sa paraan ng pagtingin ni Law sa akin.

Nang tuluyan na nga siyang nakalapit ay napadaing ako nang agad na sinakop ng isang malaking kamay niya ang magkabilang panga ko bago niya ako dinaganaan.

"Open your mouth, little girl," nakakatakot na naman ang kanyang malalim at matigas na boses na parang gusto ko nalang mabingi para 'di ko na ulit marinig 'yon. "Open your mouth at once," mas lalong nakakakaba ang kanyang matigas na boses nang hindi ko agad sinunod ang utos niya.

Sinubukan kong umiling at gamit ang dalawang kamay ko ay sinubukan ko ring alisin ang kanyang magaspang at malaking kamay sa panga ko dahil halos hindi ko na maigalaw ang ulo ko nang dahil sa paraan ng pagkakahawak niya roon.

I was struggling to get his grip off my jaw but he wouldn't budge. He's mad, so much.

Mas lalo niya lang idiniin ang ulo ko sa kama dahilan kung bakit halos niyanig ang utak ko, epekto ng pagiging marahas niya sa pagkakahawak sa akin.

Expectedly, he wouldn't let me go if I don't follow his orders and now, we've been in the same position for approximately five minutes, and yes, I didn't open my mouth. I refuse so.

What's more, as the time ticked by, his grip was getting tighter and harsher on my jaw that he would possibly break it.

Giving up, I sluggishly opened my mouth and he immediately lessen his grip.

"Very good," his intimidating voice was like praising a kid that had done something for him to be proud of. "Now, I want your tongue out."

Wala akong ideya sa kung ano man ang binabalak niya ngayon pero para hindi na ako masyadong masaktan, idagdag pa ang katawan niyang nakadagan sa akin ay sinunod ko siya.

His other hand was leaning beside my head, and that so he wouldn't give all his weight to me while he's on top. That one hand caught my hands from clutching at his rough hand that was currently and remained gripping my jaw.

As easy for him because he had the characteristics of a strong man, using that one hand, he nailed both of my hands over my head. Defenseless and useless.

Hawak niya pa rin ako sa panga nang tuluyan ko na nga'ng inilabas ang dila ko.

Nanigas ang katawan ko at awtomatiko akong napapikit ng mariin nang agad niya akong sinunggaban ng halik, pero kakaiba ito sa dati dahil ngayon ay sobrang bangis at agresibo ng kanyang bibig at dila, marahang kinakagat ang dila kong halos hindi ko na maibalik papasok sa bibig ko.

Idiniin niya ang ulo ko sa malambot na unan nang sinubukan kong igalaw ito upang umiwas sa kanyang mapangahas na paraan ng paghalik, mas lalo niya lang ding idiniin ang mga kamay kong ipinako niya sa itaas ng ulo ko nang sinubukan kong kumawala sa isang kamay niyang nakahawak doon.

Pinaparusahan niya ako, pinaparusahan niya ang dila ko nang halos nalalalahan ko na ang sarili kong dugo mula sa dila kong pinanggigigilan niya.

Hindi ko na rin maitikom ang mga labi kong nakaawang dahil kulang nalang ay ipasok ni Law ang kanyang mabangis na dila pailalim at patungo sa lalamunan ko.

Deep throat? But I wasn't sucking and thrusting his dick into my mouth.

I groaned seconds after seconds and frustratedly, I didn't have enough strength to stop him. Moving my legs to try and kick his thighs but it doesn't work, he just easily imprisoned my legs between his, and now I couldn't move anymore.

My toes curved as the effects of the sensations and rapid heat assaulted to rushed in my body.

He's molesting me? No, I couldn't say that word because right from the start and the day that I agreed to have a relationship with him, I had given him an immediate response and instant permission to touch me in any ways and in different manner.

In just a heartbeat, I didn't felt a pang of pain at my tongue. Parang pakiramdam ko ay hindi lang ang sariling dugo ko ang aking nalalalahan kung 'di ay ang sa kanya rin.

He's in pain.

He's hurting himself.

His harsh and rough punishment turned into a gentle and smooth kiss in a nanosecond.

Dahan-dahan niyang pinakawalan ang mga kamay ko pero hindi ko naman ito naigalaw kaagad. Naramdaman kong mula sa sobrang higpit na pagkakahawak niya sa panga ko ay marahan niyang hinaplos ang bahagi kung saan ay nasaktan niya ako. Kahit ang mga binti ko ay pinakawalan niya na rin.

Saka ko pa naramdaman ulit ang pagod at sakit sa buong katawan ko nang marahan siyang dumistansya sa akin at tumingin sa kabuuan ng mukha ko.

"Bakit ba lagi mo nalang akong pinapahirapan hm?" kalmado, naging kalmado na ang boses niya na pagkatapos ang pasakit na ginawa niya sa akin. "Sinasagot mo na naman ako kaya dapat lang na gawin ko 'yon sa'yo."

I deserved that? Yes, I was being heartless to say those things to him but I would never intentionally drop my baby.

Hindi siya umalis sa ibabaw ko kaya ibinaba ko na lamang ang tingin sa kanyang malapad na dibdib. Gusto kong magbihis muna siya dahil 'yong katawan niya ay natuyo na baka magkasakit pa siya.

Well, on the other hand, I wanted to take off that white towel around his hip to see if he's wearing an underwear. I just wanted to make sure if he's really wearing one, what's wrong with that? It's not as if I want to see that unimaginably large

bulge.

Kinagat ko ang labi ko upang alisin ang mga nakaka-distract na isipin sa isip ko, napadaing ako nang napagtantong mas sumakit lang ang dila ko at saka pa ako bumalik at naalala ang pinag-uusapan namin.

"L-Law, hindi mo ba naisip ang maaaring kinalalabasan nito kung sakaling nabuntis mo nga ako?" my tongue hurts so that made sense why I was stuttering. I made a face and scowled. "H-Hindi mo ba naisip sila mommy at daddy? Our uncles and aunts? Sila Grandpa Sattie at iba pa'ng pinsan natin? What would they think of you? Of us? Mandidiri sila sa atin, ikakahiya nila tayo."

"Gusto kong malaman nila ang tungkol sa atin," bumalik na naman sa kanyang boses ang pagiging matigas nito sa aking pandinig.

"H-Hindi ka ba nakikinig sa akin, Law? Hindi nga tayo pwede!" giit ko, napupuno na sa kanyang mga pinagsasabi. He's just so unreasonable and I couldn't understand him. "Pinayagan na nga kitang makipag-sex sa akin pero 'wag naman tayong umabot sa puntong bubuntisin mo ako."

"Pero 'yon ang gusto ko, Kryptonite," bakas ang pamimilit sa kanyang boses. "Bigyan mo ako ng anak."

Mula sa pagtingin ko sa kanyang malapad na dibdib ay lumipad ang paningin ko pabalik sa kanyang mukha, diretso sa kanyang mga nakakatakot na mata.

"I'm sixteen years old, Law! Masyado kang nagmamadali!" I moved my hands from right over my head and pounded my fist against his hard and bare chest. "Makakakita ka pa ng ibang babae kaya please? Please, tumigil ka na."

"Sampung taon akong naghintay sa'yo, six years old ka pa lang simula no'ng may naramdaman na ako," he confessed, grim and intimidating. Natigilan ako sa paghampas ng mga kamay ko sa kanyang matigas na dibdib. "Thirteen ako noong pinalo kita sa pwet 'di ba? Kasi ang tigas ng ulo mo. Gusto ko lang malaman kung anong pakiramdam na hawakan ang pwet mo kaya 'yon ang ginawa ko imbes na pagsabihan ka."

He's right. He's thirteen years old when he started to spank me and that was the time that he's not wearing his pajamas whenever he go to bed. At the age of thirteen, he forced himself to think maturely, his mind got developed because of the environment without parents to guide him.

Sometimes, Grandpa Sattie would scold him for being so strict and tight to us.

Nevertheless, he didn't change, he got this intimidating presence that anyone would bow down and get on their knees to respect him.

Wala pa siyang taong naaapakan at lahat ay nirerespeto niya dahil gusto niya ring respetuhin siya, maliban nalang kay daddy na lagi niyang nakakaaway.

"That's impossible," huminga ako ng malalim, hindi makapaniwalang sasabihin niya 'yon sa akin.

"Ngayon mo sabihin sa akin na nagmamadali ako kahit na sa sampung taon na 'yon ay gusto na kitang makuha," inilapit niya ang kanyang mukha sa akin at ang akala ko ay hahalikan niya ako sa labi kaya titig na titig ako sa kanya ngunit hindi pala, umangat siya ng konti at hinalikan ako sa noo. "Pero pinigilan ko ang sarili ko dahil masyado ka pang bata."

"Hindi ba masyado pa akong bata para magbuntis, Law?" looking up at him, his

presence was screaming terror superiority yet I still managed to stare at it before I looked away. "Wag ka ng maghintay. Mas mabuti pa sigurong maghiwalay nalang tayo, Law. Tapusin na natin 'to kung 'yan din naman ang binabalak mo."

Mariin akong napapikit nang marahas niyang hinawakan ang magkabilang braso ko at marahan akong niyugyog dala ng hindi niya napigilang galit. Nang minulat ko ang aking mga mata ay agad na hinuli ni Law ang paningin ko.

"Walang hiwalayan na mangyayari," parang kulog ang matigas niyang boses nang dahil sa sobrang takot na naidulot nito sa akin. "Hindi ako papayag sa gusto mo."

Sobrang lapit ng mukha niya sa akin ngayon, mariing tinitigan ang mga mata ko kaya hindi ko na magawang umiwas ng tingin sa kanya.

"Fine," I sighed. "Hindi tayo maghihiwalay pero gusto kong itago ang relasyong 'to, Law."

"Okay, little girl," sang-ayon niya agad nang narinig ang pagbawi ko sa sinabi ko kanina, pero 'di pa rin nabubura sa bakas ng kanyang boses ang galit at dahas.

"And please, use some contraceptives if something happen between us."

"Ayoko."

"Law, please?" I made my voice even softer to convince him. "Kung ayaw mo, ako nalang ang pupunta sa isang doctor at magtanong tungkol sa pills."

"Hindi mo gagawin 'yan," utos niya, halatang hindi sang-ayon sa sinabi ko.

"Okay, bahala ka, hindi na ako papayag na may mangyari ulit sa atin," my voice was challenging him and hoping that he might change his mind.

Unluckily, my hope burned and turned into ashes.

Sinundan ko siya ng tingin nang umalis siya sa ibabaw ko at umupo sa tabi ko. Nanatili akong nakahiga dahil sa masakit pa rin ang katawan ko.

"Dapa," hindi ko alam kung may mas titigas at lalim pa ba sa boses niya.

"What? For God's sake, Law! I'm your girlfriend!" halos pumutok na ang ugat sa leeg ko nang dahil sa pilit na pagtaas ko ng boses sa kanya. "Are you going to spank me? Inisip mo pa rin bang kapatid mo ako? Akala ko ba ay tapos na tayo sa palo-palo mo na 'yan!"

I was wearing my grey sweatpants and dark brown sweatshirt because of the low temperature, even though it's a little bit cold, I felt like sweating because of anxiety mixed with burning adoration for Law's temple of body.

Nang hindi ako dumapa ay napadaing ako nang siya mismo ang gumawa ng paraan upang mapadapa ako rito sa kinahihigaan ko.

Umawang ang mga labi ko nang agad siyang pumwesto sa likuran ko, nakadapa na ako at parang kuryenteng biglang dumaloy sa kalamnan ko ang nakakapanghinang sakit.

"Masakit pa rin ba ang katawan mo, little girl?" aniya kasabay ng marahas na paghila pababa ng waistband ng sweatpants ko.

"Hindi ba halata, Law? Halos magdadalawang araw na ako rito at ang hirap pa ring maglakad," I said sarcastically. "Sa susunod kasi, bilhan mo na ako ng wheelchair."

Pakiramdam ko ay parang naging parehong kaliwete na ang mga paa ko kapag sinubukan kong maglakad.

I then buried my face against the pillow when I felt his moist lips touching the right cheek of my butt and his rough hand squeezing, caressing and spanking the other cheek.

Hardly, I couldn't restrain my moan of pleasure.

Ayoko na siyang pigilan. Mahirap na baka ay mas malala pa rito ang gagawin niya sa akin. Hinayaan ko nalang siya hanggang sa nagsawa siya kahit hindi naman talaga siya nagsawa, huminto lang siya dahil kailangan niya ng magbihis.

Our next night in the hotel came fast and I could finally walk without the feeling of pain and with no worry that I might fall on my precious derriere. Law would scold me for being so careless if it happen. He wouldn't want me to hurt his most favorite part of my body, would he?

He told me earlier to dress up because we would take our dinner tonight in some fine restaurant nearby.

I was apparently wearing a simple and plain dark brown halter backless mini bodycon dress. Undeniably, I was starting to love every shades of brown, it suits my pale fair skin.

"Kryptonite, I told you, I don't want you to show off your back," komento ng pakialamerong nakaupo sa dulo ng kama at pinasadahan ng masamang tingin ang suot ko.

"May iba pa ba'ng hahawak sa likod ko? 'Di ba ikaw lang naman, kaya bakit ka nagagalit diyan?" naiirita kong sabi sa kanya matapos kong itali ang aking buhok, just a simple yet a little messy ponytail.

"Ayokong may ibang makakita," giit niya na sa paraan ng pagtingin niya sa suot ko ay parang mapupunit na ito.

Law was wearing a plain white slim fit long sleeves polo shirt, it perfectly hugged his well-toned and muscular body figure. At the lower, he was just wearing a simple black pants for men. I watched him placed his black coat on his broad shoulder.

Pakiramdam ko tuloy ay parang isang formal dinner ang pupuntahan namin. Sa anong restaurant naman kaya kami pupunta? Wala namang masyadong mamahaling restaurant dito sa La Trinidad. Maliban nalang sa mga malalaking syudad, o 'di kaya'y sa ibang bansa.

"Let's go, little girl," aya niya sabay tayo habang nakatingin sa screen ng kanyang cellphone. "Hinihintay na tayo ni mom, Aunt Lauren at Aunt Zara."

Natigilan ako nang narinig ang huli niyang sinabi.

"Wait," pagkuha ko sa kanyang atensyon nang lumapit siya sa nightstand at kinuha ang susi ng kanyang kotse. "Nandito sila?"

He turned after grabbing the keys and walk his way toward me. "Napadaan lang, bukas ay babalik din naman sila ng Manila. Magpapalipas lang sila ng gabi rito."

Paano niya naman kaya nalaman? Oh, yes, of course, he had his connections and communication with each of the family. Siya lang ang nakakaalam sa lahat ng tungkol

sa kung nasaan sila mommy, daddy, mga pinsan namin at pati nga rin ang mga uncles and aunties namin.

"Law, hindi mo naman sasabihin sa kanila ang tungkol sa atin 'di ba?" kinakabahan kong tanong nang nakalapit na siya sa sa'kin at agad na hinawakan ako sa likod. "Napag-usapan na natin ang tungkol dito."

Nakatungo siya sa akin at matapos ang ilang segundo bago siya sumagot.

"Hindi sa ngayon."

"Law..."

"Malapit ng matapos ang buwan na 'to, Kry," his voice was calm but it never comforted me because of our subject. "Pupunta na tayo ng Compostela Valley. Malalaman din naman nila ang tungkol sa atin."

Not having the right choice of words, I just remained myself silent until we went out of the hotel room and reached the parking lot.

Kinakabahan pa rin talaga ako, hindi ako mapakali at parang pakiramdam ko ay may mangyayaring hindi kaaya-aya mamaya.

Ayokong sabihin niya sa kanila ang tungkol sa amin dahil ayokong mahiwalay sa kanya, kaya nga ayoko ring mabuntis niya ako dahil kapag nangyari 'yon ay malalaman nila at isa pa ay masyado pa akong bata.

Sampung minuto lang ang itinagal hanggang sa namalayan ko nalang ang paghinto ng sasakyan ni Law sa isang malawak na parking lot. Kahit na medyo madilim na ay may mga lamppost naman sa paligid at mga ilaw na nagmula sa ibang buildings, kitang-kita ko ang mga kotseng nakapark dito.

Nang pinagbuksan ako ni Law ng pinto matapos niyang lumabas ay nakuha agad ng isang pamilyar na kotse ang buong atensyon ko.

Yes, it was familiar because I've had a ride at that familiar car once. I wouldn't be so sure, it wasn't like the car that I had rode once was the only model that the world got. It must've been the same model but not the same owner.

As usual, the receptionist greeted us as we moved our way inside. Law got a very tight hold at my back, and how I love the feeling of his rough hands against my skin, making me feel secure and safe.

He's wearing his black coat at the moment.

Hanggang ngayon ay kinakabahan pa rin ako, kahit na hindi naman mga wicked aunts ang mga auntie namin ay natatakot pa rin ako. Natatakot akong baka ay may malaman sila ngayong gabi.

Paano kung hindi na makapagpigil si Law at sasabihin niya na?

Dahil sa sobrang lalim ng iniisip ko ay wala na akong paki sa mga nangyayari sa paligid at saka pa ako naging aware nang narinig ko ang boses ni mommy, nakarating na pala kami sa table kung saan sila naghihintay sa amin.

"My baby, how are you, hm? Hindi ka naman pinabayaan ng kuya mo 'di ba?" naglalambing na boses ni mommy ang narinig ko sabay halik sa pisngi ko. "Law, did you take care of your little sister? I understand why you're so strict pero 'wag namang masyadong mahigpit, okay?"

"It's for her own good, Mom," ang tanging sagot ni Law, masyadong istrikto ang boses niya ngayon.

"That's good, Law," narinig kong komento ni Aunt Lauren, she's gentle and a softhearted person but if someone tries to ruin something in here, I wouldn't be surprised if she'd transform into someone that had the absence of mercy.

"Well, kung hindi ko lang kayo kilala? Iisipin ko talagang magjowa kayo," biro ni Aunt Zara na nakaupo katabi lang ni Aunt Lauren. Among the Cavanaugh siblings at their generation, she's the most playful one.

The three of them were not that old but their own beauty didn't die as the time passed by. It remained in them. They were wearing dark and fitted dresses that symbolizes them as a fearless woman.

Isa-isa kaning lumapit ni Law sa kanila at nakipagbeso ako, while Law just gave them a nod, hindi ko alam kung bakit hindi uso sa kanila ang magmano kami.

Law guided me to my seat before he sit next to me.

Nakapagtataka lang kasi may isa pa'ng bakanteng upuan dito.

"Anyway, Law, bakit hindi kayo sumabay sa mga pinsan niyo? Nasa hacienda sila ngayon," marahan ang boses ni Aunt Lauren habang nakaupo ng maayos sa kanyang upuan.

Inatake na naman ako ng kaba sa takot na baka ay sasabihin ni Law ang totooong rason kung bakit.

I gave him a pleading look when he glance at me before answering Aunt Lauren's question.

"Dad cut off my bank account," bakas sa baritonong boses ni Law ang konting galit pero alam kong hindi nila 'yon nahalata.

"Yes, ang walang hiyang kapatid mo, Zara," narinig kong mahinang bulong ni mommy sa katabi niyang si Aunt Zara. Bale napapagitnaan ni Aunt Lauren at mommy si Aunt Zara. Mommy looked behind me as if she had caught sight of someone coming over. "Oh, Lauren, here's your handsome nephew. May girlfriend na ba siya? Ba't natagalan siya sa tawag na 'yon kanina?"

Hindi na ako lumingon dahil nararamdaman kong pinapanood ni Law ang bawat galaw ko.

Pinapagitnaan ako ni mommy at Law, 'yong bakanteng upuan naman ay nasa pagitan ni Law at Aunt Lauren.

Pero hindi ko inaasahan ang nakita kung sino 'yong umupo sa bakanteng katabing upuan ni Law.

It's Rule Fortaleza.

"Sorry, it's just an emergency call from the manager of the Liu-Mart branch here in La Trinidad," magalang niyang pambungad bago inilibot ang paningin sa mesa at saktong nagkatinginan kami before he acknowledged me. "Kryptonite."

"You know her, Rule?" hindi makapaniwalang tanong ni Aunt Lauren.

"Yes, Aunt," sagot ni Rule at ni hindi man lang ako nilubayan ng tingin.

I immediately looked away when I heard Law cleared his throat, declaring something.

Silently distraught, I paled when it's not just the sounds of clearing his throat that he wanted to declare. He's declaring us his brief introduction before his announcement.

"I'd like to confess my relationship with Kryptonite."

Chapter 22

Before

"Relationship?"

It was Aunt Lauren who asked, unsure if she really heard it right.

Kanina pa ako paulit-ulit na napapalunok at hindi ko na alam kung anong sasabihin ko o may dapat ba akong sabihin, kailangan ko ba'ng magsalita?

Law's confession muted me in an instant. Thankfully, he hadn't explained to them what does the aforementioned topic mean. There were different definitions of relationship and not just those love whatever that every sick people seeking for love call it, unheard of in my opinion.

I wasn't interested about those passionate love thingy. Somehow, I had thought about it and this relationship that I have with Law.

Not at all, it's not love. I could firmly believe and say that it's just a sexual desire. I was positive that this was just a sexual relationship. Sadly, our relationship involved sexual activities and that's how I see things unclear.

Indeed it was unclear. I was puzzled and mystified why Law want to get me pregnant as soon as he lay a finger on me. There must be something on his mind and did it on purpose.

And what's the purpose could be? I doubt that it has something to do with love.

"Exactly, Aunt Lauren."

Nagising ako mula sa malalim na pag-iisip na may halong kaba nang narinig ko ang pagkompirma ni Law sa tanong ni Aunt Lauren kanina.

Naramdaman kong mula kay Law ay lumipat ang kanilang paningin sa akin.

Mortified, I looked away.

"Kryptonite? What does that mean?" mommy asked, careful not to trigger something. Glancing at Aunt Lauren for a brief moment before focusing on me. "Nahihirapan ka ba'ng pakisamahan ang kuya mo?"

"Hindi sa gano'n, Mom," koreksyon ng maawtoridad na boses ni Law kahit na hindi naman siya ang tinatanong.

Bakit ganito? 'Di ba ang sabi niya ay hindi niya muna sa sasabihin sa kanila sa ngayon? Dahil ba sa tumingin ako kay Rule kaya niya napagpasyahan agad ang sabihin sa kanila ang tungkol sa relasyon namin?

Ever since Law talked about our relationship, I didn't dare to even get a quick glance at Rule's direction. I hoped that Law would change his mind.

Kailangan may gagawin ako. Kailangan may sasabihin ako. Hindi pwedeng nakatunganga lang ako rito at naghihintay kung kailan aamin si Law kung anong relasyon ang meron kami.

With all the confidence that left of me. After recollecting myself up, I turned my head at Law sitting next to me and gave him a taunting smile despite the uneasiness that had almost got its success to possess my body and mind.

Optimistically and showing genuine solicitude from yours truly for their misfortune that today, they would never get the chance to know the relationship that I had with Law.

I highly object against my dearest Law.

"Well," I started, lahat sila ay bumalik ang tingin sa akin. "Kuya Law took care of me ever since you guys drowned yourselves in restless work and I understand that it's for the sake of our future."

"Oh honey, that's why I so love you," Aunt Zara made a sweet remark as the waiter served the first course of the dinner.

This restaurant served a full course meal consisted of three courses, a full course meal can have anywhere from three to twenty courses, depends to what kind of restaurant it was. First course which contained finger foods or any appetizers, followed by the main course and last would be the dessert.

The restaurant wasn't that expensive since it was located at La Trinidad and not in New York City where I could see much of some extravagant restaurants where they serve a twenty course meal, and yeah, I knew that my parents could afford it. However, they adjusted themselves to eat in an elegant and fine restaurant to fill their satisfaction according to where they were.

For me, I'd rather eat in the karinderya with Law.

Hindi na ako sumulyap sa bahagi ni Law ta ipinukos na lamang ang aking tingin sa tatlong babae.

"So, my daughter, how does that related to your relationship with your brother?" tanong ni mommy, seryoso at parang sobrang kuryuso kung ano ba talaga ang namamagitan sa amin ni Law.

"Oh, yes, mommy," tumango pa ako at ni hindi ko na narinig pa ang boses ni Law, mukhang nakatingin lang ito sa akin. "I just feel like our relationship as a brother and sister seems like it move to a higher level than that."

Hindi ako nagtangkang tumingin sa dalawang lalaki na tahimik na nakikinig, they know that this conversation was for us females only and just kept their mouth shut.

"Higher level, you say?" Aunt Zara asked before she gracefully brought one baked potato bites into her mouth.

"Indeed, Aunt Zara," a proud smile plastered on my face as I thought of some plans to get through this.

I had to take this easy. The little information I mention, the little chance that they would know something about Law and me.

"You mean, your relationship with your kuya was more than just a brother and sister relationship?" maingat na tanong ni Aunt Lauren na parang takot pa sa maaaring marinig niya.

"Absolutely, Aunt Lauren" pagkumpirma ko, hindi alintanang nandito lang si Law sa tabi ko, nakikinig. "It changed, since he's acting like a daddy to me. Our relationship turned into a father and daughter relationship."

Through the benevolent ambience of the restaurant, I could sense how Law's gaze burned me in its highest intensity.

I kept myself calm as the conversation goes on.

"How so?" Aunt Lauren asked once again. Raising her glass to the waiter as her eyes lingered on me, observing me while she let the waiter pour a little drink into her glass.

When would this interrogation end?

I breathe in before I opened my mouth to speak. "Because he usually fuck—"

"Fuck?"

Natigilan ako sa pagsasalita nang narinig ang mapanukso at nagbibirong boses ni Aunt Zara sa akin. She's vulgar like mommy, kahit hindi sila nag-uusap gamit ang mga vulgar words sa harap namin ay minsan ko na rin naman silang nahuli at narinig na nag-uusap at na nilalait ang mga lalaki with matching shit, damn, and fuck.

Si Aunt Lauren lang talaga ang hindi ko pa narinig na nagsalita ng mga gano'ng salita.

Hindi ko na rin matiis ang nakakatakot na tingin sa akin ni Law nang dahil sa binanggit kong salita.

Our dinner here was supposed to be formal and that includes no swearing in front of the dining table.

I had to rein with my composure and not this antsy feeling that might be the cause for me to have a nervous breakdown in about a minute.

Did Aunt Zara thought that I was about to say he usually fuck me?

I prepared myself for the worse and by gathering a deep breath inside my lungs and release it with a comfort smile.

"H-He usually fuck-ing scold me," I didn't care if my sentence sounded grammatically incorrect. Ang hirap ding hindi ma-utal dahil medyo kinakabahan pa naman ako. "A-And he's always saying that he's having a hard—"

"Hard?"

Aunt Zara interrupted me again, meaningfully smiling with those innocent smile she got there, just like how Kuya Ruin smiled at every sexy and gorgeous girl he

encountered.

Was there something wrong with Aunt Zara? She sure didn't use drugs, did she? It felt like she seemed to know something I didn't know. What was it?

"He's always having a hard time, handling me," I said, finishing my delayed sentence earlier. "S-So-uhm, yeah, every time that I'm in trouble, he's always there to come—"

"Come?" for the nth time, that mocking voice of Aunt Zara never failed to irritate me.

What's the matter? What's with the fuck, hard, and come? Don't tell me that she misinterpreted what I mean to say or maybe she's just so being playful.

"Of course, he'll come for me, fetch me to be exact," maring sabi ko at pilit itago ang kaba at irita. "Obviously, he's acting like a big daddy."

Mommy along with my aunties express a hearty and graceful laugh because of how I talked about Law.

How they love gossiping about men, discreetly insulting and vilifying those arrogant chauvinist that was known to be in the high society. I didn't know the reason why they hated men, specifically those who were abundant of money and power.

Aunt Zara has her own acceptable reason to hate them, Kuya Ruin was her only child and that was because she accidentally got pregnant by someone I didn't know who. What about mommy and Aunt Lauren? Why did they hate men?

That was close, gladly, I was done ventilating my objections against Law's intentions.

Lumington ako sa katabi kong upuan kung saan nakaupo si Law at ang katabi niyang si Rule. Parehong tahimik at sa akin lang din nakatingin.

Anong meron sa dalawang 'to? Baka naman ay humanga sila sa ginawa ko?

Kahit appetizer lang ang kasalukuyang kinakain namin ay natagalan pa talaga kami sa pag-ubos nito, mas marami-rami kasi ang pag-uusap at tawa kesa sa pagkain at pagnguya.

Ilang metro din naman ang layo ng ibang tables at mga taong kumakain dito kaya hindi nila kami masyadong napapansin, may sarili rin naman silang mundo na wala rin kaming paki, unless kung gagawa sila o kami ng iskandalo rito.

I took the piece of baked potato bites between my thumb and index finger, bringing it into my mouth and chewed it with my lips firmly closed. That wasn't just a simple potato, it was marinated with something that made it so tasty.

Feeling sick of this table etiquettes, I almost had the urge to eat without manners, especially bringing my right foot up on my seat and rest my right arm on it. I couldn't do it if I try anyway, I was wearing a dress.

"Rule, are you dating someone, lately?" usisa ni Aunt Zara na siyang pinakamaingay dito sa mesa.

"No, tita," seryoso si Rule, ni hindi ko siya nakitang ngumiti katulad ni Law, saglit pa siyang sumulyap sa direksyon ko at alam kong nakita 'yon ni Law. "I'm waiting for someone."

Mas kakayanin ko pa yata ang presensya ni Rule kesa kay Law.

"Waiting... Iilan nalang kayong lalaking marunong maghintay," nababakas sa boses ni Aunt Zara ang lungkot pero agad niya rin naman iyong pinalitan ng matipid na ngiti. "Sino ba 'yang hinihintay mo? Baka naman ay hindi ka hinihintay no'n. I'd like to offer my beautiful niece to you, Rule, if you want to."

My eyes widened.

Sino pa ba ang iba niyang babaeng pamangkin dito, ako lang naman?

"Aunt Zara, Kryptonite is too young to have a relationship with someone," angal ni Law. I could hear how he was so strict, tight and protective.

Too young to have relationship with someone? Anong tawag niya sa ginagawa niya at sa relasyon naming dalawa?

"Nonsense, Law," Aunt Zara hissed yet the smile on her face showed otherwise. Palipatlipat ang kanyang paningin mula kay Rule at sa akin.

Libo-libong mura ang nasabi ko sa aking isip nang nakita ang kamay ni Law na nakalapag sa mesa. Mahigpit niya 'yong kinuyom habang madilim na nakatingin sa mga kutsara, kutsilyo at tinidor sa harap niya.

Oh my God? Nag-iisip na ba siya kung alin sa tatlo ang isasaksak niya kay Rule? 'Wag naman sana.

"Aunt Zara, this is not a joke," ni hindi ko magawang ngumiti o tumingin sa banda ni Rule.

"I'm not joking, honey," matamis niya pa akong nginitian. "You deserve this kind of man. 'Yong marunong maghintay."

Tumahimik na lamang ako upang 'di ko na madagdagan pa ang galit ni, Law.

At last the main course have served by three waiters after cleaning and removing the small plate where the baked potato bites appetizer was served earlier on our table.

"What about you, Law?" tanong ulit ni Aunt Zara pero hindi na kay Rule. "Dating someone?"

Here we go again, my heart pounded against my chest hard and fast. Kinakabahan na naman ako dahil baka ay sasabihin na talaga ni Law ang tungkol sa amin.

"I have a girlfriend, Aunt Zara," he stated, understandable, and leaving no questions ask. He then gave me a meaningful stare that lasted for a minute.

Nanindig ang balahibo ko nang dahil sa mainit na paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin.

Ito na ba? I tried to prevent it earlier, kailangan ay 'yon din ang gagawin ko ngayon.

"Oh, may I know her name?" tanong ni Aunt Lauren habang inoobserbahan ang isang waiter na pormal na naghain ng mga kakainin namin. "Isn't it Dana? She's a very pretty girl, one of my acquaintance's daughter. No? How about Erich? She's years younger than you but there's a big chance that you two are in a relationship."

Law shifted his look from me to Aunt Lauren. "Sorry to disappoint you, Aunt Lauren, but she's none of them," matigas at malalim ang kanyang boses na kahit mga aunties na namin ang kinakausap niya ay parang mas maawtoridad pa siya kesa sa kanila. "Sa susunod ko na ipapakilala sa inyo ang girlfriend ko."

I sighed in relief.

"Kryptonite? Kilala mo ba ang girlfriend ng kuya mo?" tanong ng kuryusong boses ni mommy at bahagyang nakaangat pa ang isang kilay.

Ngumiti ako kasi syempre kilala ko ang sarili ko.

"Of course, mommy," bakas ang tuwa sa boses ko at napag-isipan ko pa'ng purihin ang sarili. "She's very kind and thoughtful."

"She's not that kind and thoughtful," Law's voice hardened as it was marked with undeniable arrogance. "She's wild and stubborn."

Marahas akong lumingon sa kanya at tinapunan siya ng masamang tingin. "Sinisiraan mo ba ang girlfriend mo, Law?"

I was stunned when Law leaned his body closer to me. I watched him did that and also witnessing the pure confusion playing on my aunts' pretty faces, beholding the unexpected scene.

And I wouldn't get off my mind seeing how Rule observed us carefully.

"Hindi kita sinisiraan," mahina at marahas ang boses ni Law nang binulong niya sa akin 'yon bago siya umupo ng maayos sa kanyang kinauupuan na parang walang nangyari.

Nagsimula na kaming kumain at parang nakalimutan din naman nila ang nangyari kanina kaya lang ay parang kailangan ko muna ng break.

"Law," I called.

"Hm?" he paused from working his hand with the knife and fork before giving me his full attention.

"I need to go to the restroom, please," mahina kong sabi at siniguradong kaming dalawa lang ang nakakarinig habang abala pa si mommy at ang mga auntie ko sa pagkikipag-usap kay Rule. "Samahan mo'ko."

"Okay," said he, pulling himself upright from his seat. "Excuse us."

Tumango lang si mommy dahil abala pa si Aunt Zara sa mga tanong niya pero nakita kong napasulyap sa direksyon ko si Aunt Lauren nang tumayo ako at gano'n din si Rule.

Hinagip ng magaspang at malaking kamay ni Law ang likod ko, agad ko 'yong naramdaman dahil backless itong suot ko.

Iginiya na ako papunta sa isang corridor matapos niyang magtanong sa isang staff kung nasa'n ang restroom.

Sinadya ko talaga siyang isama kasi natatakot akong baka ay pagbalik ko, galit at nandidiri na sa amin si mommy at ang mga auntie namin. Takot akong baka ay sabihin ni Law sa kanila ang tungkol sa relasyon namin habang wala ako.

We walked through a narrow corridor to go where the female's restroom was located.

I get myself inside and I was greeted by the usual odor of a clean restroom. There's three sink with its faucet that was placed just down the clear and wide rectangular mirror. The female's restroom had consisted of six clean cubicles and I chose to use the last at the very corner.

Law was just outside, waiting for me.

Habang umihi ako ay kumunot ang noo ko nang narinig ang pagsara ng pinto sa labas, napamura ako ng ilang segundo matapos kong narinig 'yon ay nakita kong may anino sa sahig, sa ibabang awang ng pinto nitong cubicle kung nasa'n ako.

Turning the flash with a funny sounds of the water flashing down and fixing myself, I opened the door of the cubicle.

Bumungad sa akin ang matigas na ekspresyon sa mukha ni Law.

"Law, what are you doing here?"

"Gusto ko ng bumalik sa hotel," aniya, halatang hindi niya na gustong magtagal pa ng kahit sampung minuto rito.

"Why? Anong problema?" I tiptoed to cup his chiselled face with my fragile hands but only to feel how tensed his jaw was. "Masama ba ang pakiramdam mo?"

Kinapa ko pa ang kanyang noo at leeg kung masyadong mainit ba pero hindi naman.

Nakatitig ako sa kanyang mukha nang hinuli niya ang isang kamay ko na siyang kumapa sa kanyang noo at leeg.

"No," matigas niyang wika habang mariing hinalikan ang kamay kong hawak niyang ngayon.

"Okay," bakas sa boses ko ang pag-iingat na 'wag siyang galitin, takot ko lang na baka ay may mangyari pa rito sa loob ng restroom. "Let's go?"

Wrapping my hands around his muscular one arm, I pulled him to get out of the ladies' restroom as soon as possible. This would be awkward and embarrassing if someone would catch a sight of a male walking out of the ladies' room. Anyhow, this male that I had been holding on at his arm didn't look like he cared at all.

He didn't give a damn if someone sees us together.

"Law? Hindi ba tayo magpapaalam muna kina mommy?" naguguluhan tanong ko nang direktso lang ang kanyang paglalakad patungo sa exit ng restaurant.

"I texted them," kaswal niyang sagot, saglit na sumulyap sa akin na parang lintang nakadikit sa kanya bago idiniretso ang tingin sa dinadaan namin.

Sumakay na kami sa kanyang kotse at nagmaneho siya pabalik sa hotel.

"Uuwi na tayo, bukas," anunsyo niya, seryoso at nakapokus sa daan. I love watching how the muscles on his arms flexed every time he turned the wheel. "We'll be staying in the house for the rest of the week. Magpapahinga muna tayo bago tayo pupunta ng Compostela Valley."

"One month tayo sa Compostela Valley 'di ba?" tanong ko sabay kuha sa phone niyang

nakalapag sa dashboard ng kotse, hindi naman siya umangal. "Babalik tayo kapag pasukan na?"

"Yes, little girl," walang pagdadalawang-isip na sagot niya. "Sa hacienda tayo ni Grandpa tutuloy."

I was on my part of keeping myself busy while we're on our ride back to the hotel. Lazily, I tapped the screen on his phone.

"Doon naman talaga, may iba pa ba tayong matutuluyan do'n?" abala ako sa pagtatap sa phone niya pero syempre ay nakinig ako ng maigi sa kanyang mga sinasabi.

"Meron," his answer got me tear my eyes off the screen of his phone. "Nagpagawa ako ng sarili kong bahay sa mismong lupa ni Grandpa."

Ang sexy lang sa pandinig ko ang kanyang malalim at matigas na boses kahit na nakakatakot para sa akin ay hindi pa rin ako magsasawang pakinggan 'yon.

"How about..." I paused and grinned cunningly. "Let's just stay in your house? Mag-stay muna tayo ng ilang araw sa hacienda, and then doon na tayo tutuloy sa bahay mo."

That was a brilliant idea, yeah?

In despite of how I love making troubles to Nayda, the hacienda's mayordoma and the other maids in the hacienda because I was close to them, they were true to me and I used to somewhat help them with their works or just watch them do it because they wouldn't let me work.

I'd like to be with them more than those foul fiend and fake maids back in the mansion.

"Sure, little girl," pagsang-ayon niya. Hindi nakaiwas sa paningin ko ang marahang paggalaw ng kanyang panga. "Pero kailangan muna kitang ipaalam kay Grandpa."

"Okay," I said, gratified and then I turned my attention back to his phone.

Uninformed that he had his own house in Compostela Valley, I couldn't believe—I mean I just got to know about it minutes ago and questions have come and popped up on my mind.

How did he provide some equipments and materials to build a house there? When did they build it? Does he had his own money that time? From whom?

There's a possibility that the money he used to build a house was his salary from his work in the wet market. I remembered, he told me that he's been working there the time he left the mansion when he was just eighteen years of age.

Was his salary enough to pay a construction firm? Maybe not, if not then, I should expect that his house in Compostela Valley wasn't concrete. I assumed that his house would be made in a thick and hard wood, painted with pastel shades of brown.

Even if I haven't seen it, I was sure that I already love it.

Natigilan ako sa pag-scroll down sa news feed ko nang biglang nag-iba ang nasa screen nito.

A call from someone, the ringtone didn't ring because the phone turned out to be in silent mode.

My brows furrowed when I saw who the caller was.

Unknown number.

I click the answer green button and pressed the phone against my right ear.

"Hi, baby. Are you free?" masuyong sabi ng isang pamilyar na boses ng babae mula sa kabilang linya.

If I wasn't mistaken, it was Ate Francesca's voice.

Nanatili akong tahimik habang hindi pa naman ako napapansin ni Law na may tumatawag sa phone niya.

"Law, please? Talk to me. Halos tatlong taon na ang lumipas simula noong nangyari ang lahat ng 'yon. Hindi ko kayo pinagsabay ni Lazarus, Law-nakikinig ka ba? Please maniwala ka naman sa akin, I love you, please."

Nanginig ang kamay kong hawak ang phone ni Law nang dahil sa narinig nagmula mismo kay Francesca.

Hindi pinagsabay? Pero sa pagkakaalam ko ay si Kuya Lazi lang ang boyfriend niya? Hindi ba alam ni Law 'yon? Anong ibig niyang sabihin do'n? Naging sila ni Law habang sila ni Kuya Lazi?

Pero bakit hindi ko naman nakita si Ate Francesca at Law na magkasama noon? Not to mention that she attempted to kiss Law before? I was just thirteen years old that time, Law was twenty and Kuya Lazi was eighteen when he broke up with Ate Francesca.

As of this day, Law was twenty three and Kuya Lazi was twenty-one, he had his title as the youngest and successful chief executive officer. I didn't know when, I just heard the news from my social media account and I think, maybe he didn't get to come with our other cousins to have a vacation in the hacienda, he's busy.

I wasn't really aware of it.

Hindi ko alam kung ilang taon na si Ate Francesca, siguro ay seventeen or sixteen siya noong naghiwalay sila, o 'di kaya'y ka-edad lang sila ni Kuya Lazi pero bakit ang harot niya na?

"Little girl? Who's calling?"

Kahit ang tanong ni Law ay hindi ko sinagot. Mas lalo akong nakinig sa sinasabi ni Ate Francesca.

"Law, please? Magkita tayo sa Starbucks next day, three in the afternoon. Pag-usapan natin 'to. Believe me, please. Hindi ko talaga kayo pinagsabay ni Lazarus, nakipaghiwalay ako sa kanya simula noong lumipat siya ng school and he want me back that time kaya siya nagalit. Please? Bigyan mo naman ako ng chance, Law," bakas sa boses nito ang pagsusumamo.

She's lying. She tricked Law? Baka naman ay alam na talaga ni Law pero pumayag pa rin siya? Galit ako kay Ate Francesca dahil sa ginawa niya kay Kuya Lazi pero sa ngayon ay mas galit ako kay Law sa hindi ko malamang dahilan.

Kulang nalang talaga ay masira na 'yong phone ni Law nang dahil sa sobrang higpit ng pagkakahawak ko roon ay hindi ko namalayan ang galit na boses ni Law mula sa

driver's side.

"Answer me, Kryptonite. Who's calling?" aniya na hindi ko sinagot dahil nanatili pa rin akong naghintay sa kung ano man ang sasabihin pa ni Francesca. "Give me the phone, little girl."

"Law, please. Come back, I miss your kisses and hugs, I miss you, Law. Kararating ko lang last week galing Chicago at nakuha ko 'tong number mo from Tito Zach. I wanna see you, baby, let's meet—"

Tinapunan ko ng masamang tingin si Law nang hinablot niya mula sa akin ang phone at habang hawak ng isang kamay niya ang manibela ng kotse na patuloy na tumatakbo ay idinikit niya naman sa kanyang tenga ang phone niya gamit ang marahas na kamay na siyang humablot ng phone mula sa akin.

Tiim bagang mas binilisan niya ang pagpapatakbo ng kotse nang sa tingin ko ay napagtanto niya na kung sino ang tumatawag.

Hindi ko nga inaasahang tinapon niya ang kanyang phone sa nakababang bintana ng kotse dala ng matinding galit.

"Anong narinig mo?" he demanded. Hindi siya sumulyap sa akin at patuloy lang na nakapokus ang tingin sa daan. "Sagutin mo ako!"

Muntik pa akong napatalon sa kinauupuan ko nang dahil sa biglaang pagtaas ng boses niya sa akin at ang paghampas niya sa hawak niyang manibela.

Ganito na ba talaga siya kagalit? Sinisigawan niya na ako? Hindi niya naman ako sinisigawan noon kapag nagagalit siya. Ayaw niya bang malaman ko ang tungkol sa kanila ni Ate Francesca?

Kakatapos lang ng problema ko na pigilan siyang sabihin sa mommy at auntie namin ang katotohanang may relasyon kami ay may bigla na namang dumagdag na problema.

Ang bilis ng pagpapatakbo niya ng kotse dala siguro ng galit niya.

"You have a relationship with Ate Francesca before?" matapang kong tanong, ni hindi ko na rin siya magawang tignan.

It was the last time that he heard me talking to him as soon as I got the answer to my question, I had lost my interest of having a conversation with him. Plus the fact that he just raised his voice at me.

"Yes, we had a relationship before."

Chapter 23

Silence

Sa loob ng halos limang oras sa biyahe pabalik ng Manila ay ni hindi ko narinig ang sarili kong boses na nagsalita.

It started last night, I would not speak nor mutter. I'd like to think deeper into my thoughts.

How was it going? It's unpredictable and complicated. I was starting to ask myself if my mind was still normal? Why didn't I damn felt or thought even a little disgust to this kind of relationship? Of course it should be disgusting for me, for the other people, because he's my brother and we had the same blood running through our veins, but why the hell wasn't?

I wanted to feel disgust for him, for myself and this freaking sexual relationship that we have. Now that I had discover something between Francesca and Law before. Although, I didn't know what's the real story behind it.

Should I get myself a psychologist to talk to? Or psychiatrist that would diagnose me and provide me some painful therapies? No, maybe, the psychologist would do. My brain's condition wasn't that severe at all. I hoped so.

I started ascending the stairs of our house and get inside my room while Law was busy outside, carrying the bags from the baggage compartment of his car.

I wasn't on my mind when I agreed to have a relationship with him, right? And now that I was back on my mind, in the hurtful reality that would make me regret the stupid decision that I made.

End this, does it even make sense if I try to stop him, break this relationship and just forget about it like nothing happened? It doesn't make sense if he wouldn't let me break it and just build a protective wall between us.

He should think about this too, he's older than me, he knows what to do and not to do.

Gusto kong makipagkita kay Cykee o Faith at makipag-usap sa kanila pero wala naman akong phone o sapat na pera. Gusto kong malaman ang totoo kung ano ba talaga ang namamagitan kina Law at Francesca.

Naalala ko, gusto nga palang makipagkita ni Ate Francesca kay Law sa Starbucks. Bukas, alas diyes ng umaga at walang alam si Law tungkol do'n. Ako lang ang nakarinig no'n.

What if, pupunta ako sa Starbucks bukas? Baka maghihintay si Ate Francesca roon?

Susubukan ko, pero saan naman ako kukuha ng pera? Wala namang phone si Law para sana tatawagan ko si Cykee dahil tinapon niya na, ayoko rin namang manghiram kung meron dahil alam kong hindi niya naman ako papahiram.

After long minutes of taking a hot shower, I wore my black sweatpants and pastel coloured sweatshirt, I wasn't in the mood to wear any short clothes that would show off my skin. I didn't want to trigger Law.

I started rummaging through my things in the wardrobe, hoping that I would find something useful. What if I had long forgotten about those things I had stuffed in here? Some bits of coins, a little money, unused old phone or whatever.

From drawer to drawer, cabinet to cabinet and locker to locker.

Wala akong nilampasan at hinalughog ko talaga ang lahat ng nandito. Hindi ako titigil hangga't wala akong nahahanap.

Huminto ako nang wala talaga akong ibang nahanap at pabagsak na umupo sa malamig na sahig.

Inilibot ko ang aking paningin sa buong paligid at sinipa ang iilang box na malapit sa akin nang nakita ko kung gaano kakalat ang wardrobe ko.

"Shit," I muttered out of frustration.

Hinalughog ko na lahat-wait, except for one thing.

Slowly, I turned my head to the location of my secret drawer where it was hidden at the back of my clothes that was hanging in a metal clothesline.

Tumayo ako at hinawi ang mga damit ko kasabay ng pagbungad ng drawer. Kinapa ko 'yong susi no'n sa isang bulsa ng coat ko na hindi ko ginagamit at binuksan ang secret drawer.

Napangisi ako nang nakita ang bumungad sa akin, it's not because of the sexy clothes or things but because of the old Android phone.

Naalala ko na, grade nine kami nang nagulat nalang ako, pag-uwi ko rito ay may cellphone sa loob ng bag ko and what's worse? It was an Android phone full of porn videos downloaded by Cykee. I had tried to give it back to her because I don't want watch those dirty disgusting videos but she didn't accepted it.

Instead of watching those loathsome videos, though, yeah, I accidentally watched one because, of course, I was curious what's on the phone and from whom was it, I eventually found out that Cykee discreetly slid it inside my bag with its charger like she's giving away the phone to a poor lady who doesn't had one, so I hid the phone inside my secret closet since she's too persistent for me to watch it.

I didn't watch it, the first was truly accidental.

Hoping for this one to work, I snatched the old Android phone and its charger from the secret drawer before leaving the wardrobe without cleaning the mess that I made.

Nagdasal ako na sana ay gagana pa siya nang sinubukan kong e-charge at hindi ko na lang maipahayag ang tuwa ko nang bumukas nga 'yong phone.

"Yes!" sabi ko at napasuntok pa sa ere.

I browse through the files of the phone and expressed a sour grimace at the files, pictures and videos that I've seen.

I deleted it all, resetting the phone, restart and wait 'til it's fully charged. The phone already had a sim card but unfortunately, it was long unable to use. So, I use my old sim card from the phone that Law threw it to ruins weeks or perhaps almost a month ago.

Buti na lang ay nagagamit ko pa 'yong sim card at ang mas masuwerte pa ay may natira pa pala akong load doon na hindi ko nagamit.

As fast as I could, I dialed her number and it rung, she didn't change her phone number, did she?

"What's up buttercup?"

Of course, kilala niya kung sino ang tumatawag sa kanya, she had my number on her phonebook.

"Sunduin mo ako rito sa bahay dali, ngayon din, bilisan mo," utos ko at inipit 'yong phone ko sa pagitan ng balikat at tenga ko saka hinalughog ang loob ng wallet ko. Umaasang makakita ng kahit one hundred pesos lang. "Magdala ka na rin ng pera, may pupuntahan tayo."

"Mabuti! Dahil may balak din akong umalis sa pader ng stepfather ko!" I could clearly hear the excitement in her voice from the other line like she's jumping and beaming in such streaming gaiety. "Si Kuya Hedion nalang ang kakampi ko tapos inilayo pa siya ng daddy nila nang nag-away na naman sila ni Hezion de puta."

As far as I know, Hezion was the eldest and Hedion was just a year younger than him. Madalas silang nag-aaway nang hindi alam ni Cykee sa anong dahilan.

"Wait lang ha?" natatawang tugon ko habang hinuhukay ang nasa loob ng wallet ko. "Wala akong sinabing maglalayas tayo!"

I found one hundred pesos and it's not enough for me to provide something to eat for two days. Niyugyog ko pa ang wallet ko patiwariik na sana ay may mahuhulog na kahit coins lang.

"Nay? Bakit parang nagmamadali ka? Hindi mo na ba masikmura ang ugali ng kuya mo?" I could imagine Cykee rolled her eyes because of the irritated tone in her voice. "Alam mo ba, ako? Kulang nalang ay pupunta na ako ng DSWD at isumbong si Hezion. Mommy's not here, kaya si Hezion ang nagbabantay sa akin ngayon."

"What about doon sa old house niyo? Binenta na ba ng mommy mo 'yon?" I asked and throw the wallet to the near trashcan.

It's useless anyway and I found one hundred twenty four pesos only.

"No," mariin niyang sagot na bakas pa'ng naguguluhan siya at kung bakit natanong ko 'yon. "Why?"

I held the phone properly and stood up from sitting on the bed after I stuffed all my money inside the pocket of my sweatpants. Carefully, I walked towards the unlocked door of my room and lock it.

"Pwede ba'ng doon muna tayo?" I ask—no, it's more like, I requested or a voicing out my suggestion. "Kahit isa o dalawang gabi lang? Isama na natin si Faith."

"She can't come with us," nag-iba bigla ang boses ni Cykee, parang may nangyaring hindi ko alam sa kaibigan namin. "Hindi niya kinaya ang mga pinaggagagawa ng cousin niya sa kanya kaya naglakas loob siyang isumbong ang pinsan niya last week. Agad na ipinadala si Faith sa Seattle with her older sister."

Stunned at the news that I've heard, I froze on my spot and thought of Law.

Ako? Kailan kaya ako magkakaroon ng lakas ng loob na isumbong si Law o 'di kaya'y makipaghiwalay nalang sa kanya? Kung siya lang ang kaisa-isang taong binibigyan ako ng sapat na atensyon at nanatili sa tabi ko sa tuwing kailangan ko ang mga magulang namin. Magagawa ko ba 'yon?

Kumurap ako at pilit inalis sa isip ko ang tungkol kay Law. "Kailan siya babalik?"

"I don't know, Kry," the insouciant attitude she had earlier about Hezion changed into pure meticulousness for our loving friend. Nag-iba rin 'yon nang muli siyang nagsalita tungkol kay Hezion. "Gusto kong isumbong si Hezion pero lagi niya naman akong pinagbabantaan."

I frowned. "Sinasaktan ka ba niya? Ako mismo ang lalapit kay tita at isusumbong siya."

Easy for me to say, and I couldn't even do it for myself.

"N-No, hindi niya naman ako sinasaktan, madalas nga ay naglalambing siya sa akin at alam ko na kung anong ibig sabihin no'n," kagaya ng una niyang sinabi sa amin noong nasa cafeteria kami ng school ay ngayon medyo nanginginig ang kanyang boses. "I-I think, obsessed siya sa akin, Kry. Anong gagawin ko? Nagagalit siya kahit na 'yong mga lalaking pinsan ko lang ang kausap ko via Skype or messenger. But the good thing is hindi niya naman ako pisikal na sinasaktan. Madalas lang na pinapagalitan."

Bumalik ako sa kama ko at pabagsak na umupo roon.

"That's possible," I said, referring to the obsession that she said. "Pero 'wag kang matakot na magsabi sa akin, Cyk. I'll help you."

From the start, I have thought about Hezion being obsessed to Cykee. I didn't know what he's doing to her but look at just how he helped Law last time when I joined a game in their sleepover.

Perhaps it's not obsession? What if he really truly love her and didn't know how to express it in a good way possible? I knew Cykee very well, she probably know it, know that it's not obsession and couldn't accept the fact that Hezion, her older stepbrother loves her that's why she's calling him obsessed to alternate it out of love.

She doesn't want to get involved in anything that's related to love after what happened to her mother when Cykee's father passed away. Her intricate situation from the past and now with her stepbrother had gave her lessons in life. She learned and didn't want to experience what happened to her mother before her stepfather came and fixed her mother that was once broken and widow.

Kahit na gano'n ay ayaw niya pa rin sigurong may mangyaring pagmamahalan sa pagitan nilang dalawa ni Hezion, magkapatid sila sa papel.

Shortly, just seconds after, Cykee spoke again from the other line.

"D-Do you know, DDlg?"

"No, anong DDlg?" tanong ko pabalik, kunot noo at pabagsak na humiga sa kinauupuan kong kama.

Smelling Law's masculine scent, a sad smile formed on my lips.

"Daddy Dom Little Girl. It's a type of BDSM relationship, it's not a relationship between an actual father and daughter, it's not incest," she explained carefully with every detail that she could imply. "'May caregiver which is the daddy dominant at 'yong umaaktong bata na 'yong little girl. It's not like may mental disorder ang mga DDlg community, hindi sila kulang sa pag-iisip, it's not bad. They did it because it has something to do with their past. May mas malalim na explanation pa pero saka ko nalang ipapaliwanag sa'yo."

Parang may mali kay Cykee.

"Why are you telling me this?" tanong ko, medyo naguguluhan pa rin sa paliwanag niya pero naiintindihan ko naman 'yong iba.

"Because I feel like Hezion is acting like the daddy dominant! Gumagawa na siya ng rules and anything na parang tinuturing niya akong bata! Like inuutusan niya na akong matulog ng maaga, madalas ay pinapatulog niya pa ako, and limited na ang paggamit ng gadgets!" she ranted with ranging annoyance and irritation. "He almost spank me nang may nagawa akong kasalanan, pero hindi niya tinuloy at nagsorry agad sa akin."

My shoulders slumped back realizing something.

Law was acting the same as Hezion. He's controlling every words that I say and he even prohibited swearing. He's spanking me whenever I did something he dislike.

In addition to my intuition, he's always calling me little girl. Was it possible that he intended to treat me like that DDlg relationship Cykee was talking about or it was just a coincidence since I was his little sister?

But I wasn't a kid.

Inalis ko sa isip ko ang tungkol do'n at nag-isip na muna ng paraan kung paano ako makakaalis ng bahay kasama si Cykee at manatili sa bahay na pagmamay-ari ng mommy niya sa loob ng dalawang gabi lamang. Bukas ay pupuntahan ko si Ate Francesca sa Starbucks, isasama ko si Cykee bilang backup.

Sinong nagsabing magpapaapi ako? Ako dapat 'yong nang-aapi.

"Cyk, pinapayagan ka bang lumabas ni Kuya Hezion?" iniba ko ang usapan matapos kumalma ang kanyang boses sa kabilang linya.

"No, kapag may gusto kong ipapabili ay siya lang ang aalis para bumili."

That's it. I have an idea.

"Utusan mo siyang bumili ng maraming pagkain na gusto mo. Umalis ka agad kapag nakaalis na siya," saad ko habang napahigpit na ang pagkakahawak ko sa phone ko, mas idinidiin ito sa tenga ko. "Tawagan mo ako kapag nakarating ka na, 'wag kang magpark sa tapat ng bahay ah? Sa bahay nalang ng matanda naming kapitbahay dito, ayos na."

"Okay," she sighed, sounded tired. "Pero paano kung mahuli tayo? Anong gagawin natin pagkatapos nito?"

"Hindi ko alam..." I masked my voice with a brave voice to cover the worry in it. "I just need two nights to get away from my brother for a while, I want you to come with me tomorrow sa Starbucks. Next week pa kasi ang punta namin sa hacienda ni Grandpa Sattie."

Time. I needed time and space. I couldn't handle this, I was confused.

Gusto kong mandiri pero bakit hindi ko maramdaman 'yon?

"Okay," Cykee's promising voice said from the other line that caught my attention from thinking about Law again. "Siguro ay pipilitin ko na talaga si mommy na sumama sa kanya o 'di kaya'y lumipat sa mansion ng lolo ko."

"That's good, Cyk," I smiled.

"I'll call you later."

"Okay, 'wag kang mag-ingat ha?"

"Gaga," she blatantly said before she ended the call.

Nag-impake na agad ako ng gamit at susuotin ko sa loob ng tatlong araw at dalawang gabi na pananatili ko sa tinitirhang bahay ni Cykee noon, 'yong pagmamay-ari ng mommy niya.

Itinago ko ang bag sa loob ng wardrobe ko dahil baka ay makita ni Law at magtaka. Hindi na ako nagbihis dahil hindi naman ako pupunta sa isang mall para mag-ayos pa.

It's almost two in the afternoon, Law and I ate our lunch earlier when we stopped by in a fast-food chain during our ride back here. I didn't complain nor request a healthy vegetable food for lunch.

Hindi ko nga siya kinakausap simula kagabi at hanggang ngayon. Hindi rin naman siya nagtangkang hawakan ako sa pribadong parte ng katawan ko. Hinahawakan niya lang ako sa braso, palapulsuhan o 'di kaya'y sa likod ko sa tuwing inaalalayan niya ako na parang batang nahihirapan sa paglalakad.

Pagkatapos kong maghanda ay humiga ako sa kama ko. Nag-iisip ng paraan kung paano ko lolokohin si Law ngayong araw at para makasama ako kay Cykee.

What if I would do the same like her? But that wouldn't be suspicious, right? No, of course, it would be suspicious. I didn't talk to him last night and today then I would just come out of my room asking him to buy me things and foods to eat? Idiot. He would know if I was guilty or not.

Unless if he would knock at my door and ask me if what dinner I would like to eat? As I've known last week, we didn't have much supply of food the day we left the house for a vacation in La Trinidad.

I bet he'd go out later to buy groceries.

Half an hour later, I turned my head to the door when I heard the noise from the doorknob indicating that someone wanted to open the door and enter but failed because for that person outside, the door was unexpectedly locked.

Tama nga ako nang narinig ko ang tatlong katok mula sa labas ng pinto ng kwarto ko.

"Kryptonite, open the door."

May spare key naman siya 'di ba? Why not use it? Pinapagod niya pa talaga akong tumayo sa kinahihigaan ko para lang pagbuksan siya ng pinto? Aba.

Pero ayokong galitin si Law. Kailangan ko siyang pakisamahan sa ngayon kahit na hindi niya pa rin pinapaliwanag sa akin kung ano ang nangyari sa kanila ni Ate Francesca noon. Ayoko rin namang magtanong.

Labag man sa kalooban ko ay tumayo ako at tamad na naglakad patungo sa pinto para pagbuksan ng pinto si Law.

The moment I opened the door, I didn't set my eyes on him, instead I focused my eyes at the door beside me. Ignoring his intimidating presence just right in front of me, I had to deal with my arrogant and intimidating so called boyfriend.

"What do you want for dinner?" he asked with his voice hardened and I already expected this from him.

"I want seafoods and steamed vegetables," I replied nonchalantly. "Specially, crab and shrimp."

Tearing my gaze from the door beside me, I look up at him and greeted by that handsome face he got there.

He didn't look shock or surprised by my unexpected answer because I assumed that he's expecting me to remain silent.

The expression on his chiselled face hardened. "You know I'm allergic to shrimp."

Yes, it's true. He's sixteen years old, if I haven't forgotten, he had accidentally eaten a shrimp without knowing that the soup had shrimp in it. I saw how he suffered from skin rashes, itchy skin and other symptoms.

It was my fault, I was nine years old when I requested to the mayordoma who's my only friend among all the maids, Manang Letecia in the mansion to cook it and I got impressed to the delicious taste of it so I ran off upstairs bringing the bowl with me and let Law have a spoonful of it.

That time, daddy was currently working inside his private room and scolded me after calling the family doctor but then he didn't even get the chance to finish his words because Law got angry at daddy for scolding me, even though he's suffering from the symptoms.

Bata pa lang ako noon at wala akong alam na allergic pala siya sa shrimp.

I showed him my half smirk with disinterest. "Allergic ka sa mga hipon? Ba't naging kayo ni Ate Francesca kung gano'n?"

Hindi na ako nagulat nang tiim bagang siyang tumingin sa mga mata ko marahil ay dahil sa hindi niya nagustuhan ang sinabi ko.

Bakit siya magagalit? Ayaw niya ba'ng pinagsasalitaan ko ng masama ang ex-girlfriend niya?

"Bibilhan at lulutuan kita ng gusto mo," sobra-sobrang awtoridad ang naririnig ko sa kanyang matigas na boses. "'Yon na rin ang kakainin ko."

Guilty struck me, all of a sudden, I wanted to take back those words that I said. The seafoods that I requested.

Paano kung mapahamak na naman ang kalusugan niya dahil sa amin? Paano ko makocontact 'yong family doctor namin kung wala naman akong number no'n kahit na may lumang phone ako?

"Hindi ko sinabing kumain ka ng shrimp," halos magkasalubong na ang dalawang kilay ko at pinipigilan ang sariling bawiin ang mga sinabi ko kanina. "Bumili ka ng sarili mo'ng pagkain."

"Okay, little girl," agad nitong sang-ayon, mukhang galit pero hindi ko naman nababakas sa kanyang boses ang galit. "Pero kapag hindi mo naubos ang pagkain mo, kakainin ko ang tirang pagkain mo."

"Naghahanap ka ba ng kati sa katawan, Law?" I crossed my arms against my chest, taas noo na parang hinahamon siya sa isang labanan. "Magpakagat ka na lang sa lamok o pulang langgam, siguradong kakati 'yan."

Akala ko ay magagalit siya, medyo double meaning naman kasi 'yong sinasabi kong

kati sa katawan.

He caught me off guard by grabbing both of my arms and pulled me towards him for a warm and tight hug.

"Of fuck, Kryptonite, I miss your voice so much," he darkly whispered, nuzzling his face against my hair and pressing his warm kissable lips against my head so sweetly. "I miss it, little girl."

Naestatwa

ako dahil imbes na siya ang magulat sa ginawa kong pagsagot at pagsalita, ako pa yata ang nagulat sa biglang pagyakap niya sa akin at ang pag-iba ng hangin sa paligid.

Hindi ko alam kung ano ang magiging reaksiyon ko pero kahit na magaan sa pakiramdam ito ay hindi ko pa rin nakakalimutan ang mga problema namin, ang dapat kong alamin.

"Do you want to come with me in the wet market?" ang kaninang matigas niyang boses ay kahit gano'n may nababakas akong konting lambot doon. "Ayaw mo ba sa palengke? Gusto mo ba'ng sa grocery store ako bibili ng pagkain mo?"

He's asking my opinion? How rare. Siguro ay naisip niya ng mali ang sigawan ako kagabi o 'di kaya'y gusto niyang makabawi para mapatawad ko na siya?

Kahit na hindi na masyadong nakakatakot ang kanyang matigas at malalim na boses sa pandinig ko ay hindi pa rin dapat ako makakasigurado.

I should feel disgust. Dapat lang na mandiri ako. But why I ain't got even an infinitesimal feeling of disgust?

And then I remembered my plans.

"I'm tired, Law," wika ko, mapupungay ang mga mata at hindi nagsisinungaling. Talagang napagod ako sa paghalughog ng closet ko. "Ikaw na muna sa ngayon, I wanna sleep."

Kahit alam kong pagod din siya. Sinong hindi mapapagod sa ginawa niya? Siya ang nagmaneho, nagbuhat ng mga gamit namin tapos hindi pa nga siguro siya nagpapahinga ay aalis na naman siya para bumili ng groceries.

Was I selfish to leave him here for three days? I didn't want to ask permission to him, I knew his only answer already.

"Magpahinga ka na muna," he unbelievably pulled my head gently to kiss my forehead before looking into my eyes. "Ako nalang ang bibili."

"Okay..."

"May iba ka pa ba'ng gustong ipabili sa akin?" aniya matapos akong bitiwang at umatras ng isang hakbang.

"Wala na," matipid kong sagot at ginawaran lang siya ng mapagpasensyang ngiti.

He left the house fifteen minutes ago and I immediately took the thing that I packed and was hidden inside my wardrobe.

Hawak ko ang phone ni Cykee nang narinig kong tumunog 'yon.

Tawag mula sa matalik kong kaibigan.

"Nandito na ako, where na you?" her voice from the other line was kind of joking but I knew better that she's serious.

"Wait lang, palabas na ako," sabi ko habang suot ang backpack sa likuran ko at isinara ang pinto ng bahay nang nakalabas na ako.

Dumiretso agad ako sa gate at lumabas.

Kinakabahan man ay mabilis akong tumakbo patungo sa pamilyar na mamahaling kotse ni Cykee sa 'di kalayuan. She ended the call the time she saw me running toward her car, so I slid the old Android phone inside my sweatpants' pocket before entering inside the front seat of Cykee's car.

Itinapon ko sa backseat ang backpack ko at mabilis din namang pinatakbo ni Cykee ang kanyang sasakyan.

"How's Hezion?" hinihingal kong tanong nang dahil sa pagtakbo ko kanina.

"He'll be fine," tugon niya, nakapokus ang paningin sa daan pagkatapos niya akong sinulyapan. "What about your brother?"

"Hell, he's not going to be fine," sagot ko, telling her the truth.

Cykee was wearing a maroon dolphin shorts and a white long sleeves loose crop top. I don't follow my dreams, my dreams follows me was printed with black on the front part of her crop top written in a calligraphy style.

She purposely spent a lot of money to pay someone to print my sayings on her clothes. Yeah, I love writing those, mostly whenever I was so down, I usually write an inspirational thoughts.

But now I stopped from doing those hobbies.

Pareho kaming nakapambahay lang.

"Alam mo namang medyo malayo ang bahay ni mommy, 'di ba? Hindi nila tayo mahahanap agad," sabi nito kahit na ekspertong nagmamaneho ay dada pa rin ng dada. "Ay! Ano ba naman 'yan, nakakainis na traffic light naman e!" hinampas niya pa ang manibela nang nakitang naabutan kami ng red light.

"Ang init ng ulo mo," I muttered.

Nang naggreen light na ay pinaharurot agad ni Cykee ang kotse since wala namang naunang sasakyan sa kotse niya.

Tumingin na ako sa labas at sa mga nadadaan naming mga building, boutique, stores at kung anu-ano pa'ng makikita rito sa syudad.

Iniisip ko na kung ano ang magiging reaksiyon ni Law pag-uwi at naabutan akong wala roon. Siguro ay magtutulungan silang dalawa ni Kuya Hezion na hanapin kami dahil pareho naman kaming nawawala no Cykee.

I didn't have to worry about Faith, nasa magandang kalagayan na siya ngayon.

Nanlaki ang mga mata ko at nanlamig ng pinagpapawisan kong kamay nang may nahagip ang mga mata ko sa labas ng isang malaking grocery store pero nawala rin sila sa paningin ko nang nakalayo na ang kotseng sinasakyan ko.

My eyes couldn't be wrong. It's them. I was so sure of it.

Hindi ko akalaing mag-uusap sila na parang matagal na kilala na nila ang isa't isa, ni hindi ko inaasahan na masaksihan ang pangyayari'ng 'to kahit mula sa malayo. Pero ang magkaiba lang ay parang pareho pa silang galit at nakakatakot.

It was Law and Rule intensely talking.

Chapter 24

Allergy

"What about Crispy Pork Belly?"

Every time I hear her suggestions, no seconds would pass that my face wouldn't twist and express a sour grimace in distaste of hearing it.

We doesn't eat the same food, or so I mean, we doesn't have the same taste when it comes to food. Obviously and absolutely with no second thought, I didn't like the idea of eating flesh from those poor animals which was what Cykee had craved to eat for. Fish was more acceptable for me.

Pork, beef, and chicken? I did eat some of those but not everyday. I preferred to eat those healthy foods and full of vitamins that was called vegetables and fruits.

Really, I wasn't on diet and anything that could reduce or those things about weight loss, I just feel like eating more vegetables and fruits and less meat was worth a healthy lifestyle.

Nakapangalumbaba ako rito sa kitchen island ng dati nilang bahay, kaming dalawa lang. Walang katulong pero every week na nagpapadala ng katulong ang stepfather niya rito just to maintain the cleanliness of the house.

"Oh please! Magpadeliver ka ng ibang pagkain, Cyk!" ang lakas ng boses ko at sigurado akong namumula na ang mga pisngi ko sa sobrang inis. "Five hundred lang ba ang kinupit mo sa kwarto ni Kuya Hezion para magtipid ka ng ganito at isang putahe lang ng pagkain ang ipapadeliver mo? Kuripot!"

"It's actually fifteen thousand five hundred," she said, waving her thick wallet at me.

"See? You're a shit, Cyk," I grind my teeth and stop myself to snarl at her. "Skinflint."

Seriously, I wanted to grab my very best friend by the neck and shake her off until she'd insist for herself and for the sake of her life to capitulate.

"Gulay na naman ba ang ipapadeliver ko? May damo naman sa front yard, Kry," her voice was marked with so much sarcasm. Inilapag niya ang hawak niyang wallet sa kitchen island at kinuha ang phone niya, started tapping, scrolling and typing.

"Fine," pagsuko ko, pabagsak na inalis ang kamay ko mula sa pagkakapangalumbaba at

umayos ng pagkakaupo sa metal stool. "Kakain na ako ng karne. Make sure na masarap 'yan."

Parang sandaling pumasok sa isip ko na sana ay hindi na lang ako umalis ng bahay. Law wouldn't tolerate me of eating vegetables, kung ano ang gusto kong kainin ay 'yon na rin ang kakainin niya.

Ano na kaya ang nangyari sa kanya nang umuwi siya sa bahay kahapon galing sa grocery store at naabutang wala ako?

It made me guilty at the thought of him going crazy because of the unstoppable desperation to find me. He have to endure and bare with my absence in the house for a while, it would just take a couple of days.

I was wondering what he was doing back at home. Did he sleep last night? Cook for himself?

Nag-aalala pa rin talaga ako para kay Law. Pero ito ang nakakabuti para sa amin, kailangan kong mag-isip mula sa kahibangang desisyon na nagawa ko.

And aside from that, I'd like to know something.

Besides, ako naman 'yong girlfriend niya ngayon kaya may karapatan akong malaman ang tungkol sa nakaraan nila ni Francesca.

Sinasaktan ko lang ang sarili ko? No, dahil mas masasaktan pa ako kapag nagtagal akong ganito, walang alam.

Umismid ako nang idinikit ni Cykee ang kanyang phone sa tainga niya, pinapahiwatig na may tinatawagan siya habang nakangisi sa akin. Nanunukso kumbaga.

"Yes, two Beefsteak, two Chicken Schnitzel, two Lasagna... Yes, yes, of course with rice and drinks," she said her order to the other line, gibing me with that unkind smile on her face. "And I just want to add Creamy Sweet Corn. Thanks."

Sinabi niya pa sa kabilang linya ang complete address niya bago ibinaba ang phone niya at hinila ang isang metal stool palapit sa kanya saka umupo sa tapat ko, buti na lang talaga ay nasa pagitan namin ang kitchen island kung 'di ay kanina ko pa siya sinapak.

"Oh thank you very much," pinantayan ko talaga ang pagiging sarkastiko ng boses ko kumpara sa boses niya kanina. "Mas gusto ko pa'ng gawing umagahan ang sweet corn."

"Pampagana lang sa'yo syempre."

I rolled my eyes at her. "Ano ba sa tingin mo ang breakfast, Cyk? Dapat 'yong kakainin natin ay bread, egg, bacon, ham, fresh fruits or vegetables tapos 'yong drinks natin ay gatas."

"Maaga pa para sa gatas oy," makahulugang protesta nito habang nakangisi. "'Di ba dapat sa gabi lang 'yong gatas?"

"Ay tangina mo," sabi ko sabay irap sa kanya.

"Thank you," another sarcastic remarks from her, siya naman ang nakapangalumbaba ngayon habang nakaangat ang isang kilay. "So ano na? Malaya na tayo sa ngayon, punta tayong mall?"

"Nope, sasamahan mo ako sa starbucks mamaya," I said confidently.

"Ikaw ah, ano 'yan? May pasekretong ka-meet up ka kaya iniwan mo ang kuya mo dahil alam mo'ng magagalit siya?" panunukso niya, simula kahapon ay kahit anu-ano na lang ang mga pinagsasasabi niyang panunukso sa akin. "Imagine? You? Having a rendezvous with someone? Good, pagpatuloy mo lang."

"Ewan ko sa'yo," iniwas ko ang paningin ko sa kanya dahil sa tingin sa kanya at naghanap na lang ng maaaring pagkakaabalahan ko habang hinihintay namin ang delivery.

"As if naman," she snorted before her face lit up like she just remembered something from the past. "Baka naman ay may namamagitan na sa inyo ni Rule? Unforgettable moment talaga 'yong sa pool party e! I heard from Shon na may balak daw si Rule na manligaw sa'yo."

"Rule Fortaleza?" I asked unsure. Baka naman kasi may iba pa'ng Rule dito, o 'di kaya'y magkaibang spelling pero same pronunciation?

"Yep!" she beamed and snatched my hand, fervently shaking it and look into my face dreamily. "Wag kang padalosdalos ah? Sagutin mo na agad."

Anong sasabihin ko? Hindi puwedeng ligawan ako ni Rule kasi may boyfriend na ako at si Law 'yon? Paano kung totoo talagang liligawan ako ni Rule sa mga susunod na araw, linggo o buwan? Hindi ko pa naman alam kung ano ang mga pumapasok sa isip ng lalaking 'yon.

Pero bakit niya ako liligawan ng gano'n kadali?

I just met him more like a month ago? We're not that close and we rarely cross each other's path, not to mention the wet market encounter and last two nights ago when we had our dinner in a fine restaurant together with mommy, Aunt Zara, Aunt Lauren and Law.

What's with Rule? He's acting like he already know me. It's possible since Aunt Lauren was his aunt too and we're not related, I was just related to Uncle August.

Things were getting more complicated and I didn't have the courage to reject a good boy like Rule. I honestly admit that I had a special feelings towards him but this something between Law and I seemed so powerful that I couldn't even have the urge to resist.

Irresistible, indeed.

"Spacing out again?" I heard Cykee's teasing voice interrupted my thoughts. "Crush mo ba si Rule? Kung ayaw mo, ipamimigay ko nalang siya sa iba."

"Hindi sa gano'n," sabi ko sabay bawi ng mga kamay kong hawak niya. "Ano kasi..."

"Ano?" naiiritang asik nito.

Should I tell her? I was not ready yet. How incredible that things turned out to be like this.

May tiwala ako kay Cykee, hindi naman siguro masama ang sabihin sa kanya ang iilang detalye tungkol sa mga nangyayari sa buhay ko.

"I have a boyfriend," my voice was calm but deep inside, I was in hysteric and somehow pathetic.

Tahimik lang siya kaya kinabahan ako kung ano ang sasabihin niya tungkol sa pag-amin ko. Tumitig siya sa mukha ko na parang may nakikita siyang nakakuha ng interes niya.

Then she grinned and laughed.

"Sino? The fuck? Ba't 'di mo sinabi sa akin?" she exploded, parang galit pa at kung bakit outdated siya sa mga nangyayari sa akin. "So? Akin nalang si Rule? Sinayang mo ang gano'n kabait at guwapong nilalang, Kryptonite! Sino ba kasi ang boyfriend mo? 'Pag 'di 'yan worth it, makipaghiwalay ka na agad."

"Ipapakilala ko siya sa'yo kapag naayos ko na ang mga misunderstanding namin ni Law," that wasn't what I wanted to say to her but I like it that way. Ayoko pa talagang sabihin sa kanya ang tungkol sa amin ni Law.

Mukhang tsismoso pa naman si Kuya Hezion. Sana nga lang ay hindi niya sasabihin kay Cykee ang tungkol sa amin ni Law. Kinukunsinti pa nila ang isa't isa na gawin 'to kahit na mali naman talaga.

"Oh yeah, hindi nga pala 'yong parents mo ang strict," aniya habang nilalaro ang kanyang phone na nakalapag sa kitchen island. "Strict si kuya mo, my God."

Gusto ko na talagang sabihin sa kanya kung bakit gano'n at hindi lang dahil sa istrikto si Law pero hindi ko naman siya puwedeng biglain.

I trusted her since the day we both lost our innocence.

"Hindi lang 'yon," nakanguso kong sabi at pinanood siyang tumayo saka kumuha ng malamig na tubig mula sa walang laman nilang fridge. "May nalaman ako tungkol sa kanila ni Ate Francesca."

"Francesca Costales, right? Ex-girlfriend ng Kuya Lazarus mo? Pinsan ni Erich Costales," curious, she asked before grabbing a glass from the cupboard and poured the cold water in it. "What's with them?"

"They had a relationship before," tugon ko sa gitna ng pag-inom niya ng tubig dahilan kung bakit napaubo siya. "Mamamatay ka na ba? Anong kulay ng kabaong ang gusto mo?"

Laughing at her, I stood on my feet and went to her side.

"F-For real?" nahihirapan pa siyang magsalita matapos umubo at nakabawi. "Magic wand ba siya, Kry? Paano niya tinuhog ang dalawang Cavanaugh?"

"Kaya nga sasamahan mo ako sa Starbucks mamaya," I shrugged my shoulders and leaned my hand against the closed fridge.

"Of course!" sobrang excited siya dahil paniguradong may mapaglalaanan na naman siya ng oras sa mga pambabara niya. "Wait, sa pagkakaalam ko lang ah? Si Kuya Lazarus ang una niyang boyfriend, right? Paano naging sila ni Kuya Law kung pagkatapos na nakipaghiwalay sa kanya si Kuya Lazarus noon ay agad siyang pumunta ng Chicago? Ano 'yon? Long distance relationship sila ni Kuya Law?"

Naisip ko na rin ang tungkol do'n. Kasi noon naman ay hindi ako pumapasok sa kwarto ni Law, may tsansa lang akong makapasok doon kapag may nagawa akong kasalanan.

"For me, parang pinagsabay niya si Law at Kuya Lazi," opinyon ko na at sigurado akong hindi ako nagkakamali roon kahit na hindi ko pa naman nakakausap si Ate Francesca.

With that one eyebrow raised, she gasped for air out of incredulity. "What? Ang kapal ng bolbol niya ha!" how nice to be so audible to hear her protesting voice. "Paano mo naman nalaman?"

"Law had let me borrow his phone, kaya ayon, nasagot ko ang tawag mula sa isang unknown number accidentally," I said it in a casual tone. "It's Ate Francesca."

"Anong sabi?" parang atat na atat pa siyang malaman kung ano ang narinig kong sinabi ni Ate Francesca.

Sabay pa nga kaming manlait noon ng mga taong nakakasalamuha namin sa school. She loved gossips.

"Naghahabol siya kay Law," isinandal ko ang aking likod sa harap ng fridge kaharap si Cykee na maiging nakikinig sa kuwento ko. "Ang narinig ko lang sa tawag ay nakipaghiwalay daw siya kay Kuya Lazi noong nagtransfer si kuya ng school pero hindi ko naman nabalitaan ang tungkol do'n. Si Kuya Lazi ang nakipaghiwalay sa kanya nang nahuli niyang pilit na gustong halikan ni Ate Francesca si Law sa mansion, may event kasi noong mga panahong 'yon."

"Pinagsabay niya nga," she responded nodding her head in approval. "Nabiktima lang siguro si Kuya Law."

Well, in that case, I object.

Hindi ako naniniwalang nabiktima si Law ni Ate Francesca. Hindi nga siya nagpabiktima kay daddy sa mga arranged marriage na 'yan? Ang mga kasinungalingan pa kaya ni Ate Francesca na halatang hindi naman talaga sila naghiwalay ni Kuya Lazi noon?

"I don't think so," bakas sa boses ko ang pagdududa. "Imposibleng hindi alam ni Law na boyfriend pa rin ni Ate Francesca si Kuya Lazi. Updated kaya si Law sa lahat ng nangyayari sa buong pamilya namin, siguro nga kahit 'yong mga business ni daddy ay may alam din siya."

"You mean? Pa-victim si Kuya Law? Kaya ba hindi nagalit sa kanya si Kuya Lazarus at mas galit pa siya kay Francesca na 'yon kaya siya nakipaghiwalay?" naguguluhan niyang tanong, seryosong-seryoso na parang nag-iimbestiga siya sa tunay na nangyaring karumaldumal na pagpatay ng isang inosenteng tao. "Nakaka-intriga 'to."

"She even begged to meet Law at ang sabi niya ay hihintayin niya raw si Law sa Starbucks," dugtong ko sa sinabi ko kanina.

"Paano kung magtext o tumawag ulit si Francesca sa kuya mo, buking tayo?"

I shook my head so sure. "Nope, he caught me listening to the other line and got his suspicions when I didn't answer his question," saglit akong huminto dahil pakiramdam ko ay natutuyo ang lalamunan ko. Kumuha ako ng isa pa'ng baso at sinalinan ng tubig 'yon. Uminom ako bago nagpatuloy. "Nasa sasakyan kami tapos tinapon niya 'yong phone habang nagmamaneho siya nang nakilala niya kung sino ang tumatawag."

She was about to speak when she opened her mouth but immediately closed it as we heard the doorbell rang indicating that there's someone approaching the gate outside.

In a very lazy manner, she grabbed her thick wallet and started to walk her way to the door of the kitchen, leaving me for a minute and praying that the visitor

wouldn't be one of the men we're both running away from.

What ails me starting from this day was I may hurt Law. When he first spanked me before, there's no day would pass that I wouldn't be overwhelmed.

It wasn't traumatic at all. I was younger that time and his spansks was ever so gentle and light, it didn't hurt me. Yeah, maybe he did that just to scare me because I was just a kid back then, and that I would be afraid to do stupid things and buy disadvantageous stuffs, wasting money that was against his favor.

"Let's eat!" tawag ni Cykee mula sa labas matapos ang ilang minuto.

Of course, it was the delivery guy. Why was I overthinking?

Lumabas na ako ng kusina at doon kami sa living room kumain.

About two hours later, after eating our breakfast and preparing ourselves which spent us an hour of choosing what's the best outfit to wear for the day and whatever whichever before we had our endgame and done what we could to make ourselves presentable.

I was wearing a dark red one shoulder dress, so much dark that it looked like black, it suits my pale fair skin and it has an above the knees length. While Cykee was wearing her pale grey off shoulder fitted dress.

Mas malala 'yong kay Cykee dahil mas exposed 'yong legs niya sa iksi ng dress unlike mine.

"So, may bibilhin ba tayo rito?" tanong ni Cykee habang naglalalakad na kami papasok sa loob ng Starbucks.

Kararating lang namin gamit ang kanyang sariling kotse na nakapark sa malawak na parking lot dito.

"Libre mo ako," I glanced at her as we walked inside the Starbucks, side by side.

The coffee colored themed Starbucks reminded me of Law and his room, dark brown and every shades of brown, any color that resembled coffee, chocolate and milk. The only difference was I could only smell the sweetness and coffee aroma here and not Law's masculine scent.

Hinanap agad ng mga mata ko si Ate Francesca, it's 9:47am at kung sinusuwerte nga naman ako, nakita ko siya sa isang puwesto ng mga mesa at upuan kung saan madali lang siyang makita.

Ang aga niya naman? Umaasa ba talaga siyang pupuntahan siya rito ni Law?

Pero ang nakakairita lang nang nakita ko siya ay hindi naman pala siya nag-iisa.

"Required ba talagang isama niya ang pinsan niya? If I know, may gusto rin 'yang si Erich kay Kuya Law," nararamdaman kong kumukulo ang dugo ni Cykee na halos patayin na sa sobrang sama ng tingin niya nang nakita si Erich na masayang nakikipagkuwentuhan kay Ate Francesca. "Kaya siguro sumama para masilayan niya ang kuya mo, Kry. Napaka-plastic teh, backstabber pa, narinig ko sa school na sinisiraan niya si Francesca habang nasa Chicago."

I had no problem with Ate Francesca because I see her as the most sweet, proper, gentle and conservative girl before. Kaya nga gusto ko siya kay Kuya Lazi kasi kahit na napaka-maldito, seloso at madalas na galit si kuya ay lagi niyang

iniintindi.

Pero ngayon ay parang nag-iba ang paningin ko sa kanya. Hindi ko pa nga talaga lubusang kilala ang babaeng katulad niyang may tinatagong kati sa katawan.

Nangunguna si Cykee sa paglalakad patungo sa puwesto nila dahil nandito ang madalas niyang nakakaaway na senior high student sa school.

I remembered, I heard before that Erich had given Kuya Laki his graduation gift and it was obviously sex. A recorded sex.

Ang daming nakapanood no'n, maraming nagpapasend at alam kong si Kuya Laki ang confident na nagsesend no'n sa tulong ng mga barkada niya at mukhang may kinalaman pa nga yata si Kuya Ruin do'n.

Syempre minabuti nilang hindi 'yon makakarating sa mga aunties, uncles at magulang namin, kahit sa akin at kay Law. Takot lang nilang pagalitan at sesermonan sila ni Law kapag nagkataong nahuli ako ni Law na nanonood no'n.

Buti ay nakakagala pa si Erich? Hindi ba nakakahiya 'yon? Syempre hindi para sa kanya, sanay na siyang maging feeling pornstar.

"Hi, pwede ba'ng maki-upo?" pambungad ni Cykee sa sobrang matamis na tono ng boses nang nasa harap na kami ng dalawa. Flipping her hair, she looked at the two, startled at her sudden arrival.

"Sure—" naputol si Ate Francesca sa marahang pagsasalita nang inunahan siya ni Erich.

"Hello, ang daming vacant seats, girl. Baka naman?"

"Erich, it's fine," saway ni Ate Francesca kay Erich. I could clearly see the genuinely kind smile plastered on her pretty face. Lumipat ang paningin niya sa akin at nanlaki pa ang mga mata niya nang naalala ako. "Kryptonite?"

"Ate Francesca," I acknowledge her with a single nod.

Mabilis siyang napatayo sa kinauupuan niya at lumapit sa akin. "I didn't expect to see you here. How are you?"

Well, I expected to see you here.

"I'm fine, ate," magalang kong sagot sa kanya habang nakikita ko sa sulok ng aking mga mata sila Erich at Cykee na sobrang sama ng tingin sa isa't isa.

"Come, join us, Kry..." bumaling siya kay Cykee at kahit sa bahagyang pagngiwi ni Ate Francesca dahil sa tensyong bumabalot sa pagitan ni Cykee at Erich ay ang ganda niya pa rin sa paningin ko kahit sa paningin ng ibang tao rito. "With your friend, of course. Let's have a conversation, hindi naman kasi ako sure kung sisiputin ba ako ng hinihintay ko rito."

How wonderful. Kahit sa pagngiwi ay ang ganda niya pa rin. Ako kasi ay parang naka-inom ng katas ng calamansi sa sobrang asim ng mukha kapag ngumingiwi.

Umupo si Ate Francesca sa tabi ni Erich na tahimik lang pero ang sama ng tingin kay Cykee. Si Cykee naman ang umupo sa kinauupuan ni Ate Francesca kanina.

"Oh?" I reacted before I sat next to Cykee, facing Ate Francesca and Erich. "May I ask who, ate?"

Checking out Ate Francesca's appearance, she never changed except to the fact that her beauty never died, it became alive and active, flaunting it to everyone around her. She's very conservative and classy when it comes to clothes. She's wearing a mugler white scuba dress and Erich, her cousin was wearing otherwise. Erich was wearing a black velvet spaghetti strap bodycon mini dress.

"Uhm..." I could hear that Ate Francesca was hesitant after a minute of silence because of my question. "It's just my ex-boyfriend."

Ex-boyfriend, so it's true? Naging sila nga ni Law at kaya rin pala nagdadalawang-isip siya sa pagsagot sa akin.

I knew better now.

Holding back my anger, I silently took a deep breath for a moment before expressing a considerate smile. "You mean Kuya Lazi? I think he's busy with his career in business world. I don't think na may oras pa siya kasi paniguradong sunod-sunod ang mga meetings and appointments niya, lalo na ngayong successful siya sa puwesto niya bilang CEO ng Cavanaugh Finance Corp."

Sinadya ko talagang sabihin 'yon para malaman niya kung gaano siya katanga. Kuya Lazi was a good guy, she must've know that side of kuya. Sinayang niya lang ang tanong sobra siyang pinahalagahan at minahal.

She just silently gave me her kind smile, didn't even bother to correct me that it was not because of Kuya Lazi why she's waiting here, that she's waiting for. It was Law.

Gazing down at our table, I saw two Iced Caramel Macchiato.

"Oh wait, my manners, do you want from drinks? I'll get you some," pag-iiba ni Ate Francesca, tinatanong kaming dalawa ni Cykee.

"Sure," walang hiya-hiyang sang-ayon ni Cykee. Mukhang nanunukso kay Erich na halos ikamamatay na ni Cykee ang paraan ng pagtingin nito sa kanya.

"Hm, what do you guys want?" tanong ni ate sabay tayo habang hawak ang kanyang pouch.

"Java Chip Frappuccino, I want venti, kabitin 'yong grande," sobrang kapal ng mukha na sabi ni Cykee. "I'm Cykee Guarizo, by the way."

She used her biological father's surname. Mr. Puertollano wanted to adopt her as his daughter in paper so she can finally use his surname but her mother refused.

Baka may pag-asa pa talaga sila ni Hezion, but what about the fact that her mother was married to Mr. Puertollano? Hezion's biological father.

"What about you, Kry?" baling ni Ate Francesca sa akin.

"Green Tea Cream Frappuccino, ate," sagot ko.

Nagtanong pa si Ate Francesca kung ano pa ba ang gusto namin at magsasalita pa sana si Cykee pero siniko ko siya sabay iling kay Ate Francesca na nagsasabing wala na. Naglakad na siya papunta sa counter area at saka niya sinabi ang kanyang order sa barista.

We're silent for five minutes with Erich eyeing us suspiciously.

"You know what? Ang kapal ng mukha mo para magpalibre, naghihirap na ba ang mga Puertollano at Guarizo? Thick faced," pangunguna ni Erich habang nakaangat ang isang perpektong shape ng kilay na drawing lang pala.

"Kayo ba? 'Di ba ay talagang mahirap naman kayong mga Costales? Umangat lang kayo sa lipunan dahil may kapit kayo sa mga Vicedo 'di ba? Golddigger," Cykee retorted with higher tone than her.

Chill lang naman ang kanilang pag-uusap no'ng pero nang naramdaman ko na ang tensyon ay umalis na muna ako upang gawin ang pakay ko rito habang nasa counter area pa si Ate Francesca. Babalik na lang ako kapag kailangan na ng backup ni Cykee pero syempre kilala ko 'yong kaibigan ko, never nagpatalo 'yon at madalas niya nga'ng pinapaiyak si Erich sa school, nagdadrama para kami ang masususpend.

I left them with their heated conversation.

Habang papalapit ako kay Ate Francesca ay patapos na pala ang barista sa paggawa ng drinks namin kaya sinalubong ko kaagad si Ate Francesca upang tulungan siya.

"Thank you," aniya habang hawak ang isang drink.

Akmang babalik na siya sa puwesto namin pero hinintay ko lang na makalayo kami sa counter area at medyo malayo pa rin sa table namin bago ako nagsalita.

"I know Law and you had a relationship before, ate."

Natigilan siya sa paglalakad at bumaba pa ang tingin ko sa kanyang kamay na may hawak na drinks. Nakita ko kung paano humigpit ang pagkakahawak niya roon bago siya humarap sa akin at malungkot na ngumiti.

"Yes, Kry, we did," I couldn't even hear the regret in her voice. "Minahal ko si Lazi pero mas mahal ko si Law."

Hindi ko na alam kung gaano ako kagalit ngayon. Niloko niya si Kuya Lazi dahil lang sa pansariling kasiyahan niya at pumayag naman si Law?

"How did it happen?" sa kabila ng galit ay pinanatili kong kalmado ang boses ko. "You're in an official relationship with Kuya Lazi at the same time you're in a secret relationship with Law?"

"It's a long story, Kryptonite."

"Them make it shorter, I wanna know..." I demanded. "The truth. Pinagsabay mo ba ang mga kapatid ko?"

Unti-unting naglalaho ang paggalang boses ko sa kanya.

"Yes, I did," ni hindi ko narinig ang pagdadalawang-isip sa kanyang boses. She's being straightforward. "Pero gusto kong malaman mo na alam kong alam ni Law 'yon. Alam niyang pinagsabay ko sila pero nagbulag-bulagan siya at pumayag sa gusto ko dahil mahal niya ako."

"Is that so?" I asked in disbelief.

"Yes, so, please? Just keep it a secret, Kryptonite," pakiusap niya, kahit ang kanyang mga mata ay nakikiusap din.

Hindi niya ako madadala sa mga pagpapaawa niya.

"Pero bakit mo sinasabi sa tawag na hindi mo sila pinagsabay?"

There I caught her, stunned, couldn't escape and think of something to answer for my question.

Magsasalita na sana siya ngunit pareho kaming natigilan nang may narinig kaming sigawan at nakita ang pagsasabunutan nila Cykee at Erich.

Mabilis kaming lumapit sa dalawa at ang iilang lalaking barista na lumabas pa mula sa loob ng counter area upang tulungan kami.

"Ang kapal ng mukha mo!" Erich shouted with that high-pitched tone while trying to get a hold of Cykee's hair too.

"Mahiya ka naman! May scandal ka na nga, nagawa mo pa'ng gumala!"

Nang naihiwalay na sila ay agad akong lumapit sa side ni Cykee at inayos ang kanyang medyo nagulong buhok habang hawak ko pa rin ang isang drinks. Gano'n din naman ang ginawa ni Ate Francesca, nag-aalala.

Akala ko ay tapos na ang away ngunit napasinghap na lamang ako nang biglang hinablot ni Cykee ang hawak kong Green Tea Cream Frappuccino saka marahas at mabilis na sinabuyan si Erich sa mismong mukha at damit nito, natalisikan pa ang ibang taong malapit kay Erich.

Napasinghap din si Erich habang nakaawang ang mga labi at sobrang bilis ng paghinga.

"Ano 'yan? Shrek? Ikaw ba 'yan?" panunukso ni Cykee habang malakas na tumawa nang dahil sa drinks na kulay green na malagkit at dumikit pa sa mukha, damit at braso ni Erich

Narinig ko ang malutang na pagmura ni Cykee nang hinablot naman ni Erich ang hawak ni Ate Francesca na Java Chip Frappuccino at isinaboy sa mukha ni Cykee, natalisikan pa ako.

"Eh ikaw? Sino ka ngayon? 'Yong putik na nililiguan nila Shrek?" humalakhak si Erich sa kabila ng malagkit niyang mukha na natatakpan ng kulay berde.

Bumaling ako ng tingin kay Cykee na napahilamos ang kamay sa mukha niyang nagkukulay putik nga nang dahil sa Java Chip Frappuccino.

Dinilaan niya pa ang kanyang hintuturo.

Bago pa man makapagsimula ulit ang bagong sagutan nila ay mabilis ko ng hinila si Cykee ng buong puwersa palabas ng Starbucks at doon sa kotse niya inasikaso at inayos ang kanyang pagmumukha. Tinulungan ko pa.

"Nakakagigil ang hayop na 'yon, Kryptonite!" kahit dito sa loob ng mamahaling kotse niya ay parang gusto niya pa'ng bumalik para sakalin si Erich.

"Umuwi na lang muna tayo sa inyo para makapagshower ka na," sabi ko sabay tapon sa tissue na pinunas ko sa kanyang braso kanina. Nagkalat na nga ang mga tissue rito sa loob ng kotse niya pero halata pa ring parang naligo siya sa isang putikan.

"Wait, paano 'yong tungkol kay Francesca at Law?"

"Hindi na importante 'yon," nakangisi kong wika bago pinagmasdan ang kabuuan ng matalik kong kaibigan. "Alam mo kung anong mas importante ngayon? 'Yang hitsura mo."

"Sabagay," aniya na parang ngayon lang na-realize na talagang kulay pula ang dugo.

We drove back to their house and when we got there, we were surprised to see a white car parked beside the house.

"Kaninong kotse 'yan?"

"It's mommy!" bakas ang tuwa sa boses ni Cykee nang nagmamadali siyang lumabas ng kotse at agad na pumasok sa loob ng nakabukas na gates at pinto ng bahay kahit na sa gano'ng hitsura siya.

Agad din akong sumunod at nang pumasok ako ay natigilan na lamang ako sa may pinto nang nakita ang bumungad sa akin.

"Hezion? What the hell are you doing here? Ikaw ba ang may gamit ng kotse ni mommy?" hindi ko na maipaliwanag ang kaba at takot sa bahagyang nanginginig na boses ni Cykee nang nakita si Kuya Hezion mula sa pagkakaupo sa sofa ng living room.

Hindi sumagot siya Kuya Hezion, he shifted his look at me instead.

Raising his phone and letting me see what's on its screen, I took a step back to see what's on it.

It's a photo of Law, tired and laying on his bed back in the house with his eyes tightly closed. But the worse thing was he's not just sleeping, I could see some rashes on his arms and neck since his dark brown comforter was covering his body.

"You should go," marahan na utos ni Kuya Hezion at iginalaw pa ang kanyang ulo sa direksyon palabas. "Ikamamatay pa ng kaibigan ko kapag nagtagal na wala ka sa paningin niya."

Was it possible though? Did someone died because of this kind of allergy?

"W-What happened?"

"Kumain siya ng hipon kaninang madaling araw matapos ka niyang hinanap buong magdamag," hindi ko talaga alam kung ano ang gustong mangyari ni Kuya Hezion, parang pinapakonsensya niya akong para kusa akong umuwi. "Tatawagan ko na sana ang family doctor ng mga Cavanaugh, nakuha ko lang ang number no'n mula kay Lazarus pero ayaw ni Law. Gusto niya ikaw daw ang tumawag. Nagalit pa nga sa akin."

Dala ko naman ang pera kong sapat na para pambayad ng taxi ay agad akong tumakbo palabas ng bahay para umuwi at hindi na alintana ang naiwan kong gamit.

"Fuck you, Hezion."

"Come here, my girl. What happened to you? Hm... Bakit ang tamis mo?"

Narinig ko pa ang boses nila bago ako tuluyang nakalabas ng gates at suwerte namang may paparating na taxi sa paglabas ko kaya agad akong pumara.

Nervous and I was almost hyperventilating after minutes of riding on the taxi, apparently, I was getting nearer to my destination.

Agad akong nagbayad at mabilis na tumakbo papasok sa loob ng bahay na bukas ang gate at pinto, parang hindi na naglaan pa ng oras si Law na isara ang mga 'yon.

Sobrang tahimik ng bahay na parang aakalain kong nasa isang horror movie ako na pumasok sa isang nakakatakot na bahay.

Hindi na ako nagsayang ng oras at tinakbo ko na ang hagdan paakyat at nakitang bahagyang nakaawang ang pinto ng kwarto ni Law.

Huminga ako ng malalim at gamit ang nanginginig kong mga kamay ay dahan-dahan kong hinawakan ang doorknob at marahang tinulak ito upang bumukas ang pinto.

Hindi agad ako nakabawi at nakagalaw nang nakita ang sitwasyon ni Law na nakahilata sa kanyang kama, nakapikit at nakakuyom ang kanyang mga kamay sa kanyang gilid na parang pinipigilan ang kanyang sarili na marahas na kalmutin ang mga makakating rashes sa kanyang balat.

"L-Law..." sobra ang pangininginig ng boses ko nang naalala ang mga nangyari noong nagkaganito siya noon ng dahil sa akin tapos ngayon naman ay dahil pa rin sa akin.

Sa segundong nagmulat siya ng mga mata ay agad 'yong tumitig sa akin, mapupungay at marahan.

"H-Hm... C-Come to me, little girl..." aniya sa sobrang nanghihinang boses na parang sumisikip ang kanyang lalamunan nang dahil sa pagkain ng hipon.

Hindi ko na namalayan ang luhang mabilis na bumagsak mula sa mga nag-iinit kong mga mata at walang pag-aalinlangang tumakbo palapit sa kanya nang dahan-dahan siyang umupo mula sa pagkakahiga niya.

Umupo ako sa gilid ng kama at mabilis, mahigpit siyang niyakap. Naramdaman ko kaagad ang maskulado niyang braso na ikinulong ako sa kanyang mga bisig.

I was hugging his hard and sculpted shirtless body as he was doing the same to my petite one. I could feel how his large hand scooped the part at the back of my head and his soft lips sending warm kisses on my forehead.

"W-Wag mo na kasi akong iwan," kahit nahihirapan siya sa pagsasalita dahil parang naninikip talaga ang lalamunan niya ay pinilit niya pa rin ang sariling magsalita at gano'n na lang din ang pagiging marahan ng boses niya.

Wala na akong ibang masabi dahil humihikbi na ako sa sobrang sakit nang nakita siyang nagkaganito dahil sa akin. 'Yong tipong ang taong aakalain mo'ng walang takot at sobrang maawtoridad na siyang kinatatakutan namin ay manghihina rin pala.

"I-Ipapaliwanag ko sa'yo lahat," ang sakit sa dibdib na marinig ang gano'n kahinang boses niya, hindi ko na naririnig ang pagiging matigas at ang dahas na nababalot dito ay parang tinibag ko na. "'W-Wag ka lang umalis para maghanap ng sagot, K-Kryptonite."

"I'm sorry, I'm sorry, Law," soft sobs came out from me as I buried my face against his naked and broad chest.

But then I couldn't stop from crying when he spilled the truth. Not the truth about him and Ate Francesca which I had tried to seek for an answer earlier.

It's the truth about us.

"H-Hindi tayo magkapatid, Kryptonite."

Chapter 25

Legal

Hinigpitan ko ang pagkakayakap ko kay Law kahit hindi ko naman buong mayakap ang matigas at mas malaki niyang katawan kumpara sa akin.

I was scared.

After calling our family doctor that had arrived in just fifteen minutes later from the time that I called him, I willingly stayed beside Law.

In that fifteen minutes that the family doctor was still on his way here, I was really nervous, afraid to leave Law again because I could sense and see, by all means that he's having in trouble of breathing.

Sometimes, I just close my eyes whenever I hear him cough and wheeze. He vomited earlier in the middle of that painful and torturous fifteen minutes, all that I did was cry and sob at his side.

I didn't know what to do while waiting for the doctor and I had no idea what was happening to Law. Did he ate a lot of shrimps that's why it turned out like this? Excruciating and serious condition of his allergy.

Overwhelmed and crying, I guided him from his bathroom back to his bed after he vomited earlier, despite of his heavy weight that times five of my weight. Nevertheless, we successfully came to his bed, he could still manage to walk anyway. He's suffering from nausea.

Lagi siyang nakahawak sa kanyang matigas na tiyan na parang sobrang sakit no'n. Ramdam ko ang mabilis, sobrang bilis na pagtibok ng puso niya nang dahil sa taas babang paggalaw ng kanyang malapad na dibdib.

"Severe allergy," Doctor Cuarez said, facing us straight after injecting Law.

"W-Why po? Is it life-threatening?" pakiramdam ko ay parang nagdurusa rin ako sa allergy dahil nahihirapan ako sa mga nakikita at nasaksihan kong nangyari kay Law kaya heto ako ngayon, nakayakap sa kanya at nakaupo rin sa kanyang kama. "H-Hindi naman ganito si Law, noon, 'di ba, doc? It's just skin rashes and itch. Bakit ngayon ay sumusuka siya tapos nahihirapan pa'ng huminga?"

"It is life-threatening. Noon ay konting shrimp lang naman ang nakain niya kaya hindi severe ang naging reaction no'n pero ngayon ay mukhang sinadya talagang damihin ang pagkain o baka naman ay napadami ang pagkain mo, Law? Alam mo namang may allergy ka sa shrimp 'di ba? Kung 'di niyo agad ako natawagan ay baka ipapa-admit na kita Law," parang nanenermon na sabi ni Doctor Cuarez."But don't worry, I treated it with an emergency injection of epinephrine."

Ang lakas pa ng loob ni Dr. Cuarez na magsalita ng gano'n kay Law dahil alam niyang nanghihina 'yong tao at lagi naman talagang ganito si Dr. Cuarez noon pa sa tuwing ginagamot niya si Law pero noong ako 'yong nagkalagnat noon? Takot pa nga siya kay

Law.

"I'll be back here tomorrow to check you because the symptoms can last at least 2 weeks. Kryptonite, just call me if something happened, okay?" paalam ni Dr. Cuarez at may iilang ibinilin pa'ng mga gamot para kay Law na hindi ko alam kung ano dahil si Law lang ang keep kinausap niya tungkol sa mga gamot na 'yon bago siya umalis.

Kahit na nakaalis na si Dr. Cuarez ay nakayakap pa rin ako kay Law, gano'n din ang kanyang mga brasong ikinulong ako sa kanyang tabi.

Napatahan ko na rin ang sarili ko nang dahil sa paghalik niya sa buhok ko.

His lips were swollen and red, his ears to with his flushed cheeks with a little rashes dotting on his pale skin, plus the swelling of his large hands and lean fingers.

"Nasa'n pa ang makati, Law?" marahan kong tanong sa kanya habang hawak ko ang kanyang namumulang kamay. Umangat ang tingin ko sa kanya. "Dito ba?"

I pointed the part of some rashes on his wrist and he nodded, silently watching me caressing the itchy part of his skin and softly scratching it with my fingertips, besides my nails weren't long and pointy like those other girls in school. It wouldn't hurt him.

Buti ay sandali akong nakapagbihis kanina, nakasuot ako kanina ng one shoulder dress, ngayon ay balik na naman ulit ako sa sweatshirt at sweatpants.

Ilang minuto ko rin namang ginagawa 'to. Ako na ang nagsisilbing kumakamot sa makating parte ng kanyang balat dahil natatakot kasi ako sa paraan ng pagkamot niya dahil parang kulang nalang ay dudugo na ang kanyang braso nang dahil sa sobrang dahas ng pagkamot niya.

I frowned when I caught his other hand doing it again. Scratching his upper arm that I was currently holding and trying to soothe out the itch on his wrist.

Annoyed, I swatted his hand to stop it.

Tumingala ulit ako sa kanya at tinignan siya ng masama. "Law, ako na lang kasi."

"Hm... I'm sorry, little girl," mahina pa rin ang kanyang malalim na boses at parang pinilit lang ang sariling magsalita.

Actually, Law looked cute and harmless like a little rabbit. I couldn't feel intimidated by him because of his condition.

Hindi naman puwedeng hilingin kong ganito siya lagi. Nag-aalala pa rin ako.

"Hindi kita mapapatawad. Paano kung nahuli ako ng dating? Ano na ang mangyayari sa'yo?" panghihimutok ko.

"I'm sorry," the expression on his face softened, despite of the allergy reactions he could still managed to speak in a low and smooth voice. "Anong gagawin ko para mapatawad mo na ako? Should I eat another bowl of shrimp again?"

How I wished to spank him for being so stubborn. I knew that he meant to eat the shrimp just so I would come home without him forcing me to, risking his health and I could tell that it's one of a damn stupid decision that he made.

It's not curiosity that could kill a cat. It's stupidity.

Umalis ako sa kanyang tabi mula sa pagkakaupo ko roon at ipinuwesto ang sarili sa harap niya, kaharap siya.

"Isa lang naman ang gusto kong gawin mo, Law," ngayon ay pakiramdam ko, ako na ang mas maawtoridad sa amin nang dahil sa sobrang seryosong tingin na hatid ng mga mata ko sa kanya.

"What is it, little girl?" he asked and I could hear a little desperation in his low voice. "Gagawin ko, basta 'wag mo lang ipagawa sa akin ang makipaghiwalay ako sa'yo dahil 'yon ang hinding-hindi ko gagawin."

"No, not that," umiling ako bago hinawakan ang kamay niya nang nahuling palihim niyang kinakamot 'yon habang nakatingin ako sa kanya. "I... I just want you to stop the spank, stop bossing me around and stop treating me like a kid."

My gaze dropped on his swelling hands and fingers, I caressed my thumb against the part where I just caught him discreetly scratching it, taking the chance earlier to do it since I was distracted at the soft expression on his chiselled face.

"'Yan lang ba?" he sounded so confident and what I wished for him to do was just a piece of cake.

"Please? I want you to stop it and just treat me like I'm at your age, just like how you treated Dana and Kirsten."

Nang dahil sa sinabi kong tungkol kay Dana at Kirsten ay naalala ko tuloy si Ate Francesca at ang nangyari kanina sa Starbucks.

How did he treat Ate Francesca before? In what way? What does it feel like? Was he sweet to her? Because according to what I had heard from Ate Francesca on the phone call, she mentioned that she misses his hugs and kisses. How often did they hug and kiss?

Was there something sexual happened between them?

Pinapatay na naman ang utak ko ng mga gano'ng hindi kaaya-ayang iniisip ko. Pero hindi ko talaga maiwasang isipin 'yon, boyfriend ko siya at mas lalo lang akong naguguluhan sa sinabi niya kanina.

Hindi raw kami magkapatid?

Nagpapatawa lang ba si Law o isa ito sa epekto ng pagkain niya ng hipon?

Nag-angat ako ng tingin kay Law nang mahina siyang tumikhim pero patuloy ko pa rin namang hinahaplos at kinakamot ng marahan ang kanyang kamay.

"I can't do that, little girl. I can't treat you like them," kahit sa paraan ng paggalaw ng mga mapupula niyang labin na parang kagagaling niya lang sa isang matagal na halikan ay sobra itong nakakakuha ng atensyon. "May responsibilidad ako sa'yo, hindi kita puwedeng pabayaang."

"Hindi ko naman sinabing pabayaang mo ako," saad ko at marahang inalis ang kanyang isang kamay na akamang kakamot sa leeg niya, ako na mismo ang marahang kumamot sa parteng 'yon.

"Pero sa gano'ng paraan ko sila tinatrato," pangangatuwiran niya, maiging nakatitig sa akin. "I don't care about them, but in your case, I do care about you."

"Okay fine, just treat me like a woman," I sighed.

"Then act like a woman," he demanded. "So I can treat you like one."

How to be a woman at the age of sixteen? To have a mature capacity of thinking? To be independent? To easily understand things and not just to understand her own opinion? Ought to do reasonable decisions? To know her rights and to stand on her own.

If that is, it would be really easy for him to treat me like a woman, but unfortunately, it would be hard for me to act like one.

I smiled at him with assurance after I evicted the uncertainty out of me. "Okay."

"'Yong sinabi ko kanina," panimula niya ulit matapos ang isang minutong katahimikan na parang hinahanda niya pa ang kanyang sarili. "Tungkol sa atin na hindi tayo magkapatid."

"I understand, Law, nagalit ka lang sa akin kaya mo nasabi 'yon," I smiled sympathetically.

Patuloy ko pa rin ako sa marahang pagkamot ng kanyang isang kamay at sa kanyang leeg habang mariin siyang nakatitig sa mukha ko.

Hindi pa nakakakiliti ang marahan kong pagkamot sa kanyang leeg?

"Hindi ako galit sa'yo, nag-aalala ako," aniya dahilan kung bakit ako natigilan sa mga ginagawa ko.

"Anong ibig mo'ng sabihin?"

"Totoong hindi tayo magkapatid, Kryptonite," walang pagdadalawang-isip niyang pag-uulit.

"'Wag ka nga'ng magbiro ng ganyan, Law," seryoso, hindi na ako nasisiyahan sa mga pinagsasasabi niya.

"Nagsasabi ako ng totoo, Kry," mas seryoso ang mababang tono ng kanyang boses saka inalis ang kamay kong nasa kanyang leeg at mahigpit 'yong hinawakan, ni hindi bumitaw ang kanyang mga mata sa pagtitig sa aking mukha. "Hindi tayo magkapatid."

Umiling ako. "Ayoko ng ganito, Law, please?" bakas ng takot sa boses ko. "Magkapatid tayo, magkapatid tayo 'di ba?"

"Listen to me, Kryptonite," he commanded, voice was a little bit hardened. "You're legally adopted."

"How? That's impossible."

"Go

there," he pointed somewhere behind me at the corner of the room, I turned and my gaze followed it. I saw that he was pointing the safe deposit box that was safely placed on top of his drawer and hidden out of my view if I didn't looked carefully, I wouldn't have the chance to see it. "It's open, kunin mo 'yong mga papel na nasa loob."

Pinakatitigan ko siya ng ilang segundo bago ako sumunod sa utos niya at umalis ng kama upang pumunta sa sulok na bahagi ng kwarto niya kung nasaan 'yong safe deposit box.

Nakaawang ang nagsisilbing pinto nito kaya totoo nga'ng bukas na 'yon.

I wouldn't have to crack the safe.

Lumington muna ako kay Law nang nasa harap na ako ng safe deposit box, I was asking his permission silently just by looking back at him and he nodded with authority, but ended up looking cute for me.

The weak and harmless Law, I wouldn't expect to see him like this because before? Even if he's in this state, he's still scary.

Madalas siyang galit kapag nangyayari ito sa kanya noon pero ngayon ay hindi.

Hinarap ko ulit ang safe matapos 'yong nangyaring distraksyon kanina, dapat ay isipin ko muna ang tungkol sa mga sinasabi ni Law, kung totoo man 'yon.

Dahan-dahan kong binuksan 'yon at pinigilan ko talaga ang sariling suminghap nang makita ang nakatambak na makakapal na pera sa loob, sa gilid ng mga pera ay naka-ipit ang mga papel na sinasabi niya sa pagitan ng wall ng safe at ng pera.

Grabe siya kung magtipid, ang dami niya naman palang pera at hindi pa kasali 'yong pera na binigay sa kanya ni mommy.

Maingat ko nga'ng kinuha ang mga papel at sinara na agad ang safe saka naglakad pabalik sa kama kung saan naghihintay si Law.

Bumalik ako sa puwesto ko kanina at inilapag ang mga papel sa pagitan namin. Gamit ang kanyang isang kamay ay may hinanap siya sa mga papel, pinanood ko siyang ginagawa 'yon hanggang sa nakita niya na ang hinahanap niya at inilahad sa akin 'yon.

"That's a DNA test of you and Dad when you're just three years old," he explained, unbothered from the allergy reactions. "Si Dad pa mismo ang nagpagawa ng DNA test, kinuha ko 'yan sa mga important files mo sa mansion."

I didn't know how to read a DNA test result, but the zero at the bottom of the box line printed on the paper could tell the fact that it was indeed negative.

The paper that I almost grip wasn't even fake.

Nag-angat ako ng tingin sa kanya mula sa papel na hawak ko.

"Kaya ba iba ang pakikitungo mo sa akin?" husga ko na unti-unting binabalot ng galit ang boses ko. "Dahil may alam ka."

"Makinig ka muna sa akin, Kryptonite," his voice had remained low, maybe because of the swelling of his throat.

"Fine, explain, explain it why am I adopted? Why did they—all of you keep it from me?" padabog kong ibinaba ang hawak kong papel sa ibang nakalapag na papel dito sa pagitan namin upang hindi ko 'yon mapunit. Grievously, I stared at him. "I-I'll accept it, why!"

Dumb and numb, how hilarious those two words could describe me and it even rhymed. I couldn't feel anything, even the cool air of the room stuck off my skin and held me torpid, senseless little girl.

An uproarious truth that I couldn't decipher had declared, unmasked. Betraying the

lies that had came to live with me, in me for the past sixteen years, and that I have known what's the essence of the air I breathe.

I felt like, I was being beguiled by the lies that I thought was the truth.

"Hindi nila alam," calm, Law's voice was calm, opposite to mine. "It's just Grandpa, Dad, Mom, our uncles and aunts."

"P-Paano mo nalaman? Did you eavesdrop?" I suspected.

Napalunok ako nang nautal ako. Parang may kakaibang nakabara sa lalamunan ko at sobrang bagsak ng mga balikat ko na parang may nakapasan doon na sobrang bigat.

"No, I was six turning seven years old when mom came home in the mansion with a new born baby. Nakakapagtaka dahil hindi naman buntis si mom," paliwanag niya, mahinahon at dahan-dahan upang mas malinaw ko itong maintindihan. "Masyado pa'ng bata sila Lazarus, Laki at ang mga pinsan ko noon, hindi nila alam ang tungkol sa'yo."

Hindi agad ako nakabawi nang dahil sa mga nalalaman ko ngayon. May pruweba siya at napatunayan niyang hindi ito peke.

"Kilala mo ba ang totoong magulang ko?" I asked, hoping to hear a name from him.

"Hindi ko sila kilala."

He's not lying to me, was he?

Hindi ko na siyang tinanong pa dahil alam kong hindi siya magsisinungaling sa akin. Mas gustuhin niya pa'ng tumahimik kesa pakainin ako ng mga kasinungalingan.

"'Yong tungkol sa picture? 'Yong nasa hospital si mommy? Anong ibig sabihin no'n?"

"Sa pagkakaalala ko ay simula no'ng dinala ka sa mansyon, matapos ang isang linggo nagkaroon ka ng lagnat kaya isinugod ka agad sa ospital," kahit na medyo nahihirapan siya sa pagsasalita ay pinilit niya pa rin sa mababang boses. "I watched you grow after you survived from the fever."

Hindi na muna ako nagsalita kaya nagpatuloy siya.

"Nagalit ako sa mga magulang ko dahil noong anim na taong gulang ka na, nagpakaabala na naman sila kaya gusto kong ako ang mag-aalaga sa'yo," he confessed, honest and unfeigned. "Nang nasa legal na edad ako, eighteen years old, nagbasa ako ng mga batas at artikulo online."

"W-What? Why would you want to take care of me?" my voice cracked.

Did he pity me, considering that mommy and daddy hadn't given me time and attention started at the age of six because I was not their biological daughter? I was adopted, that's why he wanted to take care of me?

"Sh, little girl, let me finish first," pagpapatahimik niya sa akin, mahigpit na hinawakan ang kamay ko. "I want dad to designate me to be your legal guardian. You were just eleven that time and I was eighteen but he wouldn't let me."

Legal guardian? He wanted himself to be my legal guardian so that he could also decide what's good for me? He could control me and put me into limitations?

And so he could take care of me.

"I need to make myself worthy for the position," tiim bagang dugtong niya, marahil ay iniisip ang mga pinag-uusapan nila ni daddy noon. "Wala akong maiharap na pagmamay-ari ko o bahay at lupa na nakapangalan sa akin, 'yong mana ko ay 'di ko naman makuha agad dahil buhay pa naman si Grandpa. Kaya lumayas ako at nagtrabaho, tinulungan naman ako ni Grandpa."

Sa kabila ng tinitiiis at iniinda niyang mga reaksiyon ng allergy niya ay nanatili siyang malakas sa harap ko. Kahit ang kanyang boses ay unti-unting bumabalik pero hindi pa naman gano'n katigas.

Hindi na rin ako masyadong nakakaramdam ng takot sa kanya. May kasalanan siya sa akin kaya bakit ako matatakot sa kanya? Humihingi pa nga siya ng tawad.

"S-So, ako pala ang dahilan kung bakit lagi kayong nag-aaway ni daddy?" I bit my tongue right after I said it, my voice was trembling, I need to calm myself down.

"Ginusto ko 'yon, Kryptonite," he stated. "Ang totoo ay hindi talaga ako kinumbinsi ni mom na bumalik, kusa akong bumalik dahil may maipagmamalaki na ako at isa na ang bahay na 'to."

"Bahay mo 'to? Hindi 'to kay mommy?"

"Gumawa sila ng kwento para mapaniwala ka," pag-amin niya, diretso ang tingin sa akin habang nararamdaman ko ang kanyang hinlalaki na hinihimas ang kamay kong hawak niya. "Hinayaan kong tumira sila Lazarus at Laki rito ng ilang taon para hindi ka maghinala."

They equivocated me?

Tuluyan na akong natahimik at hindi malaman kung ano ang sasabihin.

"It's a long process 'til I had this," he grabbed another paper from the papers scattered between us and handed it to me.

I accepted it and read what's on it.

It's an affidavit of guardianship.

Kunot noo akong nag-angat ng tingin sa kanya at sinalubong ang napakaseryosong tingin nito sa akin. "Bakit hindi ko alam ang tungkol dito? I have the right—"

"Yes, you have, but you were just twelve years old when the petition was filed," even through the rashes on his neck and a little on his flushed cheeks, his eyes darkened. "You have to be fourteen years old and above in order to attend the hearing."

Tama siya, eleven ako noong naglayas siya at eighteen siya noon, twelve na ako noong bumalik siya at nineteen na siya.

I watched how the expression on his face hardened and his eyes darkened, I wouldn't feel intimidated by him. I should act like a woman and a woman wouldn't be intimidated by any man that easily.

Mariin akong pumikit nang hindi ko na talaga kinaya ang lahat.

"I'm your legal guardian, Kryptonite," Law announced.

Kanina pa talaga umiinit ang sulok ng mga mata ko, kaya nang nagmulat ako at isang

beses na kumurap ay inasahan ko na ang pagdaodos ng mainit na luhan hindi na nauubos simula kaninang pagdating ko.

"K-Kaya ba lagi mo akong hatid sunder sa school? Kaya ba... lagi kang nagagalit kapag may nagawa akong mali na maaaring makapagpatalsik sa'yo sa pagiging legal guardian ko?" tuluyan na nga'ng nasira ang boses ko pero nagpatuloy pa rin ako habang patuloy din ang pagbuhos ng mga luha ko. "Y-You're afraid that they might find you unsuitable for the position, right?"

"Please, calm down, little girl," pagpapahinahon niya sa akin.

Apparently, finding the truth about Ate Francesca and his relationship before was not worth my time. This one was more important than that.

Nakita ko kung paano siya pumikit ng mariin at ang pagtaas baba ng kanyang malapad na dibdib. Nagmulat siya ng mga mata at diretsong hinanap ng kaniyang paningin ang mga mata ko.

"Yakapin mo'ko, Kryptonite," pag-aalala, 'yon lang ang nakikita ko sa kanyang mga mata, kahit ang kanyang boses ay gano'n din.

Ilang minuto ang nagdaan at tahimik lang na patuloy na tumutulo ang mga luha ko, hindi ako gumalaw sa kinauupuan ko, hindi ako lumapit sa kanya para yakapin siya.

"I'm begging you, little girl, please, yakapin mo na ako," pagmamakaawa niya nang marahan kong inalis ang mahigpit na pagkakahawak niya sa kamay ko. "Kryptonite..."

Hindi niya hinayaang makawala ang isang kamay ko sa pagkakahawak niya. Kinuha niya ang iilang papel sa pagitan namin at inilapag sa kanyang nightstand.

Natatakot na ako sa sarili ko, bakit hindi ako humihikbi o humahagulgol? Umiiyak ako pero tumutulo lang ang luha ko, walang ingay na lumalabas sa aking bibig.

Ano naman 'yong sinasabi niyang ipapakulong siya kapag nalaman nila ang tungkol sa pamamalo ni Law sa pwet ko? Hindi ba dapat ay mas papanigan nila mommy at daddy si Law dahil siya ang tunay na anak?

Wala na akong maintindihan. Hindi ko kilala kung sino ang totoong magulang ko, paano ako nahanap ni mommy at bakit dinala niya ako sa mansion.

Nagpumiglas ako mula sa pagkakahawak ni Law sa akin habang tahimik na tumutulo ang mga luha ko.

"Kryptonite, please, yakapin mo na kasi ako, katulad ng ginawa mo kanina," hindi ko inasahan ang pagiging masuyo ng kanyang boses sa akin. Mahigpit niyang hawak ang magkabilang braso ko habang patuloy ako sa pagpumiglas. "Kryptonite, little girl, makati 'yong braso ko, please, sabi mo ikaw lang ang kakamot nito 'di ba?"

Sinadya niya ba talagang umamin habang nasa ganitong sitwasyon siya para kahit gustuhin ko ma'ng umalis ay hindi ko magagawa?

Nang hindi ako nagpatinag at huminto sa pagpumiglas ay siya na mismo ang gumawa ng paraan. Sinakop niya ang bewang ko gamit ang kanyang namumulang maskuladong braso at hinila ako.

My body squished against the hard muscles of his stomach and broad chest, he placed me on the space between his parted strong legs and imprisoned me by tightly wrapping his strong arms around my body to secure and make sure that I wouldn't

have the luck to escape.

Guarding and protecting me like he's my guardian angel.

Saka ko pa narinig ang hagulgol ko nang siya na mismo ang yumakap sa akin at isinubsob ang kanyang namumulang mukha sa leeg ko. Pakiramdam ko tuloy ay siya ang umiiyak at ako ang nagpapatahan sa kanya nang dahil sa posisyon namin.

Halos limang minuto kaming nasa ganitong posisyon at nagpumiglas pa rin ako hanggang sa naramdaman ko kung paano nagiging mas mabilis at marahas ang pagtaas baba ng kanyang dibdib na tumatama sa akin, kaya natigilan ako sa pagpumiglas ngunit humahagulgol pa rin.

"L-Law? Bakit-Law!"

Nakayakap pa rin siya sa akin nang agad na sinakop ng dalawang kamay ko ang kanyang magkabilang namumulang pisngi upang tumingin sa akin.

He wanted to breathe. Shortness of breath was one of the allergy reactions of eating so much shrimp.

"P-Please, don't... d-don't leave me, little girl..." kahit nahihirapan siyang magsalita ay hindi 'yon naging hadlang sa kanya.

Parang kanina lang ay ayoko siyang yakapin pero ngayon ay parang nawala ang galit ko at napalitan ito ng konsensya at awa.

With no hesitation, I got on my knees and moved my arm around his nape, one hand at the back of his head as I pulled his head to rest against my chest. His masculine arms remained and stilled around my waist.

I was crying and sobbing while he's not and just catching up, balancing the shortness of his breath into normal.

"H-Hindi kita iiwan, Law, pero sana maintindihan mo na nasasaktan din naman ako," humihikbi kong sabi sa kanya matapos ang ilang minuto hanggang sa naging mahinahon na ang kanyang paghinga.

Two weeks had quickly passed and Law was back to normal after how many days that Dr. Cuarez always come here for Law's medication or treatment. The rashes on his pale skin faded, he could breathe normally and speak the same way before with that intimidating hard voice of his.

Still, I could not forget about everything he said to me, but I'd rather shut my mouth 'til he's okay. I would just ask him next time, for the betterment of us.

I was learning how to wash the clothes and cook for our dinner because Law couldn't do it. Worried, I even made sure to get those fresh shrimps out of the fridge and just give it to our neighbor two weeks ago, plus I found a leftover cooked shrimps in the kitchen table that time, I immediately threw it away.

"What's for dinner, little girl?" pang-aabala ni Law nang narinig ko ang pagpasok niya rito sa loob ng kusina.

I was wearing a black apron so that just means, I was cooking.

"I told you, Law, I'm acting like a woman now so stop calling me little girl," naiirita kong sabi imbes na sagutin ang kanyang tanong.

Ni hindi ko siya nilingon kasi abala ako sa paglagay ng panlasa, pakiramdam ko kasi medyo kulang ang pagkakatatimpla nang tinikman ko 'yong sabaw nito kanina.

"Kry, I'm just used to it," narinig kong malalim na boses nito, papalapit hanggang sa naramdaman kong nasa likuran ko n siya. "It's cute."

Tinakpan ko 'yong niluluto ko bago humarap kay Law. "So what should I call you?" ngumisi ako. "Little boy?"

"No."

"Oh boy, yes! Of course I wouldn't call you that. I don't think you're little anyway," I crossed my arms against my chest, saka ako sumimangot. "Muntik na akong naging baldado sa paglalakad nang dahil sa laki mo."

He didn't talk back. He grabbed the soy sauce from the table nearby instead and opened the glass lid of the black coloured dutch oven behind me and pour the soy sauce on it. He then snatched the cooking spoon that I was currently holding, and stir it in to mix the soy sauce thoroughly to our dinner that I was currently and trying hard to cook before he closed it and looked at me.

Talagang magaling na siya. Wala na kasi 'yong mga rashes at pamumula saa balat niya.

"What did you do?" taas kilay kong tanong at binawi mula sa kanyang kamay ang cooking spoon.

"Nothing," ang tanging sagot niya habang nanatiling matangkad at matuwid na nakatayo sa harap ko.

"Nothing? Ba't nilagyan mo ulit ng soy sauce? Nilagyan ko na 'yon kanina," nakasimangot kong wika, nakatingala sa kanya. "Are you saying na hindi masarap 'yong adobong manok ko last week kaya mo dinagdagan ng soy sauce dahil nagkulang sa lasa?"

Hindi na naman siya nagsalita.

Ayaw niya kasing magsinungaling.

He doesn't want me to discourage in learning how to cook, but I need critiques and judgement. How would I improve if I wouldn't know what's wrong with it?

The first dish that I cooked last two weeks was chicken adobo because I knew that he liked chicken, and it was a little bit easy to cook anyway.

If he could eat my healthy seafoods and vegetables, I could eat his favorite chicken, pork and beef.

Hinanda niya na ang mga kakailanganin namin sa pagkain nang malapit ng maluto 'yong adobong manok.

Pinaupo niya ako sa upuan kung saan siya madalas nakaupo matapos kong naligo after, siya na nga mismo 'yong naghain ng rice at chicken adobo, 'yong upuan na inuupuan ko ngayon ay pakiramdam ko parang ako ang naghahari sa hapag kainan.

Hindi pa siya umupo at nilagyan niya pa ng pagkain ang plato ko.

"Let's pack our things after this," anunsyo niya na habang abala sa paglalagay ng pagkain sa plato ko. "Tomorrow Monday, the ferry's departure is eight in the

morning."

"Saan tayo pupunta?" tumingala ako sa kanya, humihingi ng sagot.

"Butuan City," he paused, placing the serving spoon back to the bowl of chicken adobo. "Hindi rin naman tayo magtatagal do'n, may susundo sa atin sa Nasipit Pier papuntang Compostela Valley sa oras na makarating tayo do'n."

Nakalimutan ko na tuloy ang tungkol do'n kaya siguro ay nasa dalawang linggo na lang ang pagstay namin do'n imbes na isang buwan dahil nagpaggaling pa siya ng dalawang linggo rito.

"Bakit ferry? Why not airplane?"

"Sabi ni Grandpa," aniya bago marahang hinalikan ang tuktok ng ulo ko ngunit hindi lang do'n, bumaba pa ang paghalik niya sa panga at leeg ko. "Little girl, you smell like strawberry."

"Law..." I bit my lower lip when I felt the heat.

Napasinghap ako nang dahil sa gulat nang hinila ni Law ang upuang kinauupuan ko paatras at lumuhod siya sa harap ko, sa pagitan ng kinauupuan ko at ng mesa. Mukha pa nga siyang nagtatago sa ilalim ng mesa kung aatras pa siya.

My body got unexpectedly excited when he removed my dark green dolphin shorts along with my white panty.

"Put your feet on the table, little girl... and spread your legs."

Chapter 26

Engine

"Sinong magsusundo sa atin sa pier?" I asked watching his car loaded with our baggage.

"Heron," Law answered shortly.

"Really? I miss Kuya Heron," I meant to make my voice semi-formal. I didn't want him to think the other way around about it.

Most of the time before, I always receive that malignant stare from him to scare the hell out of me if he find that I have wronged him. I didn't want to welcome one now, did I? I have been very stubborn lately but despite of it, I do have the average intelligence capabilities of a female to think according to the situation I was in-I couldn't even call myself a woman yet.

After he ratified that I was legally adopted? Mainly, I would be mad at them, furious at mommy and daddy for keeping such important information about who was I.

I knew that there's more knots to untie and reveal the truth behind it. I have the gut feeling that I need to know who my parents were, I couldn't have the peace of

mind if my biological parents in question remained unanswered.

For the most part, I would like to know them.

It's been how many nights that I always got to cry discreetly inside the bathroom or my wardrobe whenever that thought of me as a legal adopted child of Ysa and Zacharias come to disrupt my mind, I didn't wanna think that Law would have to know about me, crying, so I hid myself.

Don't blame me for crying over it because I have been with the Cavanaugh for sixteen years of breathing, and I thought that my problem was just all about care and attention that they had failed to give, then all of a sudden I would hear from Law that I was legally adopted? They're not fair.

Watching Law rearranging the baggages at the back of the car for his eyes' comfort, I curved the corner of my lips upward, knowing that he's a person who wanted everything in neat and in order.

I found myself, lingering my gaze at his body. Somehow, the sight had given me the urge to go to his side and undress him for my own satisfaction but I stop myself. I hate it when in just one look at his body, I eventually forgot that I was a female, his body that's persuading me to touch it.

He's wearing a simple white tee shirt that had imprinted a; watch me have you written in a minimalist capital letters at the left side of his chest, the tee shirt was paired with dark pants for men.

Napakasimple niya talaga manamit kaya gano'n din ang ginawa ko. White tee shirt lang at dark fitted jeans. We're both wearing white sneakers. Sinong hangal na babae ang magsusuot ng high heels para magtravel from Manila, North Harbour Pier 4 to Nasipit Pier?

Our travel would take thirty-five hours before we'd arrive on Nasipit Pier. We would be sailing on the ocean for one day and eleven hours. Law told me that there were a little changes of the time departure, instead of eight, it would be nine in the morning, we would arrive the next day at eight in the evening.

So much time floating on the water and missed to step on the land.

"Kryptonite."

I grinned and angled my head sideward, studying him. "Yes?"

Sinara niya na ang kanyang pinagkakaabalang pag-aayos ng mga baggage sa likod ng kotse bago humarap sa akin.

Amazed at the sight of the taut muscles on his upper arms, I gently bit my lower lip to stop from grinning and just focus my attention to his intimidating eyes.

Kung saan saan na lang kasi napapadpad ang tingin ko.

"Get in the backseat," he commanded firmly.

"Why? Shouldn't I be sitting on the front seat?" asked I, trying not to express a flirtatious lopsided grin.

Lumapit siya sa kinaroroonan ko, malapit lang sa kanyang sasakyan dito sa labas ng bahay.

"Sa backseat din naman ako uupo," aniya sa normal niyang matigas na tono ng boses. "Nakabalik na sila, inutusan ko si Noah at Isaiah na ihatid tayo sa pier."

"Okay," I shrugged my shoulders, understood. "Nasa hacienda na ba si Grandpa Sattie?"

"Yes, one week ago," he countered with so much patient in his rough voice.

"Anong sasabihin natin sa kanya?"

"Siya ang may sasabihin sa atin," saglit na may dumaang mapang-angking ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha. "Don't worry, okay? You have me."

"Okay," nakaangat ang tingin ko sa kanya, didn't want to be disturb by his physical appearance and intimidating presence, stepping forward to him, I concentrated my eyes on his. "I have you."

Marahan kong hinawakan ang kanyang maskuladong braso at ako na mismo ang humila sa kanya papunta sa pinto ng backseat ng kanyang kotse.

Properly sitting on the backseat with open door and Law standing straight outside to wait for Kuya Noah and Kuya Isaiah, I moved myself to the side of the backseat, just right where I could place myself in the open door of the car near Law.

"What ticket did you booked? A cabin? Or just the ticket for normal travelers na nagtitipid? 'Yong mga nakahilera at magkadikit na mga bed bunks sa iisang place?" tanong ko at umusog ng konti sa kinauupuan ko para mas mapalapit ako sa kanya.

"I booked a suite room," he replied, glanced at me for a second before shifting his gaze back at the road since he parked his car right beside the gate. His eyes were searching for the two to show up.

Had I mentioned that he asked Kuya Hezion to buy him a phone last week? Si Kuya Hezion pa nga ang pumunta rito sa bahay para ibigay 'yon sa kanya. Kaya siya naka-book ng ticket online.

"Really? Pero ayos lang naman sa akin ng kahit ano," tugon ko sabay sandal sa backrest ng backseat.

"I want to have a privacy with you," mariing sabi nito.

He darted his eyes on me, moving his body close to me, leaving no place for anything else.

"Privacy," I stated, head was slightly downturn while maintaining an eye contact with him. "Is it just privacy?"

"We're not going to use the suite room for it anyway," aniya, parang may iba pa'ng iniisip bukod sa sinabi ko. "Kilala ko 'yong captain ng ferry, magkaibigan sila ni Grandpa."

Magkasunod na mura ang narinig ko sa isip ko nang narinig ang huli niyang sinabi.

"Ayan na naman tayo sa mga kaibigan ni Grandpa eh," agad akong umiwas ng tingin sa kanya.

I remembered, the last time we have met one of Grandpa's friends in La Trinidad, at the strawberry farm, it turned out to be so wild.

Strawberry picking was fun, but not until Law took me to the greenhouse.

Having sex in that place? It's hardly de rigueur. Improper and unacceptable in polite society, that's obvious.

Nevertheless, he did it like he was a farmer who owned the place.

"Do you have a problem with them, little girl?" napakatigas ng kanyang boses nang nagsalita siya.

"Uhm, no, not actually," umatras ako sa kinauupuan ko nang halos ipasok niya na ang kalahati ng kanyang katawan sa loob ng backseat. "Just wondering why you know them and we're not."

"Sinasama kasi ako ni Grandpa noon sa mga lakad niya," sagot niya, 'di man lang umatras ng konti para kahit papano ay magkaroon ng distansya sa pagitan namin. "Since I was four."

"And now I'm wondering what does the four year old Law look like," finally, I had altered the subject into another subject that was appropriate enough to talk about.

"Do you wanna see?"

"Can I?" excitement was marked in my voice.

I haven't seen pictures of him before. Meron naman siguro pero parang sinadya niyang itago, kahit ang mga picture frames sa mansion noong mga bata pa sila ay matagal nang itinago.

"Of course," matipid siyang ngumiti saka ko naramdaman ang kanyang malaki at magaspang na palad sa tiyan ko. "Let me get you pregnant first."

Nanlaki ang mga mata ko nang napagtanto kung ano ang pumapangalawang kahulugan ng huling sinabi niya.

"Law!"

"Tama naman ako 'di ba?" he came closer to me, and I could feel his large hand crawling from my stomach moved to my back and down to my butt, making it as the substitute of the seat that I was currently sitting on. "Kapag lalaki ang anak natin ay magiging kamukha ko 'yan."

Napapikit ako nang inanggulo niya ang kanyang ulo para halikan ang panga ko, marahang tinutukso ang balat ko gamit ang kanyang mapangahas na labi at dila.

"Masyado pa akong bata, Law," I leaned one hand against his shoulder and gently push him.

"Hm?"

Nainis ako nang nakitang hindi siya nakinig sa sinabi ko hanggang sa naramdaman ko ang kanyang mainit at mamasa-masang mga labing unti-unting dumudulas patungo sa pisngi ko.

"Will you please listen to me?" bakas ang irita sa boses ko habang marahang tinutulak ang kanyang balikat. "Come on, Law. This is a serious matter."

Sliding his warm and wet tongue out, he caught my lower lip. I thought that he's going to kiss me thoroughly, but he didn't.

Kinagat niya lang ang pang-ibabang labi ko at hinila ito sa pagitan ng kanyang mga ngipin hanggang sa dumulas ito at nabitiwan niya, followed by a resounding noise of a soft pop and I felt his rough hand under one cheek of my derriere squeezed it.

"Who says it's not?" tugon niya sa sinabi ko kanina at sa wakas ay lumayo na ng konting distansya mula sa'kin, inalis niya na rin ang kanyang kamay sa pwet ko. "Importante naman talaga sa'kin ang pagbubuntis mo."

"Napag-usapan na natin ang tungkol dito, 'di ba?" hindi ko na mawari kung naiirita, naiinis o galit na ba ako. "I'm not ready for it, so I suggest that you might want to use condom?"

"Don't wanna," his voice hardened and fixing his eyes on the road.

"Law-"

"Sh, they're here."

Sinundan ko ng tingin kung saan siya nakatingin at nakitang may isang taxi na huminto sa gilid, malapit sa bahay namin at doon lumabas ang dalawang pinsan namin.

Pinsan niya lang pala.

Tahimik na lumapit kay Law sila Kuya Noah at Kuya Isaiah, nakikita ko pa sa nagaguwapuhang mukha ng dalawa na parang ayaw pa nilang ihatid kami.

Bakas ang pagrereklamo sa mukha ni Kuya Noah pero hindi na siya nagsalita, magkaiba kay Kuya Isaiah dahil parang wala lang sa kanya pero alam kong sa kaloob-looban niya ay gusto niya na talagang bumalik at gawin ang gusto niya.

Law handed Kuya Isaiah the key before they fit themselves in the car. Obviously, the designated driver was Kuya Isaiah.

And then we're off to go.

As expected, the usual behaviour of our cousins if they're under Law's intimidating presence was epic. Silent and strange, 'cause I knew from the far beginning who they were without Law.

They're savage, untamed and wild, the rascallions of sex.

Maiba si Kuya Lazi kasi medyo good boy 'yon katulad ni Law.

"Kuya Noah? May condom ka?" pagbasag ko sa nakakabasag tenga'ng katahimikan.

Narinig ko ang mahinang pagmura ni Law sa tabi ko nang biglang napa-brake si Kuya Isaiah at muntik nang sagasaan ang naunang sasakyan.

For my safety, Law had buckled the seatbelt on me earlier, and yet he forgot to buckle his for himself.

"Ha?" natanong ni Kuya Noah saka namin naramdaman ang dahan-dahang pagbawi ng sasakyan nang nagsimula na itong tumakbo.

"Si Law kasi gustong makipag-sex sa girlfriend niya kaya lang ay baka makabuntis siya," pagdadahilan ko, 'di alintanang nandito si Law sa tabi ko. "May condom ka, kuya?"

"Ah ano, baka pagalitan ka ni Kuya Law, Kry," kinakabahang angal niya mula sa front seat at hindi man lang ako sinulyapan.

I pouted and turned to Law, leaning my elbows on his hard lap and propping both sides of my cheeks against my palms.

"Law, please? Hindi ka naman magagalit 'di ba?" nakatingala akong tumingin sa kanya, nagpapaawa.

Bumaba ang tingin ko sa braso ni Law at nasaksihan ko ang pag-igting ng kalamnan niya sa kanyang braso.

"Bigyan mo na, Noah," matigas na utos ni Law.

A coy smile plastered on my face as I turned my head to look at the front seat.

"S-Sige, kuya," kinakabahang tugon ni Kuya Noah mula sa front seat.

I accepted the square shaped flat thing, but if I squeeze it between my thumb and index finger, I could feel something circular soft thing inside. A condom from Kuya Noah. I stared at it with flashing eyes and broad grin when I saw that it was strawberry flavor.

Marahan kong isiniksik sa bulsa ni Law ang condom bago umayos ng upo.

"You and your girlfriend need a protection, Law," I said, quickly smashing my lips against his cheek that's just normal for us.

Alam kong sa mga oras na 'to ay parehong kinakabahan na sila Kuya Noah at Kuya Isaiah. Never pa kasi nila akong narinig na nagsalita ng gano'n kay Law kahit na alam nilang ganito naman talaga ako simula noon, sinasagot si Law.

They're afraid that Law may question them as to why I know about those things that meant for adults only. He would suspect them for I was being taught.

I didn't think he's intimidating now, besides I was acting like a woman so I should act like the brave one.

Acting like a real woman was not an idiotproof character to imply and maintain. It would be a backbreaking one hell of a task as if I was carrying an assload of odoriferous shits at my back. Very difficult, that is.

I had no idea of what was about to occur if we finally have ourselves inside the ferry or what was Law's intentions, but I got a bad feeling that's why I wanted to be ready and asked for condom.

Nang nakarating na kami sa pier ay isang malaking backpack at rolling suitcase ang dala ni Law at isang maliit na backpack lang 'yong pinadala niya sa akin kung saan nandoon ang phone niya, mga pera at undergarments namin.

It's not that heavy, I was carrying it with no sweat.

What about Kuya Noah and Kuya Isaiah? The two left right after.

Earlier, our car couldn't get through the entrance but when Law took out the ticket they immediately allowed us to pass, and then Law paid the terminal fee before we went inside the terminal building.

Law guided me, walking beside him with his masculine arms locked around me, I face

front where I could see two metal detectors and two luggage x-ray scanner.

All our baggage were scanned.

Ang dami pa'ng inasikaso ni Law dahil bumili siya ng tickets online, may ipinakita siyang mga photocopy, at pumirma bago kami kinunan ng litrato for record purpose.

A man was designated to escort us to a VIP room where we would wait along with the other first class passengers, I saw that the passenger terminal for the public had a large and wide two waiting areas, large tv screens, public restroom at the corner, kid's play side and food stalls, there were people patiently waiting there.

I'd like to wait there than in a boring VIP room. Mukhang mas maganda kasi roon kasi mas naaaliw ang mga mata ko sa mga bata at iba pang makikita ko roon.

The escort left and told us that he'd be back immediately when it's time to board. We wait and sit at the VIP room about an hour? As I've remembered, we came here at eight in the morning.

"Law, anong time na? Ba't 'di pa rin bumabalik 'yong guy?" pangungulit ko kay Law, kinakagat ang sariling daliri ko nang dahil sa sobrang boring habang komportable akong nakaupo sa isang passenger lounge, unlike sa public waiting area, metal ang mga upuan doon. "Filipino time, yeah," I rolled my eyes.

Tahimik na umupo si Law sa tabi ko since malaki naman 'yong kinauupuan ko at hinablol ang kamay kong kanina ko pa kinakagat ang mga daliri nito.

"Hintay lang, little girl," he said, massaging my knuckles with his lean and rough thumb.

"Pag nasa loob na tayo ng ferry ay agad ba'ng aalis?"

"No," marahan siyang umiling habang nakatingin sa kamay kong minamasahe niya. "Baka nga mamayang alas diyes pa."

"Ba't ang tagal," naiinip kong reklamo. "Ang sabi mo, nine o'clock 'yong departure?"

Magkaiba pala talaga kapag eroplano at barko ang sasakyan namin. 'Yong eroplano kasi mang-iiwan kapag 'di nakapunta 'yong passenger on time. 'Yong ibang barko naman ay ang tagal umalis na parang may hinihintay at umaasang dumating 'yong hinihintay nito.

So if I were to choose between the two; captain of a plane and captain of a ship.

I would choose the latter.

"Oo, pero sisiguraduhin kong 'di ka maiinip, Kryptonite," maawtoridad nitong sabi, patuloy pa rin na minamasahe ang palad at likod ng kamay ko.

"Hm? Bakit?" kunwari wala akong alam. "Pupuntahan ba natin 'yong kapitan ng barko?"

Though, I was trying to guess something so predictable.

"Yes," it was a short reply from his baritone voice.

"Ahm, anong sasabihin natin sa kanya? Na naiinip na tayo at utusang paalisin na 'yong barko?"

"Don't play innocent here, little girl," mabagsik nitong sabi, natigilan pa siya pagmasahe sa kamay ko at umangat ang nagdidilim na tingin nito sa'kin. "You know why."

"What do you think of the captain, Law? Akala mo ba ay hahayaan niya tayong gumawa ng kababalaghan sa navigation bridge?" I spoke with an impact of pure sarcastic expression on my face. "Hindi ba puwedeng sa loob ng state room-suite room whatever na lang tayo?"

He narrowed his eyes at me. "The captain offered it," his face became darker. "I said yes and it's not going to be in the navigation bridge."

Kabado, 'di ko na alam kung ano pa ang sasabihin kong dahilan para makalusot.

"Saan? Sa forecastle ng ferry?" the inner corner of my brows raised. "Law, mahiya naman tayo sa mga isda sa dagat."

"Fine," bakas ang pagsuko sa kanyang boses nang inangat niya ang kamay ko upang halikan. "Wala na tayong gagawin."

"Really? Thank you!" I beamed and hugged his hard and practically muscle-bound body.

Naalala ko lang talaga ang nangyari kagabi kaya ayoko munang may kung ano mang mangyari sa amin, hanggang ngayon ay ramdam ko pa rin sa pagkakabae ko ang kanyang matulis at nakapangingilabot na dila.

Ayokong isipin ulit kahit na nagugustuhan ko rin naman ang nangyari ay parang nakaka-trauma pa rin ang marinig ang sarili kong boses na umuungol at halos sumigaw na sa sobrang sarap at kung paano niya nilalapasap ito. Pinapahiwatig sa akin na mas masarap pa 'yon kesa sa adobong manok na niluto ko at nakahain sa mesang nasa harap namin.

Matabang ba 'yong niluto ko? Kaya gusto niya 'yong mas maalat-alat na ewan at masarap daw para sa kanya?

Sa wakas ay nakabalik na rin 'yong escort at agad kaming iginiya palabas ng terminal building patungo sa pier. Mahigpit ang hawak sa akin ni Law nang umakyat na kami ng barko.

It's cloudy day, there's a possibility that it would rain but it wouldn't be that heavy.

Another person guided us to our suite room. Unfortunately, it was a female and I hate the way she had stolen glances at Law's direction.

She told us the features of the room, about the bed, television, the restroom, there's the life vest closet and more because I couldn't wait the moment 'til she's done blabbering and leave. She's not talking to us, she's actually talking to Law.

Bakit? Kasi kay Law lang siya humaharap at tumitingin habang nagsasalita.

By the look on Law's face? He seemed that he doesn't care about the features of the room, but was I just hallucinating to see a little interest on his eyes the way he look at the woman? He was enjoying the talk, wasn't he?

I took in the appearance of the woman and glared after I scrutinize how mature and nice her body was even with just a simple uniform. I guess the woman was two or three years older than Law.

And that's the kind of female he wanted, right? A woman, a mature woman.

"Salamat," narinig kong sabi ni Law sabay bigay ng tip at kung hindi lang ako namalikmata ay nakita kong hindi lang tip ang ibinigay niya sa babae.

It's a small white folded paper.

What the bloody hell?

Sa sobrang inis at galit na nararamdaman ko ngayon ay hinubad ko 'yong suot kong white sneakers at humiga sa kama, mahigpit na hawak ang kumot na nakatakip sa katawan ko. Tatal ay dalawa naman ang kama rito.

I heard the door closes.

Chewing my bottom lip, I closed my eyes firmly and thought of anything else. I wanted to divert my attention instead of thinking about how Law look into the woman's eyes minutes ago.

Genuinely, I presumed that the little piece of paper contained with letters. Letters that formed into sentence, bespeaking that if she had vacant time, she could come over to fill my absence here if possible that I would leave this place and wander around the ferry.

And then what? They could perform the heating act of moment, participating in each other's will.

Whatever.

I would never leave this suite room and I would never let Law leave too. What if they're going to do it somewhere else because they couldn't use this place since I had made up my mind and enunciate a pledge that I would never leave this suite room?

Nevermind that, I would just ignore Law until we reach Butuan City and that's thirty-five hours.

"Little girl?" matigas na tawag nito sa akin.

Nakatalikod ako kaya 'di niya makikita ang mukha ko at hindi ko siya makikita.

"Inaantok ako," I said with disinterest and flaring nostrils. "Gisingin mo na lang ako kapag nakarating na tayo."

Which was one day and eleven hours. I would sleep non-stop and do my very best to ignore him.

"Anong problema?" palapit ng palapit ang kanyang malalim at matigas na boses sa kinahihigaan ko. "Ayaw mo ba rito? Gusto mo ba'ng lumipat tayo?"

"No," I force a yawn with eyes closed. "I'm tired, I wanna rest."

Kahit nakapikit ay ramdam ko pa rin ang pag-ikot ng mga mata ko nang naramdaman ang paglubog ng kama sa bahagi ng likuran ko.

"Get up," utos nito, ramdam niya siguro ang pagiging distant ko sa kanya. "Kausapin mo'ko."

"Ayoko."

"Kryptonite."

"Ayoko sabi!" I bursted bluntly, getting up from laying on the bed in an abrupt manner and shot him a glare. "Do'n ka na sa babae mo! 'Di ba may gagawin kayo dahil hindi kita pinayagan sa gusto mo'ng mangyari sa atin? Umalis ka na bago pa magbago ang isip ko."

"What are you saying, little girl?" he cocked his head, confused. "Wala akong ibang babae."

"'Wag ka nga'ng magmaang-maangan, Law," matulis ang bawat salitang hindi ko napigilang kumawala sa bibig ko. "Akala mo hindi ko nakita ang papel na palihim mo'ng binigay sa babae kanina? Kasabay ng pagbigay mo ng tip? Nakita ko! Malinaw na malinaw sa akin na gusto mo'ng makipag-sex sa kanya!"

"Fuck."

"Kita mo na? Nagmumura ka kasi totoo ang sinabi ko 'di ba?" I cannonaded him with my artillery of judging words. "Halata namang gusto mo siya, ayaw mo pa'ng aminin."

Pinanood ko siyang yumuko at umayos siya ng upo bago maayos na hinarap ako.

"Kryptonite, little girl, I'm sorry for saying bad words," marahan ang kanyang boses pero bakas pa rin naman ang pagiging matigas nito. "Mali ka ng iniisip."

He attempted to hold my hand by slowly reaching for it, like he intended to tame an untameable tigress.

"'Wag mo nga akong hawakan," I swatted his large hand away and started to get my shoes on. "Galit ako sa'yo."

Tahimik niya akong pinanood at nang naisuot ko na ng tuluyan ang sapatos ko at umalis ako sa kama at naglakad patungo sa kinaroroonan ng pinto.

"Saan ka pupunta?" tanong nito, pero hindi naman gumawa ng paraan para pigilan ako.

Talagang gusto niyang umalis ako? Fine then.

"Aalis ako para magamit niyo na 'to," ni hindi ko siya nilingon nang binuksan ko ang pinto at lumabas.

"Kryptonite, bumalik ka dito," marahas niyang utos.

I faced him and reach for the doorknob to close. I didn't close it yet, I observed him, stilled and firmly sitting on the bed where I left him.

"Enjoy your sex with her, Law," I said as my good bye and plastered a tight-lipped smile on my face before slamming the door shut.

"Kryptonite!"

Naglakad ako sa masikip na corridor ng ferry, pero enough space na para pwedeng magkakasabay na maglakad ang tatlong tao.

May iilang pasahero akong nakasalubong at may nakasunod din naman sa akin.

Pero hindi pa nga ako nakakalayo mula sa kinaroroonan ng suite room namin ay narinig ko ulit ang boses ni Law.

"Kryptonite! Bumalik ka rito!" his voice thundered through the walls of the corridor.

Instead of following his orders, I expressed a smile that reached my eyes and sprinted through the corridor.

Ni hindi ko siya nilingon habang tumatawa akong kumaripas ng takbo at may iba pa'ng nabubunggo ko, narinig ko pa ang paghabol ni Law sa akin at ang paghingi niya ng tawad sa mga natamaan ko kaya hindi niya ako nahuli agad.

Natigilan ako nang nakarating ako sa pinakadulo at nakitang wala na akong ibang malilikuan.

"Oh shit!" malutong kong mura nang tumingin ako sa pinanggalingan ko at nakitang papalapit na si Law.

Sobrang dilim ng ekspresyon nito sa mukha at ni hindi niya ako nilulubayan ng tingin.

I looked around to find a way to get out of this trap and saw a white door beside me here at the end of the corridor.

There's a warning sign on top of it.

"Fuck it, Kryptonite! Come back here!"

Pumasok ako sa pinto at bumungad sa akin ang hagdan pababa, pababa at pababa pa. Hindi ko alam kung saan ako dadalhin ng hagdan pero patuloy pa rin ako sa pagbaba habang parang tanga'ng nakangiti dahil dinig na dinig ko ang mga mabibigat na yabag ng paa ni Law na tumatama sa hagdan mula sa pinanggalingan ko.

"Ma'am, bawal po kayo dito-"

Hindi ko pinansin ang isang lalaking paakyat at nakasuot ng unipormeng kulay puti na nakasalubong ko sa hagdan at patuloy akong bumaba.

"Sir!"

Nataranta ako nang wala na akong makitang ibang hagdan pababa.

Isang pinto lang ang nakita ko rito.

A white hatch door.

I glanced sideways to see if there's someone but it's all clear.

Marching to go to the door, I opened it cautiously.

Isang hagdan pero ang nakakagulat kasi ay ang daming kung anong mga metal na bagay ang nasa buong paligid.

Bakit hindi pa masyadong maingay? Ang tanging narinig kong ingay ay parang tunog generator lang. Kailan pa ba papatakbuhan ang ferry?

After minutes of admiring the place full of machineries, the metals, vessels, something like what they call transmission and any other metallic and hard things,

I stepped backward but to my surprise I felt something harder at my back.

Harder than the things that I could see here.

It was moving up and down rapidly against my back, and I could feel its hot air roughly hitting against the skin of my neck.

"Who says that I'm going to have sex with other girl?" pinaghalong dahas at tigas ang pamilyar na boses na nagmula sa likuran ko.

I froze on my spot, unable to move when I tried, I felt another hard and rough thing wrapped around my right arm to keep me in place. It felt like an iron hand.

"Hm... Engine Room is a nice place, little girl."

Chapter 27

Mature Content Warning. This chapter may contain content of an adult nature. If you are easily offended or are under the age of 18, just ignore and skip some scenes. Some words within are intended for adults only and may include scenes of sexual content, strong languages, violence etc.

Hot

"The captain told me that before we leave the pier, the engine is given one hour notice," bulong ng nakakalusaw at matigas na boses ni Law.

He got a tight grip on my arm. Even an inch of trying to break free would hurt my arm. I was never been a successful warrior of achieving sovereignty.

But I know that I could control and manipulate him in the other way around, not physically though.

"Hm? Anong ibig mo'ng sabihin? Maraming preparations pa ang gagawin dito bago makakaalis 'yong barko?" pilit kong pinapakalma ang boses ko, ayokong maramdaman niyang kinakabahan ako.

"Hindi lang dito, pati na rin sa itaas," dagdag niya.

Nasa likuran ko pa rin si Law at ang higpit masyado ng pagkakahawak niya sa isang braso ko. Idinidiin niya rin ang napakatigas niyang katawan sa likod ko katulad noong ginawa niya sa greenhouse.

Bakit ang hilig niya sa ganitong posisyon?

"Pero bakit ang ingay na at hindi pa rin gumagalaw 'tong ferry?" I traveled my gaze around the Engine Room and I could see no one.

Maybe the engineers were just anywhere here somewhere.

"Standby, the main engine is put on standby," Law answered, lowering his face down

to my neck. "May kalahating oras na lang tayo."

The warmth of his breath sent my body in a dither. Almost losing my equilibrium, I inhaled, deep enough to fulfill my lungs with air that smell like machine oils.

"Para saan?"

"Para gawin ang gusto ko."

Hindi ko na matandaan kung saan niya ako hinila pero sa bawat nadadaan naming mga makina ay wala man lang kaming nakasalubong na mga nagtatrabaho rito sa baba.

Siguro ay nasa magkabilang dulo sila ng Engine Room?

Muntik na akong napasigaw nang bigla akong hinatak ni Law pababa sa sahig upang magtago sa isang malaking makina, mahigpit niya akong niyakap at marahang idiniin ang kanyang magaspang na palad sa bibig ko para hindi ako makasigaw.

Heavy footsteps walked past us from the other side of the huge machine where we're hiding. I took a little peak at the little hole from the machine beside me that got through the other side to see who it was, but I wasn't successful of trying.

Blurry dark blue, that's the only thing I saw. I presumed that it was the color of their uniform here.

"Habang standby, may mag-aassign sa kanila kung saan sila mananatili," whispered by that hard and gruff voice of his. "Sinabi sa'kin ng kapitan ang lugar kung saan walang naka-assign na magbabantay."

Taking off his hand from covering my mouth, he helped me stand on my own feet, facing him.

I got irritated, he's just so tall and that I needed to tilt my chin up. Towering over me as if he was the king that holds earth-shattering vainglory, just because he became so successful in life, achievements after achievements.

He owned house and lot, another house in Grandpa Sattie's hacienda. I wouldn't be surprised if he did use his own money to study law and pay my tuition.

How did he earned money in just one year, at the age of eighteen? With the help of Grandpa Sattie, yes, but how?

I'd ask him later.

Hinawakan ako ni Law sa magkabilang balikat ko para ipaharap sa kaninang dinadaan namin pero pinigilan ko siya at nanatiling nakaharap sa kanya.

"Hindi ba tayo papagalitan, Law?" I asked with knitted brows, worried. "Paano kung aalis sila tapos maglibot-libot dito?"

"That won't happen," bakas ang pagiging sigurado niya sa sinabi. "They're professionals, little girl. Kung saan sila, do'n lang dapat sila, maliban na lang kung may emergency o kailangan nilang gumamit ng banyo."

Tagos na tagos sa mga mata ko ang matinding paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin. Bahagya pa'ng nakatungo ang kanyang ulo para titigan ako.

"A-Ano ba kasing gagawin natin dito, Law?" bahagyang nanginginig pa ang boses ko nang umiwas ako ng tingin sa kanya at inilibot ito sa buong paligid. "Naiinitan na

ako, ang init."

"It's just half hour."

"Half hour?" I shifted my look back at him.

"Pinagod mo'ko," bakas ang pagiging delikado sa kanyang mababang tono ng boses.
"Kaya ikaw naman ang papagurin ko ngayon."

Despite of the sharpness and acidity of his words, the least that I could do was to let it affect me.

I knew what does that mean.

"Law, naman..." I calmly pushed his hard chest as he drew himself closer to me.
"Hindi ko pa nakakalimutan ang nakita ko sa inyo kanina ng babae."

Nakita ko ang pag-iba ng ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha nang dahil sa sinabi ko.

It softened.

"Ano ba'ng nakita mo? Hinalikan ko ba 'yong babae?" marahan at maingat ang kanyang boses, nagtatanong na parang wala siyang ideya at hindi niya matandaan ang mga nangyari kanina.

"Hindi," I replied curtly.

"Tell me what's your problem," he demanded, stern and unhappy.

At first, I was hesitant of what was I going to say. Reviewing my reasons on my mind, I found them unreasonable.

Although, my reasons were unsubstantiated, that wouldn't stop me from telling him my concerns.

"The way you look at the girl," panimula ko, nakababa ang tingin sa mga kamay ko.
"Parang gusto mo'ng makipag-sex sa kanya."

"What the..." I heard his hard voice paused for a second, that had given him enough time to hold my chin and lift it up for him to have a direct eye contact with me.
"Little girl, hindi ibig sabihing tumingin lang ako sa kanya ay 'yon na ang gusto kong gawin."

Itong nakikita ko sa mga mata niya ngayon ang totoo, kumpara sa nakita ko kanina.

His orbs was marked with concupiscence, lust, crave and thirst. But the difference was, it wasn't naturally forbidden because we're not blood related.

It was legally illicit.

Yes, I haven't forgotten that he's my legal guardian and brother in paper. As long as we keep this relationship untold, then we're safe.

"Pero 'yon ang nakita ko," giit ko, nangangatuwiran at marahas kong inalis ang kanyang kamay sa baba ko. "Hindi mo na mababago 'yon."

Naglaho ang pagiging malambot ng ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha at hindi ko na maipaliwanag ang bakas ng dahas doon.

"Tignan lang natin kung hindi ko mababago 'yang iniisip mo pagkatapos ng gagawin ko sa'yo," tiim bagang hinawakan niya ang isang braso ko at sapilitan na pinatalikod, paharap sa dinadaan namin. "Lakad na, ayokong magsayang ng oras."

"L-Law please..."

"Lakad," matigas nitong utos sa akin, walang pinipiling lugar, panahon at oras.

Ilang beses akong napalunok bago humakbang, ramdam ko pa rin ang mas mahigpit na pagkakahawak niya sa braso ko kumpara kanina.

We're walking on an elevated and beyond narrow metal floor, only two persons could walk side by side but in our position, Law was at my back, following and held me like I was under arrest for making him tired of running after me.

Beside this metal floor was the machines, metal tubes, circular little things and more. There's no trail of the machines that would look old, such as rust, I guess this ferry was new, boarded a few times before.

Hindi ko alam at wala akong ideya sa kung saang bahagi ng Engine Room kami pupunta pero alam kong sinigurado na ni Law na walang dadaan sa bahaging 'yon.

Huminto kami sa isang sulok. There's enough space to occupy. Ang mas nakakamangha pa ay hindi kami makikita dahil sa iilang malalaking nakapintang kulay puting bakal na tubo rito, pero hindi pa rin talaga ako mapakali dahil nasa gilid lang ang daanan at baka ay may dumaan.

Saktong nakatalikod pa ako at hindi ko na nagawang humarap kay Law nang wala pa'ng isang segundong nakapuwesto kami sa sulok ay agad niya nang hinila pababa hanggang tuhod ang suot kong jeans kasama na ang panty ko.

Lumington ako sa likuran ko, at bumaba ang tingin ko kay Law na nakaluhod na pala sa metal na sahig dito, kaharap ang malulusog kong pwet.

"Hm... I missed this," aniya habang titig na titig sa pwet ko at marahang pinipisil ang magkabilang pisngi niti gamit ang kanyang magaspang na palad.

"You missed it? Parang kagabi lang ay 'di mo na nga 'yan tinigilan," kunot noong tanong ko, I moved my hand to reach for his smooth hair and when I got a hold of it, I caressed it softly, gently.

I should be gentle. Alam kong kung magiging marahan lang at maganda ang pakikitungo ko sa kanya ay gano'n din ang maisusukli niya sa akin.

"I want this every second, Kryptonite," sobrang mapang-angkin ang naririnig ko sa kanyang boses, lalo na ang nakikita ko sa kanyang mga mata.

Ayaw niyang magkaroon ng kahati.

Pinagmasdan ko ang hitsura ng pwet ko at nakitang bakas pa rin ang mga kiss marks na ginawa niya kagabi.

"Ahm... hm-hm, ah, Law... take it easy, please..." ungol ko nang mabilis niyang sinunggaban ng marahas na pagdila kasunod ng pagkagat ang kaliwang pisngi ng pwet ko.

Mula sa pagpisil sa pwet ko ay lumipat ang kanyang mga kamay sa balakang ko, mahigpit na hinawakan 'yon para mas lalong maidiin niya ang kanyang mukha sa pwet ko.

Madalas talaga sa ganitong gawain ay inuuna niya ang pwet ko, pinanggigigilan at pinagdidiskitahan.

Marahang tumatalbog ang pwet ko sa tuwing tumatama ang kanyang mukha roon at binabaon ang kanyang matangos na ilong sa hiwa nito kaya buong lakas kong pilit pigilan ang pag-ungol, takot na baka ay may makarinig sa akin kahit sa kabila ng ingay ng mga makina na naririnig namin dito.

The intensity of heat was unbearable. 'Ang bilis ng pagtulo ng mga pawis namin kahit na ilang minuto niya pa lang hinahalikan, dinidilaan, kinakagat at sinisipsip ang balat ng pwet ko.

"Ugh... ugh-hm, ah-oh... Law..." hindi ko na talaga napigilan ang sariling umungol.

Lumalalim nang lumalalim ang pagsisid ng kanyang mamasa-masa at madulas na dila sa hiwa ng pwet ko, hindi ko na rin napigilan ang sariling beywang na gumalaw at ang paghigpit ng hawak ko sa kanyang malambot na buhok, idinidiin ang kanyang ulo sa pwet ko.

He's enjoying it, I could feel how sharp and active his tongue was, and the warmth of it made my core burn in hot sensations.

"Little girl..." marahang tawag niya habang nakaangat ang tingin sa'kin, patuloy at abala pa rin siya sa ginagawa niya sa pwet ko.

Binitiwang niya ang isang balakang ko
at hinagod ang isang pisngi ng pwet ko bago ito itinagilid upang makagawa ng awang sa pagitan ng hiwa nito.

Kakasimula pa nga lang namin pero parang mauubusan na ako ng hangin nang naramdaman ko ang kanyang mapangahas na dila sa añas ko.

Moan after moan, I took all the pleasure that I could get.

Nakaawang ang mga labi ko habang nakapikit at nakatingala sa nagmistulang kisame namin dito. Kusang gumagalaw ang katawan ko sa tuwing dinidiin at binabaon ni Law ang kanyang mukha sa pwet ko.

"L-Law-ugh! Oh my God, Law!" tumaas ang tono ng boses ko nang naramdaman kong halos gulpihin na ng kanyang bibig, mga labi, ngipin at dila ang pwet at añas ko.

Hindi ko namalayang sakop na pala ng dalawang kamay niya ang tiyan ko at sa paraan no'n ay mabilis niyang ginagalaw ang katawan ko. Napapa-ungol na lamang ako sa tuwing marahas na tumatama ang pwet ko sa matigas niyang mukha.

I panted, hot air was getting in and out of my lungs fast and hard. The inner corner of my brows raised and almost met because of great pleasure and strong sexual desire.

Mariin kong kinagat ang pang-ibabang labi ko nang naramdaman ko ang paggalaw ng isang kamay ni Law mula sa tiyan ko pababa. 'Yong isang kamay niya naman ay nanatili lang sa tiyan ko.

I felt his large and rough hand trying to make a little space between my closed tight groin. He wanted me to open the inner part of my thighs.

Watching his hand, like it was knocking against my door, begging for me to open because of the way he caressed, massaged and slightly squeezing my thighs.

I slowly parted my legs and inhaled deeply from the sight of his fingers ran its way to the most sensitive part of my body, I bit my lips as I felt one finger slipped in between the cheeks of it, slowly touching and rubbing my cḷit.

"O-Oh yes, ugh-ugh..." ang landi ng boses ko pakinggan, 'yong mahinhin sa pandinig na parang nasasaktan habang nasasarapan.

Ang hirap magpigil ng ungol lalo na't parang na-corner ako ni Law dito. Habang inaabala niya ang sarili niya sa pinakapaboritong parte nito ng katawan ko ay parang may sariling isip naman ang kanyang kamay at daliri na hinahaplos, hinihimas at hinahagod ang cḷit ko.

I was already wet, I could feel it the way his lean middle finger glide and slide.

"Oh fuck, you're so wet, little girl, so wet for me," komento nito mula sa likuran ko habang hinahalikan ang pwet ko paitaas sa likod at bewang ko.

Mahigpit pa rin akong nakahawak sa kanyang medyo mabasang buhok nang dahil sa sobrang pawis at init, sa sobrang saya at sarap sa pakiramdam ng ginagawa ng kanyang mapang-angking kamay sa pagkababae ko ay doon naman napakapit ang isa ko pa'ng kamay sa kanyang palapulsuhan na malapit sa pagkababae ko.

Nakakapanghina ang mga ginagawa niya sa'kin kaya ang higpit masyado ng pagkakahawak ko sa kanyang malambot na buhok at palapulsuhan na halos pumutok na 'yong ugat niya mula roon hanggang sa kanyang maskuladong braso.

He's rubbing my cḷit, it was gentle at first but after minutes of stroking, it became fast, and ungentle.

"U-Ugh-ugh... Law!" sunod-sunod ang naging pag-ungol ko pagkatapos ng paghagod niya ay naramdaman ko namang umulos at pilit ipasok ni Law ang kanyang gitnang daliri sa pagkababae ko.

Naramdaman ko ang kanyang mainit at mamasa-masang mga labi sa beywang ko, sunod-sunod na hinahalikan ang gilid na bahagi ng tiyan ko. Sa wakas ay tinigilan niya na rin ang pwet ko nang naramdaman ko ang matigas niyang dibdib kung saan tumatama ang pwet ko sa tuwing napapaatras ang katawan ko nang dahil sa nakakapanibagong pakiramdam ng pagpasok ng kanyang daliri sa pagkababae ko.

Kahit ilang beses niya nang ginawa 'to pero pakiramdam ko, parang unang beses pa rin namin 'to.

Through the generator soundlike noise all over the Engine Room, I could still managed hear my moan.

Law wasn't satisfying, I couldn't get enough of him because I want more of him, I need more.

He inserted another finger and made the movement of it faster.

Ang hirap dahil halos hindi ko na maitikom ang bibig ko at abot abot na naman ang ungol na lumalabas doon.

I felt my orgasm after another minute and that made my body shudder, releasing something from my core.

Akmang magsisimula ulit si Law pero hindi ko siya hinayaan sa pagkakataong ito. Marahas kong inalis ang kanyang mga kamay sa pagkakahawak sa akin at isinuot ulit

ang panty and jeans ko.

"Kryptonite," he warned.

Humarap ako sa kanya pagkatapos kong ayusin ang sarili ko at nakitang nakatayo na rin pala siya ulit mula sa pagkakaluhod sa sahig kanina.

Tumingala ako sa kanya. "You're so unfair, Law. You know that I want you too."

Humakbang ako ng isang hakbang sa kanya at sinadyang binaba ang tingin sa malaking umbok ng kanyang pants. I pressed my index finger against my swollen bottom lips flirtatiously, seducing him.

Akmang hahawakan ko na sana ang butones ng kanyang pants pero agad niya akong pinigilan at mahigpit na hinawakan ang palapulsuhan ko.

"No, I won't let you, little girl," pagtutol nito, kahit ang kanyang boses ay magaspang ay matigas sa pandinig ko. "It's inappropriate."

"Oh so kissing my butt is appropriate?" nauubusan na ako ng pasensya at gusto ko na talagang gawin ang gusto ko na alam kong ikasasarap niya. "Please, I wanna try it, Law. I wanna give you pleasure too. I thought I own it? Bakit ayaw mo'ng gawin ko ang gusto ko?"

Ilang beses niya na rin akong pinigilan na gawin ang gusto ko at napupuno na talaga ako.

Si Law pa talaga ang tumatanggi? Bakit si Kuya Laki ay halos ipagsiksikan ang kanyang pagkalalaki hanggang sa lalamunan ng babae? Tapos si Law ayaw niya dahil inappropriate daw? Aba'y magaling.

"Hindi pwede, Kryptonite," giit nito.

"Why?" I smiled, getting on my knees.

Hindi na talaga ako nagpapigil sa kanya at mabilis kong inalis mula sa pagkakabutones nito ang kanyang pants at agad na inilabas ang kanyang pagkalalaki.

Napalunok ako nang nakitang sobrang tigas nito at nakatayo, nakatutok diretso sa akin. Dahan-dahan kong hinawakan ang kalahati no'n at natigilan ako nang sa unang paghawak ko pa lamang ay mas lalo lang itong tumigas pero ang lambot sa pakiramdam.

"Kryptonite—fuck, little girl, don't," he gripped my hair at the upper part of my nape and gently pulled it backward.

Hindi ko natuloy ang gagawin ko nang umawang pa nga lang ang mga labi ko ay hinila niya na ako palayo roon.

"Why, Law? There's nothing wrong with that," sabi ko sabay tayo dahilan kung bakit naging marahan ang kanyang pagkakahawak sa buhok ko.

Pinanood kong bumaba ang kanyang paningin sa mga labi ko at marahas na hinapit ang beywang ko palapit sa kanya para sakupin at angkinin ng kanyang mga labi ang mga labi ko.

I closed my eyes shut, feeling his wet tongue and moist lips that were much hotter than the air. Napapaso ang mga labi ko sa tuwing pinasadahan niya ng kanyang mainit na labi ito. Kinakagat ang pang-ibabang labi ko na parang humihingi ng permisong makapasok sa loob.

Before I could open my mouth, he cut the kiss and created a little space between us.

"I respect you, little girl," hinihingal niyang saad matapos pinagdikit ang mga noo namin, he stared at me, locked his blazing and radiating with fire eyes to mine. "Gusto ko, kapag hinahalikan ko 'yan ay dapat malinis. I want it clean. Naiintindihan mo ba ako, Kryptonite?"

"But blowjob gives you more pleasure, right?" I asked, panting too, curious with pouted lips. "Men likes that, right? Hindi ba malinis 'yang ano mo, Law?"

Halos naghahalo na ang mainit naming hininga sa mainit na hanging nasa pagitan ng mga bibig namin.

"Kanino mo nalaman 'yan?" bakas ang galit sa kanyang boses. Hindi inaasahang masasabi ko ang gano'ng salita at ni hindi niya pinansin ang huling tanong ko, mas tumatak pa sa kanyang isip ang unang sinabi ko.

I heard that word from Kuya Laki before, however, I didn't want Kuya Laki in trouble.

"Uhm... Sa tabi-tabi lang," I lied.

"Hindi na kita papayagang pumunta sa tabi-tabi," tiim bagang sabi niya bago ako binitawan at umatras saka niya hinubad ang kanyang pangitaas na damit. "Tee shirt up, little girl," utos niya sa'kin matapos inilapag ang kanyang puting damit sa metal na sahig.

"Okay, but what about that?" turo ko sa matigas, sobrang tigas niyang pagkalalaki na nanatiling nakalabas.

"Ako na ang bahala, okay?" he firmly said. "Hindi pa ako tapos."

He helped me with my tee shirt, I thought that he was going to remove it but he didn't. Simply, he just pulled it up 'til the upper part of my chest, just enough for him to see my breast.

Giving my baby bra a dark stare, he frowned, displeased.

"Why are you wearing this?" asik niya at lumuhod ulit, sa harap ko upang magkapantay ang kanyang mukha sa dibdib ko, talagang hindi niya nagustuhan ang mga nakikita.

Imbes na sagutin siya ay ako na mismo ang nag-angat ng baby bra ko dahilan kung bakit lumambot ang paraan ng pagtingin niya sa dibdib ko at walang pasabing hinagod ang dibdib ko kasabay ng pagsakop ng kanyang bibig sa kabuuan nito.

He could almost took the full of my right breast inside his warm mouth. Licking the skin around my nipple, biting my nipple and pulling it in between his teeth.

"Hm... Law," nanghihina kong sambit dahil halos hindi ko na mahanap ang boses ko upang umungol.

Pinanood ko siyang nilalaplalap at sinisipsip ang nipple ko, his tongue was vibrating against it, sinasabayan ko pa siya sa paraan ng marahang paghimas ko sa kanyang buhok na alam kong nagugustuhan niya.

Nilubayan niya na ang dibdib ko matapos ang ilang minutong pagsisipsip, pagkagat at

paghalik niya roon. Tumigil siya na parang nagmamadali at ibinaba na ang tee shirt ko ngunit laking gulat ko na lang nang ang sapatos ko naman ang hinubad niya pagkatapos ay sinunod niya ang jeans at panty ko.

I wasn't completely naked, it's just the lower part of my body. At least, he had left my tee shirt on.

Observing him moving, he placed himself and lay on the steel floor, shirtless. Nakahiga naman siya sa kanyang tee shirt kaya siguro ay hindi masyadong matigas ang hinihigaan niya sa likod niyang matigas din naman.

Sumenyas siya sa aking umupo raw ako sa matigas niyang dibdib kaya ginawa ko. Ramdam ko ang matigas niyang dibdib at ang init ng kanyang katawan na mas lalong nagbibigay init sa mamasa-masang pagkababae ko.

"Sit on my face, little girl," he ordered.

"W-What?" natigilan ako sa paghimas ng kanyang balikat at inilipat ang tingin sa kanya. "Law that position is considered as sexual abuse! I'm not going to abuse you!"

"No, it's not abuse, unless you forced me to and tied my hands up with a rope," he explained, darkened eyes on me, simultaneously convincing me to do as what I was told. "You're not forcing me, I'm willing to be your slave, little girl."

Siniil ko ng matamis na halik ang kanyang labi bago ako tumango at tinulungan niya akong pumwesto sa kanyang mukha.

With parted legs, I slowly sat but my jaw dropped and pulled myself up abruptly when I felt his warm tongue flickered against my pearl.

Bumaba ang tingin ko sa mukha ni Law na nasa pagitan ng mga hita ko. "Law!"

"Get down on me, little girl," mahigpit niyang utos sa akin habang hawak niya ang balakang ko. "We're running out of time."

"O-Okay..." kinakabahan kong tugon.

Dahan-dahan kong ibinaba ang aking katawan upang umupo sa kanya pero hawak niya naman ang magkabilang balakang ko upang hindi ko maibigay sa kanya ang buong bigat ko.

Hindi ko alam kung saan ako kakapit pero hinawakan ko na lang ang kanyang kamay na nakahawak sa magkabilang balakang ko.

"Dahan-dahan lang, Law, please," I begged because I knew the last time he ate my pearl which was just last night.

He's so wild, ungentle and rough.

Siguro ay pambawi niya 'to sa dalawang linggong walang nangyari sa'min dahil sa allergy niya.

"O-Oh... shit," sobra ang pangininginig ng boses ko nang dahil sa sobrang magkaiba pala talaga kapag nasa ganitong posisyon. Buong-buo ang pagkakasakop ng kanyang bibig ang pagkakababae ko.

Nakaawang na naman ang mga labi ko habang pinagmamasdan siya sa pagitan ng mga hita

ko. Titig na titig ang kanyang mga mata sa akin na parang ayaw niyang may makaligtaan siyang naging ekspresyon sa mukha ko.

Marahan, marahan ang una niyang pagdila sa pagkababae ko, tinutukso ang clît ko at dahan-dahan lang ang paggalaw ng kanyang dila. Kahit ang kanyang mga labing tumatama sa pagkababae ko ay marahan.

"Moan my name, little girl, moan my name," narinig kong sabi niya sa kabila ng ingay sa buong paligid.

"Ugh-ugh... Law, oh-ah..."

Sobrang init, ang init na halos naliligo na kami sa sariling pawis namin. May namumuo na naman sa kaibuturan ko.

"Oh my God! Law! A-Ah... Ugh-ugh! O-Oh!" I was practically screaming right after the gentle movement of his unforgiving tongue changed into a new and fast rhythm, aggressive and dominating.

Naramdaman kong pilit niyang igalaw ang balakang ko para sabayan ang bilis ng pagdila at pagsipsip niya sa clît ko. Kaya kusa akong gumalaw at saka ko pa mas naramdaman ang kakaibang sarap na hatid nito. Kahit ang paraan ng pagsipsip niya sa clît ko ay parang hindi na kakayanin ng katawan kong manatiling nakaupo sa kanyang mukha.

Gumapang ang kanyang magaspang na kamay patungo sa loob ng suot kong tee shirt at doon hinihimas at pinipisil ang isang dibdib ko.

Ang bilis ng pagtibok ng puso ko, kasabay ng paghinga ko at ang pagtaas baba ng dibdib at tiyan ko.

Halos umiyak na ako nang dahil sa pinaghalong sarap at sakit sa pagkababae ko kaya nagawa ko pang inangat ang pagkakababae ko palayo sa makasalanang bibig at dila ni Law ngunit isang maling galaw pala talaga 'yon nang buong puwersa at marahas niya akong ibinalik pababa at paupo sa kanya saka pinagpatuloy ang ginagawa niyang paglasap sa pagkababae ko.

Nakakapanghina talaga ang matalim niyang dila kaya hindi ko napigilang sumigaw nang malapit na akong labasan.

Hindi niya tinantanan ang pagkababae ko, mas pinagbutihan at binilisan niya pa ang paggalaw ng kanyang dila roon nang naramdaman niyang malapit na ako.

Nanginig ang buong katawan ko at padapa akong napabagsak nang nakarating na ako sa dulo. Balewala lang kay Law na tumama sa kanyang noo ang tiyan ko. Mas nilakihan ko pa ang pagkakabuka ng mga hita ko nang pilit na inalis ni Law ang kanyang ulo roon at naramdaman ko pa ang pagpuwesto niya sa likuran ko.

"Tignan natin kung hindi magbabago 'yang iniisip mo, Kryptonite," aniya, marahas at matigas, pinapaalala sa akin ang naging usapan namin kanina.

Hindi pa nga ako nakabawi sa nangyari ay marahas niya na namang hinila ang bewang ko at mariin na lamang akong napapikit nang naramdaman ko ang ulo ng kanyang pagkalalaking nasa tapat ng lagusan ko.

He was behind me, perfectly on his knees while I was tired and on my knees too but my body had given up, and now I was reaching for the floor, wanted to crawl away from him for a minute to rest.

Restlessly, I let him have the full control because I didn't have enough strength to fight and ask him to give me a little time to rest. We have time limit here and this must be done before the ferry leaves the port.

Naramdaman ko ang pag-ikot ng dulo ng kanyang pagkalalaki sa entrance ng pagkababae ko, binabasa niya 'yon gamit ang katas ko.

"Damn it," malutong niyang mura nang umulos siya at naipasok niya na ang kalahati ng pagkalalaki niya sa akin.

Hinatak niya ang bewang ko sa posisyong nagmumukha kaming mga aso. Suminghap ako ng mainit na hangin nang tuluyan niya nang naipasok ang kanyang pagkalalaki sa'kin ng buong-buo.

"W-Wait!" pagpigil ko sa akmang paggalaw niya nang may naalala ako. "The condom? Did you use it?"

His manhood felt the same inside me. I was so sure that it wasn't wrap with condom.

"I forgot, wait, I'll check my pocket, little girl," sabi niya pero nanatili pa ring nasa loob ko ang kanyang nakakawasak ng pader na pagkalalaki. "Wala sa bulsa ko. Nasali ko yata sa pagbigay ng tip para sa babae kanina."

Nanlaki ang mga mata ko at napamura habang halos halikan ko na ang tee shirt na ni Law na nakalapag sa sahig kung saan ako nakaluhod at halos nagmukhang nakadapa.

I was about to react but delayed when he started moving, thrusting in and out, pounding against me.

Sa simula ay nagpapasalamat ako dahil marahan lang pero halos umiyak ako sa sobrang sarap at pakiramdam ng sobrang laki niyang pagkalalaki nang sinagad niya na at mas lalo pa'ng sinagad.

My body was rocking forward and backward because of the impact and I couldn't help but cry and moan his name.

Tagaktak ang pawis namin dahil maliban sa umaapoy sa sobrang init ang katawan namin ay dumagdag naman ang mainit na temperatura sa paligid. Walang ibang makakarinig sa ungol ko kung 'di ay kaming dalawa lang, ang ingay naman kasi ng mga makinang nandito.

Walang siyang sinayang na oras at wala na ring mas maisasagad pa ang kanyang pagbayo sa akin dahil sagad na sagad na.

"Little girl? Please talk to me..."

Buhat ako ni Law ngayon, sa posisyon na madalas niyang ginagawa. Chest to chest with his strong and muscular arms supporting my bottom in a sitting position. Nakakapit naman ako sa kanyang leeg at isinubsob ang aking mukha sa kanyang mabangong leeg.

Sweaty and shirtless, disheveled soft hair and sexy. It's Law, he's walking like this while carrying me up and back to the passenger accommodation.

I was wearing my tee shirt and jeans, he didn't even bother to wear my sneakers back on my feet. However, he didn't left my shoes either, he's holding it along with his dirty tee shirt using only one hand.

The ferry was finally moving, yet we're still here, on the stairs.

"Kryptonite, kausapin mo'ko," pamimilit nito.

Kanina pa talaga siya namimilit pagkatapos ng nangyari. May nakakita pa nga sa'min habang palabas kami ng Engine Room tapos sinabing bawal kami roon at ano raw ang ginagawa namin doon.

Ang sagot lang ni Law ay hinabol niya lang daw itong makulit na bata which was referring to me.

Upset and mad, that's what I was feeling right now. For his sake, he didn't used the condom because he had accidentally given it to the woman earlier.

Pinaliwanag niya pa sa akin kung bakit nagtagal 'yong babae sa suite room, hiningi pa raw kasi ang ID niya in exchange sa susi ng suite room, ibabalik lang daw 'yon kapag bababa na kami ng barko.

The little piece of paper? The woman would deliver it to the captain, a short letter from Law.

Nang nakaakyat na kami at naglakad si Law sa masikip na corridor ng ferry ay hindi ko pa rin siya pinapansin.

Once again, my body was aching, it felt heavy for me to even walk. I was completely drained and exhausted.

Kumunot ang noo ko nang naramdaman ko ang paghinto ni Law sa paglalakad.

"Sir, mabuti naman po at nakabalik na kayo," narinig kong hindi pamilyar na boses ng isang lalaki. "Twenty two glass plates at thirteen wine glass po ang nabasag niyo."

I admit that I was the reason behind it. Remembering those strangers I bumped into while I was running and Law was chasing me? I couldn't count the persons that got irritated and annoyed because of my unladylike behaviour and troubles that I made.

"I'll pay it," tiim bagang sabi ni Law, ramdam ko pa ang pagtigas ng panga niya dahil sa nakasiksik nga ang mukha ko sa kanyang leeg. "Babalik ako para magbayad, ihahatid ko muna 'to."

Naramdaman kong muling naglakad si Law.

"Ano po'ng nangyari sa kasama niyo? Kailangan niyo po ba ng nurse o doctor?" pahabol ng lalaki dahilan kung bakit natigilan na naman si Law sa paglalakad at hinarap siya.

"Salamat na lang pero sermon ko lang ang kailangan niya," tugon ni Law sa mas matigas pa'ng boses bago nagpatuloy sa paglalakad.

Nakarating kami sa sariling suite room namin at marahan niya akong pinahiga sa isang kama, hinuhubaran ako. Hinayaan ko siya kasi ang lagkit sa pakiramdam no'n at baka ay bibihisan niya lang ako.

Or worse, he would help me to take a bath.

Natapos na siya sa paghuhubad ng maruming damit ko at itinabi niya 'yon sa kinaroroonan ng maruming sapatos ko kasama ang kanyang maruming tee shirt.

Hindi niya na nagawa pa ang susunod niyang gagawin nang biglang tumunog ang bagong phone niya.

It's just a notification.

With his tensed jaw, he grabbed the phone from the small and unzipped backpack.

The expression on his chiselled face turned sour, then it darkened and hardened. Intimidating and scary after he saw what's on it.

I closed my eyes as he turned to me, and then I heard the phone, being slammed against the soft mattress and followed by his angry voice.

"Explain to me why the fuck this boy, Rule, claimed that you're his girlfriend?"

...

Kunwari ganito kaganda 'yong Engine Room, people. Ctto. Source: Google.

Chapter 28

Mature Content Warning (Mild). This chapter may contain content of an adult nature. If you are easily offended or are under the age of 18, just ignore and skip some scenes. Some words within are intended for adults only and may include scenes of sexual content, strong languages, violence etc.

Under

The ferry was long away from the pier, I was naked on the bed where he placed me and removed the dirty clothes that I was wearing earlier, my legs were tight closed but my feminine part was still on a perfect view for him to sightsee it.

I never thought that I would hear those fake news that he asked me and demanded for an instant and honest answer.

His chiselled face was screaming danger and threat, it was actually directed down at me. He looked at me menacingly with the imminence of burning lust in his intimidating eyes.

He's still shirtless and just wearing his dark pants for men.

Why was he like this? Whenever he's angry, he's horny? Wherein sometimes we're fighting through body language.

Scared, I lowered my gaze and it landed on his phone that he slammed against the mattress out of jealousy and frustration.

Seeing what's on it, a scowl came on display at my face.

It's a photo of Rule and I where we first met at somewhere I forgot the location and we all had fun of the underage drinking party by the side of the deserted road.

The day that the police got us and brought us to DSWD.

Intensely looking at the photo, it seemed like Rule was deep staring at me. Who captured this photo? How good because it caught me, staring back at Rule.

A caption of the post was there, making my brows raise and meet in confusion.

Kryptonite Cavanaugh and Rule Fortaleza is in a secret relationship and Rule just admitted yesterday! See the video attached!

I couldn't blame Law why he's angry and got in a bad mood.

Napakagat labi ako nang marahas na inalis ni Law ang phone niya sa kama at ibinalik 'yon sa backpack saka siya lumapit sa akin, sa dulo ng kama, sa paanan ko.

Hindi ako nanlaban nang binuka niya ang mga hita ko at dumapa sa kana bago ipinuwesto ang kanyang mukha sa gitna nito, kaharap ang pagkababae kong kinain niya kanina lang tapos ngayon ay parang may balak na naman siyang gawin 'yon.

Hindi ko na alam kung kakayanin ko pa ba.

Napakapit ng mahigpit ang dalawang kamay ko sa sheets ng kama nang nagsimulang hinahalikan ni Law ang singit ko.

"L-Law..." I called softly, pleading.

"Explain," was the only word he said, continuously kissing the inner part of my thighs.

Hindi ko na binalak pa'ng hawakan ang kanyang buhok dahil alam kong magugustuhan niya lang 'yon at baka ay mas lalo pa'ng pag-igiha ang ginagawa niya.

"W-Wait, please, stop that," I breathe in, deep and long. Watching him doing it again had got my sexual sensations overpowering my body. "How can I explain it to you if you're..."

Trying to escape this heaven of a hell, I dared to move my waist upward in a slow motion to get my feminine part a little distance away from his merciless mouth and the brutality of his tongue.

Pero nawalan ako ng pag-asang makahinga man lang ng kahit konti ang pagkababae ko nang mahigpit na hinawakan ni Law ang magkabilang bewang ko kasabay ng paglabas ng kanyang dila at idiniin mula sa ibabang bahagi ng pagkababae ko, dinilaan 'yon paitaas.

"Hm, sweet," he commented, fixing his gaze on my face. "Explain, little girl. Who's your boyfriend, again?"

Napaangat ang isang paa ko at ipinatong sa kanyang isang matigas na balikat para sana mailayo ko siya ng konti.

"Y-You," natagalan pa ang pagsagot ko at sobrang hirap na ring magsalita lalo na't muli niya na namang inaangkin ang pagkababae ko.

"What's my name?" demand nito sa gitna ng marahang pagdila ng clitoris ko, tinutukso ako.

Kinagat ko ang dila ko para pigilan ang pag-ungol but I released it to answer him.

"L-Law..." I trembled and panted. "Law Cavanaugh."

Unstable in my situation, I couldn't help but ask to myself, why was he doing this to me? He's supposed to be hurting me, judge me and fire bad words. Maybe this was his own way of punishing me. A great advantage to the both of us, he could do what he want and I could also want it whereas to be hard for me to express a word and explain my side.

Law was sort of something entertaining. A simple talk and fight makes him bored.

Unleashing those thoughts on my mind, maybe I should just participate like a responsible and good student in class. Funny, I couldn't even go to class in time and I sometimes ditch a subject for an hour, haven't been a punctual and patient student ever since I reached high school.

Patuloy lang ang marahang pagdila ni Law sa pagkababae ko pero sa kung saan gusto kong bilisan niya na ay mas lalo niya pa'ng dinahan-dahan.

Kahit na inabot ko na ang kanyang buhok at mahigpit na hinila iyon upang idiin ang kanyang ulo ay hindi talaga siya nagpatinag, hindi niya binilisan at hindi rin ako nakapagpaliwanag.

"Do you wanna cum, little girl?" mapanukso ang kanyang matigas na boses kasabay ng dahan-dahan na pagtama ng kanyang matalim na dila sa çlit ko.

Pumikit ako nang inipit niya 'yon sa pagitan ng kanyang mga malambot at mainit na labi at sinipsip ng marahan. Napakurba ang likuran ko nang dahil sa sarap ng paraan na panunukso niya.

Shit, I thought that if he's angry, he'd be harder on me, unlike the usual hard.

"A-Ah, yes, please..." tugon ko nang hinila niya ang çlit ko sa pagitan ng kanyang mga labi, dumulas at pinakawalan 'yon na may kasabay na malagkit na tunog.

Ilang segundo lang nang sumagot ako sa kanya ay bigla siyang huminto sa pagsipsip at pagdila saka umalis sa kanyang puwesto at idinikit ulit ang mga hita ko.

"Then you won't have it," walang awang sabi niya sa naghihimagsik na tono ng boses bago niya ako tinalikuran at kinuha ang kanyang kulay itim na wallet sa loob ng bag saka kumuha rin ng bagong tee shirt, kulay itim.

Natulala ako at parang nabalik ako sa katinuan ko.

He went to the door after taking the black tee shirt on, licking his bottom lip, savouring my sweetness that was sticking on it and clutching the black wallet in his hand.

Just as he was about to open the door, he turned to my direction and inspected my naked body with his scary eyes.

"Where are you going, Law? What the hell! Iiwan mo akong ganito?" naiinis kong tanong kahit na halata naman kung ano ang magiging sagot niya.

"May babayaran pa ako," sagot niya. "Babalik ako agad."

Hindi pa nga ako nakakapag-isip ng sasabihin ay binuksan niya na ang pinto, at siniguradong walang ibang dumaan sa corridor dahil baka ay may makakita pa sa akin dito sa loob bago siya lumabas at mabilis na sinara ang pinto.

Naiinis akong bumaling ng tingin sa pagkababae ko at 'di malaman kung anong gagawin. I sat up and slightly parted my legs to look at it.

I grimaced when I saw how swollen and red it is. It was also as wet as hell who knows, my sweet and his warm saliva just mixed on it.

Cold shower would help me out of this.

Kahit na nahihirapan pa rin ako at nauubusan na ng lakas para tumayo at maligo ay mabilis kong ginawa. May awa pa rin naman ako sa pagkababae ko kaya ayoko nang may sumunod pa sa ginawa ni Law.

Hickeys were everywhere at my breasts, waist, a little on my neck and I had it more on my butt. I was somewhat wincing and grimacing while taking a shower, rubbing the soap against my skin was a great challenge for me and I could finally expression a sigh in magnificent relief when I rinsed myself with cold water from the shower.

It didn't took me long to clean myself, as fast as I could, I had finished showering just twenty minutes. I was afraid that Law would came and caught me.

Making myself comfortable on this tortilla coloured tee shirt dress with one small black heart embroidered on its left part of the chest.

The outfit just looked like Law's tee shirts and was oversized, but this one was mine and meant to wear for females only.

I didn't wear any short shorts or cycling shorts for assurance to secure what's under this dress. It's just panty. Anyhow, I didn't care because I would not leave this suite room.

Feeling ko talaga ay hindi ko ma-eeenjoy 'tong pagsakay namin dito sa ferry nang dahil sa nalaman ni Law at ang kumakalat na fake news sa social media tungkol sa relasyon daw namin kuno ni Rule.

Since galit na galit at naiinis ako sa ginawang pag-iwan sa akin ni Law dito ay sisiguraduhin kong hindi niya na mahahawakan o kakainin pa ang pagkababae ko.

What should I do to make my time here enjoyable and worth it? Day spa treatments, whole body massage, go to the mini mart or what about the bar tonight? Should I go to the first class dining area later to eat my lunch? Maybe, I could wander around the ferry in the economy class bed bunks?

I must've lost my mind if I try the day spa treatments and whole body massage. The massager would wonder and ask why my body looked like it had gone through a lot of experience diving underwater, and ended up electrified by the longest, largest and fastest electric eel in the whole ocean of salaciousness and eroticism, however, at this moment, my body just got recovered from a severe shock.

Just great, now where were we?

Thinking of something to get the boredom discharge off my system.

May television naman dito pero hindi naman ako mahilig manood ng mga show.

Kadadapa ko lang sa kama nang narinig ko ang pagbukas ng pinto kasunod ang mga yabag ng paang papasok at ang pagsara ng pinto.

Nakasubsob ang mukha ko sa isang malambot na unan at hindi ako umimik o 'di kaya'y pinansin ang bagong balik na si Law.

Sino pa ba ang ibang papasok dito?

Narinig ko ang kaluskos ng pagkuha niya ng mga gamit sa isang bag bago ko narinig ang pagbukas ng pinto sa kinaroroonan ng banyo.

Kumunot ang noo ko nang hindi ko narinig ang pagsara ng banyo at naririnig ko ng malinaw ang ingay ng paglagaslas ng tubig mula sa shower.

I got up and turned to look at the bathroom.

Talagang nagmura ako nang bumungad sa mga mata ko ang hubo't hubad na katawan ni Law mula sa loob ng shower, naliligo. Walang hiya, hindi man lang sinara ang pinto.

"What in God's name..." I muttered when I narrowed my eyes like a telescope adjusting something from its lense to look closely and clearly to his body.

Tensed muscles, very hard with those six packs on his stomach. The cold water cascaded down to every inch of his hard body making the sight more quixotic and idealistic for every girl's dreams.

Umiwas ako ng tingin sa kanyang pagkalalaki nang nakita ko sa sulok ng mga mata ko na nanatiling nakatayo 'yon, hindi nakabitin. Mukhang galit na nakatutok sa akin.

Bakit lahat na lang sa kanya ay matigas? Magkaiba sa katawan kong malambot, 'yong buto at ulo ko lang siguro ang matigas.

That means he had a conversation with someone he has to deal with the broken plates and wine glasses while he's horny and hard? How did he deal with his buddy to calm and wait 'til they're done?

Walang patawad 'yang pagkalalaki niya, ang gusto ay laging nagagalit.

"Kryptonite," tiim bagang tawag niya. "Explain, little girl."

I sat properly on the bed, preparing myself for the unprepared explanation I was about to say.

"Wala akong alam sa mga 'yon, Law," my voice turned out soft and low, I shook my head. "Huli kaming nagkita ni Rule ay no'ng dinner natin with mommy, Aunt Lauren and Aunt Zara sa La Trinidad."

"Paano 'yong naglayas ka? No'ng bago ako kumain ng hipon?" hindi siya gumalaw sa kinatatayuan niya at hinayaang patuloy na binabasa ng shower ang kanyang katawan habang nakatitig sa akin. "Hindi ka ba nakipagkita sa batang 'yon?"

Irritation rushed under my skin. The way he called Rule wasn't good to hear. He looked down at Rule like how high he was at. How arrogant and egotistical man.

Pero ayokong lumala ang sitwasyon, kailangan ay pareho naming intindihin ang isa't isa, hindi 'yong siya na lang lagi ang umiintindi sa'kin.

Keeping my head down and stared at my hands on my lap, thought like I had done no good.

"Si Cykee lang ang kasama ko at... at..." I pressed my lips tightly and remembered one thing I almost forgot. "Pumunta ako sa Starbucks dahil hinihintay ka ni Ate Francesca."

"Hinihintay? Hindi ko siya kinausap simula no'ng bumalik siya," tanong niya at bakas ang pagtataka sa maawtoridad niyang boses.

Tumingin ako sa sahig ng bathroom nang nakita ang kanyang mga brasong nagsisimulang gumalaw at linisan ang sarili niyang katawan.

"Remember the call? She told you that she wanted to talk to you and meet her in Starbucks at exactly ten in the morning," I concentrated my eyes on his chiselled face, I didn't wanna be distracted by that godlike muscular built of his body and the extreme size of his manhood that could bring the wall of my cave into wreckage. I gripped the sheets of the bed. "Hindi mo alam dahil narinig ko 'yon bago mo pa man kinuha 'yong phone."

"Anong pinag-usapan niyo?"

Muli kong ibinalik ang tingin ko sa aking mga kamay nang siya naman ang maring tumitig sa akin habang abala siya sa paglilinis ng kanyang katawan.

"I asked her about your relationship with her before," I admitted, feeling guilty and embarrassed. "Ang sabi niya sa akin..."

"Tell me," utos niya nang isang minuto akong hindi nagsalita.

"Ang sabi niya sa akin ay pinagsabay niya raw kayo ni Kuya Lazi simula noong lumipat ng ibang university si kuya. She told me that you know it, pero pumayag ka pa rin sa gusto niya," umangat ang tingin ko sa kanya. "Totoo ba ang sinabi niya, Law?"

I could sense that he's way too serious now than earlier about Rule.

"Yes."

I swallowed the lump that had stuck in my throat and restrain from crying, I kept my eyes steady after blinking a few times. "Why? Paano mo nagawa 'yon sa sarili mo'ng kapatid, Law?"

He has to have valid reason why he did it, I have known him as a good man before. Even though he's strict and intimidating, I knew that he love his brothers and cousins.

Unmoving, I saw how his eyes hardened and remained standing straight on his spot under the shower, letting the water cleanse the bubbles down.

"Dad told me to do it," pag-amin niya, kahit ang kanyang kamay ay pinanatili niya sa kanyang gilid, hindi man lang hinaplos ang kanyang katawan para tulungan ang tubig na alisin ang mga bula. "Ang sabi niya ay subukan ko si Francesca dahil baka sakaling magustuhan ko siya. Si Lazarus ang susunod na hahawak ng kompanya ni Dad kaya hindi niya puwedeng pakasalan si Francesca. The Costales doesn't have to do with the Cavanaugh Finance Corp. Walang maitutulong ang mga Costales para kay Lazarus."

"Bakit mo sinunod si daddy? I thought you two weren't good?" I asked.

His jaw tensed. "Kukunin ka niya sa akin at ibabalik sa mansion kung hindi ko ginawa ang utos niya."

Bakit ganito siya? 'Di bale nang masaktan ang totoong kapatid niya basta't hindi lang ako mawawala sa kanya? Baka naman ay may ibang rason pa siya at makakabuti rin

'yon para kay Kuya Lazi?

Three years ago, Kuya Lazi broke up with Ate Francesca when he was just eighteen but he transferred at seventeen, the first year in senior high school. What's the meaning of this? Law had a relationship with Ate Francesca when he was just nineteen and broke up with her at the age of twenty?

One year, they fooled Kuya Lazi in one year.

Law was nineteen when he became my legal guardian and let me live in his own house, at the same time, he had a secret relationship with Ate Francesca.

"Did you try?" marahan kong tanong, nakatitig sa kanyang naninigas na mga mata. "To like her?"

"I obeyed to have a relationship with her but I didn't tried," he answered honestly. "I was determined to have you under my roof and if I try to like her, I know that it won't work."

"Hanggang ngayon ay 'di pa rin siya tumitigil. Gusto niya pa ring makipagbalikan sa'yo," bakas ang inis sa boses ko nang naalala ang mga narinig ko mula sa tawag ni Ate Francesca noon. "She's obsessed with you, Law."

"I'm obsessed with you, little girl," he countered, his baritone voice was full of dominance.

"Law..."

I watched him grabbing his white towel and new clean clothes after turning off the shower. All that I thought of was he's going to wrap the towel around his waist but he didn't.

Wiping the drops of water on his body, he stepped out of the bathroom and went in front of me, dropping his clothes on the bed where I was.

Naked and hard, he looked down at me.

I couldn't help but tremble under his intimate gaze, and to add up the intimidation, his hard buddy down there seemed like it wanted to reach me since it was so hard and outstretched, directed at me.

Kahit 'yong pagkalalaki niya ay kilala ako?

"Kaya ayokong inaangkin ka ng iba," asik niya, marahas at tila nawala na ang pagiging kalmado ng kanyang boses. "Dinilaan ko na 'yan, sinipsip ko pa, kaya akin ka lang dapat."

Padabog niyang kinuha ang kanyang underwear at shorts na parang nasa bahay lang kami at marahas na isinuot 'yon matapos tumingin sa lokasyon ng pagkababae ko.

Natakot ako kasi parang hindi na talaga siya kakalma, bakas ang dahas at galit sa kanyang mukha pero mababa lang naman ang tono ng kanyang boses kanina. Ayaw na ayaw niya sa lahat ay ang sinisigawan niya ako, hindang-hindi niya magagawa 'yon maliban na lang noong nangyari ang aksidenteng pagsagot ko sa tawag ni Ate Francesca at hindi ako nakinig sa kanya.

Tumayo ako sa kama kaya mas matangkad na ako sa kanya, hanggang baba ko na lang siya.

"Yes, Law, yes, sa'yo lang ako. Please, calm down, please?" I told him calmly, rubbing my soft palm against the tensed muscles on his arms.

I inclined my head to plant a kiss on both sides of his tensed jaw, cheek, chin, forehead, nose and a smack on his lips.

Bahagya akong lumayo upang tignan kung may pagbabago ba sakanyang mukha at tama nga ako, medyo kumalma na siya.

"Sabihin mo sa batang 'yon na tumigil na siya," dagdag niya, naninigurado at iritado pa rin.

"Okay, I will later," maingat kong sabi bago siya hinila pababa. "Sit down, Law. Let me dress you up."

He was just shirtless, he had his underwear and shorts on so it's just the tee shirt that's missing.

Luckily, he obeyed and sat on the bed with no complaints.

Binihisan ko na siya na parang nakapagdagdag naman sa pagpapakalma ko sa kanya. Ang ganda niya talaga bumaliktad ng sitwasyon, kanina dapat ay ako 'yong magalit pero ginawa niya pa'ng dahilan si Rule para siya ang magalit.

Takot niya lang siguro na magalit ako.

The night came fast and all that we did all day in our suite room was just playing with his phone, watch a show, eat some snacks, hug, make out, cuddle on the bed and talk about anything out of this world.

We're here, in the first class dining area and the waiter just served our dinner like two minutes ago.

For the economy class passengers, they had to queue, but for the first class passengers, we had a waiter service. So Law didn't have a problem to feed me veggies, not to mention that he had meat for himself.

"Eat properly, little girl," saway ni Law nang akmang iaangat ko na sana ang isang paa ko.

I was wearing black slippers and Law was wearing his walnut coloured Islanders.

He was looking at me the whole time, observing my every actions.

"Law, I'm curious," sabi ko at 'di na tinuloy ang binabalak na pag-angat ng paa. "How did you earned money that easy?"

He drink his water in a formal manner before answering me.

"Dreams and determination," kasing tigas ang boses niya ng kanyang pananaw sa buhay. "'Yong lang ang tanging makakapitan mo 'pag nawawalan ka na ng pag-asa."

"Anong connect no'n sa pagtatrabaho mo at pagdami ng pera mo?" I asked and wrinkled my nose.

"Hindi madali ang magtrabaho, Kry," aniya, seryoso at huminto na muna sa pagkain para sagutin ako. "May mga panahong napapagod na ako at nawawalan ng pag-asa pero nang dahil sa pangarap at determinasyon kong makuha ka at patunayan ang sarili ko kay Dad na kaya kitang buhayin... nagawa ko."

Undeniably, I got the thought of regretting to say those bad words that I told him before. I didn't know the story.

"What's your first job?" tanong ko ulit, marahan.

"Sa palengke, nagbubuhay ng mga timba, dalawang buwan lang ako do'n bago ako dinala ni Grandpa sa hacienda

nang nalaman niya ang nangyari," paliwanag niya habang nakatitig sa'kin."Nagsimula ako sa pinakamahirap na trabaho, naging magsasaka ako at nag-aararo kasama ng mga kalabaw, hindi pa kasi sila gumagamit ng mga makina noon sa pagsasaka. After one month, Grandpa let me manage his farm."

"And then you got me?"

"Hindi pa," he shook his head once as I could see variety of emotions in his eyes, but it was remained dark. "Nakipagtalos pa ako kay Dad na nauwi lang sa muntik niyang pagsuntok sa'kin."

"Oh," bumaba ang tingin ko sa hawak kong kutsara't tinidor bago inangat ang tingin sa kanya. "Pumayag lang si daddy sa gusto mo dahil may gusto rin siyang ipagawa sa'yo?"

"Yes, little girl," he answered with the immense patience marked in his hard tone of voice. "Now, eat."

Nang natapos ang dinner namin ay agad din kaming bumalik sa suite room.

Ngayon ko pa nalaman ang hirap ng pinagdaanan ni Law, I should do the same, right? I should fight like him too.

Habang nakatayo ako sa tabi niya at pinapanood na inayos ang kama ko ay nadismaya ako sa isiping hindi ko siya makakatabi sa pagtulog dahil dalawa ang kama rito.

Tama nga ako nang pinahiga niya na ako sa kama at inayos niya naman ang sa kanya.

Tonight, I was wearing my pair of caramel coloured pyjamas and Law with his usual black boxers, shirtless.

Waiting for almost fifteen minutes after Law planted a soft and long kiss on my forehead, turning off the lights and laid on his bed, I still couldn't help myself to sleep.

I waited and forced myself to sleep for five minutes, shifting my body in different position but it wouldn't work.

Opening my eyes to adjust my vision through the dark, my gaze went directly to Law's bare and broad back that's facing me. He was comfortable under his blanket and I could sense that he had already fallen asleep because of the way his back moved, breathing evenly.

Silently, I got up from bed and walk to the other side of Law's bed where he was facing, bringing my own pillow and blanket with me.

Kahit sa pagtulog nakakatakot ang aura na nakapaligid kay Law.

"Law?" marahan kong tawag sa kanya.

Napatampal ako sa mukha ko nang naalalang pagod nga pala siya buong araw, sana ay

'di ko na lang siya ginising.

With my slumped down shoulders, I was about to walk back to my bed but then a rough and large hand caught my wrist, stopping me from leaving.

"Hm..." I heard him grunted and moan. "Little girl, why are you still up?"

The huskiness of his voice made my knees melt in exuberance that I, the disturbance of his life, heard it.

It was another melody, harmony and symphony in my ears.

Umayos ako nang muli kong narinig ang pag-ungol niya mula sa pagkakahiga niya sa kama.

"I can't sleep," wika ko, sobrang hina ng boses na parang 'di niya yata 'yon maririnig. "Can I... uhm, sleep beside you?"

"Hindi tayo magkakasya," tugon niya sabay upo at hinarap ako ng maayos. "But you can sleep on me."

The bed wasn't the large for us, and the fact that he had a large body didn't help. Siguro ay kung kasing laki ko lang ang katabi ko sa kama na hinihigaan niya, magkakasya talaga kami.

Bakit hindi ko naisip ang tungkol sa kama? Kaya nga dalawa 'to.

Confused at those last words he said, I echoed. "On you?"

Kahit sa gitna ng dilim ay nakikita ko ng malinaw ang kanyang guwapong bagong gising na mukha.

Nagulat ako nang humiga siya ulit pero 'yon nga lang ay hindi na siya nakaharap sa gilid niya, kung 'di ay sa nagmistulang kisame rito.

He pulled the blanket off his body, revealing his bare chest and hard six packs.

"Madalas ka namang nakadapa kapag natutulog," he said, tapping his broad chest.

Alam ko na agad kung ano ang ibig niyang sabihin at gustong gawin ko. Dadapa ako sa ibabaw niya para hindi na namin kailangang magsiksikan sa kama.

"Pero hindi ka ba mahihirapan sa pagtulog, Law?" pagdadalawang-isip ko.

"Ayos lang sa akin na hindi ako makatulog, basta makita lang kitang mahimbing na natutulog," bakas sa kanyang boses na walang halong kasinungalingan ang sinabi niya.

"But—"

I didn't finish my sentence because in a fast movement, he grabbed me by the waist and pulled me to get myself on his body.

Nang tuluyan na akong komportableng nakadapa sa kanya ay agad niyang tinakpan ang katawan namin gamit ang kanyang kumot at ang kumot na dala ko.

"Sleep, little girl," utos niya.

In this position, he's under me, my head resting on his hard chest, my flat stomach

on his six packs, his one muscular arm at my back, his one hand against my butt and our legs entangled, I felt so safe.

Our relationship wasn't safe and good for us, that thought was bugging my mind and had given me the signs of disadvantages and negative possibilities that may occur.

"Law, please don't hurt me," I whispered breathlessly after five minutes that silence had been with us. "Hindi ko kakayanin."

Naramdaman ko ang paghigpit ng pagkakayakap ng mga matigas niyang braso sa akin bago ko narinig ang kanyang boses na wala pa nga'ng masamang nangyari ay nababakas ko nang na nasasaktan siya.

"Saktan mo'ko para hindi kita masaktan, Kryptonite."

Chapter 29

Scared

"Kaninang alas otso pa ako naghihintay dito, Law, tapos nakababa kayo ng barko ay malapit nang mag-alas onse," pambungad ni Heron sa amin nang nakalabas na kami ng Nasipit Pier.

Sleeping on Law's hard body last night was the best feeling ever. Walang-wala ang mga mamahaling kama kapag ang katawan ni Law na ang nagsisilbing higaan ko.

Currently tonight, we're in front of a grey coloured van, owned by our dearest Grandpa, I didn't know how many land, water and air transportation he had, inasmuch as how we've had our cousins' vacation on a yacht years ago and considering the chopper that was once brought me in the Cavanaugh Finance Corp.'s rooftop building. I had no idea how rich the senior Cavanaugh was, although he dressed up with simple clothes, that didn't subtracted the wealth in his possession.

Heron was busy depositing our bags at the back of the van and Law slid the van's door open, helping me to get inside.

Right from where we were, just near the pathway where the passengers' exit out of the pier, I could still smell the fresh and salty scent of the ocean mixing in the cold wind of the deep night.

"Three hours and a half," Heron muttered from behind the van, I heard him closing it down, announcing that he's done placing our bag at the back of the van.

"Makakarating tayo sa hacienda alas dos ng madaling araw."

"Papalit ako sa'yo sa pagmamaneho, Heron," presenta ni Law nang maayos niya na akong naipuwesto sa loob ng van, sa pangalawang linya lang ng upuan.

"Ayos lang, Law," narinig kong boses ni Heron na pumasok sa loob ng driver's side. "Kaya ko naman."

Si Heron ang malapit na katiwala ni Grandpa Sattie sa hacienda, we grew there every summer with him, playing around and doing our old school routine. Magka-edad lang kasi yata sila ni Kuya Lazi.

Law got inside the van and sat beside me, well, I thought that he's going to sit on the front seat and now I didn't expected that he'd be joining me here at the back.

The van started moving backward, backing up from the parking space that it had occupied, turning the wheels, the van headed to the main road.

"Are you cold, little girl?" tanong ni Law sa tabi ko habang yakap ko ang sarili kong braso. "Come closer."

I heard Heron immediately turned down the air-conditioning of the van as I moved closer to Law.

Thankfully, all the three of us were wearing hoodies, knowing that traveling at night would be so chilling and if possible, it would freeze our blood to death. Now, that was exaggerated.

Ang buong akala ko ay yayakapin lang ako ni Law pero nagulat ako nang binuhat niya ako at ipinuwesto sa kanyang mga hita.

My legs were parted and I was sitting on his thighs, face to face with him. He pulled my back and he held the back of my head so I could rest the corner of my face against his sturdy chest.

Of all positions, I had came into the conviction that he has a thing with this. Perhaps, a fetish for this position? Just like how he was so addicted to my butt.

Parang wala siyang pakialam kung ano ang iisipin ni Heron sa posisyon namin dahil mukhang wala lang naman ito sa kanya.

Letting my eyelids fall, darkness and nothingness to see have flooded my seeing range. I didn't let myself fall asleep, my eyes were close but I tried so hard to fight from sleeping.

I knew that Law and Heron would talk about something if they could sense that I was in a deep sleep. The way they had eye contact at first that Law and I exited the pier, there's something strange.

Pretending to sleep was hard but it wouldn't if I would just close my eyes and breathe naturally.

About twenty minutes after, I heard Heron's deep voice at the driver's seat.

"Mahirap 'yang sitwasyon niyo, Law," ani Heron, bakas ang pag-aalala sa boses. "Siya ang mas lalong masasaktan kung ipagpatuloy niyo pa 'to, lalo na ngayong hindi mo pa kilala ang totoong magulang niya."

Comfortably, I felt Law's protective arm at my back, tightening his hold on me. The way he held me was making my heart palpitate faster than the usual, his arm was slightly trembling and it seemed like he was protecting me now even though I wasn't feeling hurt.

"Kailangan ko ng suporta ni Grandpa," his steely voice could be the greatest nightmare of his enemy. "Sa tingin mo ba ay hindi ako masasaktan na makita siyang nasasaktan?"

"Sa ginagawa mo ngayon, kinakalaban mo ang batas," prangka naman ni Heron. "You know that this is against the law. Ngayon ay parang gumagawa ka ng sarili mo'ng batas."

"Wala akong sinusunod na batas. Sinusunod ko ang gusto ko," nakakatakot ang boses ni Law sa hindi ko malamang dahilan. "Alam kong kilala nila ang totoong magulang ni Kryptonite pero ayaw pa rin nilang sabihin sa'kin."

Mommy and daddy knew who my biological parents were? But why did they choose to keep it from Law?

Were my parents some sort of a criminal?

"Sigurado akong sa oras na malaman nila ang tungkol sa relasyon niyo, ipapakulong ka ng sarili mo'ng mga magulang, Law," mariing sabi ng mababang boses ni Heron. "Kakayanin mo ba'ng makitang umiiyak si Kryptonite 'pag nangyari 'yon?"

"Fuck, I can't," naramdaman ko ang mas lalong paghigpit ng pagkakahawak ni Law sa akin.

Why would mommy and daddy throw Law to jail? For me, it was the least thing that they could do. Law was their biological child, that's just unbelievable that they could file a case against Law.

I could feel his rough hand at the back of my head, pressing me against his chest. How his fingers gently gripped my hair for support with so much affection, I didn't know what to feel anymore.

Parang naestatwa ako nang naramdaman ang mukha ni Law sa balik at ko, marahang hinahalikan ang gilid ng mukha ko.

Every moment that his warm lips touch my skin would blow away the coldness in me and was replaced by his warmth.

Hindi ko alam na ganito pala siya kapag natutulog ako.

"She's sixteen years old, nagkulang ka pa ng dalawang taon sa paghihintay," narinig kong boses ni Heron kahit na halos 'di ko na narinig 'yon dahil na-didistract ako sa mga labi ni Law. "Sana naman 'di ba? Hinintay mo man lang na umabot siya sa legal na edad."

Law paused for a second and hissed. "Tangina mo. Ang hirap kayang magpigil, Heron," before he continued to plant soft and quick kisses at the corner of my face.

"Halata naman," Heron commented, I guessed that he saw from the rear view mirror what was Law have been doing to me during their serious talk. "Ano nang gagawin mo? Pipikutin mo ang isang underage? 'Di mo naman siguro nakalimutan ang kasunduan niyo ni Senyor Saturnino, 'di ba? Ilang beses na rin namang nakayapak si Kryptonite sa lupa ni Senyor Saturnino."

Kasunduan? Anong kasunduan ang sinasabi ni Heron? Bakit wala akong alam diyan?

"I'll bring my little girl to my house," Law's gentle kisses climbed from my face up to my hair, smelling it too.

We have talked about this before, if I hadn't forgotten about it? I told him that we'll be staying in Grandpa Sattie's hacienda in just a week and then we could go to his house.

What's with the sudden change of plan?

"Paano si Senyor Saturnino?" Heron asked, worried again.

Heron was like a brother to us anyway, and maybe, they've got very close to each since Law had been in the hacienda, working for his life to earn money and to have me.

"Bibisita na lang kami sa hacienda."

"Pero paano-"

"Gusto kong sulitin ang oras na meron ako ngayon hangga't 'di ko pa nagagawan ng solusyon ang lahat," mariing pagputol ni Law sa sasabihin ni Heron.

Hindi ba nahihirapan si Law? Dahil ngayon pa lang ay sumasakit at sumisikip na ang dibdib ko sa kakaisip kung ano ang maaari kong matutulong sa kanya pero wala.

Wala akong ibang magawa.

"Paano kung mangyari na 'yong kinatatakutan mo? Paano kung si Kryptonite na mismo ang lalayo sa'yo?"

"Kakain ako ng isang daang hipon," matigas na sagot ng baritonong boses ni Law.

I was trying so hard to stop myself from biting my bottom lip, the way Law said it made me wanna cry in front of him and tell him that I would never leave him again.

His hardened voice was vibrating against his chest where I was resting the side of my face. I could feel how he was so affected by the questions that Heron were asking.

"Ako 'yong natatakot na iwanan ka eh, puta," malutong na mura ni Heron mula sa driver's side. "Suicidal 'yan, gago."

"'Di ako matitiis ng batang 'to, babalik din siya sa akin 'pag nalaman niyang kumain ako ng hipon," tugon ni Law sa boses na sobrang siguradong sigurado siya sa kanyang sinabi.

"Paano kung hindi niya malalaman o hindi siya babalik?"

"I'll wait," walang pagdadalawang-isip na sagot ng matigas at nakakatakot na boses ni Law.

"Malala ka na, Law," was the last thing that I heard from Heron.

Almost fifteen minutes later, but there were no other thing that I could hear, except for the van's engine. In some minutes after, Law was just pressing his warm and moist lips on my forehead, temple, head and cheek. So gentle that I would thought it was beyond my imagination or just a trick of my skin that had be beguiled.

When Law rested his forehead on my shoulder, that's the time that I drifted off to sleep.

Nagising lang ako nang naramdaman kong parang nakalutang na ako sa akin. I didn't open my eyes, pinakiramdaman ko muna ang paligid.

I realized that Law was carrying me the same way he always carry me. What's wrong with bridal style? Why didn't he try it? He loved this position, my chest against his chest, my arms holding on his neck and his arms under my bottom to support me in a sitting position because of some reasons that I couldn't wrap my legs around

his waist, I was unconscious.

Now that I was aware, I remained my legs limply hanging on the air.

"Law..." I murmured under my breath.

"Get back to sleep, little girl," he commanded, still walking somewhere.
"Kararating lang natin."

Getting my eyes used to the darkness of the surroundings, I pulled myself to create a little distance between our chest. I faced his handsome face.

"I wanna walk," sabi ko, nakakapit pa rin sa kanyang leeg.

"No, just sleep, okay?"

"But Law, I wanna talk to Grandpa Sattie and I'm not sleepy," giit ko at hindi namalayan ang pagpasok namin sa isang hindi ko pa alam kung anong lugar dahil madilim.

Where's Nayda and the other maids? They had always been here to greet us.

"Grandpa's not here," bakas sa boses ni Law ang pagiging maingat sa kung ano ma'ng sasabihin niya.

My brows pulled together in a soft frown of confusion. "What? But you said that he's here?"

"Yes, he's in the hacienda," he confirmed calmly.

"What do you mean? We're not in the hacienda?"

It took him half a minute before he answered.

"We're in my house," ang tigang ng pagkakasabi niya na parang ayaw niya pa'ng sabihin sa akin kung nasaan kami.

I felt that he removed one arm under my butt and raised it somewhere. In an instant, a bright light above us illuminated the whole place. I narrowed my eyes infinitesimally, my sight wasn't used to the brightness, and it took me a minute to adjust before I look around the place.

Surprisingly, his house had a jaw-dropping panorama. He was standing and carrying me at the spot where I could see the complete view of the interior of his house.

High ceilings made of wood was painted in tawny colour, the walls were glass just as perfect to get a view outside, and there's the velvety black long sofa placed neatly in front of the very large flat screen television, plus the green plants displayed at the corner of the room.

I turned my head to the other side to see a wooden stairs, and there's the kitchen at the far side of the stairs. The lights were off in that area yet there's three yellowish lights that could make the kitchen a little bit lighten up.

The house was themed with different shades of brown and the colour of coffee, it was the modern wooden house.

Wordlessly, I brought my gaze back to Law after almost five minutes of admiring and

being fascinated by the impressively large wooden house.

"Gusto mo ba'ng makita ang kwarto natin?" ang dilim ng paraan ng pagtingin sa akin ni Law na iisipin ko talagang galit siya kahit hindi naman.

"Kwarto natin?" I echoed, unsure if I heard it right. "We'll be sleeping in the same room?"

"Yes, on the same bed, little girl," he corrected with no doubt.

Worries instantly stormed in my mind. "Pero pa'no si Grandpa Sattie? Hindi pa natin siya nakakausap tungkol dito, baka magalit siya 'pag nalaman niyang natutulog tayo sa iisang kwarto?"

"Hindi niya malalaman kung 'di mo sasabihin sa kanya," aniya at nagsimula nang naglakad patungo sa hagdan.

"Okay," marahan kong hinigpitan ang pagkakakapit sa kanyang leeg, at mas lalong idinikit ang sariling katawan sa kanyang matigas na dibdib nang may bigla akong naalala. "Wait, nasa'n si Heron?"

"Pinabalik ko na sa hacienda," kalmadong sagot niya habang nakapokus ang paningin sa dinadaan niya.

I swallowed, hard. I got suddenly nervous. "So tayong dalawa na lang dito?"

"Tayong dalawa na lang," makahulugang pag-uulit niya at saglit na tumingin sa mukha ko bago inilipat sa dinadaan niya nang paakyat na siya ng hagdan. "Why, little girl? You look scared."

Sinong hindi matatakot at kabahan? Kung sa tuwing magsisimula na siya ay parang ayaw niya nang huminto.

Hindi ba puwedeng ang pagkalalaki niya naman ang mag-adjust? Kahit liliit lang ng konti? Shit naman, wala na ba'ng ilalaki 'yan, dahil sobrang laki na.

Napayuko ako. "Kasi naman..."

"If you're thinking about non-stop love making then you're wrong," he stated. "Malas daw 'pag sa kama gagawin."

Umangat ang isang kilay ko. "Sinong nagsabi?"

"Grandpa," was his only answer.

Naalala ko 'yong panahong seven years old pa lang ako, we were all gathered around the large bed where Grandma Venusiana was weakly laying on it. I was confused why most of my cousins were sad, head down as if they have done something bad and they were asking for Grandma's forgiveness. Grandpa Saturnino was actually crying that time.

I just realized that as I grow older, Grandma Venusiana died on their bed. On their bed where they make love, argue, exchanging of sweet words, and sleep together with unforgettable memories.

Bed, it wasn't just sleeping and making love. Mas marami pa talaga ang mangyayari sa kama kesa sa mga iniisip ko.

Hindi ko namalayan ang marahang paglapag ni Law sa akin sa isang malambot na kama

at nakapaibabaw siya sa akin dahil nakakapit pa rin ako sa leeg niya.

Napatitig ako sa mga mata niya kasama ang nagdidilim na paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin.

Examining his chiselled face wanted me to hide myself away from his intense gaze. Intimidating, indeed. But what about his strong pointed nose? High cheek bones with those pinkish cheeks, almost square shaped hard jaw, thin kissable lips and dark eyebrows.

"Ang gwapo mo po," agad kong naitikom ang bibig ko nang dahil sa biglang nasabi ko.

Mahihiya na sana ako pero nawala 'yong hiya ko nang nakita ang marahang pagngiti ni Law na naging ngisi.

"Ayokong maging gwapo kung ibang babae naman ang titingin," saad niya at inilapit ang mukha sa akin, sa panga ko. He started kissing me there.

"Kahit sa iba naman, Law. Kaya ang dami mo'ng babae," bakas ang irita sa boses ko nang naalala ang mga babaeng naghahabol sa kanya. "Si Dana, Tirana, Kirsten, at Ate Francesca. You know what? May gusto nga rin sa'yo si Erich."

It wasn't just them, siguro ay marami pa pero sila lang talaga ang nakilala ko.

"Isang babae lang naman ang gusto ko, isang babaeng bawal para sa'kin," bulong niya habang patuloy pa rin ang paglapat ng kanyang mainit, malambot at mamasa-masang mga labi sa panga ko.

The thought of being the prohibited girl for him to have reminded me of our main problem.

Just like that, his conversation with Heron that I heard earlier came on my head in just a split second.

"Law, listen," I caressed his nape to have his attention from kissing my jaw.

"Hm?"

I let out an audible exhalations when I realized that he wasn't really paying attention to me, he's busy with gently pressing his lips on every corner of my jaw.

"Law, please, stop na muna, makinig ka muna sa sasabihin ko," I begged with my soft voice.

"I'm listening, little girl. What is it?" aniya pero hindi pa rin hinihinto ang paghalik niya sa panga ko.

"Narinig ko ang pinag-usapan niyo ni Heron," sabi ko dahilan kung bakit natigilan siya sa paghalik sa akin. "What did he mean na ako ang mas masasaktan 'pag pinagpatuloy pa natin 'to? Are you going to hurt me, Law? Like the other men out there, sinasaktan nila ang babae nila kasi 'yon daw ang nakakabuti."

Marahan siyang lumayo sa akin para harapin ako pero nauna na akong tumulak sa kanya at umalis mula sa kama saka ako tumayo sa sahig. Ako na mismo ang nakaharap sa kanya.

It was hard to talk to him while he's close to me. Oftentimes, we would end up kissing and stop the argument.

Nakaupo na siya ngayon sa kama at nakaangat ang tingin sa akin, seryoso. "'Pag masasaktan man kita, sasaktan ko rin ang sarili ko," tiim bagang saad niya. "Come here, little girl."

"I wanna know who's my biological parents, Law," I could feel the prominent lines between my eyebrows in the presence of pain on my chest.

Masakit pa rin para sa akin na kahit pangalan ng mga tunay na magulang ko ay ipagkakait nila sa akin.

"Yes, little girl, I know. Gumagawa na nga ako ng paraan, I will talk to mom and dad," he said it carefully but his hard voice didn't escape from my hearing range, he wasn't rest assured that I wouldn't turn my back at him. "Lumapit ka sa'kin, please?"

I shook my head softly and took a step backward. "Kakausapin ko si Grandpa Sattie."

"Kryptonite," the fear in Law's voice was very evident.

"No, don't stop me," I even pointed him with my index finger to emphasize what I was saying. "Pupunta ako ng hacienda ngayon."

Tinalikuran ko siya at ni hindi ako lumingon nang naglakad ako palabas ng kwarto niya.

Mabilis akong bumaba ng hagdan at saglit akong huminto, agad na hinanap ng mga mata ko ang pinto palabas ng malaking bahay na 'to. Hindi ko namalayan ang pagsunod ni Law sa akin nang mahigpit niyang hinuli ang isang braso ko at hinila paharap sa kanya.

"Kryptonite, it's 3am, natutulog pa si Grandpa ngayon," kalmado, napanatili niyang kalmado ang kanyang boses at ekspresyon sa mukha.

"I'll wait 'til he wakes up," palusot ko.

If there's a determination, there's a way. Wasn't it will?

"Hindi mo alam ang daan papuntang hacienda, madilim pa sa labas, mamaya na lang, okay?" he had an unbothered equanimity, until now, he's towering over me with full rigidity. "Pupunta tayo mamaya, we'll talk to Grandpa."

Hawak niya na ako sa magkabilang braso, mukhang sinisigurado talagang hindi ako makakaalis sa kinatatayuan ko.

"May tinatago ka ba sa'kin, Law?" nanliit ang mga mata ko habang nakatingala sa kanya. "I thought that you need Grandpa Sattie's support? Why are you acting like this? Parang iniawasan mo'ng pumunta sa hacienda. Anong meron sa hacienda?"

I caught a glimpse of quick movement from his jaw.

Hindi niya ako sinagot agad, sa halip ay hinila niya ako patungo sa kulay itim na sofa rito.

He sat there pulling me along with him as I landed on his lap. I expressed an unceremonious resistance from his hold, but as expected, he had managed to keep me in place.

"Grandpa's there and so is Dad," bakas ang matinding galit sa kanyang boses nang sinabi niya ang huling salita. "Mamayang hapon pa ang alis ni Dad pabalik ng

Manila."

"Anong ginagawa ni daddy dito?" gulat at naguguluhan kong tanong. I shrugged my shoulders. "It's a good thing, Law. We can talk to him and ask him about my parents."

"He's here to check you and ask you questions," he replied sternly. "Wala silang alam na sinabi ko na sa'yo ang totoo."

"Why would he?"

Wala akong nakuhanag sagot mula sa kanya.

Instead, he caught my right hand and covered it with his larger hand compared to mine. He balled our hands together into a fist with my own hand inside his.

"He wants to know if I'm taking good care of you, 'pag may nasagot kang mali, pwede niyang gamiting dahilan 'yon kung gugustuhin niya para ipagpawalang bisa ang pagiging legal guardian ko sa'yo," inangat niya ang nakakuyom niyang kamay kung saan nasa loob no'n ang nakakuyom ko ring kamay, nakatitig siya sa mga mata ko nang hinalikan niya ang kanyang sariling kamay kung saan nakakulong ang kamay ko. "Ibabalik ka niya sa mansyon."

"Hindi naman siya nagtanong sa'kin noon, bakit ngayon?" pinanood ko ang bawat paghalik niya sa kanyang sariling kamay hanggang sa binuksan niya 'yon at ang kamay ko naman ang hinahalikan niya.

As of this moment, I couldn't resist from those thin, soft, warm and moist red lips of his. It calmed my nerves.

"It's because of Francesca," humigpit ang pagkakapulupot ng isang maskuladong braso niya sa beywang ko. "Naalala mo ba 'yong sinabi ko sa'yo? Nakuha lang kita dahil pumayag ako sa gusto niya at ngayong nakabalik na si Francesca, he want me to give her another try."

"Can we go to the hacienda, now? I wanna answer his questions, Law," I forced myself to off from sitting on his lap and stood upright in front of him.

"No, little girl, dito na lang tayo, please?" his voice softened, pleading for me.

Nanatili siyang nakaupo sa kulay itim na sofa habang bahagyang nakatingala sa akin.

"It's okay, Law, I won't tell him that you spank me before. Don't worry, okay?" naisip ko lang na baka 'yon ang kinababahala niya.

"You don't understand, Kryptonite—fuck," his intimidating voice hardened and thundered, it almost startled me, and when he noticed the fear on my face, he smoothened the hard creased on his forehead. "Natatakot ako. Tangina. Takot na takot ako, Kryptonite, hindi mo ba naiintindihan 'yon?"

Kumalabog ang puso ko nang dahil sa narinig mula sa masuyo ngunit bakas pa rin ang tigas na boses niya.

"You're not scared of daddy," nakatungo kong sabi.

It's true, he's never been afraid of daddy. Madalas ko nga silang naririnig na nagsasagutan noon sa private room ni daddy sa mansyon.

Hinawakan niya ako sa magkabilang beywang ko habang nakaupo pa rin siya sa kulay

itim na sofa at nakatayo pa rin ako sa harap niya.

"Yes, I'm not, little girl," bumalik na sa pagiging kalmado ang boses niya, pinaghalong kaba, takot atigas. His head was tilted so he could look up at me. "Sa'yo, natatakot ako sa'yo. You're sixteen years old, still young, and you change your mind so easily whenever you're mad and jealous."

That muted me for a minute.

He's scared of me? Had he gone to be a pusillanimous man? Law was not a coward, his presence could daunt everyone under his mercy. What happened to him? I should be the one who'd give him strength, but appallingly, I was the one who's making him weak.

Perchance he has a point, I was young, I didn't think and decide firmly, my mind change according to the timing of circumstances. Dissimilar to Law, his decisions were immutable without afterthought no matter how hard the situation he would be facing.

Now, I understood why he was so scared of me talking to daddy. He didn't trusted daddy, he knows him more than I did.

What if daddy would try to manipulate and get me brainwashed without even noticing that he's already doing it? My mind was fragile and easy to persuade by someone who have the ability of persuasion. I should be more careful to whom I would talk to.

Katulad na lang noong nalaman ko ang tungkol sa relasyon noon nila ni Ate Francesca. Ang sabi ko ay hindi na ako aalis pa o maglalayas noon pero anong ginawa ko? Umalis ako.

Absentmindedly, I moved my head to meet his eyes that was marked with hidden trepidation. "I'm sleepy, Law..."

He sighed in relief. "See, little girl? You change your mind that easy," marahan niyang sabi. "Balik na tayo sa kwarto, okay? Let's sleep."

I nodded silently.

Mula sa mga beywang ko ay umangat ang kanyang mga kamay sa kili-kili ko nang tumayo siya at binuhat ako kaya agad akong kumapit sa kanyang leeg, inilipat niya rin ang kanyang maskuladong braso sa pwetan ko para magsilbing upuan ko.

Naramdaman ko ang paghalik niya sa buhok ko nang nagsimula na siyang humakbang patungo sa hagdan.

"Wag mo nang ulitin 'yon," he whispered, nuzzling his face against my hair, and his baritone voice came back hard and rough.

Kinaumagahan ay nagising ako na walang ibang suot kung 'di ay ang isang kulay puting bathrobe lang. Kahit panty ay wala akong suot.

Nothing happened to us, diretso kaming natulog nang nakarating kami sa loob ng kwarto.

I went out of the room right after wearing at least a comfortable black panty and the rest of my body was covered by the white bathrobe. Descending the stairs, I saw Law outside, I could see him outside because the walls at that part were glass.

There's a glass sliding door near him, immediately, I walked fast and went outside.

He was standing by the wooden handrail, facing the wooden gates meters away from the house.

I looked at the side here outside to see a wooden circular table with the support of steel to stand and a two cushioned chairs.

May laptop, phone, newspaper, isang platito ng pandesal, isang cup ng brown coffee at isang cup ng milk ang nakalapag sa mesa. Halatang mainit pa 'yon dahil may konting usok pa ang nagmumula roon.

Binalik ko ang tingin ko sa kanyang malapad at matigas na likod, boxers lang ang suot niya.

"Mainit pa 'yong gatas, Kryptonite," utos niya kahit na nakatalikod siya sa akin, naramdaman niya siguro ang presensya ko. "Drink it. Hindi pa ako nakapagluto ng breakfast."

Nagtaka ako nang hindi niya man lang ako nilingon at nakatingin lang sa may gate.

"Law? Anong problema?" I went to his side and followed his gaze where he was looking.

I was stunned and froze on my spot like a statue, shock to see an unfamiliar expensive car parked outside of the gates. The door of the shiny black car opened and my eyes widened when I saw the familiar figure of the two man getting out of the car.

Glancing askance to Law and back to Grandpa Sattie with daddy outside of the gates, a slight frown had shown on my face.

Law's steely voice made me feel like it was judgement day that had arrived.

"Go, little girl, take a bath and keep your things in the bags. Today, it's either they'll take you away from me or you'll stay with me a little longer."

Chapter 30

Break

After an hour of taking a bath, yes, an hour, I made it clear that it took me so long to finish cleaning myself, I was hoping if I spent hours in the bathroom then Grandpa Sattie and daddy would have been very piss off, or worse, they would get impatient of waiting. It would lead them to change their mind, in the name of luck and delight, they would leave and just come back some other time.

Opportunity to stay, that was what I needed now and I didn't want to waste it.

If I couldn't have the chance, then I would make my own chance.

Done taking a bath, as I've mentioned, but I didn't get out of the bathroom. I meant to make my movements very slow, leisurely wiping my wet body with a clean white towel, unhurried, like a little snail and turtle.

Within half an hour, I was still busy looking and checking my face in the mirror, here, inside the bathroom. Drawing my face nearer to the mirror to zoom in my facial features and inspect it again if I could see some dark spots, pimples, dark circles under my eyes and whatever that would make my face look rough and haggard.

This face of mine was a godsend for me, even if how late I sleep at night, I wouldn't get any pimples. The bad thing was, if I apply some chemical such as facial cream, facial cleanser, toner and whatchamacallits that any girls would like to put on their face, that's when I get pimples because of chemicals, so I'd rather keep it natural.

Natural treatment for my face, cucumber for the dark circles under my eyes, and yeah, so on.

Smiling at the mirror, I tossed the white towel to the wooden clothesline. I was still naked and that's not a problem.

Not truly thinking that there were old men waiting for me downstairs, I stayed inside the bathroom for another minutes and just wait for Law to come up here, telling me that they're already gone.

A knock from outside the bathroom's door made the corner of my lips stretched upward, from sweetly smiling to stubbornly grinning.

"Kryptonite," kahit na hindi sumigaw si Law sa labas ay nakakapanindig balahibo pa ring marinig ang kanyang boses.

My grin faded. I gulped, looking at the door. "Yes, Law?"

"What took you so long?"

"Are they gone?" I didn't bother to answer him.

"No," matigas niyang sagot mula sa labas. "Open the door."

To my disappointment, they haven't left the house.

"I'll open it when they're gone," was my condition with the unyielding intrepidity in my voice. "I don't wanna leave you, Law. Tell them that I'm not feeling well."

"Isipin nilang hindi kita inalagaan ng maayos 'pag sinabi ko 'yan," dahilan ng baritonong boses ni Law mula sa labas. "Labas na."

For a second, I was hesitating if I would come out or he would be the one to come in?

"I'm naked," sabi ko kasabay ng pagbaba ng tingin ko sa sarili kong katawan. I admit that my body wasn't mature, why would Law was so determined to touch and have it?

"Then just let me in," mariing utos nito.

Nagpantig ang mga tenga ko at ibinalik ang tingin sa nakasara at lock na pinto ng banyo. "Why?"

"Ako na ang magbibihis sa'yo," ang higpit at istrikto pakinggan ang kanyang boses mula sa labas.

With no arrière-pensée for any other reasons, I went to the door and unlock it.

Pinanood ko si Law na pumasok habang hawak ang pinili niyang damit na susuotin ko ngayon. Sinara niya ang pinto bago niya ako hinarap at pinasadahan ng mainit na tingin ang hubo't hubad kong katawan.

He's wearing a decent clothes now, a simple cinnamon coloured v-neck tee shirt with black shorts for men, unlike earlier that he was only wearing boxers and the steel-like bulge on there was coming on its way. Flaunted like a mannequin display in a ladies' boutique.

Sinampay niya sa wooden clothesline sa may pader ang mga damit kong hawak niya at iniwang nakasampay sa kanyang balikat ang underwear ko.

Tahimik siyang lumapit sa akin at lumuhod sa harap ko.

As he silently placed the white decent panty below my knees, I leaned my hand on his stiff shoulders for support before stepping my feet in the two holes of the panty.

He pulled up the panty to my thighs but before it would cover my feminine part, he paused.

Biting and chewing my bottom lip, I felt the hairs at my nape raised when he rested his forehead against my pearl. He looked problematic and stressed out.

Sana sa balikat ko na lang siya sumandal 'di ba? Kasi naman, nakakakiliti kaya 'yong malambot niyang buhok na tumatama sa pagkababae ko.

I had never seen Law like this before. Through those unendurable and heart-rending situations that he handled before, he had always wore that stoic expression on his chiselled face.

But today, he had shown me the weak side of him.

"Hindi kita ibibigay sa kanila," naramdaman ko ang kanyang magaspang na palad na lumipat sa pwet ko, he gripped both cheeks of my butt, sending me the message that he's in great anger. "Tandaan mo 'yan, Kryptonite."

"Law, calm down, please..." napapikit ako at mariing itinikom ang bibig nang hinila niya ang pwet ko dahilang kung bakit mas lalong dumiin ang kanyang mukha sa pagkababae ko.

Kahit wala naman siyang ginagawa sa pagkababae ko, nakadikit lang ang kanyang mukha, seemed like he's comforting himself through smelling and feeling my feminine part, parang naiinitan na ako.

"I'm calm, little girl," aniya kahit halata naman sa kanyang boses na hindi siya kalmado. "Ako lang dapat ang paniwalaan mo, don't listen to dad, okay? You can answer his questions, little girl, pero dapat sa'kin ka lang maniwala."

"Why?" hinaplos ko ang malambot niyang buhok, baka sakaling makakapagpakalma sa kanya 'to. "Anong sasabihin niya?"

The inner part of me was pushing me to make him kiss, lick, suck and bite my pearl, but I knew that this wasn't the right time to do it. We had a problem to solve.

Gripping his rigid shoulders, I took a nervous and audible inhalations the moment I felt the bridge of his strong and pointed nose dug into the hollow slice of my

feminine part.

"Baka mabanggit niya ang tungkol sa'min ni Francesca, noon," sagot niya, mahigpit pa rin ang hawak sa pwet ko. "There's nothing to be jealous of, little girl."

I could see the rigid cords at his neck, veins were pulsing in dangerous anger.

"I know, Law, I know," I said, gently caressing his nape to massage the pulsing veins away. "Sa'yo lang ako maniniwala, okay? Just calm down..."

Ilang minuto lang na nakadikit ang kanyang mukha sa pagkababae ko nang bahagya siyang lumayo at umangat ang nakakatakot na tingin sa akin.

"Isang dila lang, Kryptonite. Kakalma na ako pagkatapos," tiim bagang kondisyon niya sa akin.

He couldn't fool me, but his using his way to get a taste of my freshened feminine part. I just got my shower, it's fresh, I know.

Couldn't he calm himself without doing such things? Just sit and relax? Was this his way of making himself calm? This wasn't normal.

Giving up, I sighed.

"O-Okay..." nauutal kong sabi. Tatal ay isang dila lang naman, sampung segundo lang ang maitatagal no'n kung dahan-dahanin niya.

Naramdaman kong binitiwang niya ang pwet ko at marahang binaba ang panty ko. He removed it so I could part my legs.

Napahawak ako sa kanyang batok nang naramdaman ko ang init at lagkit ng kanyang mamasa-masang ekspertong dila sa kinailaliman ng pagkababae ko.

Sinadya niyang diniin 'yon at dahan-dahang dinulas paitaas hanggang sa umabot ito sa clît ko.

'Yon pa nga lang ang ginawa niya pero halos hindi na magkamayaw ang dibdib at tiyan ko sa mabilis na pagtaas baba.

Ang buong akala ko ay lalayo na siya pero napakapit ako sa kanyang magkabilang balikat nang may sinunod pa siyang isang pagdila, isang pagsipsip at marahang pagkagat nito sa pagkababae ko.

"U-Uhm... oh..." halingling ko nang hindi na talaga siya huminto. "Law, akala ko ba, isang dila lang? Bakit parang napadami-oh my God."

Binilisan niya, parang nagmamadali siyang malabasan ako, sinigurado kong mahina lang ang mga ungol na lumalabas sa bibig ko, takot ko lang na baka ay may makarinig sa amin sa baba.

Naramdaman ko nga ang pagkalma ng kanyang katawan habang kinakain niya ang pagkababae ko, pero 'yong katawan ko naman ang hirap pakalmahin ngayon.

Heat was rushing through my system. There's something that had built up inside my core, and now I have lost my mind again.

Sa bawat pagdila, pagsipsip at pagkagat niya ay parang tumatarak ang kanyang dila sa pagkababae ko.

Limang minuto lang ang nagtagal nang sa wakas ay nilabasan na rin ako.

"Extra service ang tawag do'n, little girl," he licked his lips, standing on his feet and towering over me.

Unbelievable, it was effective, he looked calm now. I wonder what was in my feminine part that made him so calm?

We fix ourselves and prepare for our talk with grandpa and daddy. He dressed me up with black jogging pants and pale yellow tank top.

I put the hairbrush down on the nightstand after brushing my naturally straight, dark brown and elbow length hair.

Law's hand was protectively resting on my shoulder as we walk downstairs.

As we stepped on the last staircase, Law stopped me from walking toward the two men. They're both sitting on the long velvety black sofa, they haven't seen us since the back of their head was facing us.

Daddy's hair looked the same, dark and very neat, on the other hand, Grandpa Sattie's hair was also neat yet it wasn't dark, it looked gray, the sign of getting older.

Confused why we stopped, I tilted my head up to look at Law with questioning eyes. "Why—"

"Listen," Law didn't even let me finish my question. Mababa rin ang kaniyang malalim na boses na parang ayaw niyang marinig kami nila grandpa at daddy.

Ni hindi ako tinignan ni Law at diretso lang ang seryosong tingin, kaya sinundan ko ang kanyang tingin at nakitang nakatingin siya sa likod ng ulo nila Grandpa Sattie at daddy.

"Zacharias, wala namang mali sa ginagawa ng apo ko," I heard Grandpa Sattie's rough voice, it was marked with demur. "Mas maganda pa nga 'to dahil inaalagaan niya ang bunso nila, hindi niyo na kasi nabibigyan ng oras ang mga bata tapos ngayon babawiin mo si Kryptonite? Wala naman akong nabalitaan na pinabayaang ni Law ang kapatid niya, anong dahilan mo, anak?"

I was so glad that Grandpa Sattie was on our side.

"Papa, hindi mo ba naisip? Lalaki si Law at babae si Kryptonite, baka may ginawa nang katarantaduhan ang anak ko," daddy said disapprovingly.

"'Yan lang ba ang dahilan mo? Kilala kita, Zacharias," kalmado lang ang magaspang na boses ni Grandpa Sattie pero alam kong nakaramdam na rin siya ng galit. "Ihinto mo na 'yan."

Unsure of what to react, I kept myself upright beside Law and just listen.

They're talking, they're sitting side by side at the long black velvety sofa, but they're not giving each other even a single glance to acknowledge the presence of one another.

How strange.

"Hindi ako hihinto hangga't hindi bumabalik sa'kin si Ysa, papa," kasing tigas ang boses ni daddy sa boses ni Law sa tuwing nagagalit siya.

Natigilan ako sa pakikinig nang dahil do'n.

Hindi bumabalik si mommy kay daddy? What does that mean? Naghiwalay ba sila? Kaya ba pakiramdan ko ay hindi na nagtatrabaho si mommy sa company ni daddy?

"At sa ganitong paraan? Dinadamay mo ang mga anak mo," bakas ang mahigpit na pagtutol sa boses ni Grandpa Sattie.

"Dahil alam kong hindi ako matitiis ni Ysa, papa," daddy countered firmly, I could see that he was truly affected by their conversation because the back of his neck tensed, hard. "Hindi niya ako matitiis kung patuloy kong pinapahirapan ang mga anak namin."

"Zacharias."

Witnessing and hearing all of those words came from daddy, my perspective about him and his untainted image on my mind changed.

Besides, he was not my biological father. Although I couldn't change the reality that he's the man whom I treated as a father, and I thought that he's just good in business that's why he could provide us money and expenses but not his valuable time and dear attention. He's the most workaholic man I've ever known.

Out of all the things I've said, for the truth was, I have loved them, and I was hurt.

Nasasaktan ako, ang hirap talagang tanggapin na adopted lang ako at tinago nila sa akin ang katotohanang 'yon tapos malalaman kung hindi lang pala 'yon ang tinatago nila?

Mommy and daddy were separated. Kaya siguro gustong-gusto ni Law na maging legal guardian ko.

"Makikipagbalikan ako kay Lace at sasabihin ko kay Ysa na anak ko ang dalawang anak ni Lace," hindi na talaga maitago ang galit sa malalim na boses ni daddy.

I almost flinch and wince when I felt Law's large hand, currently resting on my shoulder. He loosened his hold on it and gently rub it with his thumb after he grip it for some reason that he couldn't control the anger that's ranging inside him.

"Wag kang magpakagago, Zacharias," kontrolado ni Grandpa Sattie ang kanyang boses kaya hindi ko malaman kung galit ba siya o hindi. "Hindi mo sila anak."

"Ituturing ko silang anak kung hindi pa rin babalik si Ysa sa'kin," pagmamatigas ni daddy, bakas sa tono ng kanyang boses ang pagiging desperado. "Hindi ako pipirma sa mga divorce papers o annulment na pinagpipilitan niya."

"Mas ituturing mo silang anak kesa sa mga totoo mo'ng anak?" hindi makapaniwalang tanong ni grandpa. "Son, it's your fault why she chose to be separated from you," I could hear his deep and sarcastic chuckles. "Ang laki kasi ng ari mo tapos araw-araw at gabi-gabi-"

"Papa, seryoso po ako," iritadong pagputol ni daddy sa sasabihin ni grandpa at ang pilit na paggalang niya sa kanyang ama.

Inangat ko ang tingin ko kay Law at nakitang nakatingin pa rin siya sa dalawa, mixed emotions was written on his intimidating eyes.

The intense emotional state of outright displeasure was leading from all the variety of emotions beyond to see in his eyes.

"Nakakatawa lang kasi, Zacharias. Maliit na problema, pinapalaki mo," narinig kong boses ni grandpa dahil kung bakit binalik ko ang paningin ko sa kanila. "Maganda ang asawa mo, madalas ka pa'ng nagseselos, narinig kong sinuntok at pinatalsik mo 'yong officemate niya noon dahil lang sa nakita mo'ng malagkit ang paraan ng pagtitig niya sa asawa mo, pinagbantaan mo pa ang kaibigan niyang lalaki. Sinasakal mo masyado si Ysa at ngayon sinasaktan mo siya, ganyan ba talaga ang pagmamahal para sa'yo, Zacharias?"

"You can't change my mind, papa," medyo tumataas na ang tono ng boses ni daddy.

I was not ready to face them yet but Law was in a hurry to cut their heated conversation when he guided me to walk.

Hindi pa ako nakakabawi sa kabila ng mga nalaman ko, parang gusto ko na lang bumalik ulit sa kwarto namin at doon magkulong.

"Grandpa, dad," Law acknowledge them when we reached the sofa where they were arguing earlier.

They stood up from their seat, Law let go of me and let me greet our unexpected visitors.

Professionals and the veterans of business world, it was them. I was facing two of the successful men in the world.

As usual, daddy was wearing his formal attire and grandpa was just wearing a plain black thick-cloth fitted sweatshirt and a dark pants for men.

Respectfully, I hugged Grandpa Sattie and he gently return my hug with a swift kiss on my forehead. I turned to daddy and hugged him too before I tiptoed to kiss his cheek.

"Grandpa Sattie, daddy, bakit po kayo nandito?" mabuti na lang at hindi garalgal ang boses ko. "Akala ko po busy kayo?"

"Just here to see you, my daughter," daddy sat back on his place and tap the space of the sofa beside him. "How are you?"

Nakita ko si Grandpa Sattie na bumalik na rin sa pagkakaupo sa kanyang kinauupuan kaya umupo na rin ako sa tabi ni daddy, pinapagitnaan na nila ako.

Law didn't bother to sit, he was just standing meters away from us, watching us and listening.

"Actually, daddy, I'm having so much fun with Law and his girlfriend," I glanced at Law's direction before focusing my gaze and attention to daddy.

"Girlfriend? Why didn't you tell me that you have a girlfriend, son?" daddy turned his gaze to Law with that dreich expression on daddy's stony face. "What's her name? Is she one of the Puertollano? Since I've heard that Hezion Puertollano is your close friend."

Walang sinabi si Law at tahimik lang na nakatayo 'di kalayuan sa amin, gano'n din si Grandpa Sattie na nakaupo sa tabi ko. I was facing daddy, so Grandpa Sattie was quite facing my back.

"Daddy, I've talked to his girlfriend and no, she's not one of the Puertollano ladies, but she came from a very wealthy family pero ang sabi niya ay adopted lang siya, hindi niya rin alam kung sino ang totoong magulang niya," sinadya kong maging malungkot ang tono ng boses ko kasama ang pagbagsak ng mga balikat ko. After about half a minute of it, I changed my mood. "Anyway, daddy, nagleave ka po ba sa work mo para makita lang kami? Don't worry, daddy, we're fine."

Daddy looked at me after giving Law a meaningful and long stare.

"No, I'm here to ask you something, princess," malambing ang boses ni daddy, lalo na ang paglambot ng ekspresyon niya sa kanyang mukha.

Nakaramdam ako ng inis. Law was right, daddy's here to have some quite interview with me.

"Hello? Daddy? Uso 'yong phone ngayon? Baka naman you can text Law about that matter or just give us a call," I could hear the sarcasm and irritation in my own voice. "You don't have to come here and waste your time."

"Kryptonite," Law warned.

Lumington ako sa direksyon ni Law at nakita ang nakakatakot at nakakapanindig balahibong paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin.

I forgot my manners.

Napayuko ako at tumingin na lamang sa mga daliri ko. "I'm sorry..."

Fear, I was afraid that if I disobey Law, he may change his mind and just give me to daddy.

"Apo, come here," narinig kong marahan na boses ni Grandpa Sattie mula sa kabilang gilid ng sofa.

"No, papa," sabi ni daddy, maingat pa rin ang pagsasalita. "I'm still talking to my daughter."

Sinusubukan niyang makuha ang loob ko. Bakit hindi na lang ganito ang gawin niya kay mommy para bumalik ulit si mommy sa kanya?

Glancing back at Law, I shuddered under his gaze that was screaming of violence.

Binalik ko ang tingin kay daddy at tumungo. "I'm so sorry, daddy..."

"It's okay, Kryptonite," aniya at hinaplos ang buhok ko. "Now, I just wanna ask you if you wanna come back to the mansion this coming August? I'll enrol you back in a university near the mansion."

Kaba at takot na lamang ang nararamdaman ko kahit na kanina ay galit at naiirita pa ako.

"No, ayoko po," sagot ko sabay iling. "Mas gusto ko 'yong luto ni Law kesa sa chef, and I would miss my friends."

"Is that so?" ngayon ay ramdam ko na ang tensyon sa paligid. "Did Law let you skip your meal? Did he hurt you?"

Clenching my fist, I took a deep breath. I couldn't take this anymore. Was that how he look down at Law?

"Daddy bakit parang niaaway mo si Law?" I frankly said between gritted teeth. "Always niya akong pinapakain, hindi mo ba alam, daddy? May nakain na naman siyang shrimp dahil sa'kin, he always buy me things that I want at hinding-hindi niya ako kayang saktan."

Lumipat ang paningin ni daddy kay Law na parang hindi pa siya kumbinsido sa mga sinabi ko. "Law, son, tinakot mo ba ang kapatid mo?"

"No, Dad," Law answered honestly and firmly.

Ang hirap talagang magpigil ngayong pinaghalong takot, kaba at matinding galit na ang nararamdaman ko para kay daddy.

"Tinakot? Bakit niya naman gagawin 'yon?" I butt in with disrespect. "What's wrong with you, daddy?"

"Kry, I'm just trying to protect you," marahan ang tono ng boses ni daddy pagdating sa akin pero parang kanina lang ay ang lamig ng boses niya nang tinanong niya si Law.

Attentively, I had observed and realized that our light conversation minutes ago was fueled by heavy words now.

Heated discussions about me, firing questions and shooting answers.

"Zacharias, mas mabuti pa'ng bumalik ka na lang muna ng Manila, sa susunod mo na lang kausapin ang bata,"
ani Grandpa Sattie matapos ang ilang segundong katahimikan.

"No, papa. I'm bringing Kryptonite back to the mansion," mariing sabi ni daddy, buong-buo na ang desisyon nang tumayo siya.

I stood up from the sofa abruptly. "What? No! Ayoko!" I bursted and shifted my gaze from daddy to Law. "Law, 'wag kang pumayag sa gusto ni daddy, please?"

"Change your clothes, Kryptonite. Aalis na tayo ngayon," I couldn't hear the gentle in daddy's controlling voice anymore, it faded.

Mabilis akong lumayo kay daddy at malalaking hakbang ang tinahak para makalapit sa kinatatayuan ni Law.

Nang nakarating ako kay Law ay agad kong hinawakan ang kanyang maskuladong braso. Ramdam ko sa mga palad ko ang umiigting na kalmanan niya roon.

Seeing the visible cords pulsing on the back of his hands, I closed my eyes tightly before opening it and look up at him. He was standing straight, tall and towering over me, so I needed to tilt my head up to have a look on his chiselled face.

A mixture of stoic and stolid was all that I could see on his face.

Where's the anger and defiance? I want him to get mad at daddy and would never let him bring me back to the mansion.

"S-Sabihin mo kay daddy, Law. Dito lang ako 'di ba?" pamimilit ko, hinihigpitan ang pagkakahawak sa kanyang matigas na braso. "Law, please, sagutin mo naman ako..." garalgal ang boses ko nang hindi man lang siya nag-abalang tumango o umiling bilang sagot.

He didn't answered me, he was just looking down at me. Silent and severe.

"Zacharias, 'wag mo'ng pilitin ang bata," narinig kong sabi ni Grandpa Sattie na sa tingin ko ay tumayo na rin sa kinatatayuan niya. "Malamang ayaw niya sa mansyon dahil katulong lang ang makakasama niya do'n."

"Sasama sa'kin ang bata, papa. Sasabay siya sa'kin sa private plane," hindi naman nagpapatibag ang boses ni daddy. "Kryptonite, magbihis ka na."

"L-Law..." napakagat ako sa pang-ibabang labi ko nang naramdaman ko ang panginginig nito at ang pag-init ng sulok ng mga mata ko. "Magsalita ka naman oh..."

"Kryptonite," narinig kong boses ni daddy na ngayon ay naglalakad palapit sa kinaroroonan namin ni Law.

Mabilis pa sa isang segundo ang paglipat ko sa kabilang side ni Law at niyakap ng mahigpit ang kanyang bewang, awtomatiko namang hinawakan ng kamay niya ang likod ko.

"No! Ayokong sumama sa'yo!" I shouted, loud enough for him to know that I was angry.

"Kryptonite, daddy is just doing what's good for you, princess," daddy stepped forward to us and the look in his eyes softened along with his sweet baritone voice, he was trying to tame me, to have me trap under his control.

"L-Law, I'm hungry..." pilit kong iniiba ang pinag-uusapan, mahigpit na nakayakap kay Law at nakaangat ang tingin sa kanya. "Kain na muna tayo, please?"

I was hoping to escape this trouble through saying my needs and concerns. It's one important thing to stop this nonsense argument.

Hindi ako matitiis ni Law.

"Son," malamig na nakatingin si daddy nang inilahad niya ang kanyang kamay sa direksyon namin. "Akin na ang kapatid mo."

Seconds after, I couldn't stop the tears from streaming down my face. Tightening my hug, I sobbed. "N-No! Law, please, please..."

Paulit-ulit akong nagmamakaawa at walang humpay din ang pagtulo ng mainit na luha ko.

"Sh, little girl, don't cry," kahit na masuyo at parang naglalambing ang pagkakasabi ni Law ay ramdam ko pa rin ng tigas ng kanyang boses.

His large and rough hand at my back moved up to the back of my head, and then he pulled it as he leaned down to pour a long kiss at the top of my head.

"'Y-Yan lang ba ang sasabihin mo, Law? Aren't you going to stop daddy?" I complained, wanted to hear more, to hear the words that I wanted him to say. But after a minute of grieving silence, and all that I could hear were my soft sobs and smooth sniffs, I let go of him. Pushing him away and look at him directly in his eyes. "Say something, Law!"

Nagulat siya sa ginawa kong pagtulak sa kanya pero nang nakabawi siya ay agad niya naman akong nilapitan at hinawakan ang magkabilang braso ko, marahang hinahaplos ito, taas baba.

"Hush, Kryptonite. Why don't you go upstairs, little girl? You're hungry, right? Dadalhin ko na lang ang breakfast mo sa kwarto, ayos na ba tayo?" he looked scared all of a sudden, and the inner corner of his brows raised in worry. "Tahan na..."

Humihikbi akong marahang tumango at nakita ko pa ang gulat na ekspresyon sa mukha ni daddy nang nakita niya kung gaano ako kabilis na napaamo ni Law.

While Grandpa Sattie was just watching the dramatic scenery that he had ever watched.

"H-Hatid mo'ko..." I said through sobbing and wiping my tears.

"Alright, little girl," using his thumbs, Law helped me wipe the tears off my face before kissing my forehead in two times.

In order to go to the wooden stairs, we have to walk past where daddy was formally standing straight, so when Law guided me back, I was in the opposite side of him where daddy couldn't reach me.

We were about to walk past him but we instantly stopped on our track when daddy took a grip of Law's arm.

They were practically in the same height, their face were so close to each other, staring and clenching their jaw. Law's eyes hardened and daddy's turned so cold.

"Law. Mag-usap tayo," ang tanging sinabi ni daddy.

Law nodded his head. "Yes, dad."

With Law's hand resting at the small of my back, he gently pushed me to walk forward and so I obeyed.

Nang nakarating na kami sa kwarto namin ay marahan akong pinaupo ni Law sa malambot na kama namin. Kinuha niya ang kanyang laptop at phone na nakalapag sa malapit na mesa rito at nilagay sa tabi ko.

"You can use it, little girl. Download anything you want," he said, and ran his fingers through his soft hair. "May aasikasuhin lang ako sa baba at magluluto na rin ako."

He knew that if I got bored, I would find something interesting to do.

"O-Okay..." humihikbi kong sagot.

"Tahan na, babalik ako agad, dito ka lang," bilin niya, hinalikan ang ulo at noo ko ng ilang beses bago siya lumabas ng kwarto.

Indefatigable man, that's what I see Law since we were young. I haven't seen him tired and exhausted before, he never gets tired of doing what he wanted to do.

For the time being, he had let me know how miserable and vulnerable he was.

Why hide it for all the years that he had it? He had the fear since he felt that outlandish feeling toward me, he's new to this unfamiliar feeling before and so was I, but in my case, I had successfully ignored it for years before I felt it again.

As of this moment, I wasn't thinking that this thing between us wasn't just lust, crave for sex and whatsoever.

I couldn't admit it because I wasn't just falling, I was almost crawling.

Fifteen minutes, it took me fifteen minutes of hanging out with my polluted mind besmirched by questions after questions. I was actually spacing out, staring to nowhere, preoccupied with the secrets that I've heard earlier.

Even a lay of my finger on the laptop and phone could lessen my strength, I didn't wasted the only energy that had left of me.

Wala akong ginawa kung 'di ang mag-isip imbes na libangin ang sarili.

Gusto ko lang naman malaman kung ano ang maaaring pinag-usapan nila Law at daddy, kung nando'n pa kayo so Grandpa Sattie. I was curious and I wanted to know.

Wala sa sariling tumayo ako at naglakad palabas ng kwarto, pababa pa lang ako ng hagdan, naririnig ko na ang ingay ng mga nakakatakot at malalim na boses sa baba. Pero hindi ko naman narinig ang boses ni grandpa, siguro ay lumabas siya?

They're arguing again? Haven't they gotten tired of it?

"That's all I need for you to do, son," una kong narinig ang kalmado at baritonong boses ni daddy. "Do it or I'll take her back."

"Why her?" it was Law, he was obviously displeased.

Kumunot ang noo ko.

Who's her? Maybe Ate Francesca, Kirsten or Dana? They're the only females that I had known for they came from a wealthy and respectable family.

"I have plans for Lazarus and Francesca," maawtoridad na sabi ng boses ni daddy. "The young lady told me that she's still in love with Lazarus."

"Fuck her," I could hear for once in my life that Law disrespect our dad, his dad. "Of course she'll say that. Tinawagan ko siya kaya siguro nagbago ang isip niya."

Parang naubusan ako ng dugo sa mukha nang narinig ang huling sinabi ni Law.

He told me very clearly that he never talked or met Ate Francesca. 'Yong araw na sinagot ko ang tawag ni Ate Francesca lang ay ang huling pagkakataon na narinig niya ang boses ni Ate Francesca.

Lie, was it just a lie? But he never lied to me.

"Tinawagan mo?"

"May girlfriend ako at ayokong guluhin niya ako," iritadong sagot ng hindi nagpapatalong awtoridad sa boses ni Law.

"Are you going to break up with your girlfriend or you'll cheat, son?" daddy's voice seemed like he was provoking Law. "Sino ba'ng mas importante sa'yo? 'Yang girlfriend mo o si Kryptonite?"

Sino nga ba? Hindi ko rin alam, sa pagkakaalam ko ay ako si Kryptonite at ako rin ang girlfriend niya.

An irascible man like Law would never let his opponent win.

I was expecting Law to refuse and dismiss their serious talk but to be unexpected

that it was, he did otherwise and said the words that I didn't wanna hear.

"Fine, dad. I'll break up with my girlfriend and have a date with Erich this coming August, 'wag mo lang ilayo sa'kin si Kryptonite."

Chapter 31

Hacienda

He prevaricated our issue about Ate Francesca? The call. I haven't forgotten about what he told me during our explaining session on the ferry, exactly in our suite room, he was taking his shower with open door.

Mainly, I would go ranting downstairs, fuming with so much more than a particular anger like a loser crybaby and hurt Law by pounding my fists against his sculpted chest, scream at his face that he's such a falsifier miscreant.

Though, I couldn't do it, I couldn't hurt him.

With downcast eyes, weebegone splintered heart and torturously unspoken words, I ascended the few steps to go upstairs soundlessly.

Getting inside our room, I paused for a second in front of the door right after I closed it.

Nakatayo ako sa nakasarang pinto habang iniisip ang mga sinabi niya kanina sa banyo.

So, it was the reason why he was acting strange? Because he doesn't have any choice? He's torn in an unbearable situation where he couldn't choose the solution what's good for him, he knew what was good for him but he chose to make a decision that would be good for me.

Egregiously, I was unprepared to hear it, however, I had practiced myself to think first before initiating a doable plan.

How would he break up with me? I would wait for it, and if he didn't end this relationship before August therefore he's going to cheat.

But what if there would be a delay, change of month and instead of August, it would be June? They would date on July? Or September. No one knows what would occur today, tomorrow, the next day, next week, month, year and decade. Unless if daddy was one of the fortunate fortune-teller who has the competency to guess or invent a story of luck and motivate others to wait for their gifted future?

Nothing I did came out right, I was a catastrophe that Law would willingly to welcome and embrace.

This family was a complete fiasco.

And I, for I thought that this would help Law lessen his problems, decided to keep the words that I heard from eavesdropping earlier for myself, cast it out of my head and dismiss the worries that have sealed on my chest.

I would believe his lies, even though I know the truth.

Half an hour later, I didn't heard a knock from the door. It just flew open then I was greeted by Law's intimidating presence as he march inside our room, bringing a wooden tray with my breakfast on it.

Inilapag niya 'yong tray sa malapit na table bago lumapit sa akin.

I was currently drop on my flat stomach on a comfortable hickory coloured modern davenport bi-sectional sofa. Busying my fingers by typing against the keyboard of his laptop before pressing the enter and the video started playing.

"Having fun, little girl?" aniya at umupo sa espasyo sa gilid ko.

Well, I didn't answered him.

"Ugh-hm, yes! Yes! Oh, ah..." moaned by the woman from the video.

Watching the blonde woman having sex with a Latino man, I cocked my head to the side, very serious of what I was gonna learn after watching this porn video.

"What the fuck?" malutong na mura ni Law at marahas na binaba ang screen ng laptop. Narinig ko pa ang ingay na parang may kung anong nayupi sa laptop.

Sa isang iglap ay nawala na 'yong laptop sa harap ko, kinuha niya na at inilagay sa loob ng isang drawer bago bumalik ulit dito sa kinaroroonan ko.

Mula sa pagkakadapa ay humiga ako at tinignan si Law.

"What was that, Kryptonite?" he demanded, staid with the morbidity of displeasure that was written all over his chiselled face. "If you wanna do it, little girl, just ask me. Hindi 'yong manonood ka ng mga gano'n."

"Okay," sabi ko nang bumalik siya a pagkakaupo niya kanina dito sa gilid ko. "But Dana is always asking you that thing before, did you two do it?"

"No," sagot niya gamit ang magaspang niyang boses. Inayos niya na pa ang laylayan ng tank top ko, hinila pababa dahil nakikita niya na ang bellybutton ko. "Stop talking about her, Kryptonite."

However, I didn't stop.

"What about Ate Francesca?" I asked again, trying to excavate his problems and make him talk about it.

Maybe, he would tell me the truth? There's nothing wrong with hoping.

Pero hindi ko inasahan ang naging reaksiyon niya. Nasaksihan ko ang paglambot ng ekspresyon niya sa kanyang mukha.

"Fuck..." his palm have remained resting on my stomach where he pulled the hem of my tank top down to cover my exposed bellybutton. His eyes that had fulfilled with fear looked at me. "Little girl, what's wrong? Tell me."

Everything was wrong, but as I've said, I didn't wanna be a burden to him. I need to trust his decisions, but how? When I knew that half of it were lies and that made me to be a dupe person.

But I was trying, trying to understand his situation. I was afraid that what if the time would come and I could never try to understand him? I would get tired of understanding him?

The unimaginable part of it all was what if he would be the first and get tired of fighting for me? He came this far, he would never get tired.

Insane as I was, I kept on convincing myself to have a positive mind with positive thoughts.

Ang sabi niya pa sa akin ay dapat sa kanya lang ako maniniwala. Ginawa ko naman pero ngayong nalaman kong iilan sa pinaniniwalaan ko ay kasinungalingan, ang tanga ko pa rin dahil hanggang ngayon ay 'yon pa rin ang pinili kong paniwalaan.

I was dying to know about his phone call with Ate Francesca. What did he said to change her mind that easily? I shouldn't be surprised anymore, he easily changed my mind too.

Bakit hindi niya subukan kay Erich, 'di ba? Baka magbago rin ang isip ng impaktang 'yon.

Tumayo ako mula sa pagkakahiga ko at umupo sa matigas na hita ni Law, paharap sa kaniya. My legs were parted, and luckily, I didn't came across, budge, or accidentally touch the extremely large bulge in between his thighs.

Niyakap ko siya sa kanyang leeg at gano'n din ang pagpulupot ng kanyang maskuladong braso sa bewang ko nang sumandal siya sa backrest ng sofa.

"I'm scared, Law..." I whispered under his ear.

"I wanna know why," naramdaman kong isiniksik niya pa ang kanyang mukha sa balikat ko.

I could sense that he was smelling my scent in because of the way his strong pointed nose moved against my shoulder in a slow and smooth motion.

"Because of daddy, paano kung ibabalik niya talaga ako sa mansyon? I love the mansion, may pool and almost everything is there pero ayoko," I said, and pulled myself away just little distance from him to have a look at his handsome face. "Wala ka naman do'n."

Nakakapit pa rin naman ang mga braso ko sa kanyang leeg habang marahan kong hinihilot ang kanyang batok gamit ang mga daliri ko.

"Hindi ka niya ibabalik sa mansyon," he pressed his soft and hot lips against my right arm, giving me the best body sensations sparking inside me. "I've talk to him."

"Anong pinag-usapan niyo? Are you going to have a date and try Ate Francesca again like before?" I asked, ignoring the things that he's doing right at this moment.

"No," matigas niyang sagot at natigilan sa paghalik sa braso ko.

I wrinkled my nose, expecting something. "What then?"

Approximately three minutes, it took him that long to respond.

"It doesn't matter, little girl," was his only response, his voice was so firm and strict, it was like he was telling me that he has no room for any other questions

and arguments for today. "Madali lang naman ang pinapagawa niya sa'kin. Don't worry, okay?"

Madali? Madali lang para sa kanya ang makipag-date sa ibang babae? Parang naghuhubad at nagbibihis lang ng damit? Mahirap 'yong kung puputulin ni daddy ang kamay niya.

"Kilala ko si daddy," I enunciated each word. "Alam kong pinapahirapan ka niya, Law."

"Paghihirapan ko," mas may diin pa ang pagkakasabi niya sa dalawang salita na 'yon.

Ruefully, this was what I had spent my time thinking about it. He had been suffering from the beginning, having a hard time working.

Once again, daddy was giving him another problem. How was I going to help? Just face him instead of facing the problems and what? Talk about interesting topics, request some things and make love with him all day, all night?

It's a shit. I couldn't just endure this set up while he could barely sleep at night because of the fear and worry that daddy would come and get me.

"Pero ayokong nahihirapan ka," marahan kong sabi, I moved my hands from his nape to his face and cupped both sides of his jaw, in an automatic action when he felt my palm against it, his jaw twitched, as if he was electrified by my touch. "Pa'no kung mapagod ka na? You'll give up and... and..."

"Kryptonite, little girl, look at me," he commanded, catching my unfocused gaze. "Tumingin ka sa'kin."

The skin at the back of my neck bristled the second he touch it to control my neck and forced me to face him.

I focused my gaze to him. "L-Law... Pa'no kung mangyari 'yon?"

"Hindi mangyayari 'yon," siguradong-sigurado ang kanyang boses nang sinabi niya 'yon. "Trust me... trust me, okay?"

Breathing in, long and deep, I successfully calmed myself just by staring into his intimidating eyes, but for me, it was truly comforting.

Ba't gano'n? Titingin lang ako sa mga mata niya, kakalma na agad ako tapos siya ay kailangan niya pa'ng dumila, sumipsip at kagatin ang pagkababae ko para kumalma?

He's not fair.

"Okay..." my voice was low and almost inaudible to hear. Law pulled me closer to him and kissed my forehead. "Two weeks na lang, end na ng May, pasukan na naman. Law, phone, please? I need a phone," reklamo ko sa gitna ng paghalik niya sa noo ko, I wanna change the unpleasant topic earlier.

Abruptly, he paused and shot me a strictly stare.

I left the old Android phone at home, it was good but the phone was sometimes frustrating. It wasn't updated and I always got to have a minute of traffic online because of the outdated version of the phone.

Hereupon, if Law didn't agreed or buy me a phone, I would ask Grandpa Sattie for money and I would buy a phone for myself.

"No, you can use my phone," bakas ang hindi pagsang-ayon sa gusto ko ang kanyang baritonong boses.

"Fine, mag-iipon na lang ako," padabog akong umayos ng upo sa kanyang hita, narinig ko pa ang palihim niyang pagdaing na parang nasasaktan siya. "Five thousand naman 'yong baon ko everyday, not a problem."

"Three thousand five hundred na lang ngayon," Law said, correcting me.

"What? Law naman..." I complained and moved my body closer to his, umusog ako ng mas malapit sa kanya at narinig ko na naman ang pagdaing niya nang padabog kong inupuan ang kanyang malaki at matigas na umbok. "Ikaw lang yata ang napaka-kuripot na sugar daddy."

Buti pa si Cykee, binilhan ni Hezion ng latest model ng iPhone, which was napakamahal.

To the extent of my sense of touch and feeling, I have never felt his manhood, this rebelliously hard and it was somewhat pulsing, vibrating and throbbing against my feminine part.

Every time I see his manhood, erect and angry. I had always noticed some veins on it. The tip of it, the shiny and pinkish bald head of his manhood was screaming aristocracy. I wonder if somehow someone had given him the title to be one of the crème de la crème longest and largest penis for the rest of the penis race in the whole world?

Of course, the size and good looks of the Cavanaugh's manhood was like a disease, it was hereditary. Indeed, it was inherited.

Moaning, he shot me a sexually intimate look. "Anong sinabi mo, little girl?"

"I-I didn't said sugar daddy," napalunok ako nang nakitang binitiwang niya ako at hinubad ang kanyang tee shirt. "Oh my God! Law! Ang manyak mo talaga! Ba't naghubad ka? Anong gagawin mo?"

"No, I'm not," umiling siya at isinampay sa kanyang balikat ang damit na hinubad niya. "I'm going to take a bath, little girl. Magbihis ka na rin dahil pupunta tayo ng hacienda."

"Pero baka nando'n pa si daddy? Ayoko," I gripped his left masculine arm with my two hands since I couldn't hold it with only one hand, same to his manhood.

"Hindi ka niya kukunin sa'kin," his dark voice sounded so sure. "Sa mga oras na 'to, nakasakay na siya sa mamahalin niyang sasakyan papuntang airport."

"Really?"

"Yes, little girl," he said it with strong hold of assurance. "Now, eat your breakfast," he added, jerking his head to the direction of the table where he placed the wooden tray.

Pouting, I moved from sitting on his lap and stood upright.

Walking my way toward the table, I asked. "Kumain ka na ba ng breakfast?"

"Oo, dumila na ako kanina, mas masarap pa 'yon," agad na sagot ni Law kaya mabilis

akong napaharap sa kanya.

"Law!" nanlaki ang mga mata ko at mabilis na tumalikod nang dahil sa nakita ko. Mariin akong napapikit at hindi gumalaw sa kinatatayuan ko.

Overwhelmed to see him naked and flaunted his outsize manhood, my feet rooted on the floor.

Keeping my eyes shut even if how many times I saw it, I had forgotten that Law devirginized me. I wasn't virgin anymore so why was I acting like I just saw it for the first time?

Heavy footsteps were coming on the way, I could tell that the direction where the footsteps were taking was toward me. It was getting nearer and nearer, audible to hear behind me, and when it stopped, I bit my lip.

Law was so close behind me, I could feel his intimidating presence even if my eyes were close.

Naramdaman ko ang marahang pagpalo ng kanyang magaspang na kamay sa pwet ko bago ko muling narinig ang kanyang mabibigat na yabag ng paa, naglalakad patungo sa kinaroroonan ng banyo.

I opened my eyes to see the bathroom's door left open, that's fine though, I would not go there and take a peak of him cleansing himself inside the shower stall.

Too much pleasure could hurt.

Dear me, I would never use and abuse my body. It needed a break, that's why I closed my eyes earlier and avoid stealing some discreet glances at his manhood. Bad idea, it was, ever since he told me about how much my stare at it could make him hard and horny. I should not stare nor take a quick glance at it.

Kumain na ako habang muli na namang iniisip ang tungkol sa narinig ko kanina at pagkatapos ay nagbihis na rin.

"Law, may alam na ba si Grandpa Sattie tungkol sa relasyon natin?" tanong ko habang nakatingin sa labas ng bintana ng kanyang kotse.

We were heading to grandpa's hacienda. He was wearing his umber coloured muscle tee sando that made his triceps exposed, paired with plain graphite coloured urban pipe shorts.

For my appearance, I was wearing a porpoise gray coloured plain ringer fitted tee shirt with a plain obsidian black candy shorts.

We're both wearing our black slippers.

The weather outside looked sad, dark clouds were gathered up in the sky, blocking the sunlight.

"No," narinig kong sagot ni Law nang iniliko niya ang kotse sa isang hindi sementadong daan, siguro kung uulan mamaya ay magiging maputik 'tong daan.
"Malalaman niya mamaya."

"Okay, how are you going to tell him?" I didn't bother to glance at his side, my eyes were having fun of watching the goats and cow at the side of the road where they could eat some wild grass.

"He'll know."

My brows furrowed, so I turned to look at him. "Are we going to stay there for the night?" curious, because he just packed a bit of our clothes and put it inside the backseat earlier. "I miss my room."

"We're going to stay in the hacienda for one week and we'll come back to our house right after," he explained, gaze were focused on the road. "You're going to sleep in my room."

Interesting, this was new because I haven't seen what was in his room there at the hacienda.

"Hindi pa ako nakapasok sa kwarto mo sa hacienda, no one does," I narrowed my eyes at him. "Kahit 'yong mga katulong 'di mo rin pinapapasok para maglinis, I assume that you clean it on your own whenever we're having a vacation here before. So, ano naman kaya ang hitsura ng kwarto mo ngayon? Maalikabok?"

"I'll clean it," aniya, na parang responsibilidad niyang linisin 'yon.

Losing of words to say, I just kept myself silent for the whole ride. Grandpa's land was so wide and we have to ride a car to reach the location of the hacienda.

Confused why we had a car and where did he get this? He already had it parked at the parking space of his modern wooden house, he owned it.

Nakita kong mas nagiging pamilyar sa'kin ang dinadaan namin hanggang sa iniliko ni Law ang sasakyan niya papasok sa isang daanan at doon bumungad sa akin ang napakalaking hacienda ni Grandpa Sattie.

Until now, parang namumulubi pa rin si grandpa. Kasi naman walang bakod itong malaking hacienda niya, 'yong mga puno lang na nakahilera ang nagsisilbing bakod.

Law parked the car in front of the stairs of the hacienda, the double doors were open, always welcoming us with a warm smile on Nayda's face.

Beaming, I went out of the car and didn't wait for Law to open the door to my side.

"Slow down, little girl," saway ni Law nang tumakbo ako paakyat ng hagdan.

"Oh my God! Nayda! I miss you po!" I greeted the mayordoma with a tight hug. Ang kanyang medyo makulot n buhok ay malinis na nakatali.

As far as I could remember, she's six years younger than grandpa. Matagal na rin siyang nagsisilbi rito. Naging katulong siya rito noong eighteen years old pa lang yata siya at naging mayordoma siya nang si Grandpa Sattie na ang namamahala ng hacienda.

The Cavanaugh cousins wasn't calling her in a proper name, they called her by her nickname which was made by Kuya Laki. Nayda. I was just a victim of bad influence.

Except for Law, he highly respect Nayda.

"Magandang umaga po, manang," ang tanging sinabi ni Law bago niya ako mahigpit na hinawakan sa bewang.

"Nasa bulwagan na ang grandpa niyo, pasok na," Nayda gesture her wrinkly hand for us to come inside.

"Okay, thank you, Nayda," sabi ko at medyo lumayo kay Law para bumulong kay Nayda. "Uhm, may pancake with hotdog ba sa kusina, Nayda?"

"Oo, mamaya na, ikaw talagang bata ka," natatawang tugon nito saka nauna nang pumasok at nagtungo sa isang pinto sa 'di kalayuan.

Sumunod kami ni Law na pumasok sa loob ng bulwagan at nakita si grandpa na prenteng nakaupo sa isang single seater sofa.

Grandpa had a smoking tobacco roll between his index and middle finger. That tobacco roll was ubiquitous here in the hacienda, mostly, every corner of the entrance hall has ashtrays.

I sat first on the long sofa and Law followed suit. There was a center table in between grandpa's seat and ours, Law and I were facing him, seemed like we would have to go through an interrogation with grandpa today. It's almost three in the afternoon, we had our lunch back in the modern wooden house earlier before coming here.

Anxiously, I caught how grandpa's observing gaze surveyed and lingered on Law's firm hold at my waist. Even now that we're sitting.

"Oh, Law, apo," sabi ni grandpa nang nakabawi na siya mula sa matagalang pagsuri niya sa paraan ng pagkakahawak ni Law sa bewang ko kasabay ng pagbaba at paglagay niya sa kanyang hawak na tobacco roll sa isang ashtray na malapit sa kanya. "Sinabi mo sa'kin noon na babalik ka lang dito sa hacienda kapag dala mo na ang babaeng papakasalan mo?"

Maybe that's why he made a house for himself? It's been how many years since the last time that he lay a foot on the stairs of the hacienda.

Siguro ay simula noong nagtrabaho siya rito? Kaya nga miss na miss ko na ang hacienda dahil parang last two years pa yata noong huli akong pumunta rito at hindi pa kasama si Law no'n.

"Yes, grandpa," said the hardened voice of Law, and I felt him leaned forward to me, dropping a soft kiss on my head. "Matagal na siyang pabalik-balik dito."

Nervously, I drop my gaze on the floor, afraid to see grandpa's reaction, freaking out.

"Anong ibig sabihin nito, Law?" magaspang ang boses ni grandpa, parang naririnig ko na nga sa kanya ang pinaghalong kalmadong boses ni Kuya Lazi at ang nakakatakot na boses ni Law. "Si Kryptonite?"

"Grandpa—"

"Magkapatid kayo, Law."

Ayokong manahimik

lang dahil alam naman namin ni Law na may alam si Grandpa Sattie tungkol sa totoong pagkatao ko.

Audaciously, I tilted my chin up and look directly at grandpa. "Hindi po kami magkapatid, Grandpa Sattie," I said grimly, the reason why he turned his attention to me. "I'm adopted."

Muli niyang ibinalik ang tingin kay Law, hindi makapaniwala sa mga narinig. "Law, 'di ba pinag-usapan niyo na ng dad mo ang tungkol dito?"

"Grandpa, I wanna change her surname," the words that came from Law was so firm and the inextinguishable determination he had for us. "Gusto kong gamitin niya ang apilyedo ng totoong magulang niya."

Doubtlessly, I watched Law at my side with no vacillation disturbing on my mind.

"Hindi ko kilala ang totoong magulang ni Kryptonite, Law," umiiling na tugon ni Grandpa Sattie. "Your mom and dad only knows."

After what like one minute, I interrupted their talk.

I cleared my throat. "Uhm... Grandpa Sattie, may I ask you?"

"Ano 'yon, apo?"

"Hindi ka po galit?"

Unexpectedly, the corners of Grandpa Sattie's thin and pale pinkish lips raised upward for a genuine smile, and I saw how the wrinkles at the outer corner of his eyes formed.

A sign of getting older.

"Bakit naman ako magagalit? Kagustuhan niyong dalawa 'to at hindi naman kayo magkadugo," he even shrugged his shoulders. "Ang sabi ko nga sa kanilang magpipinsan, ayos lang sa'kin kahit na anong klaseng babae ang dalhin nila rito, basta, isang babae lang."

Naalala ko tuloy 'yong narinig kong pinag-usapan nila Heron at Law sa loob ng van noong nagkukunwari akong tulog.

"I heard Heron talked about something, 'yong kasunduan niyo po sa kanila? Ano po 'yon?" I asked politely with innocent curiosity on my eyes.

"Wala 'yon, apo," I could hear that he was having fun answering my questions. "Simula noong dalawang taong gulang ka pa lang nang una kang yumapak sa lupain ko, pag-aari ka na pala ng isa sa mga Cavanaugh."

Kahit na alam niya naman hindi niya talaga ako totoong apo ay nagawa niya pa rin akong tawagin at ituring na parang isa sa kanyang mga pinakamamahal na apo.

"Gano'n po ba 'yon, grandpa?"

"Lalo na kapag hinalikan mo ang lupa ko, apo, baka matali ka na talaga kay Law sa murang edad mo na 'yan," he added before he let out a couple of deep chuckles.

"Grandpa, hindi ito ang oras para makipaglokoan," saway ni Law na kanina pa tahimik at nakikinig. "Kailangan ko ng suporta mo, grandpa, sa oras na malaman nila ang tungkol sa'min."

"Susupportahan ko kayo kung nakikita kong nasa tama kayo," balik na naman sa pagiging seryoso si grandpa. "Kilala kita, Law, 'yong mga bagay na gustong-gusto mo'ng makuha at hindi mo makuha sa mabuting paraan, dinadaan mo sa dahas."

"Pero, grandpa—"

"Hindi na ako magtataka kung sa susunod na buwan ay mababalitaan ko na lang na buntis na pala si Kryptonite," he predicted, confident with certainty. "At hindi

tama 'yon, apo, dahil wala pa siya sa tamang edad."

"I know, grandpa," was Law's short response.

"They would accuse you from raping her—"

"Grandpa Sattie, it's not rape po, he didn't forced me..." magalang kong pagputol sa balak niyang sabihin.

Instead of responding to me, he averted his eyes from me and gave Law a stare of incredulity. "May nangyari na nga?"

"Hindi ko napigilan, grandpa," humigpit ang pagkakahawak ni Law sa bewang ko, nababakas ang kapusukan sa kanyang boses. "Ikaw ba, grandpa? Napigilan niyo rin po ba?"

"Hindi rin, apo," umiiling na sagot nito, parang may inaalala pa nang tumingin siya sa mataas na kisame. "Sa pagkakaalala ko ay parang sixteen years old din yata ang grandma mo noon kasi nga, nalasing ako, hindi tama 'yon, apo, kaya maghunos dili ka."

"What's wrong? Hindi naman po makukulong si Law, 'di ba? Kung hindi ko po sasabihin sa kanila," I could stop myself from asking, I was worried, helpless and useless.

What kind of help would a sixteen year old girl could offer to a twenty three years old man? Suggestions in mind?

Just like he was asking and had a big problem of what shade of lipstick would look nice on him? And I would help him choose, telling my opinion.

Kryptonite? Get the shit out of hell.

"Malalaman nila kapag buntis ka na, apo," narinig kong magaspang na boses ni grandpa dahilang kung bakit nabalik ako sa riyalidad. "Hindi ko alam kung anong klaseng pagpapahirap pa ang gagawin ng anak kong si Zacharias kay Law."

I knew it.

Starting from this minute, I didn't gave Law even a single and swift glance.

"Bakit parang sigurado po kayong mabubuntis ako, grandpa?" I pinched the bridge of my nose in disbelief.

Gano'n din kaya si Law. Sobrang sigurado na talagang mabubuntis niga ako.

"Kasi, sa kanilang magkakapatid na anak ni Zacharias..." he trailed off, sighing before he continued his delayed talk. "Alam kong si Laki lang ang gumagamit ng condom."

"Grandpa," Law warned with obvious authority in his hard and deep voice.

"Humihingi pa nga ang batang 'yon sa'kin ng extra cash daw," patuloy ni grandpa, hindi alintana ang ramdam kong nakakatakot na paraan ng pagtingin sa kanya ni Law. "Pambili ng proteksyon para sa masaganang ani."

Awkwardly, I expressed an uneasy smile. "Ah, gano'n po ba?"

"Grandpa, akyat na muna kami sa kwarto, maglilinis na po muna ako," pagsingit ni Law sa usapan namin ni Grandpa Sattie at hawak pa rin ang bewang ko nang tumayo

siya kaya napatayo na rin ako.

"Hindi na kailangan, apo," grandpa dropped the keys of Law's room on the center table. "Ako na mismo ang naglinis ng kwarto mo dahil alam kong ayaw na ayaw mo'ng pinapalinis ko 'yon sa mga katulong."

After Law grabbed the keys, he formally nodded his head with that stoic expression on his darkening face.

Overpraised by Law, I could almost feel that he wanted to carry me to go upstairs, he didn't want me to produce a single sweat just by walking.

We were about to ascend the one grand stairs of the hacienda but stopped when we both heard grandpa's rough voice from where we left him, on his single seater sofa.

"Law."

I turned on my heels to take a look of grandpa. He called Law but he wasn't facing us, he was staring blankly at the sofa where we sat earlier while he was holding his tobacco roll now in between his middle and index finger.

Law just kept his back, no concerns about what he was possibly going to hear.

Acrimony had built up inside me as if those words had cut my self-restraint and good behaviour.

"May balak ang ama mo na ipakasal ka sa isang Costales, kung hindi ay baka tuluyan niya nang kunin sa'yo si Kryptonite."

Chapter 32

Ruined

"Anong gagawin mo?" asik ko nang nakapasok na kami sa loob ng kwarto niya rito sa hacienda. "Law? Hindi mo ba sasabihin sa'kin kung anong gagawin mo?"

Marahas niyang sinara ang pinto ng kanyang kwarto na halos marinig na ng nasa baba ang pagdadabog niya rito.

Ramdam kong pareho lang kami ng nararamdaman ngayon, galit at takot.

Lumington siya sa akin matapos ang ilang minutong nakasandal lang ang kanyang noo sa nakasarang pinto.

Clenching my fist, I swallowed to witness how he carefully locked the door as his intimidating eyes pierced through me. This must be so important, he never lock his door, unless he's desperate to keep me here in times when our conversation turned out wrong and makes me ill.

Immobile by his grace, it was so hard for me to even move my fingers a little.

He strode across the room and stop his tracks one step away from me. I wouldn't dare to step forward, if I would, then my body would touch his.

Nakaangat ang tingin ko sa kanya, humihingi ng sagot.

Umangat ang kanyang isang kamay at akimang hahawakan niya ang braso ko pero bago niya pa man magawa 'yon ay marahas ko 'yong hinawi.

"I won't let you touch me, unless I'm getting my answer," sharp words came out right from my own mouth with uncontrollable wrath. "What are you going to do? And please... don't lie."

"Alam mo'ng ayoko sa lahat ay ang hindi mo ako pinapayagang hawakan ka," he emphasized it mercilessly.

"'Yan lang ba ang concern mo ngayon? Hindi mo ba ako sasagutin?" I snapped. Akimang hahawakan niya na naman sana ako sa braso pero marahas ko lang na inalis 'yon. "'Wag mo akong hawakan sabi!"

"Pahawak lang, Kryptonite," nakatungo niyang pakiusap, bakas ang napakatigas niyang boses.

Kahit na sumasakit na ang kamay ko sa kakahawi ng kanyang malaki at magaspang na kamay sa tuwing susubukan niya akong hawakan sa braso ko ay 'di pa rin ako tumigil.

"Law, please, I want an answer," I plead softly, didn't want to shout at him that would probably add and increase his explosive temper. "Sabihin mo sa'kin kung anong gagawin mo. Is it Ate Francesca? Siya ba ang Costales na tinutukoy ni grandpa?"

Marahan, ayokong magalit siya ngayong kontrolado niya pa ang kanyang galit at nangunguna pa ang takot sa kanya.

By attempting to touch my arm again, for the nth time around, I swatted his rough hand away.

"Little girl, please, pahawak naman..." malambot ang paraan ng pagtingin ng kanyang mga nagmamakaawang mata sa'kin. The hard expression on his face smoothened but it darkened when he spoke again. "Sasabihin ko sa'yo kung papayagan mo na akong hawakan ka."

How smart of him. Giving me a condition where both of us could take advantage of it.

No. I knew why he was doing this. He's trying to have my mind and wrap it around his fingers to fool and manipulate me.

Wala siyang pinagkaiba kay daddy kung gano'n ang gagawin niya ngayon.

It's hard to be near him, his insidiously masculine scent and bewitchingly daunting dark eyes could bring me to my downfall. I could barely stand on my own.

Hindi ko namalayan na dahan-dahan niya na palang inangat ang isa niyang kamay, nakatitig lang ako sa kanyang mga mata at gano'n din siya sa akin pero bago niya pa man ako nahawakan ay umatras ako, dahilan kung bakit huminto ang kanyang kamay sa ere.

Mariin niyang pinikit ang kanyang mga mata at marahas na bumuga ng hangin na parang nauubusan na siya ng pasensya.

As he slowly opened his eyes, it directly darted to mine like I was the target. "Ayokong magalit, Kryptonite."

Pertinacious girl as I could be, I remained on my spot because I wasn't born to be an acquiescent person. It's hard to please and allow someone from their demands if I didn't want to.

"Ayoko ring magalit, Law," pero bakas ang inis at galit sa boses ko, sumasabay din sa nararamdaman niya. "Sabihin mo na kasi sa'kin, I wanna know. Are you going to end our relationship sooner? If it is, then why not now? Mas magiging madali 'yon."

"Hindi ako makikipaghiwalay sa'yo," his hard jaw twitched. Nakababa ang nagdidilim at naninigas na tingin sa akin.

Suddenly, my nerves calmed. "What then? Are you going to cheat?"

Hindi niya pa naman alam na alam ko na ang tungkol sa pinag-usapan nila ni daddy. That's quite terrible for now, baka mas lalo lang lumala ang sitwasyon.

Lackadaisically, I waited for his answer and I was expecting him to say no but to my disappointment, I didn't receive any answers. Even just a single syllable.

I only got his intimidating silence as an answer.

My blood boiled and my heart raced in rage. It's too late to stop my increasing temper.

"Alam mo, Law? Mas mabuti pa'ng bumalik na lang ako sa mansyon!" I fulminated and bitterly pointed his broad chest with my index finger. "Yes! I'd rather be alone in that godforsaken mansion with those good-for-money maids than living with you cheating behind my back!"

Heavy and rapid breathing, I tried to catch my breath for a moment and stop ranting. My lips were slightly open, both nose and mouth were both taking in for air.

Awaiting for him to speak, I stood there noiselessly.

Halos limang minuto lang din naman ang nakalipas at nasa gano'ng posisyon lang kami. Naninigas ang kanyang ekspresyon sa mukha habang mariing nakatitig sa'kin.

Ni hindi siya nag-abalang magsalita. Mukhang wala naman talaga siyang balak magsalita.

"I'm done here," sabi ko sabay irap sa kanya at naglakad na patungo sa pinto.

Lalagpasan ko na sana siya ngunit hindi ko natuloy nang marahas at mahigpit niya akong hinawakan sa magkabilang braso at puwersahang pinaatras hanggang sa naramdaman ko na lang ang sarili kong nakaupo sa dulo ng isang napakamalambot na kama.

Stopping myself from screaming, I watched him in horror as he took off my candy shorts along with my panty and ripped it into two.

Unafraid, I kept my guards up and tightly pressed my thighs closed. After ripping the fabric of my shorts and panty, he throw it away and landed everywhere on the cold floor ground of his room.

"Lalabas ka, little girl?" marahas niyang bulong sa tenga ko habang nakatayo siya sa harap ko at bahagyang nakasandal sa akin. Nanghahamon.

Nakahawak pa ang kanyang isang magaspang at malaking kamay sa isang hita ko.

"Why? Akala mo ba hindi ko kayang lumabas na ganito lang ang suot? Ano naman ngayon kung makikita ako ng mga katulong? Ni Nayda, Heron o Grandpa? Kasalanan ko ba'ng pinunit mo ang shorts at panty ko?" I grinned stubbornly. "Lalabas ako."

Removing his hand from my thighs, I stood up and walk past him to the door.

"Kryptonite," his voice violently warned me, as if I was in danger.

"Oh, bakit? It's clear-skinned and shaved, kaya magandang rumampa sa corridor," panghahamon ko, ni hindi ko siya nilingon at sinadya ko pa'ng marahang pinapatalbog ang pwet ko sa bawat paghakbang ko dahil alam kong nakatingin siya roon sa paboritong parte niya ng katawan ko.

Provoking him was fun. But he would never alter the heavy anger, fear and jealousy inside me to something light.

When I finally reached the door, I started unlocking it but before I could pull it open, someone from behind me slammed its hard hand against the door to keep it close with a crashing noise of a bone banged against a wood.

I snorted because I knew that this would happen.

Haharapin ko na sana siya pero hindi ko na naman nagawa nang idinikit at idiniin niya ang kanyang katawan sa likod ko.

"Alam mo ba kung anong ginagawa ko sa mga makukulit na bata, Kryptonite?" he groaned, by the way he pressed himself against my back, his large bulge squeezed at the upper part of my butt. "I give them a spank, do you want that?"

Nakasuot lang ako ng pangitaas na damit kaya ramdam na ramdam ko ang tigas ng pagkalalaki niya sa likod ko, pilit kumakawala sa loob ng suot niya.

This ain't good. I knew where would our conversation end if I wouldn't try to make an immediate action to stop him.

But I was confident that there would be nothing to be afraid of. He's into outdoors activities and his room doesn't count.

"No," gently shaking my head, I squeezed myself against the door. Masyado siyang malapit sa'kin. "Law, we've talked about this, right? Hindi mo na ako ituturing na bata at hindi mo na rin ako papaluin sa pwet. Nakalimutan mo na ba 'yon?"

"I haven't," bulong ng istrikto niyang boses, nararamdaman ko pa kung paano niya hinahalikan ang gilid ng noo ko pababa dahilan kung bakit ako mariing napapikit. "Hindi kita papaluin sa pwet kung magpapakabait ka sa'kin."

Ang kanyang mainit, malambot at mamasa-masang mga labi ay patuloy na hinahalikan ang gilid na bahagi ng mukha ko habang nakatalikod pa rin ako.

"Sabihin mo na kasi kung anong gagawin mo 'pag nangyari 'yon," I gasped and shuddered when I felt how his hand crawled up under my fitted ringer tee shirt. I tried to ignore it. "You're going to cheat, right? And then? Magpapakasal ka tapos gagawin mo akong kabit? Wow naman, Law, mukha ba akong kumakabit? Kasi sa pagkakaalam ko, gawain 'yon ni Ate Francesca."

Akala ko ay aangat pa ang kanyang magaspang na kamay hanggang sa baby bra ko ngunit huminto ito sa tiyan ko.

"No," his deep voice turned husky.

His hand on my flat stomach did some gentle and slow strokes there, like he was protecting something in there, a treasure of hope for himself.

Promptly I remembered that I was supposed to be mad at him.

"Alam mo, Law?" iritableng panimula ko habang patuloy pa rin siya sa marahang paghalik sa gilid ng mukha ko. "Kung magtatago ka rin naman pala ng sekreto sa'kin. Bakit hindi na lang tayo maghiwalay 'di ba? Ako na ang makikipaghiwalay sa'yo para hindi ka na mahirapan."

I forced myself to move and push him, luckily, he step backward but not that far.

"Don't push me, little girl," angal niya at bumalik na naman sa pagiging galit ang kanyang boses, mababa lang ang tono nito.

Napasinghap ako nang mahigpit niyang hinawakan ang magkabilang bewang ko saka niya akong binuhat at agad na pinaghiwalay ang magkadikit kong hita gamit ang isang maskuladong braso niya at ipinuwesto 'yon sa pang-upo ko na nagsisilbing upuan.

Idinikit niya ang likod ko sa pinto habang buhat niya ako at doon niya sinimulang marahas na humalik sa panga ko.

"What the hell, Law! Let me go!" sigaw ko, nagpumiglas at pilit na tinutulak ang kanyang malapad at matigas na dibdib palayo. "Law! Stop!"

Helplessly, all that I could ever do in this sort of situation was to close my eyes when his warm lips violently collided with mine.

Marahas niya akong hinalikan, parang ahas ang kanyang mapagparusahang dila nang nagpumilit itong pumasok sa bibig ko, tumatama pa ang kanyang dila sa dila ko, sa paraan ng pagkagat niya sa pang-ibabang labi ko ay parang pinaparusahan niya ako na halos pumutok na ang labi ko sa pambubugbog ng kanyang mga ngipin dito.

Napapaatras na ang ulo ko at naramdaman kong nakasandal na ako sa pinto nang mas lumalim pa ang paraan ng paghalik niya sa'kin.

Daing at ungol ko lang ang tanging naririnig ko sa buong kwarto niya.

Matapos ang isang minuto at kalahating segundo ng halik niyang may kasamang dahas ay naramdaman unti-unti itong naging marahan.

Before he pulled away, he slid his wet tongue across my very swollen bottom lip and bit it again, pulling it with his strong set of complete teeth until my bottom lip slipped and had its freedom from his savage mouth that was disciplining me.

I slowly opened my eyes to see Law's soft expression on his face.

"Bata ka pa nga talaga," he commented, staring at my swollen lips after the long and intimate kiss. "Lahat ng problema natin dinadaan mo sa hiwalayan. Lagi mo na lang akong tinatakot na makikipaghiwalay ka sa'kin."

Casually, his breathing was even and normal, seemed like he didn't French kiss me just half a second ago. I didn't even had the chance to kiss back and fight his brutal tongue. Seriously. I was gasping for the rest of the air available here, hurriedly catching and stuff it inside my lungs.

"H-Hindi kita tinatakot!" giit ko nang medyo ayos na ang paghinga ko.

He leaned his forehead against mine after planting a quick kiss on the tip of my nose. "You're not gonna leave me."

I didn't expected this.

"Bakit ba kasi hindi mo na lang sabihin sa'kin kung anong gagawin mo 'pag mangyari 'yong sinabi ni grandpa, Law?" naging mahinahon din ang boses ko, because I was under the comfort of his eyes, who wouldn't? I inhaled, smelling the strong masculinity in his scent. "Sobrang hrap na ba talagang sabihin 'yon?"

"Dahil hindi ko na rin alam kung anong gagawin ko, Kry." bakas sa boses niya ang hrap at sakit ng pinagdaanan niya pero kahit gano'n ay magkaiba naman sa ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha ang nararamdaman niya.

No words had appeared on my mind for me to utter. The images of him that I have kept on my mind as my pièce de résistance that I would swallow full and savour all had distorted.

Assassinated by the negativity of my thoughts, I just close my eyes and wrapped my arms around Law's neck, squeezing my face against the crook of his strong neck where I could see some cords pulsing on it, and just feel him as long as I could feel him. Wishing that this would end soon, and we wouldn't have to come up with the decision to stay out of reach from each other.

The muscles on his arms under my bottom tensed when he walked back toward the large and cozy bed of his bedroom

He laid me down on the soft mattress of it, and dropped himself beside me just as how his body bounced against the fluffy and soft brunette coloured sheets.

"Wanna rest, little girl?" he asked with pure care and concern, laying on his side, facing me. "I'll wake you up when it's time for dinner."

Nakatakip ang isang malaking kamay niya sa pagkababae ko pero hindi niya naman ginalaw 'yon, nakapatong lang do'n.

I swallowed the lump that had stuck in my throat, and rested my soft palm on the rigid muscles on his muscular arm. "My panty and shorts..." I murmured, embarrassed.

Ngayon pa ako nahiya nang maayos na akong nakapag-isip at isinantabi muna ang galit.

"Hm?" he pulled up the peanut coloured thick blanket with different pattern of squares, I watched him purposely covered the lower half of my body. "Kukunin ko muna ang mga gamit natin sa kotse."

Look at me, once again, he triumphantly tamed me.

Within a minute, he was about to get himself out of bed. Instantly, my hand had a contact on his arm that made him to discontinue from moving so.

"Law... I-I'm so sorry..." I apologized, eyes down on his thighs and voice sounded sad, filled with regrets. "It's just so confusing and frustrating. Gusto kong bumalik tayo sa dati, 'yong wala tayong ibang problema kung 'di ay ang tungkol lang sa mga bad records ko sa school."

"Kahit bumalik tayo sa dati, little girl. Ganito pa rin naman ako," marahan niya pa'ng hinalikan ang balikat ko. "Hindi mo lang alam dahil ayokong isipin mo ang mga problema ko."

"Iba na ngayon, Law," umangat ang tingin ko sa kanya na nasa gano'ng puwesto pa rin, nakatagilid sa pagkakahiga. I narrowed my eyes infinitesimally. "I'm your girlfriend."

"Yes, and I regretted that I dragged you in this situation," aniya, halos kasing-gaspang ang boses niya ni grandpa. "I should have waited two more years."

My forehead creased. "Why?"

"So they won't accuse me of raping and kidnapping a beautiful underage girl," his darkening eyes were focused on my face, maybe he was memorizing every inch corner of my face.

Aaminin ko, nakakakilig kayang tawaging maganda kapag si Law ang nagsabi.

Though there's this one word that caught my concentration.

"What? Kidnapping?"

"Gusto kong magtanan tayo pero hindi pwede, minor ka pa," sabi niya sabay tayo at umalis na sa pagkakahiga sa kama. "Vancouver, Canada."

"Sosyalan naman kung itatanan mo ang isang babae, Law. 'Yong ibang lalaki nga lang diyan nagrerenta lang ng kwarto sa isang kanto tapos sa'yo mangingibang bansa na," nakangusong sabi ko habang pinapanood siyang inayos ang kanyang sariling buhok na bahagyang nagulo.

"I know you got those ideas from those movies that you have watched, and stories but this is real, little girl," he was currently brushing his soft hair with his strong and lean fingers while looking down at me. "I have saved my money for this."

"And we can't do it now," dugtong ko.

"Yes," sang-ayon niya at umupo sa gilid ng kama, paharap sa akin. "I'm patiently waiting, little girl."

"Paano kung mainip ka?"

"Ten years na akong naghintay, nainip ba ako?" tanong niya pabalik, medyo nakakunot ang noo.

"Uhm, no?" I answered under hesitancy.

"Then no, hindi ako mainip," agad niyang sagot sa tanong ko kanina, at marahang hinaplos ang buhok ko sa pinaka-ibabaw na bahagi ng noo ko. "Rest, little girl. Kukunin ko muna ang mga gamit natin sa kotse. Matulog ka na, ako na ang magsusuot sa'yo ng panty at shorts mo, ayos ba 'yon sa'yo?"

That's fine with me. As long as he would not do anything in holds of sexual desire.

"Okay," I nodded and make myself comfortable in my body position. "Hindi ka ba magpapahinga?"

"Tatabi ako sa'yo mamaya pagkatapos kitang bihisan," saad niya habang tinutulungan

akong ayusin ang kumot at iilang unan. "Pahinga ka na."

He got up from sitting on the side of the bed after he pressed his lips on my forehead, turning, he only took two steps before I stop him again.

"Wait," pagpigil ko sa kanya. I pulled myself up from laying and sat on the bed. "Can I help you, please? Your problem with daddy."

Turning to face me, the calm expression on his face earlier changed into something grim and ungentle. It looked very threatening, but I have been immune to that.

"Helping me means hurting you, little girl," deep meaning was buried in his manly voice. "Just let me handle this."

I should have expected this answer but why didn't I?

"Anong gagawin ko? Hahayaan kang pahirapan ni daddy? No," pagmamatigas ko, pilit na maging mas nakakatakot ang ekspresyon ko sa aking mukha kesa sa kanya.

That didn't budge his unchangeable decision. Why wouldn't he buy all my pleadings and rants? Was I that unconvincing?

Nakita ko kung paano niya mariing itinikom ang kaniyang namumulang mga labi bago niya 'yon binuksan at seryosong nagsalita.

"Oo, gusto kong hayaan mo'ng pahirapan ako ni dad," bakas sa kanyang boses na buo na talaga ang desisyon niya. "'Yon ang gusto kong gawin mo, Kryptonite."

I didn't stop 'til I convince him, so I opened my pretty little mouth to speak. "Pero, Law—"

"Gagawin mo 'yon para sa'kin, little girl, gagawin mo ang gusto ko 'di ba?" pamimilit niya habang nakikita ko ang iilang nagpapakitang ugat sa kanyang braso na tila pumipintig.

"Pero masasaktan ka," I said and knitted my brows in complete despair and worry.

Hindi ko alam kung tama pa ba ang mga nakikita ko nang matipid na ngumiti si Law sa kanyang sarili.

"Gusto kong masaktan," tugon niya, hindi pa rin nawawala ang ngiti sa kanyang labi nang marahan siyang umiling habang nakatingin sa akin. "Trust me, I want them all to hurt me but not you, not you."

Those were the last words that I heard from him before he went out of the room, leaving me speechless.

I sure was bad to think that this must have been part of the lust that we felt for each other, but I could feel the absence of lust. Seemed like it have been faded. The other corner of my mind told me that it's not even counted to the last list of lost lust.

Was it love? But I didn't heard him said the words. Does he have to?

Thinking deeper, I realized that my behaviour earlier made it hard for him.

Should I just obey him? I couldn't stop being such a worrywart. The future was on my hands, yes, I couldn't foretell it nor avoid the approaching pain, but perhaps and somehow, I could help.

Though how hard he tried to protect me from the pain, if I was destined to be hurt then I would get hurt.

Lahat kami sa sitwasyong 'to ay masasaktan, walang pinipili ang sakit, bata man o matanda, lalaki man o babae.

Alam kong masasaktan
ako pero ayoko namang masaktan na hindi lumalaban.

Bellicosity wasn't one of my characteristics, howbeit, I would cavil if needed.

Working with my brain was more exhausting and devastating, so I decided to rest it up with a nap.

Nagising lang ako nang naramdaman kong parang may nagmamasaha sa pwet ko at sobrang sarap sa pakiramdam no'n, pero isa rin sa dahilan kung bakit ako nagising ay ang ingay mula sa labas ng hacienda na parang umuulan.

"Hm..." I moaned as I rubbed the sleep off my eyes and clearing my blurry vision to look behind me.

Nakadapa ako, madalas akong nagigising na nakadapa na. Nakasanayan lang siguro dahil sa tuwing pinapalo ako ni Law sa pwet ko noon ay natatapos 'yon na nakadapa ako, umiiyak at itutulog ko na lang ang sakit.

Looking around Law's room, since I haven't checked it up earlier because of the fight and spacing out, his room was relaxing and could be an antidepressant because of the calming and pacifying historic atmosphere. It was worthwhile to wait for years of curiosity what's in this room.

Most of the furnitures here were made of old yet hard wood. It was more spacious than my room here.

The lights from the old mini chandelier above were on, that means, the day have submitted to the night.

Tumingin ako sa gilid ko kung saan nakahiga si Law sa nakatagilid na posisyon habang hinihimas niya ang pwet ko.

Buti na lang talaga at may suot na akong shorts at panty.

"How's your sleep?" pambungad niyang tanong.

"Just fine," my voice came out husky. Parang bagong gising lang sa umaga. "Anong oras na?" inalis ko ang kamay niya sa pwet ko at umupo sa kama.

"Almost seven," sagot niya bago bumangon at umupo sa kama, umusog pa siya para mas makalapit sa tabi ko. "Dinner with grandpa is ready."

"Okay, I'll just fix my hair for a minute," gumapang ako sa kama, dumaan sa tabi niya at hinalikan siya sa pisngi bago ako bumaba at dumiretso sa loob ng kanyang banyo.

The noise of a stainless steel spoon clanging against the glass plate were all I could hear in the peaceful dining room of the hacienda. Three maids at the corner where one of them was holding a round glass pitcher with holder, of course, with cold water in it, the other maid was clutching the glass pitcher of pineapple juice and the last one was a bottle of wine.

I was wondering where would Nayda could be? Her absence was unexpected.

"Law, think about what I told you earlier," basag ni grandpa sa katahimikang kanina pa bumabalot sa amin. "It's not good for her to—"

"Grandpa, I don't wanna talk about it... in front of my little girl," Law's prominent voice cut grandpa from finishing his words.

Mula sa pagkain ay umangat ang tingin ko kay grandpa na nakaupo sa dulo ng mahabang mesa, si Law naman sa kanan niya at ako sa kaliwa.

Naguguluhan man sa mga pinag-uusapan nila ngayon ay parang alam ko na kung kailan sinabi ni grandpa kay Law kung ano man ang sinabi niya sa kanya.

It was during the time that I was sound asleep.

Hindi na ako nagsalita dahil 'yon din naman siguro ang gusto ni Law. Ang manahimik ako at hindi na lang makisali sa mga problema niya.

"You know your father, Law, apo," nakababa ang tingin ni grandpa sa kanyang pagkain habang abala ang kanyang mga kamay sa pagkontrol ng kutsara't tinidor. "Hindi ko alam kung saan kami nagkamali ng mahal ko sa pagpapalaki sa kanya."

Biting my bottom lip, I moved my gaze downward to my own plate.

I could hear and feel the longing in Grandpa Sattie's rough voice.

"Ayokong isipin ng mga magulang niyo na kinukunsinti ko kayo sa relasyon niyo," muling pagsasalita ni grandpa dahilan kung bakit bumaling ako ulit sa direksyon niya, uminom siya ng tubig bago nagpatuloy. "Pasensya na mga apo, pero hindi ko kayo matutulungan."

Kasabay no'n ang marahas na paglapag ni Law sa kanyang kutsara't tinidor. I was startled by that. Tumayo siya saka dumaan sa likod ni Grandpa Sattie para lumapit sa akin.

"We're done here," nanlalamig sa tigas ang boses ni Law nang nagsalita siya. "Get up, little girl, let's go to my room?" his voice changed and softened when it was talking to me before he shot a look at the maids standing by the corner. "Leah, pakihatid na lang ng natirang pagkain ni Kryptonite sa kwarto ko. She'll finish her dinner there."

Grandpa Sattie was the only hope for us to continue this relationship. Pero pati siya ay hindi sumasang-ayon sa relasyon namin kung saan naiipit kami sa napakahirap na sitwasyon.

Ruined, I knew that all of Law's plans were ruined even if I didn't know what kind of plans are those. Why would he need Grandpa Sattie's support if he doesn't have any plans for us?

Tumayo na ako nang hinawakan pa talaga ako ni Law para makatayo at hihilahin niya na sana ako paalis pero pinigilan ko si Law nang nakitang nakatingin sa akin si Grandpa Sattie at nagsasalita.

I listened to him.

"Kryptonite, apo, kailangan mo munang iwan si Law sa ngayon hangga't wala pa'ng ibang nakakaalam sa relasyon niyo. Mas magiging masakit 'yan kapag nagtagal."

Abruptly, I jolted when I heard the thundering noise of my wooden chair slammed against the side of the table when someone pushed it hard.

My knees were trembling in fear when I moved my feet to face Law.

Fuming and exasperated, he grabbed my arm and pulled me away from grandpa like he was scared that grandpa would steal me from him any moment by now.

I knew that he saw the fear in my eyes to see him throwing some things off wildly and violently, that's the reason why he chained his arms around me as he gave me his gentle and warm kisses on my hair, forehead and the top of my head.

Ang buong akala ko ay kumalma na siya nang dahil sa marahan at mabuti niyang pakikitungo sa akin pero hindi pa pala nang marahas siyang nagsalita at parang nawawalan na ng respeto para kay grandpa.

"Tangina naman oh, kunin niyo na lang pati buhay ko."

Chapter 33

Rain

Laying on the bed with Law scooping my body with his, I gawked at his sleeping and hard facial features. We're in his lair, obviously. Just like an hour ago, he was furious and wrathful, and now he's like a bear hibernating inside my cave.

I didn't wanna wake him, though, I felt scared of him because I have never seen him throwing off things like that before. He has full control of himself when it comes to emotions and sensations, not to mention the sexual sensations that he couldn't get a grip, couldn't keep his hands to himself, escape and avoid it.

Avoid this damn unfortunate events to happen.

During our voyage, I had truly appreciated and believe that he treated me better than those past months. Not that he didn't treated me well before, there was just a big difference. He's gentle to me now, but I knew that he wouldn't be gentle when it comes to love making.

Awestruck by the unaffected expression on his hard face, I raised my hand up to reach for his tensed jaw.

Naramdaman ko ang kanyang magaspang na kamay na mas lalong humigpit ang pagkakahawak sa bewang ko sa oras na nahawakan ko ang kanyang naninigas na panga.

Even in his sleep, he could feel me? He's not awake. I could sense it. He was having a nightmare, wasn't he?

My forehead puckered the moment I saw the inner corner of his brows raised upward, and it seemed like he was in pain. Enduring it every second.

This was the very first time that I watch him sleep, all the time anyway, he's the one who watch me sleep.

His lips moved. "K-Kryptonite..."

Hindi ko napigilan ang pagkagat ng pang-ibabang labi ko nang nakita ko ang pag-iba ng ekspresyon niya sa kanyang mukha kahit na nakapikit siya.

It softened, smoothened the hard features. Still, it was intimidating.

But the hardest thing to see it was, he's undoubtedly suffering from pain, fear and worry.

Marahan kong hinimas gamit ang isang kamay ko ang kanyang marahang nanginginig na panga.

The noise from outside, up on the durable roof of the hacienda because of the heavy rain, made it easy for me to create some soft sound from moving closer without accidentally waking him from his sleep.

"Law..." marahan kong bulong kahit na ako lang naman ang nakakarinig nang dahil sa malakas na ulan sa labas. My voice was blending in the noise of the heavy rain, but that wouldn't stop me from asking even though he couldn't hear it. "Kung aalis ba ako, matatapos na ba ang paghihirap mo?"

Ngayon ko pa lang siya nasaksihan sa ganitong sitwasyon. Parang pilit siyang lumalaban kahit na hindi niya na kaya.

Maybe, Grandpa Sattie was right? But I didn't wanna be away from Law. Ayokong masayang ang lahat ng pinaghirapan niya.

Hindi ko nakayanang panuorin siyang nahihirapan kahit sa pagtulog niya, kaya siguro madalas niya akong pinapanood kapag mahimbing akong natutulog ay dahil mahirap pala para sa kanya ang matulog.

Dahan-dahan kong inalis ang kanyang magaspang at mabigat na kamay sa bewang ko matapos ko siyang hinalikan sa kanyang noo.

Wearing the pair of my pyjamas, I tried to find my slippers on the floor through the darkness of the room, distressingly, I was not successful of finding it. Nevertheless, I found Law's slippers, it's too big for me but it would be fine.

Fitting my small feet compare to Law's in his slippers, I took one last glance at him before turning my back and went to the door.

Kahit na medyo nahihirapan ako sa paglalakad nang dahil sa tsinelas na suot ko ay nagawa ko pa ring lumabas ng kwarto ni Law nang hindi siya nagigising.

Through the unlit corridor, I kept myself on unhesitatingly slow pace. Descending the dim stairs, my eyes moistened and I felt like someone just pushed my chest against the brick wall, it was so heavy and painful.

Emotions reined on my mind and eating my conscience alive.

I would be selfish if I stay with him even if I knew from the very start that the both of us would get hurt. He already felt it now, seeing him in misery and sufferance automatically made me feel like that.

And it hurt more, knowing that I was the reason behind it.

Docility. I always got easy and eager to learn, but not in a way through listening

to the teachers at school. I want to learn on my own through observing and reading. Now that I want to learn from this minute, why couldn't I? Because the lessons weren't just as easy as educationally modules and activities.

It was way harder than I thought.

Nang nakarating ako sa bulwagan ay agad akong dumiretso sa nakasarang pinto ng hacienda, madilim dito at walang tao dahil marahil ay tulog na ang mga katulong at si Grandpa Sattie.

I took a glance at the corner of the entrance hall of the hacienda where the old grandfather clock was placed, just in time that I saw what time it was. It's almost twelve midnight.

Alam kong hindi naka-lock 'tong pinto kaya madali ko lang itong nabuksan. Malaki ang tiwala ni grandpa sa mga naninirahan sa kanyang lupa, mga magsasaka lang at nagtatrabaho pati ang kanilang mga pamikya ang pinapatira niya ng libre, dagdagan pa ang malaking halaga ng pera na suweldo nila.

They work hard, so grandpa would pay them fairly.

Sinara ko na ang pinto at hinarap ang dilim, malakas na ihip ng hangin kasabay ng marahas na pagbagsak ng ulan sa lupa saka ko pinagpatuloy ang paglalakad.

My pyjamas got soaked and my slippers almost submerged into the soft muddy ground, it was raining since Law woke me up earlier to have a dinner with grandpa and the road here wasn't cemented.

Patuloy lang ako sa paglalakad habang basang-basa na ang buong katawan ko, puno ng putik ang tsinelas at paa ko at hindi ko namalayang napalayo na pala ako sa hacienda, naglalakad sa tabi ng daan, alam ko naman ang mga pasikot-sikot dito pero siguro ay sa tagal ng panahon ay may nag-iba na rin.

In almost an hour of walking through the heavy rain, it didn't stop, it gets heavier and it could practically hurt my skin.

Soundless cries and unheard sobs. I ran my palm across my face to get the rainwater off it and to have a clearer vision of the dark muddy road.

I decided to walk the distance from the hacienda to Law's modern wooden house. It's not that near, not that far either.

Kanina pa talaga ako umiiyak at walang humpay din ang pagbuhos ng ulan, nakaramdam ako ng pagod kaya nang may nakita akong maliit na waiting shed ay agad akong pumasok doon at umupo sa malamig at sementadong sahig ng shed.

Niyakap ko ang mga basang tuhod ko at isinandal ang noo doon.

What have gotten into my mind to leave the hacienda at this hour? I didn't wanna cry beside the sleeping Law on his bed. I just couldn't take it. What was I supposed to do?

Grandpa Sattie was right, and I knew why he told me to leave Law. Hindi kasi magawa ni Law ang iwan ako dahil wala na talagang makakapagpabago sa desisyon niya.

Ipagpipilitan niya pa kahit masakit na.

Kalahating minuto na akong nakaupo rito nang maliban sa ingay na pagbagsak ng ulan ay narinig ko ang ingay ng sasakyang huminto sa tapat ng shed at ang ilaw nito na

nakatutok sa daan.

"Kryptonite? Kryptonite, little girl..." narinig kong pamilyar na nag-aalalang boses ni Law kasabay ang paghawak niya ng mahigpit sa magkabilang braso ko.

Nang nag-angat ako ng tingin sa kanya, kahit sa kabila ng dilim ay nakikita ko ang matinding takot at pag-aalalang nababakas sa kanyang mukha.

His clothes, hair and all over his body were wet, but not as much as me. For thirty minutes that I was under the protection of this little shelter of the shed from the heavy rain, plus the harshly cold wind had dried my soaked pyjamas and hair.

"L-Law..." my voice came out hoarse and weak.

Agad na kumapit ang mga braso ko sa kanyang leeg at ginawa niya 'yong pagkakataon para buhatin ako mula sa pagkakaupo ko sa malamig na sahig ng shed.

Carrying me in a position that I looked like an impuissant little girl. Legs were parted, his one arm under my bottom to support me and another muscular arm at my back to pull me against his broad chest.

Our cold skin and quivering body had created warmth as he carry-embrace me. The warmth that I had to resist.

"Anong ginagawa mo rito ha? Bakit ka umalis ng hacienda, hm? Lalayasan mo na naman ba ako?" he was scolding me. Pero ramdam ko sa bawat salita niya ang mariin, mabilis at paulit-ulit niyang paghalik sa gilid ng mukha, leeg at balik at ko.
"Kryptonite, sumagot ka."

Nangingilid na naman ang mga luha sa mata ko nang dahil sa isiping iiwan ko siya.
"L-Law, my feet hurts..."

I had nothing to say, and I couldn't answer his questions.

"Bakit ka ba kasi umalis ng hacienda? Suot mo pa ang tsinelas ko, paanong hindi sasakit ang paa mo sa layo ng nilakad mo?" bakas ang pinipigilan niyang galit sa kanyang matigas na boses habang patuloy pa rin ang mariin at paulit-ulit na paghalik niya sa gilid ng mukha ko. "Pa'no kung magkasakit ka? Fuck."

I sobbed and released the tears once again while I was resting my chin on his strong shoulder. "I-I wanna go to your house, Law, please? 'Wag na tayo sa hacienda..." I requested.

Funny, it was like yesterday, I was convincing him to go to the hacienda but now that I had understood him. I just want us alone in his peaceful house, where we could cuddle and kiss without thinking about how hard our situation was.

Without thinking about leaving him.

"Okay, mamaya na," he said and paused his angry kissing for a minute before continuing it in his soothing way, clutching me close and nearly squeezing my body against his. "Kailangan na muna nating bumalik sa hacienda. Nagpatawag pa ng mga tauhan si grandpa para hanapin ka."

"No, ngayon na, please? Law, please? Punta na tayo sa bahay mo," umiiling kong pamimilit.

"Kryptonite, 'wag nang matigas ang ulo."

"P-Pero, Law, ayoko nga'ng bumalik do'n," bahagya akong lumayo sa kanya kahit na sobrang dikit na namin sa isa't isa dahil buhat niya ako. I tried to remove his arm off my butt but it's no use, nothing happened. He was still carrying me. Out of magnanimous annoyance, I pushed his hard chest. "Put me down! I'll walk! Pupunta ako sa bahay mo mag-isa kung ayaw mo'ng sumama!"

Vehemently, he pulled my back and tightened his arm around me, that made me stop from fighting and hurting him physically. His other arm remained firmly under my derriere.

"No, you're going back with me in the hacienda," his gruff voice announced with final and unalterable decision. "Don't make this hard for me, little girl."

Ramdam ko ang basang damit niya at ang parehong nanlalamig naming balat bago ako sumuko sa pagpupumiglas na makababa.

Imbes na magpumiglas ay marahan kong isinandal ang gilid ng mukha ko sa kanyang balikat at ibinalik na lamang sa pagkakakapit sa kanyang leeg ang mga braso ko.

"H-Hindi ako makatulog sa hacienda, Law. Ayoko do'n," I buried my face deeper into the hollow part of his neck where I could feel his veins pulsing. I purposely made my voice calm as I spoke. "Gusto kong matulog sa bahay mo..."

If I fight against him with physical strength, I wouldn't have the chance to win, not even one percent out of one hundred percent rate of winning.

Why not try to entice him? I could make my voice softer and sweeter.

"Ganito na lang," kalmadong sabi ni Law ngunit nakakatakot pa rin sa pandinig. "Babalik tayo sa hacienda sandali para magbihis tapos pupunta tayo agad sa bahay, ayos na ba 'yon, hm? Kryptonite?"

"Okay..." mahinahon kong tugon, at sinadya ko pa'ng sinagi ang mga labi ko sa kanyang leeg nang iginalaw ko ang ulo ko.

"Ayos na ba tayo? May kailangan ka pa ba, little girl?" he asked, reassuring himself that the argument was now clear and good.

In a slow movement, I nodded. "W-Wala na..."

"Balik na tayo?" parang nagpapaalam at humihingi pa ng permiso ang kanyang boses nang nagtanong siya.

Tumango lang ako ulit bilang sagot.

Ang braso niyang nasa likod ko ay inangat niya hanggang sa naramdaman ko na lang ang kanyang magaspang na kamay sa tuktok ng ulo ko kasabay ng paglabas namin sa shed patungo sa kotse niya.

Uselessly, considering the fact that the heavy rain didn't stop, I appreciated his hands on top of my head to protect me from the malevolence of nature.

I never thought about this when he hoisted himself up while he's still carrying me to get inside the driver's side. I couldn't stop but imagine what had happened back in La Trinidad.

Nakaupo na naman ako sa kanyang hita, kaharap siya, inalis niya ang maputik niyang tsinelas sa paa ko at inilagay sa backseat sabay may kinuhang damit doon.

"Law? Hindi ka ba nahihirapan? Pwede namang sa backseat ako uupo o sa front seat," tanong ko binabalewala ang pagiging malagkit sa balat ko ang tuyong tubig ulan.

"Mababasa ang front seat at pupunta pa tayo sa bahay natin, 'di ba? Mamaya ka na uupo diyan," he explained.

Does he mean, I would sit there after taking a bath in the hacienda and make myself dry? But what about him? The driver's seat was wet.

"What are you doing?" nakaangat ang isang kilay ko nang sinubukan niyang hubarin ang lower pyjamas ko pero nang hindi niya nagawa, because my legs were parted, pinunit niya na lang. "Law, ba't ba pinupunit mo ang mga damit ko?"

"May pambili naman ako ng bagong damit mo," he replied arrogantly after unbuttoning my upper pyjamas and removed it. "Akin na ang kamay mo," utos niya nang walang pasabing ipinasok niya na ang collar sa ulo ko, 'yon ang bagong damit na kinuha niya sa backseat

Nang hindi ko agad naibigay sa kanya ang kamay ko ay siya na mismo ang kumuha no'n at ipinasok 'yon sa sleeves ng damit.

Unbelievable. He had controlled himself from the sight of my exposed breasts with my soaked panty on? I wasn't wearing my baby bra, in times like this, he was taking this seriously, set aside the arousing desire and just focus on taking care of me.

Impressive how his fear and worries for me could change him to be a good man.

Matapos niya akong asikasuhin ay hinubad niya naman ang kanyang basang damit at pinunas 'yon sa kanyang dibdib saka itinaapon sa backseat.

"You can hug me now, little girl," he said while combing his wet hair using his lean and strong fingers.

I pulled my brows together in a frown. "Hindi ka ba magsusuot ng damit?"

"Hindi na, 'yan lang ang dala kong damit," tukoy niya sa suot kong kulay itim na tee shirt, it was oversized for my small body. "I won't feel cold if you're going to hug me."

What have I done in my previous life to deserve a man like Law? Mas inuuna niya ako kesa sa sarili niya. Even before these things happened to us, he's always like this but in a very strict, authoritative and lawyer-like way.

A smile formed on his thin and pinkish lips when I moved myself closer, his one hand was resting at my back, gently helping me to move while sitting on his lap.

Niyakap ko siya at naramdaman ko kaagad ang kanyang mga labi sa tuktok ng ulo ko bago siya nagsimulang magmaneho pabalik sa hacienda gamit ang isang kamay na nakahawak at kumukontrol sa manibela.

Pleasingly, all that I could feel was the warmth of his body the whole ride back in the hacienda. I felt so satisfied in life that I didn't wanna let go of it, didn't wanna lose it.

The moment he went inside the hacienda while he was still carrying me in the same position, I did expected that almost all of the lights in here were on.

Most of the appreciably present maids were awake and also the mayordoma, Nayda. Well, chiefly not to forget our dear grandpa.

"Anong nangyari, Law?" narinig kong sabi ni grandpa nang ramdam ko'y nasa bulwagan na kami.

Mula sa pagkakasubsob ng mukha ko sa leeg ni Law ay bahagya akong lumington upang makita ang mga taong naistorbo ko.

"Senyor, ito na po ang mga tuwalya," ani ng isang bagong dating na katulong, dala ang dalawang kulay puting tuwalya at inilahad kay grandpa.

"Masakit ang paa niya, grandpa," Law said, stern and firm as grandpa handed him one towel. He accepted the white towel and put it around me with one hand. "Gising na po ba si Heron? Pakisabi na ibalik ang mga gamit namin sa kotse ko."

"Bakit naman, apo?" mas lalong kumunot ang noo ni grandpa nang dahil sa pagtataka. "Aalis kayo? Sa ganitong oras?"

Inilahad ulit ni grandpa ang isa pa'ng tuwalya na para kay Law dahil hindi lang naman ako ang nabasa, tinanggap niya 'yon at akala ko ay ipupunas niya 'yon sa kanyang mukha o buhok pero hindi.

He unexpectedly placed the towel on my head, and it covered half of my face, blocking half of my sight.

"Grandpa, I won't risk my little girl's sleep again, hindi siya makatulog dito kaya naglakad siya pabalik sa bahay namin pero napagod yata dahil naabutan ko siya sa bagong pinatayo mo'ng waiting shed," kaswal na paliwanag ni Law na parang hindi niya ako buhat habang kinakausap niya si grandpa. "Bibisita na lang kami."

What else would I expect? He doesn't care about anyone else's opinions and insights or whatever they could say about us.

Desultorily for an honourable man with meritorious determination to get what he wanted, without wasting his praiseworthy effort and precious time of waiting for any response, he walked past grandpa and went directly to the stairs.

How I wish that I could interrupt with their intense colloquy. I would voice out my viewpoints with alacrity.

In my judgement, I could say that they're not in good terms. Were they arguing, fighting or blaming one another the moment they found out that I was missing? Maybe.

Namalayan ko na lang ang sarili ko na ibinaba ni Law sa bathtub ng kanyang banyo.

"Stay here," he commanded after he removed his tee shirt on me, followed by the panty and turned on the bathtub faucet. "Ilalabas ko lang ang mga gamit natin para maipasok na ni Heron sa kotse."

"Make it fast, please," I didn't care if I was too demanding.

"I will, little girl," was the last words he said before leaving me here.

It was just one minute after Law closed the bathroom door, since I was sitting here in the bathtub, I reached for the product that can make a foam bath and poured it along with the streaming water to have a relaxing bubble bath when the bathtub was half filled with cold water.

I couldn't get myself out of the bathtub, I just stay there and do something with

the flowing water with my hands to make a foam bath around me.

Just in time as I turned off the bathtub faucet, the bathroom door opened and Law came in.

His intimidating presence spread in the whole bathroom, if there would be flying cockroaches nearby? They would go back out and just fly some other time.

"How's your feet, little girl?" tanong niya na nakasuot na ng boxers, siguro ay hinubad niya 'yong basang shorts niya kanina.

I pouted, gaze down at the bubbles. "It still hurts."

"May I see?" he asked, very unusual for him to say so. Naglakad siya palapit sa'kin at umupo sa gilid na side ng bathtub kasabay ng pag-angat ko ng kanang paa ko mula sa mga makakapal na bula. "Nasa'n ang masakit? Dito ba?"

Pursing my lips in a thin line, I watched him took a hold of my right foot and pointed the lower part where he could see some bruises and scratches.

"Yes," tumatango kong sagot sa kanya.

Actually, he couldn't really see my body because of the thick foam fulfilled the top of the bathtub, but why the hell could I see a larger bulge on the middle part of his boxers other than the usual size of it?

His boxers tightened.

Mukhang gipit na gipit at naiipit na talaga sa sobrang sikip ang kanyang pagkalalaki.

Habang pinapanood ko siyang parang marahang minamasahe ang paa ko, umangat ang isang kilay ko at napakagat sa dila ko nang naramdaman ko at nakita ng dalawang mata ko ang pag-angat ng kanyang kamay sa binti ko.

Nasa paa ko lang 'yong masakit talaga pero bakit siya umabot sa binti?

Ah, baka extra service.

Lumipat ang tingin niya sa akin mula sa binti ko. "Dito?" muling tanong niya habang hinihilot 'yong binti ko.

"Hm, yes, Law..." I responded before closing my eyes and just feel his rough hands doing some relaxing strokes on my right leg.

Napahawak ang mga kamay ko sa magkabilang gilid ng bathtub nang sa pagmulat ng mga mata ko ay nakita ko kung paano umangat pa sa hita ko ang pagmamasaheng ginagawa ni Law na dapat sana ay sa paa ko lang.

Sobrang nakapokus at seryoso ang kanyang mukha at mga mata sa kanyang ginagawang paghimas at paghagod sa hita ko.

Parang ayaw pa-istorbo sa ginagawa niya.

"Masakit din ba sa part na 'to, little girl?" he asked again as I could feel his rough hand at the inner part of my thighs. Caressing, massaging at strong the poor muscles on my thigh.

"Sobra..." wala sa sariling sagot ko habang nakatitig sa kanyang seryosong mukha.
"Sobrang sakit, Law..."

Bago ko pa man bawiin ang mga sinabi ko ay mula sa kinailaliman ng mga bula, sumisid ang kanyang isang kamay paitaas sa masikip na bahagi ng hita ko kung saan matatagpuan niya ang perlas.

Ang buong akala ko ay talagang hahawakan niya na ang pagkababae ko pero hindi niya ginawa.

From holding the inner and outer part of my right thigh using both of his rough and large hands, he slid it to my knees down to my leg and back to my foot.

He raised my right foot a little higher and pressed his lips against the undersurface of my foot, exactly, at the sole.

"Enjoy your bubble bath, little girl. I'll just take my shower there," tukoy niya sa malapit na shower stall. "Just call me if you need something."

Tumayo na siya at pumasok na sa loob ng shower stall, saka roon na rin naghubad ng boxers.

Yes, I could certainly tell what he was doing inside the shower stall because its barrier was, of course, made in thick glass. I could see through it.

Sexily taking his shower, he intentionally face his side, for else I could see how long and thick his manhood was in side view. In addition to his bouncing balls whenever he move his thighs.

Poor little baby Laws inside his testicles, they couldn't get out of that egg because for now I wouldn't call him for his needs.

And we shouldn't waste his sperm just for a single sex.

Nagtagal kami ng kalahating oras dito sa loob ng banyo na wala akong ibang ginawa kung 'di ang linisin ang sarili, at paglaruan ang mga bula pagkatapos ay umalis ako sa bathtub. I joined Law inside the shower stall to cleanse myself.

Wala namang nangyari, nang lumabas kami ng shower stall ay marahan niya lang pinalo ang pwet ko. Isang palo at himas lang naman tapos 'yon lang, at agad na kaming nagbihis bago siya naunang bumaba. Nagpaiwan ako sandali sa loob ng kwarto niya dahil saglit ko pa'ng inasikaso ang sarili ko.

Law was wearing his slate gray coloured thermal tee shirt knit long sleeves paired with dark sweatpants. Same as me, gray fitted sweatpants and a plain apricot coloured lettuce-edge ribbed mockneck knitted top sweatshirt.

About five minutes after and I got finally satisfied at my presentable appearance at this hour, I went out of the room and go downstairs.

Wala na 'yong mga katulong at si Nayda, siguro ay bumalik na sila sa pagtulog pero si Grandpa Sattie at Heron ay nakikita ko pa na nakatayo sa nakabukas na double doors ng hacienda. Nakatalikod si Law mula sa akin kaya hindi niya ako nakitang paparating.

"Alam ko, apo," sabi ng magaspang na boses ni grandpa habang naglalakad ako palapit sa kanila. "Kung sakaling nabuntis mo nga si Kryptonite, matutulungan kita."

Very audible to hear since there's no other noise that I could hear here other than

their strong and gruff voices.

"Siguro sa pasukan, grandpa," tugon ng matigas na boses ni Law. "Malalaman ko na kung nabuntis ko nga ba siya. Tatlong linggo lang naman ang kailangan kong hintayin. I know my little girl very well, grandpa. Magrereklamo siya sa'kin at kung bakit lagi siyang masusuka tuwing umaga."

"Law, hindi ko sinabing buntisin mo siya kung sakaling hindi mo siya nabuntis," bakas sa boses ni grandpa na may balak pa yata siyang bigyan ng konting sermon si Law. "Sa sitwasyong 'to, mas nakakabuting lumayo na muna siya sa'yo."

I wanted to cover my ears so bad because I didn't want to hear it again. Hearing it again means overthinking about it again.

"Hindi mangyayari 'yan, grandpa," with that determination in Law's voice, his broad back became so stiff. "Wala nang magagawa si dad 'pag nalaman niyang binuntis ko si Kryptonite."

"Siya nga pala, apo," pag-iiba ni grandpa sa pinag-uusapan nila. "May formal party sa mansyon ngayong June 12 para sa birthday ni Lazarus."

Literally, I made my steps slow and noiseless. I want to hear more before I got to interrupt with their serious conversation.

"Hindi na siguro muna kami makakapunta ni Kryptonite, grandpa," rejection and resistance were marked in Law's baritone voice. "Sigurado akong nando'n si Erich Costales."

Sa segundong narinig ko ang pangalan na 'yon ay binilisan ko ang paglalakad ko hanggang sa nakarating ako sa tabi ni Law at bago pa man makapagsalita si grandpa ay nagsalita na ako.

"Why not? It's Kuya Lazi's birthday, Law," I said innocently, although, I knew why. "What's with Erich Costales?"

Both of them went completely silent for an entire minute after I asked, even Heron from outside, standing right beside the front seat door of Law's car.

They just verified what I had been thinking the second I heard Law mentioned Erich Costales.

I didn't really expect Law to easily change his mind because of my question, though, he ignored my question and left it unanswered. I didn't mind, it was answerable anyway.

And now I was trying to predict what was going to occur in the formal birthday party at the mansion this coming June 12.

"Pupunta kami sa mansyon, grandpa."

Chapter 34

Masturbate

"Kryptonite, please don't do that. You're making me horny," marahang bulong ni Law nang nakalabas na kami ng airport.

What's wrong with this pedophile?

I was just holding on his right arm, lightly caressing it in a seductive way with my fingers as we walk.

Saka ko pa tinigil ang ginagawa ko nang bumaba ang tingin ko sa kanyang pants habang naglalakad kami at inayos na lamang ang tamang paraan ng pagkakakapit ko sa kanyang braso.

"Law, why do we have to leave Compostela Valley earlier than expected? We still have one week before June," the first thing that I ask after he put our things down on the side of the road, and I was still clinging to his arm. "I haven't visited the horse field and the fishpond. May bagong piggery na rin si grandpa, right?"

"Yes," sagot niya habang nakatingin sa daan na parang may hinihintay at hinahanap bago bumaling sa'kin. "May aasikasuhin pa ako kaya napaaga ang pag-uwi natin."

"Para sa school?"

"Para sa school," he confirmed.

We were both standing and waiting at the side of the road, I didn't know who we were waiting for but I knew that the unnamed who was the one that would fetch us and would be bringing a car.

Law removed my arms from clinging to his arm and firmly chained his arm around me, at the small of my back.

Suddenly, I felt something in my nose that I had been suffering for days.

"Tissue, please," I said softly while staring at his other hand that he used for holding my tissue.

He's clutching the tissue since we left his house back in Compostela Valley, until now. Because he knew that I need it almost every minute, we have handkerchief but I preferred to use tissues. I didn't think that handkerchief was clean enough to blow my nose every minute.

Inangat niya ang kaniyang kamay na hawak ang tissue kaya agad akong humila ng tissue saka pinutol 'yon at doon ko inilabas ang sipon ko. Habang abala pa ako sa pagpunas ng ilong ko ay inabala rin naman ni Law ang kanyang sarili sa paghalik sa tuktok ng ulo ko.

Looking around every corner here, hoping to see a trashcan where I could throw the used tissue, but my eyes failed to find so.

"Akin na, little girl," utos ni Law, tinutukoy ang nagamit kong tissue.

"Why?" nagtataka kong tanong habang inilibot pa rin ang tingin sa paligid. "May nakita ka ba'ng trashcan?"

Without further answer to my question, he caught the dirty tissue from my hand and pocketed it.

Madumi na 'yon? May sipon ko na 'yon tapos ibinulsa niya?

Kinuha niya na ulit ang malinis na tissue na hindi ko namalayang inilagay niya na pala muna sa ibabaw ng isang suitcase namin para makuha niya ang hawak kong tissue.

It was just five minutes after, a familiar car came and stopped in front of us. The window pulled down and we were greeted by Kuya Laki's playful and sexy grin with Kuya Ruin on the driver's seat.

They're best friends, the closest of all Cavanaugh cousins. I haven't seen them fight and hurt each other physically. Oftentimes, they play with their girls together.

Hindi na sila maihiwalay dalawa kaya sana mali ang iniisip ko na baka ay bakla ang isa sa kanilang dalawa at may sekretong relasyon din sila.

"Anong nangyari sa bunso natin, kuya?" Kuya Laki asked the moment his caring eyes landed on me. "She look sick," he added, the grin on his lips faded, he seemed so worried for my health.

He has a soft side for innocent girls and he thought that I was innocent when the truth was, I wasn't really an ingenue.

"Sinisipon," Law replied curtly. "Lumabas kayo, ipasok niyo 'to sa likod ng kotse."

The two immediately got their arse out of the car and followed Law's command.

Habang inaayos ng dalawa ang mga dala namin sa likod ng kotse ay palihim na namang hinalikan ni Law ang sentido ko saka iginiya ako palapit sa pinto ng backseat.

"Pasok na, little girl," he gently said after he opened the backseat's door.

Pumasok ako at may iniabot pa'ng isang bote ng mineral water si Kuya Ruin kay Law bago siya bumalik sa likod ng kotse para tulungan si Kuya Laki sa pag-aayos ng mga gamit namin.

"Law, can I go out with Cykee later? Please?" nagbabaka sakaling tanong ko habang hindi pa rin pumapasok si Law. "Uuwi naman ako agad after."

"No, bukas na," kasing bilis ng pagsagot niya ang pagbaling niya sa akin dito sa loob ng backseat.

Umusog ako palapit sa kanya, kahit nasa labas pa rin siya ng sasakyan. "But, Law..."

"Pupunta naman si Hezion sa bahay mamaya, tatawagan ko na lang para isama niya ang kapatid niya," matigas niyang sabi, tila nag-iba ang kanyang desisyon at ayaw nang marinig ang pagpapaawa at lungkot sa boses ko.

"Hindi naman sila magkapatid," I countered, making his statement correct.

Instead of talking about someone else's life, he gave me the bottle of mineral water.

When I accepted it and my hand came into contact with the plastic bottle, I made a face because the water wasn't supposed to be what I wanted.

"Drink your water," he jerked his head to the direction of the plastic bottle that I was clutching, indicating for me to open it and drink.

"I want cold water," I requested and handed the plastic bottle back to him but he didn't accepted it.

He was just darkly staring at the bottle before he tilted his head and shifted his gaze from the bottle to me.

"Kryptonite, gusto mo ba talagang lumala 'yang sipon mo?" nakita ko ang pag-igting ng kalamnan sa kanyang braso nang sinabi niya 'yon.

Binaba ko muna ang tubig sa tabi ko dahil hindi rin naman ako nauuhaw, baka mamaya ay maiihi lang ako.

Actually, I didn't wanna be okay. For some reason that I had been having fun of seeing him discreetly touching himself.

I inspected with my eyes where Kuya Laki and Kuya Ruin had been very serious and busy arranging our things at the back of the car.

Kuya Ruin whistled when his eyes caught some group of foreigner women coming through the side of the car. "Hi, sexy," he confidently approached them.

"Gago, tulungan mo'ko," Kuya Laki growled, ignoring the sexy foreigners and just concentrating on arranging the languages.

Nang nasigurado kong hindi nila kami maririnig ay binalik ko ang aking tingin kay Law na kanina pa pala seryosong nakatitig sa akin ang mga naninigas niyang paraan ng pagtingin.

I angled my head to the side and leaned closer to his left ear.

"Yes, because I saw you last night in the bathroom," I whispered huskily, and paused to touch his hard packs. Sliding my hand down to the fabric of his clothes, I stopped it just inch away from the bulge down there. I faced him and smiled. "Masturbating."

The muscles on his arms tensed, also his jaw and the expression on his face hardened.

"Alam mo, little girl? Hindi ako namimili ng lugar at sitwasyon," matigas niyang pagpapaalala sa akin bago kinuha ang kamay ko na nakadikit sa kanyang damit, sa ibabaw na bahagi ng umbok sa kanyang pants. "Lalong hindi ako namimili kahit na nasa ganitong kondisyon ka."

I would get scared right now.

Though we couldn't make it here inside the car because there's the two. But what if when we get home?

Hindi niya naman siguro totohanin. Alam kong mas uunahin niya ang kalusugan ko kesa sa pangangailangan niya.

"You can't do anything to me, Law. May sipon ako at baka mahawa ka pa," depensa ko, 'di pa rin nawawala ang mapang-akit na ngiti sa mga labi.

"I don't care," marahas niyang tugon at mas lalo lang humigpit ang pagkakahawak niya sa kamay ko.

Luckily, Kuya Laki and Kuya Ruin got successfully done of their tasks and closed the back of the car before walking back to their respective seats in the car

earlier.

The designated driver was Kuya Ruin. Yeah. At the age of eighteen, they learned how to drive.

Comfortably sitting at the backseat with Law beside me, I took his phone from the small backpack that I was carrying and did not counted to the luggages at the back.

I busied myself on checking my social media accounts.

We left the mansion one week earlier than the day that I had expected us to leave. Maybe it was an emergency? Maybe not.

Baka naman ay aasikasuhin niya ang kanyang enrollment? Nakakahiya naman kung magpapasama pa rin ako sa kanya na magpa-enrol 'di ba? Wala pa kaming bagong school supplies.

Ang bilis lumipas ng araw.

Lugubrious as what it was, I had painfully spend my vacation often inside our room at his house. I wasn't feeling well the whole week, in addition to my horrendous dilemma, I did not drink the medicines that Law provided me.

Instead of scolding me, he did the other way to make me feel better. He used a very slimy and jelly thing, wipe and massage it on my nose, neck, chest and back. Just minutes after he did those, I felt cold and chilly. It was very relaxing whenever I breathe.

A cold vaporizing rub-menthol ointment was very helpful for my cold and not that hard cough. The other day that same week he used an essential oil because I was having a headache.

Today, when we get home, I wanted his rough hands gently doing the same thing just like those days.

I would just take a tour in grandpa's land next time, if Law would decide to go back there for our next summer vacation.

Aeroplane, yes, Law chose an air transportation than the ferry. I would really think that he's in a hurry to be back here.

"May tumatawag," narinig kong boses ni Kuya Ruin nang siguro ay nakita niya ang isang phone sa dashboard na umilaw o 'di kaya'y nag-vibrate dahil 'di ko naman narinig ang ringtone nito.

"Hayaan mo 'yan, 'di naman 'yan importante," balewalang sagot ni Kuya Laki.

I raised my gaze up to them and saw that it was Kuya Laki's phone.

Kuya Ruin glance at the phone before focusing his gaze on the road and spoke. "Si Erich? Ba't tumatawag 'yan sa'yo?"

Naramdaman ko ang paggalaw ng braso ni Law at palihim itong hinawakan ang beywang ko.

Ibinaba ko muna ang phone sa lap ko at nakinig sa pinag-uusapan nila.

Law let out a low groan of disapproval.

"Magtatanong na naman 'yan," iritableng sabi ni Kuya Laki bago pinatay ang kanyang phone at bumaling sa amin dito sa backseat. "Kuya, anong meron? Ba't nagtatanong sa'kin si Erich kung nakarating ka na ba galing bakasyon? Hinihingi pa ang address mo."

That girl had the gut to ask those things to Kuya Laki? They just had a scandal sex videos last two months? The so called graduation gift.

"Just ignore her, Laki," seryoso at mariing sagot ni Law.

Ramdam kong parang gusto na ni Law na halikan ang buong mukha ko ngayon, pinipigilan niya lang ang kanyang sarili.

"Iniistorbo niya kami lagi ni Ruin kahit sa part-time job namin," reklamo ni Kuya Laki at ibinalik na ang tingin sa harap bago sumandal sa kinauupuan niya.

Surprised, I asked. "Kuya Laki? Nagtatrabaho kayo?"

"Yeah."

"Anong trabaho niyo?"

"You don't need to know, princess," si Kuya Ruin naman ngayon ang sumagot, parang iniwasan pa'ng maging usapan ang tungkol sa trabaho nila. "The job is for adults only."

"Oh? Stripper kayo sa isang club?" I asked bluntly.

"Hindi 'no," agarang sagot ni Kuya Laki at tila hindi na makatingin dito sa backseat.

"Kryptonite, just busy yourself with my phone," utos ng matigas na boses sa tabi ko.

I had no choice but to obey, if I would ask again anything that was related to the subject about their job, I would not get any specific answer to that.

Law was just so strict and intimidating, it was annoying sometimes.

"Tissue, please," I spoke after five minutes of silence and scrolling at the screen of Law's phone.

Akala ko ay bibigyan ako ni Law ng tissue pero nagulat na lang ako nang siya mismo ang naglagay ng tissue sa namumulang ilong ko kaya mula sa screen ng phone ay lumipat ang tingin ko kay Law.

"I'm not a kid, I can do it alone," inalis ko ang kanyang kamay sa ilong ko at kinuha ang hawak niyang tissue.

After blowing my nose, Law snatched the tissue from me and threw it to the mini trashcan here inside the car.

The idiosyncrasies of such awkward and long silence whenever Kuya Laki was under the intimidating presence of Law had begun. Moreover to the good behaviour of Kuya Ruin that was really unusual.

Nang nakarating na kami sa bahay ni Law na hindi nila alam na pag-aari pala ni Law ay silang dalawa pa ang nagpasok ng mga gamit namin sa loob.

I changed my clothes first before going back to the living room. Naabutan ko silang seryosong nag-uusap at may inabot pa'ng makapal na pera si Law sa kanila bago sila umalis.

"What's that?" tanong ko habang pababa ako ng hagdan.

"Don't mind it, little girl," mariing pinapanood ako ng kanyang mga nakakatakot na paraan ng pagtingin niya habang pababa ako ng hagdan hanggang sa huminto ako sa harap niya.

I touched his arm and I could feel his gaze followed the movement of my hand on his arm. When I tilted my gaze up to him, I saw how he watched me touch him.

He wanted my touch and wasn't even doing anything to resist it just like how he stop Dana before. He just let me without asking his permission, free with nothing in return.

"Anong oras pupunta dito sila Cykee?" I just continue on running and sliding the tip of my fingers on his muscular arm.

"Mamayang alas singko pa," medyo natagalan pa siya sa pagsagot nang dahil sa panonood niya sa mga daliri ko. "Uuwi sila siguro alas diyes na ng gabi."

"What about our dinner?"

"Magluluto kami ni Hezion," mababa ang tono ng kanyang boses.

"What about... magluluto kami ni Cykee?" boluntaryo ko at saglit na huminto sa ginagawa ko sa kanyang maskuladong braso. "Marunong naman akong magluto ng iilang dish. Masarap naman ang chicken adobo ko. I can teach Cykee how to cook."

Hinawakan niya ang palapulsuhan ko at hinila patungo sa sofa, umupo siya at marahan akong hinila paupo sa kanyang hita.

"Little girl, mas masarap ka pa kesa sa chicken adobo mo," seryoso niyang sabi at naramdaman ko ang pagbaba ng kanyang kamay sa hita ko.

I purposely put my arm around his nape to balance myself on his lap.

Talagang natahimik ako nang dahil sa sinabi niya at kung paano siya tumingin sa mga mata ko na puno ng pagnanasa kahit sa kabila ng pagiging seryoso at tigas ng ekspresyon niya sa kanyang mukha.

Intensely staring into my eyes, his hand on my exposed thigh crawled up, it's because I was wearing a pistachio green coloured dolphin shorts.

My body stiffened as he inserted his hand inside the thigh-part of my dolphin shorts.

Pakiramdam ko ngayon ay hindi lang ang noo ko ang pinagpapawisan, pati na rin siguro ang pagkababae ko.

"Hm, Law, masakit ang ulo ko at nahihirapan akong huminga, I feel like baradong sipon," I complained and his rough hand automatically paused, then he pulled it out before he could touch my panty inside. "Hindi pa naman darating sila Cykee. Can you do it?"

Not an irksome favor to do, I knew that he had an idea what I was trying to imply.

The task that I wanted him to do was not as detrimental as having sex without knowing that the other was carrying a Human Immunodeficiency Virus. It's not that.

It's as simple as to take a bath and rub the dirt off the skin.

His eyes darkened as he looked at me with undeniable concupiscence. "Okay, go to my room. Prepare yourself. Tatapusin ko lang 'to."

Excitement washed over me when I ascended the stairs and went inside his room.

Inaayos niya pa kasi siguro ang mga gamit namin sa baba kaya pinauna niya na ako rito sa loob ng kwarto niya.

I took a quick half bath inside his bathroom, smelling the masculine scent that surrounded me.

Last time he treated my cold, cough and headache, I was just wearing my shorts and was clutching a towel against my chest to cover my breast.

The thought of his rough and large hand carefully touching my back, chest and temple felt so relaxing.

Dumapa ako sa gitna ng kama niya habang nakasandal ang gilid ng noo ko sa nakakrus kong braso. Walang ibang suot kung 'di ang panty at bagong shorts ko. May towel naman sa gilid para pagkatapos niya sa likod ko ay may maipang-takip ako sa dibdib ko.

Pumikit ako at naghintay na marinig ang pagbukas ng pinto.

Ten minutes had passed quickly when I heard the door opened. I kept my eyes close when I couldn't hide the smile from showing on my lips.

Desirous, enthused and hyperactive, I bit my lips as the door closes.

Nakapikit pa rin ako kaya wala akong ibang nakikita pero mas lalo lang akong naging excited pero may halong kaba na nang narinig ko ang tunog ng switch ng ilaw.

Obviously, without opening my eyes, I knew that he turned off the lights.

Minulat ko ang mga mata ko at bumungad sa akin ang medyo madilim niyang kwarto. 'Yong natatanging liwanag na galing sa bintana ay nawala nang narinig ko ang marahas na pagtakip niya sa colour brown nitong kurtina.

Dim. That's all that I could see. I stayed still on the bed and waited for Law to come here on his bed.

What does this turning off the lights mean? How would he going to massage my back properly?

"Law, ba't pinatay mo 'yong ilaw?" nagtatakang tanong ko nang naramdaman ko ang paggalaw ng kama.

Naramdaman ko ang paggapang niya sa kama pero hindi sa tabi ko, kung 'di ay sa mismong ibabaw ko kung saan marahan kong naramdaman ang pagsagi ng kanyang matigas na tiyan sa likod ko at ang kanyang mga kamay na nakatukod sa kama sa magkabilang kili-kili ko.

"I don't wanna be horny," pagtugon niya sa mababang tono ng boses kasabay no'n ay naramdaman ko ang paghaplos niya gamit ang kanyang matangos na ilong sa likod ng

ulo ko, parang inaamoy ang buhok ko. "Don't make me horny, little girl. I don't want to masturbate."

Seeing me in this position and showing too much of my skin could make turn him on?

How come those times that I was just in my grade school? Wearing a cute little one piece whenever I had my favourite pastime swimming in the mansion's pool?

I had remembered the time that whenever he's angry, his manhood down there would get angry too. Did he always masturbate whenever the principal would call him and told him all my shenanigans in school?

Notwithstanding the myriad of tomfoolery during my class hours before, I was lucky that he had an unyielding self-control, not until last two months.

Nabalik ako sa riyalidad nang naramdaman ko ang madulas at magaspang na palad ni Law na hinawakan ang ibabaw na bahagi ng likod ko.

"I can help you—"

"I won't let you," hindi niya na ako pinatapos sa pagsasalita. "Baka lumala ang sipon mo."

Sa gitna ng dilim ay mas pinakiramdaman ko na lamang ang kanyang magaspang na palad na maingat at marahang hinahaplos ang likod ko.

If my body was relaxed? Well, I could tell his was the opposite. His body was so rigid except for his rough hands that tended to be so gentle when it touched my skin.

He's not actually sitting on my back, his legs were parted with bended knees at both sides of my waist, caging me, really.

"Hindi mo naman ako iiwan, 'di ba?" I said out of nowhere. Bigla na lang siyang lumabas sa bibig ko habang dinadama ang kamay ni Law sa likod ko. I realized that the question was so dear to me when he didn't answer. "Law, sumagot ka."

Para kasing kakaiba ang pakiramdam ko ngayong parang nagmamadali siyang bumalik dito.

Narinig ko pa mula kay Kuya Laki na palagi siyang hinahanap ni Erich, tinatanong pa ang address.

"Hindi kita iiwan," he said sternly.

I closed my eyes again because of the way his hands were smoothly massaging my back despite the roughness of his palm.

"You're not going to cheat, right?" I added.

"I won't cheat, little girl," was his immediate and serious reply.

"You're lying. Sinasabi mo lang 'yan para hindi na ako magtanong," husga ko na agad ko ring pinagsisihan pero mas lalo akong nagsisi nang hindi ko napigilan ang sariling magtanong. "What if... I'll cheat?"

I gasped and grasped the soft sheets of his bed when his large hands moved down to my waist and put half of his weight on me. Pressing my body harder against the bed.

According to my sense of touch when he leaned his body down to back, he's shirtless. I could really feel his hard six packs on my back, his hot skin.

Hindi ko namalayan na wala pala siyang suot na damit, madilim kasi nang minulat ko ang mga mata ko kanina at akala ko nga kanina nang sumagi ang tiyan niya sa likod ko ay pinaglalaruan lang ako ng iniisip ko na wala siyang suot na pangitaas na damit.

We're both shirtless.

"Hindi mo magugustuhan ang gagawin ko kapag nahuli kita," bakas ang matinding galit sa kanyang boses nang marahas niyang binulong sa akin ang mga salitang 'yon, sobrang lapit ng kanyang malambot na labi sa tainga ko.

Seemed that he was so affected.

"Makikipaghiwalay ka sa'kin?" I guessed. Kahit na nakakatakot ang kanyang boses ngayon.

"No," he traced the tip of his nose on my nape up and down. "Hardcore sex."

The hairs at my nape raised the moment I heard it and how his hot breath hit my neck.

"Sex?" I sounded confused because from those days that we did the thing, he never called it sex.

Umangat ang kanyang mga kamay mula sa beywang ko ay naramdaman kong umabot sa gilid ng dibdib ko, sa ibabang bahagi lang ng kili-kili ko.

My breath hitched from his sensual touch.

His wet and warm tongue lick the skin across my jaw. "I have mercy when we make love, little girl. Sex is merciless."

Madali niyang nahahalikan at nadidilaan ang kanang panga ko dahil sa nakatagilid ang posisyon ng pagkakahiga ng ulo ko.

"You're not gentle in lovemaking, what more in sex?" I said, stating the fact about his performance in bed.

"That just means, I won't let you rest and I won't follow what you want," maawtoridad at malinaw niyang pagtatama sa mga iniisip ko. "If you want me to make it fast? I'll make it faster than you want it to be."

Sa tingin ko ay hindi na ako humihinga nang isiniksik niya ang kanyang dalawang kamay sa pagitan ng kama at dibdib ko.

Mariin kong ipinikit ang mga mata ko nang naging matagumpay siya sa kanyang binabalak.

He was cupping both of my breast now, while busy kissing, licking, and sucking the skin on my jaw.

"A-Are you going to break up with me after?" nauutal kong tanong at pinipigilan ang sariling gumalaw dahil baka ay gagalaw din ang kamay niya.

"No," walang pag-aalinlangang sagot niya. "I got you pregnant after, why would I

break up with you?"

"Law..."

I was so thankful to feel that his hands moved from cupping my breasts down to my flat stomach.

"Baka ngayon nga ay buntis ka na," bakas sa kanyang boses na unti-unting nawawala ang galit na naramdaman niya kanina nang dahil sa sinabi ko. "I can't wait, little girl."

The prosaic life of Law could tell me that he wasn't the man who would give up things easily when he did hard things just to have it.

I should have expected that he would not break up with me if I try to cheat.

Natapos ang pagmamasaha niya sa akin na iniisip ko pa rin ang tungkol kay Erich. I have seen some evidence that Law was turned on, yet he didn't do something to help himself up.

Ayaw niya raw kasi magsarili.

We just waited 'til Kuya Hezion and Cykee came.

I was overthinking again if I would tell Cykee about my relationship with Law. Alam ko kasi ang tungkol sa kanila ni Kuya Hezion, tapos heto ako ngayon, tinatago ang tungkol sa amin ni Law.

"Gosh, Kryptonite, may balita ako sa'yo," dada ni Cykee.

Nasa kusina kami at habang pinapanood ang dalawang lalaking nagluluto ay abala naman kami sa pagkukwentuhan.

"Ano?" I took a piece of cucumber and stuff it inside my mouth, chewing it before I swallowed. "Wait, may alam ka ba tungkol sa kumakalat na fake news? 'Yong sinabing boyfriend ko raw si Rule Fortaleza?" sinadya ko talagang hinaan ang boses ko dahil nasa malapit lang sila Law.

Nakaupo kasi kami sa stool dito sa harap ng kitchen island.

"I don't know pero feeling ko kinuha 'yong video ay noong nasa Florida pa sila ng mga pinsan at kapatid niya. Hindi pa kayo nagkakakilala no'n," medyo napalakas ang pagsagot ni Cykee dahil wala naman siyang alam na may magagalit. "Baka may gusto na siya sa'yo noong nasa Florida pa lang siya."

She knew that Law wouldn't allow me from having a relationship, but not as much as I know how strict Law was.

"Impossible," komento ko.

"It's possible because I heard about the news that he's going to transfer to our school," she ran her fingers through her average length of long hair. "Para mas madalas kayong magkita."

Napatingin ako sa kinaroroonan nila Law at Kuya Hezion na ngayon ay naging tahimik dahil malamang ay nakikinig sila sa pinag-uusapan namin nang nakita ko ang paghinto ni Law sa ginagawa niya.

His eyes were focused on me, looking aggressive and violent.

Nagmadali siyang lumabas ng kusina kaya hinabol ko pero hindi ko siya naabutan sa may hagdan at nakitang nakaakyat na pala siya. Mabilis akong umakyat ng hagdan at sakto namang sa pagpasok niya sa kanyang kwarto ay nakahabol ako.

I caught his muscular arm before he could get inside the bathroom.

"Are you mad?" takot at pag-aalala ang tanging narinig ko sa asking boses.

As honest as he was. He lowered his gaze at me.

"Yes," it was a brusque reply from him. Bakas ang galit sa kanyang boses pero pinanatili niya namang mahinahon at kalmado ito. Parang ayaw niyang matakot ako sa kanya.

I looked down at the floor when he didn't even denied that he's angry.

Though, I really thought that his anger and jealousy had envenomed him, that's why he walked out and avoided me. I was wrong when he worded his behest.

"Get out, little girl, I'm going to masturbate."

Chapter 35

Slave

"Ano ba, Kry. Alis na lang kaya tayo? Nakakahiya naman 'to," reklamo ni Cykee habang sabay kaming naglakad at umupo sa isang bench, 'di kalayuan sa kinaroroonan nila Law at Kuya Hezion.

"Bahala ka, ayokong magalit si Law," I said, ignoring the gauging eyes everywhere here that had given us second glances.

Who knows? They're just trying to figure out what's up. Why would the former students of this university came here and went to the assessment office when it's not even alumni association day, something like those events.

"Bakit? 'Di ka naman siguro papaluin no'n kapag nagalit, 'di ba?" hilarity was traced in her voice as she let out a chuckle. "Tara na kasi, bukas na lang tayo magpa-enrol. Hindi 'yong sila pa ang magpapa-enrol sa'tin. Duh? Ano tayo? Kindergarten?"

I chewed my bottom lip, shrugged my shoulders before stating the actual truth. "'Yong totoo ay papaluin niya talaga ako."

Saglit siyang natigilan dahil pareho kaming pinapanood sila Law sa 'di kalayuan na inaasikaso ang enrollment namin.

Cykee turned her head to me.

From watching Law, I shifted my gaze to Cykee. Her eyes narrowed infinitesimally.

"You're joking, right?" she asked, double checking if she really heard it right.

"Kasi sa'kin kapag nagagalit si Hezion ay 'di niya naman ako pinapalo."

"Anong gagawin niya sa'yo?" nakaangat ang isang kilay kong tanong.

She looked ill at ease because of my question. Qualm of great hesitancy was written on her good-looking face.

"U-Uhm, ano..." her eyes were unfocused and couldn't even give me a steady eye contact. She pouted her pinkish glossy lips. "Dumede siya sa'kin hanggang sa makatulog siya."

Hindi na ako nagulat sa sinabi niya. Malapit na kaibigan ni Law si Kuya Hezion kaya bakit pa ako magtataka? Gawain din naman ni Law ang mga gano'n.

Binalik ko na ang tingin ko kay Law dahil hindi rin naman siya makatingin sa'kin. "Ilang beses na ba siyang nagalit sa'yo?" tanong ko.

"Hindi ko na mabilang," she responded immediately.

Therefore, Kuya Hezion was sucking, licking and biting her nipples in countless times? Maybe that's why her breasts had a little changes, it grew more. I just noticed it last day when Law invited them to his house. The day that Law masturbated.

"Gusto mo ba ang ginagawa niya?" I asked, wanna know if we both have a common interests. "Cykee naman, parang gusto mo kasi talaga siyang magalit."

Naging tahimik siya sa loob ng halos tatlong minuto at hindi makasagot sa tanong ko.

Maayos naman na ako, wala nang sipon at maaari ko nang gawin lahat ng gusto ko pero syempre may limitasyon.

Bumaling ako kay Cykee nang naramdaman kong nakatingin siya sa akin. Parang may gustong sabihin.

"Kryptonite," she started, gaining the chance and confidence to what she was going to say. She closed her eyes firmly for a second before opening it and look bravely into my eyes. "Masama ba'ng unti-unti ko nang nagugustuhan ang mga ginagawa ni Hezion sa'kin?"

That's not bad. I wholeheartedly understood her because we were both in the same situation. The only difference was, she didn't grew up with Kuya Hezion. He was just her stepbrother and she's not even using his last name.

I, on the other hand, grew up with Law that had took care of me for years. I was using his last name, he's my brother in paper and my legal guardian.

With care, I gave my best friend a genuine smile.

"Hindi naman. 'Yong mali lang ay masyado ka pa'ng bata," sabi ko, dahil 'yon din lang naman ang naisip kong mali sa sitwasyon nila. I wasn't updated about her problems but maybe there's more than being an underage girl. "How old is he, anyway?"

"Twenty-four," sagot niya at napasandal sa backrest ng bench.

Law was twenty three.

"And you're sixteen," dugtong ko sa sinabi niya.

"Turning seventeen," agad niya namang koreksyon. Proud that she would be legal next year.

Muli kong ibinalik ang tingin sa kinaroroonan nila Law nang umupo silang dalawa sa isang seat na may mahabang table at parang may sinusulat sa papel na dala nila.

Last year, we didn't have to enrol ourselves because daddy would be the one who would take care of it. He has his connections and men working for him here.

For the past years in school, immediately, we're already enrolled and we didn't have to waste our sweat. But now, it seemed like daddy didn't do anything for it.

I snorted when I saw a sexy and mature woman sat beside Law.

Hindi naman siya pinansin ni Law o 'di kaya'y nilingon pero naiinis pa rin ako nang nakita ko ang paggalaw ng mga mapupulang labi ng babae habang nakatingin kay Law na parang kinakausap niya ang boyfriend ko.

"Kry, I have a question," muling nagsalita si Cykee.

Imbes na mainis sa mga nakikita ko ay bumaling na lamang ako kay Cykee.

"Oh?"

"Have you seen Law's manhood? It's impossible that you haven't since you're living alone under the same roof," walang hiya at pagdadalawang-isip na tanong nito.

"Kahit 'yong hindi sinasadyang makita mo?"

For other innocent and feeling innocent females, that question must've been very awkward.

But this was part of our friendship. We're comfortable on talking about personal and also sexual subjects.

"I did but it's not accidental," pag-amin ko.

"What do you mean?" bakas sa kanyang naguguluhang boses na may ideya na siya sa kung ano man ang ibig kong sabihin.

"I mean, he let me see it," bumaba ang tingin ko sa white sneakers ko dahil hindi ko kayang makita ang magiging reaksiyon niya.

"What? Normal ba 'yan para sa isang nakakatandang kapatid na ipakita ang pagkalalaki niya sa'yo?" it sounded like she wanted to freak out but couldn't and just tone down her voice. "I can't believe this."

Should I tell her? It's good to tell her now than waiting for the time that she would hear it from other people. Just what if it was not just Law and our parents knew about it? That I was adopted?

Maybe, I should let Cykee know about the relationship that I had with Law. That Ashley already found out, so, why not to my best friend?

Nagtiwala siya sa'kin nang sinabi niya ang nangyari sa kanila ni Hezion kaya wala namang masama kung sasabihin ko rin ang tungkol sa amin ni Law.

I brought my gaze up to her and ran my fingers through my hair. "May aaminin ako,

'wag kang magugulat ah?"

Haven't even started my explanation but the way my eyes looked at her with meaningful stare. She already had it.

Cykee gasped and covered one hand to her mouth before she shot me a scrutinizing from head to toe look. "'Wag mo'ng sabihing..."

"Yes, Law is my boyfriend and he's not my brother," pagtatapos ko at bumaling sa direksyon ni Law na abala pa rin sa mga dalang papel kasama si Kuya Hezion.

"He's not your brother? He's adopted?" her voice was almost inaudible for me to hear as she whispered those words, didn't expected the last thing that I said.

"I'm adopted."

"Kailan mo lang nalaman?"

"Noong araw na pumunta tayo sa Starbucks at nagsabunutan kayo ni Erich," malinaw kong sagot. "He told me everything."

Naramdaman kong umusog siya palapit sa akin kaya sumandal ako sa balikat niya. She knew what I felt at the moment.

"Kaya ba gusto mo'ng makausap si Francesca noon?" marahan at mahinahon ang boses ni Cykee na parang sobrang maingat siya sa kanyang sasabihin. "Dahil ikaw pala ang girlfriend. That's why you can't let Rule Fortaleza court you, and Law Cavanaugh is the mysterious boyfriend that you mentioned before."

"Mommy, daddy and all of them doesn't know that I already know," sabi ko, pinipigilan ang sariling umiyak dahil dapat ay hindi ko na muna iisipin ang tungkol do'n sa ngayon. "Wala ring alam ang iba pang pinsan ni Law na adopted lang ako."

"I should keep my mouth shut then," she said as I felt her hand at my back, soothing me.

Naiinis ako kapag ganito kasi parang mas lalo tuloy akong maiiyak.

"Thank you, Cyk."

"About your biological parents, do you know them?" I could hear the genuine concern in her voice.

"I have no idea who they are," I answered while watching Law from a distance. "Kahit si Law ay wala ring alam."

Five minutes later, we were just silent and observe how Law and Kuya Hezion was doing their best to enrol us even through the students that's trying to enrol themselves too.

The school wasn't that crowded but enough number of students who could make it hard for us to enrol.

"Oh? Princess, nandito pala kayo?" narinig kong pamilyar na boses ng isang lalaki kaya lumington ako sa kaliwa ko kung saan ito nanggaling.

"Kuya Ruin?" gulat kong tanong at tumayo mula sa pagkakaupo.

Behind him, I saw Kuya Daumier with his cold stare, the very silent Kuya Saul, Kuya

Isaiah that was innocently smiling at me, Kuya Zanoah wearing that grumpy and complaining expression on his handsome face, lastly was Kuya Laki in a bad mood.

The only missing Cavanaugh was Kuya Lazi.

I was wondering why they're all wearing a simple and plain white v-neck tee shirt while holding a white folder. They looked way more attractive than wearing those expensive clothes. It means, they're not here to flirt and have fun or hunt some sexy and smoking hot women that could willingly give and offer themselves to these charismatic men who had a voluptuous body worth a taste.

Most of the girls near us were turning their heads and craning their necks just to take a look and sometimes steal some glances at the guys in front of me.

"Hindi pa pala kayo nakapag-enrol, kuya?" I asked, referring to the white folder.

"Yeah, Kry," it was Kuya Noah's irritated voice. "Hindi kasi inasikaso."

"Mas maganda 'to 'no," nakangising sabi ni Kuya Ruin bago inilibot ang paningin sa buong lugar. "Makakahanap ako ng bagong matitikman," dagdag niya at huminto ang kanyang paningin sa isang babaeng mukhang Filipino-American. "Ay teka, may nahanap na pala ako."

"Mamaya na 'yan," malamig na saway ni Kuya Daumier na siyang pangatlong nakakatanda bukod kay Law at Kuya Lazi. "Nandito si Kuya Law, tangina, ayokong pagsabihan niya ako."

"Gago, ayokong gamitin 'yang ballpen mo," narinig kong boses ni Kuya Saul mula sa likuran nila Kuya Daumier. "Pinasok mo na 'yan kay Franshine kanina."

"Wala akong magawa eh, hinihimas niya kasi ang hita ko at sakto namang nakasuot siya ng maiksing skirt tapos thong," hindi maiwasan ng tainga ko ang marinig 'yong paliwanag ni Kuya Isaiah. "Nagustuhan niya naman."

"Tangina mo talaga, Isaiah, alam mo namang isa lang ang ballpen natin," iritadong pagsingit ni Kuya Laki sa pinag-uusapan nilang nasa likuran. "Dinumihan mo pa."

"Alam mo, Laki? Try mo kayang tikman 'yong vagina?" Kuya Noah suggested and I didn't even noticed that he had moved and went at the back where Kuya Laki was. "Kasi lahat ng scandal mo, 'di pa kita nakitang dinilaan o 'di kaya'y hinawakan mo 'yon."

"Finifinger mo nga pero laruan o kamay naman ng babae ang gamit mo, parang 'yong babae na rin ang nagsasarili, gago," lumipat din si Kuya Ruin sa likuran at inakbayan si Kuya Laki na wala talaga sa mood makipagbiruan.

Kuya Daumier just remained in front of me, listening. Then I could feel Cykee behind me, amazed of what she was witnessing.

This ain't new to me. They acted like a poor scapegrace and a culprit of sex with no Law in their watches. I could describe them as the malefactors of eroticism and nuisance in the whole Philippine high society.

I didn't meddle in their sexual affairs and doings. They had their reasons why.

"Even those virgins that he had sex with, 'di niya hinahawakan mga bruh, 'pag nakita niyang wet na, pasok agad sagad," it was Kuya Isaiah's voice, behind that innocent facade of his was lust, hiding and lurking around his body whenever he

likes. "Ano ba talagang gusto mo? Lahat naman ng vagina ng babae sa video mo eh, pinkish tapos ang cute pa ng clitoris, ang sarap sipsipin no'n."

Narinig ko pa ang mahinang pag-ubo ni Cykee sa likuran ko nang dahil sa narinig.

The guys were talking with vulgarity and just using very uncensored words. Tahimik lang kami ni Cykee sa tabi nila, palihim na nakikinig. Parang kanina lang ay ballpen ang pinag-uusapan nila.

"Akala ko ba may fetish ka sa mga vagina, Laki?" Kuya Ruin asked, teasing for his own amusement.

"Just keep calm and eat vagina." Dumagdag pa si Kuya Saul na kanina pa tahimik at nakikinig.

Despite the demure mien of Kuya Laki, the Cavanaugh cousins that was teasing him laughed. Except for Kuya Daumier and Kuya Laki, of course.

"Tumahimik nga kayo, nasa harap kayo ng iniingat-ingatang bata ni Kuya Law," saway ni Kuya Daumier na siyang agad na ikinatahimik ng lahat at bumaling ng tingin sa akin. "Malalagot kayo kapag may nabanggit 'to kay kuya."

Kuya Ruin stalked toward me and planted a soft kiss on my forehead. "Kalimutan mo na lang ang narinig mo, princess, okay?"

"Okay..." balewalang sagot ko kasi kahit anong gawin ko para makalimutan 'yon ay talagang naka-ukit na ang mga pinag-uusapan nila sa utak ko.

As usual, they had given me a gentle hug, kiss on the cheeks and forehead before leaving to do their duties and responsibilities as a student.

I wanted to ask what's wrong with Kuya Laki but I didn't. It looked like there's something bothering him. Maybe, daddy talked to him these past few days.

Ganyan kasi siya lagi kapag nakakausap niya si daddy. Laging wala sa mood.

Nagkatinginan kaming dalawa ni Cykee at uupo na sana ulit sa bench pero pareho kaming natigilan nang nakita sila Law at Kuya Hezion.

Law was talking to Erich Costales and Kuya Hezion was talking to someone whose friend of Erich.

"That Irah bitch," Cykee murmured and I could see how she gritted her teeth. "Lagi na lang talaga siyang umaaligid kay Hezion."

She was about to walk and go to where the men were but I stopped her after she took three strides forward.

"Wait," mabilis ko siyang hinawakan sa kanyang braso kaya agad din siyang natigilan at bayolenteng lumingon sa akin. "Anong gagawin mo?"

"Are we going to just stand here and watch those girls flirt with them? No, of course not," she was fuming and her voice was screaming danger and jealousy.

Nabitiwan ko siya nang nagpatuloy siya sa paglalakad kaya sumunod na rin ako.

I saw how Cykee wrapped her arms around Kuya Hezion's bulging muscles on his arm. He paused from talking to that Irah and looked down at her.

Gracefully walking, when I finally reached Law, slowly, I tiptoed and kissed his tensed jaw before snaking my arms to his muscular one.

Ang kaninang umiigting na kalmnan sa kanyang braso ay huminahon, it relaxed under my touch.

"Law, I'm starving," I said and took a glance at Erich in front of us. "Can we leave now?"

"Hezion, I'm thirsty," narinig ko namang masuyong boses ni Cykee. "I wanna leave now."

When I looked at Erich, she seemed so disappointed to see me here. If she thought that she could ask Law to do a favor then I was so sorry to take down all her hopes. I would make sure that she wouldn't get any favor from Law.

I should be ashamed of my flint gray coloured skinny rib crop tee, paired with faded high waist joni jeans, and white sneakers compared to Erich's grid print cropped cami top and mini skirt with that nice nude pumps.

"Okay, where do you want to eat, little girl?" Law asked, very gentle as he removed my arms from his and brought his arm at my back, held my waist firmly.

Nakita ko kung paano tumingin ang mapag-obserbang mga mata ni Erich nang marahang hinalikan ni Law ang gilid na bahagi ng noo ko.

"Oh, perfect timing, we're going to have our lunch too," she plastered a pleasant smile that was very unpleasant for my sight. "You can join us."

"Your lunch with?" I asked with one eyebrow raised.

"With Law, of course," Erich really looked proud of her answer.

"Law?" bumaling ako kay Law at umatras ng isang hakbang pero wala akong nagawa nang siya na mismo ang humakbang palapit sa akin para magdikit ang katawan namin.

I almost made a face because of the way his rough hand grip my waist. It tightened.

"Erich, I told you that I'm not free today," he patiently said, the temper that he was holding vibrated on his broad chest.

"When would it be?" agad namang tanong ni Erich.

Does Law mean that he's not free today but he would be the other day? Or the next day?

Angrily, I snapped a look at Law. He's intimidating, I know, but I didn't care.

"He's free tomorrow, I guess," kikitbalikat kong sabi habang nakaangat pa rin ang tingin kay Law. "Law, ba't 'di mo sinabi sa'kin na may lakad pala kayo ni Erich? Hatid ko na kayo?"

"Wala kaming lakad," mariing sagot nito, bakas sa kanyang boses na wala siyang panahon para makipagbiruan sa akin.

"Are you upset, my girl?" I heard Kuya Hezion's worried voice from the other side here. "Hey, talk to me, Cykee."

Lumington ako sa direksyon nila dahil ayokong makita ang pagmumukha ng babaeng nasa

harap ko.

"Paki-ulit nga 'yong sinabi mo, Irah?" Cykee ignored Kuya Hezion, although, he didn't remove his grip at her waist like Law.

"Hezion likes me," pag-uulit naman ng babaeng nagngangalang Irah na kaibigan ni Erich.

Magkaibigan nga talaga sila, pareho kasi ng taste sa damit.

"Self-proclaimed ka girl?" prangka ni Cykee bago pilit inaaalis ang kamay ni Kuya Hezion sa kanyang beywang. "Let me go, Hezion."

Humarap ako kay Erich at bahagyang tinulak ang dibdib ni Law.

"Kryptonite, mauna ka na muna sa kotse. Susunod ako agad," seryosong utos ni Law. He then handed me something and his hand didn't even let go of my waist. "Here, little girl. Take my wallet, phone and keys."

Thirty seconds of fake smiling at Erich, I brought my gaze down at Law's things.

In a polite manner, I accepted it.

"Why? Mag-uusap ba muna kayo tungkol sa lakad niyo?" hindi ko napigilan ang inis sa boses ko kahit na hindi naman marahas ang pagkakatanong ko.

"Oh don't be such a jealous little sister, Kryptonite," Erich flipped her long and wavy hair at the left side, a signal that she just started a war. "Nakakasakal 'yan."

Another friendly smile had formed at the corners of my lips. "Hindi ba mas nakakasakal 'yong pinagpipilitan mo kahit ayaw ng tao?" my smile turned into a thin line before mouthed; "Bitch."

"Kryptonite," Law stopped me when I attempted to open my mouth again.

"What, Law? Are you going to scold me for saying such word?" I snapped at him, exasperated. "This is my mouth, I can say what I want, I can eat what I want and I can kiss who I want."

Unsatisfied. I wanted to add the thing about Rule, so I could get my revenge but that was just so childish. Law would never tolerate my puerile behaviour.

I got it, I was immature and I didn't need anyone to remind me.

"Just go to my car and wait there, little girl," Law's baritone voice was moderate. "Let's talk later, okay?"

Ang hirap magpigil ng inis, irita at galit kapag naiisip ko ang mga negatibong bagay.

"So? Mas inuuna mo pa ang pag-uusapan niyo kesa sa pag-uusapan natin?" I clenched my fist. Nilipat ko ang paningin ko kay Erich habang sinusubukan kong kumawala sa pagkakahawak ni Law sa beywang ko. "Pwede ba, Erich? 'Wag si Law. Maybe the gossips were true? That your family is a golddigger—"

My words left cut and unfinished when a hand flew and had a contact with an impact at my left face.

She slapped me.

"Fuck! Erich! Goddammit!" ngayon ko pa lang narinig ang matigas at nakakatakot na boses ni Law na sumigaw ng ganito kalakas. "Little girl. Look at me, please. Kryptonite..."

Naramdaman ko kaagad ang malaki at magaspang na palad ni Law sa magkabilang braso ko.

Humiliation. I felt like I was the center of an ignominious action that offended propriety because of the gazes and glances of pity, while others were just staring at me with absolute insouciance that I received at the very moment from most of the students enrolling here.

Did I deserve the slap? I wasn't blameworthy why it happened, was I?

I didn't moved my head, I let it remain in this position, leaning in the air at the side that it practically touches my shoulder.

Pakiramdam ko ay ako

'yong may scandal video na kumakalat hanggang ngayon nang dahil sa sobrang kahihiyang.

"Ang dumi ng bibig mo, will you wash it with soap and detergent?" Erich said nonchalantly.

Nang dahil sa sobrang galit ko ay inipon ko ang laway sa aking bibig habang nakatitig sa sahig at nakatagilid ang ulo ko. Nang nag-angat ako ng tingin kay Erich ay saka ko binuga sa kanyang mukha na mukhang lupa ang naipon ko laway.

Yes, I spat at her face. Everyone that had witnessed what I did paused from what they were busy at.

Stiffened and shock at the unexpected saliva cascading from the right corner of her pointed nose down to her blushing cheeks, she pressed closed her eyelids tight, opened it and blinked a few times.

"Yuck! Gross!" she bursted out, hesitant if she was going to wipe the saliva on her face with her hands or not. With her sharp and catlike eyes, she turned to me.

"You! Ba't dinuraan mo'ko?"

"Kasi hampas lupa ka," I countered.

"Kryptonite, little girl..." ngayon ko pa ulit napansin ang pagmamakaawa sa boses ni Law na pakinggan ko siya dahil panay na ang paghawî at alis ko sa kanyang kamay na mahigpit na nakahawak sa beywang ko. "Kryptonite!"

Mabilis akong tumakbo nang nagawa kong kumawala sa mahigpit na pagkakahawak ni Law. Hawak ko ang mga gamit niya habang tumatakbo patungo sa parking lot ng school.

I was expecting him to chase after me but even if I try to look back, I knew and I could feel that he wasn't.

Hindi ko alam kung nasa'n na sila Cykee at Kuya Hezion dahil nang umalis ako ay nakita kong wala na si Cykee.

Binuksan ko ang kotse ni Law at agad na pumasok sa loob ng front seat, sinara ko ang pinto bago sinuri ang pisngi ko sa rear view mirror ng mamahaling kotse.

Unhappy of what I was seeing, I plumped my back down against the backseat. Deeply inhaling and exhaling in numerous times to calm my nerves.

I waited for Law to come and assumed that he would be here in five minutes but I was wrong.

Fifteen minutes later. I could not see a trace of him, even his shadows were nowhere to be found.

What took him so long?

Ito na nga ba ang sinasabi ko. Naiinis lang ako kanina pero ngayon ay iba na 'tong nararamdaman ko.

Truth to be told, it was jealousy and anger.

Takot akong baka ay may kung sino ang mangingialam sa kotse ni Law dito kaya dala ko ulit ang wallet, phone at susi ng kotse niya nang lumabas ako at naglakad pabalik sa loob.

The parking lot was a miracle at this hour because it wasn't crowded with students to standby just beside their cars. It's lunch hour anyway, they must've been busy devouring their meals.

Papasok pa nga lang ako at palabas ng parking lot ngunit natigilan ako sa paglalakad at huminto ng iilang metrong distansya sa kung saan nakapark ang isang kulay pulang latest Acura ILX.

Natigilan ako nang nakita ang pamilyar na damit, likod at buhok ni Law. Nakatalikod sa direksyon ko.

"Thank you, I'll wait for your free time next week," narinig kong masuyong boses ni Erich at nakita ko pa mula rito ang paghawak ng dalawang kamay niya sa batok ni Law. "Should I make a reservation in a hotel?"

They couldn't see me. Law's muscular built was blocking Erich's sight from me, and I was facing Law's back.

My blood wasn't just boiling, my head heated, my eyes were burning and my fingers curled into a fist.

Napaatras ako nang kahit nakita ang noo at buhok ni Erich sa gilid na bahagi ng ulo ni Law. Parang naubusan ako ng hangin nang napagtanto ang nasaksihan ko saka ang pilit na pagkalas ni Law sa kamay ni Erich sa batok niya.

He had let her kissed him?

Pinagsisihan kong lumabas ng kotse at nakita 'to nang nahagip ako ng mga mata ni Erich.

"Oh, Kryptonite, are you going to say sorry to me?" sarkastikong tanong ni Erich at halata talaga sa mga labi niya na kagagaling niya lang sa paghalik kay Law.

Wala pa'ng isang segundo nang lumingon si Law at ang kaninang nakakatakot na ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha ay nag-iba.

Hindi na ako nagsayang ng oras para magsalita at mabilis na tinalikuran sila.

"Kryptonite..."

That voice was pleading and begging, it was not enough to stop me when I ran toward the exit of the parking lot.

"Fuck it," mura ng nakakatakot na boses nito na ngayon ay humahabol sa'kin.
"Kryptonite!"

Muntik pa akong masagasaan ng isang kotse at sinigawan ng driver bago nakapasok sa loob ng isang taxi na naghihintay ng pasahero.

I told the driver my address immediately and before Law could stop the car, it was already running away from the gates.

Stiffly, I kept my face in front and didn't look back. However, I couldn't stop myself but took a quick glance behind.

And saw Law, gripping his own hair while watching the taxi a distance away from him.

Nakita ko ang pagmamadaling pagpasok niya pabalik sa parking lot.

Sumandal ako sa backrest ng backseat at tumitig sa hawak kong phone, wallet at susi ng kotse niya. Alam kong hindi siya makakahabol.

Nang nakarating ako sa bahay ay iniwan ko lang ang mga gamit ni Law sa center table ng living room bago umakyat sa kwarto ko dahil hindi ko na talaga napigilan ang mga mainit na luhang nangingilid sa sulok ng mga mata ko. Sinigurado kong naka-lock 'yong pinto ng kwarto ko at dahil sa nagugutom ako, dagdagan pa'ng kakagaling ko lang sa pag-iyak ay natulog na lang muna ako.

It was just so heavy. Everything was heavy. Sumisikip ang dibdib ko sa tuwing naaalala ko ang mga nangyari. Ang hirap pala talagang masaktan dahil hanggang ngayon sa paggising ko ay nagpatuloy din naman ako sa pag-iyak.

My bed smelled like Law because he let me use his sheets and pillowcase. He's sleeping in my room very often and because of the masculine scent of it, this only reminded me of what they did earlier.

It's three in the afternoon and my stomach was still empty.

Nakadapa ako sa kama ko at nakasubsob ang namumulang mukha sa isang unan nang narinig ko ang pagbukas ng pinto ng kwarto ko at ang pagsara nito nang nakapasok na ang siyang bumukas.

Baka kanina pa siya nakarating at naabutang natutulog ako kaya hindi niya na siguro ako ginising. He has a spare key, locking my door was just useless.

Naestatwa ako nang naramdaman ko ang magaspang na kamay nito sa zipper ng joni jeans ko dahil hindi naman ako nagbihis ng pambahay kanina. Kaya habang nakadapa ay naramdaman ko ang dahan-dahang paghila niya pababa ng jeans hanggang sa naialis niya na ito sa katawan ko.

Humihikbi ako nang naramdaman ko naman ang kanyang kamay sa batok ko. I wasn't surprised anymore as he ripped my top at my back and removed it while I was laying on my stomach.

Only wearing my plain black baby bra and panty, I tightened my grasp on my pillow for support.

Kinagat ko ang unan ko nang naramdaman ang paghawak ng mainit at magaspang ni Law sa paa ko kasunod ng paglapat ng malambot at mamasa-masang labi nito sa talampakan ko, umangat hanggang sa binti at hita ko, hinahalikan ang isang pisngi ng pwet ko kahit na may suot akong panty hanggang sa umabot ang kanyang labi sa aking likod paakyat sa balikat ko.

He was praising me through kissing every part of my body, from the sole of my feet up to the top of my head. I couldn't just forgive him for he was doing these things.

Next week, I heard Erich that they would see each other next week and told him that she should make a reservation in a hotel. What was this? He would have a date with her and then afterwards they would sleep in a hotel? In the same room and bed?

What about me? I would be his second option and that Erich would be his priority. Just wow.

Idiniin ko pa ang mukha ko sa pagkakasubsob sa unan ko nang naramdaman kong nagtagal ang mainit na halik ni Law sa balikat ko. He wasn't just kissing the skin of my shoulders, he was nibbling, licking and sucking it with his strong teeth and warm tongue.

Creating that erotic noise of sucking.

"S-Stop it, Law," I stammered in the middle of sobbing and my voice was hoarse, that's just normal for having a dry throat. "U-Umalis ka na. I don't wanna see you."

"You told me that you're starving. Let's eat?" malambing nitong tanong sa akin dahilan kung bakit lalo lang akong nakaramdam ng galit sa kanya.

"Y-You're disgusting. You let Erich kiss you and now you're kissing my body?" garalgal kong sabi sa kanya pero parang wala naman siyang narinig dahil patuloy lang ang paghalik niya sa balikat at batok ko. "I-I said stop it!"

Naubusan ako ng pasensya at tinulak ko siya nang umupo ako mula sa pagkakadapa, hinagip ng mga kamay ko ang kumot at tinakpan ang buong katawan ko. Lumayo ako sa kanya hanggang sa naramdaman ko na sa likod ko ang headrest ng kama.

"Kryptonite, little girl--"

"No! Ayokong makinig sa'yo!" I covered and pressed my palms hard against my ears.

The tears were streaming nonstop and I didn't know how to stop it. I just wanna make my chest light from being heavy. I wanna remove the lump that had stuck in my throat. How could I stop my hands and legs from trembling?

Sobbing, I closed my tired eyes. Pressing and pulling my bended knees closer to my chest, keeping my feet away from him.

Nang binuksan ko ang mga mata ko ay nasa harap ko pa rin si Law, malambot ang paraan ng pagtingin sa akin. Bakas ang takot sa kanyang mukha pero ang hirap lang paniwalaang natatakot siyang umalis at mawala ako kung gumagawa naman siya ng dahilan para iwanan ko siya.

"L-Law, please, umalis ka na..." pangtataboy ko sa kanya sa mahinahon at humihikbing boses dahil alam kong kahit na sigawan ko siya ay hinding-hindi siya aalis. "J-Just leave. I want you gone--"

"Don't say that," putol niya sa balak kong sabihin.

Slowly, his hand moved up to touch my knees but I flinched from his touch and pressed myself against the headrest of the bed.

Nasaksihan ko kung paano niya kinuyom ang kanyang kamay bago ko naramdaman ang marahas niyang paghawak sa magkabilang braso ko at buong puwersang inilipat ako sa espasyo sa pagitan ng kanyang mga hita.

Mahigpit niya akong niyakap nang nagpumiglas ako at nakatakip pa rin naman sa buong katawan ko ang kumot.

Humihikbi ako habang tinitiiis ang sakit at kirot na nararamdaman ko sa naninikip kong dibdib. Nahihirapan na rin akong huminga ng maayos dahil sa paghikbi at namamaga na ang mga mata ko sa kakaiyak.

Passionately gentle and baritone voice. I heard it like that when he whispered, deep inside it, he wasn't crying, but his words were. His words were crying, bleeding and begging for me to have mercy on him.

"What do you want me to do, little girl? Tell me, please? Dictate me what to do, control me, manipulate me, take me because I wanna be your slave."

Chapter 36

Video

I slowly moved my head to the side to avoid his lips that had almost come on contact, aiming at my forehead. He stopped in the air, without getting the benefits that he wanted.

Stoically, he withdrew his head back up and sat down on his seat here in the dining room.

"You don't have to iron my uniform, I can do it," my plain voice was showing lack of interest as I brought the spoonful of rice and bacon, thrust it into my mouth then pulled the spoon out.

"The last time you ironed your uniform was last year and it burned," the concern had never left the expression on his face, ever since the day that we've had a fight.

The week had past and all those past days felt so awful. Much like immensely terrible and I didn't had the strength to muscle it up, that such heavy feeling in my chest just grew heavier and severe at every passing days.

Damaged. That's what Law was making me feel, although he's overmuch sweet, soft and gentle to me. It just added the weight of insufferable pain in my chest. How heinous the fate was to me.

Eminently true to his words. He did make himself my slave. Just like those servants in a movie, he served and treated me as how the president of the Philippines was well treated, cared and protected. The differences were, the president was serving

the people and its country, in my case, I wasn't serving anyone nor anything.

"How's your day in school yesterday?" masuyong tanong nito matapos ang ilang segundong katahimikan.

"Kailangan mo pa ba'ng malaman 'yon? It's part of my privacy," I didn't gave him even a quick glance, my gaze had magnet stuck on my breakfast. "You should ask that to Erich instead. She really looked like a Neapolitan Mastiff. Mukha rin siyang askal, loyal sa kalye."

A Neapolitan Mastiff is one of the ugliest and large dog in the world, origin in Italy, but despite of being ugly, it was one of the most-loved dog.

On the contrary to Erich, for me, somehow, I could tell that she's ugly because she was acting inelegantly with robust desperation, and she's one of the most-loved target of fuckers.

It wasn't just her feminine part that had deflowered, also her reputation as a woman.

Nakasuot ako ng uniform ko ngayon pero may dala naman akong extra na damit sa loob ng bag ko dahil ayokong pumasok ngayon.

I would ditch the class for today. I wasn't in the mood for listening to those boring discussions that I already know.

"Kryptonite, hindi na muna kita susunduin ngayon," nag-iba ang boses niya. "May aasikasuhin lang ako."

Fool. That wasn't me. I wouldn't let him fool me again. I knew why he couldn't fetch me.

Carelessly, I took the serviette from my lap and gracefully wipe the trace of food and water left, if there was, from the corners of my lips.

Tumitig ako ng ilang segundo sa pagkain kong mukhang 'di man lang nagalaw bago inangat ang tingin kay Law na huminto na rin sa pagkain.

"May aasikasuhin?" I echoed in question. Very much innocent to hear it. "Hindi ba mas maganda pakinggan kung sabihin mo'ng may lakad kayo ni Erich ngayon dahil free time mo?"

Who would know? Instead of fetching me, he was dating someone else.

"Ginagawa ko 'to dahil gusto kong makasama ka," mariin niya akong tinitigan sa mga mata dahilan kung bakit muntik ko nang iniwas ang tingin ko.

Avoiding an eye contact with him was just one of a coward move. I wasn't a milquetoast.

Cykee taught me how to defend myself, if I couldn't do it physically, why not verbally?

"Makasama ako? Pero ibang babae naman ang inaatupag mo! Ibang babae naman ang kasama mo! Ibang babae ang kahalikan mo! Tapos ano? Magkakadevelopan kayo ng feelings? And then malalaman ko na lang na buntis na pala siya!" I roared, hinampas ko pa ang mga pala ko sa mesa at napatayo sa kinauupuan ko marahil ay napuno na ng galit ang isip at puso ko. Kinuyom ko ang mga kamay ko na nakalapag sa mesa nang may naalala ako. "Paano kung... Paano kung nauna mo akong nabuntis? Gago ka pala

eh!"

"Calm down, little girl," tumayo na rin siya at lumapit sa tabi ko pero umatras lang ako. "Kumain ka na muna, okay? Mag-uusap tayo mamaya pagkatapos mo'ng kumain."

He was so understanding, still, I wouldn't let him rule my mind again.

Did I heard him right? He just ignored the inappropriate word that I said.

"Law, wala na ba talagang ibang paraan? I can go to daddy and tell him everything about us, I can ask him to stop," huminahon ako pero pinanatili ko pa rin ang distansya namin sa isa't isa. "May kasalanan siya sa'kin. He keep me blind for who I am in years, I can convince him and make a condition."

Unexpectedly, after days of being gentle and good to me, his eyes became alive along with the usual hardened expression on his face.

"'Yan ang 'wag na 'wag mo'ng gagawin," matigas niyang tugon habang nakababa pa rin ang tingin sa akin. "You're underage. Ipapakulong nila ako 'pag napatunayan nila sa korte na inabuso at ginahasa kita."

"But you didn't abuse and rape me," umiiling kong sabi. I frowned in displeasure of hearing those felonious words from him. "You're just disciplining me and I had given you the permission to claim me."

"Hindi sila makikinig sa'yo."

"Daddy can't let that happen! Hindi ka niya ipapakulong!" I bursted.

Nakakaamay na rin kasi ang dami niyang dahilan at iba pa'ng sinasabi para hindi ko magawa ang alam kong maaaring makakatulong sa amin.

"Hindi siya ang magpapakulong sa'kin," he said darkly. "Your biological parents."

Confusion struck me. "What?"

"Noong nag-usap kami ni daddy sa Compostela Valley, binalaan niya ako tungkol sa mga magulang mo," tiim bagang paliwanag niya at nakita ko pa ang mabilis na paggalaw ng matigas niyang panga. "He said that they're as rich as him. Ipapakulong nila ako."

"No, who the hell are they?" asik ko, sinisubukang pigilan ang galit na nararamdaman ko. "Mayaman ba talaga sila? Kung ipamigay nila ako ay parang kahit isang barya ay wala sila."

Why? What's the reason? Why did they gave me to the Cavanaugh?

Baka naman ay anak ako sa labas ng isang mayaman na tao at ayaw niyang may nakakaalam dahil baka ay madudumihan ang magandang reputasyon niya?

How could someone chose its reputation over me? The daughter. They would get me back if something happened to me under the roof of Law Cavanaugh, wouldn't they?

The possibility of getting to know them if ever they would come and get me had overwhelmed me. Thinking of it over and over again was pissing me off.

"I'm sorry, little girl," he apologized sincerely. "Pero hindi ko pa rin sila kilala."

Parang ngayon ko lang ulit narinig ang kanyang matigas at nakakatakot na boses. Sa mga nagdaang araw kasi ay madalas tahimik lang ako, hindi ako nakikipagtalos sa kanya at maayos naman ang pakikitungo niya sa akin. Malambot at marahan sa pandinig ang kanyang boses.

Thoughtlessly, I took my bag from the other chair and look at Law with defiance in my eyes.

"Sunduin mo na lang si Erich at siya ang ihatid mo sa school, may taxi naman, 'wag mo na rin akong ihatid bukas. Nakakahiya lang kasi hindi na ako bata," saad ko at tinalikuran na siya matapos kong kinuha ang wallet ko na nakalapag sa dining table.

Hindi pa nga ako nakakalabas ng dining room nang hinapit ni Law ang bewang ko pabalik.

"Kryptonite, listen," bakas ang pagiging desperado sa matigas niyang boses.

"I understand, Law. Ito ang pinili mo'ng choice," I said, disinterested of what he wanted to say. I wouldn't keep myself silent and just listen anymore. "Sana maintindihan mo rin ako."

From the moment that I removed his arm around my waist, he let me. I turned my heels and was about to walk my way to the door of the dining room but to hear him spoke again, I stopped halfway to the door.

"Utusan mo'ko," his voice was so grim and firm. "Anong gusto mo'ng gawin ko?"

I kept my back facing him and think about something I wish for him to do. It was obvious. He knew it already, why does he have to ask?

Nang hinarap ko siya ay nakita ko ang magkahalong ekspresyon at emosyon sa kanyang mukha.

Isa na roon ang pagmamakaawa na kailanman ay hindi niya ginawa noon. Bakit kaya hindi na lang siya magmakaawa kay daddy na 'wag na siyang pahirapan? Ba't sa akin siya nagmamakaawa?

"Lumuhod ka," I commanded.

Has anyone told me the feeling of having an authority over someone you wanted to control so bad? I wanted to know what was running on his head.

Obediently, he bended his knees on the cold floor, he didn't tore his gaze off me as he followed my order.

"Kahit ano, gagawin ko," sabi ng matigas niyang boses.

Taking slow steps, I reached for his tensed and perfect square shaped jaw, sliding my fingers down to his strong chin, I gently held it upward.

"I want you to stop dating Erich. Sabihin mo sa'kin na hindi ka na makikipagkita o makikipag-usap ulit sa kanya," utos ko. Sinusunod lang ang utos niyang utusan ko raw siya ng kahit ano. "Sabihin mo rin kay daddy na hindi na tayo pupunta sa mansyon para sa birthday ni Kuya Lazi."

Indeed, I changed my mind. Ayokong magkagulo ulit kami ni Law nang dahil lang sa babaeng 'yon.

"Kung 'yan ang gusto mo," nakaangat ang tingin niya sa akin na puno ng pasensya at

malawak na pag-uunawa. "Hindi na ako makikipagkita o makikipag-usap sa kanya. I'll call dad later tonight."

"Can I bring your phone in school, Law?" I added, moving my playful fingers from holding his strong chin down to his broad chest.

Nakaluhod nga siya sa harap ko pero pakiramdam ko ay mas makapangyarihan at maawtoridad pa rin siya kesa sa akin.

His face could touch my breasts if I take one more step closer. Tall and masculine, that's why women at his age were offering themselves, throwing themselves to him.

Not surprising, but to see that he's throwing himself to me? Unimaginable.

"Fine," he gave up. "Anything else?"

"Get up and open your zipper," mahina ang boses ko na parang nahihiya pa sa iniutos habang hinihila ng isang kamay ko ang kanyang damit paangat at nakahawak naman ang isang kamay ko sa kanyang maskuladong braso.

Sumunod siya sa sinabi ko at damdam ko ang kanyang mga maiinit niyang titig sa akin habang binubuksan niya ang zipper ng kanyang pants. Hindi ko pinansin ang kanyang mga titig at pinanood lang ang kanyang kamay na gumawa ng trabaho sa inuutos ko.

Two weeks, it's been that long since the last time that we made love in the Engine Room of the ferry. The last time that I saw his manhood was when he masturbated in his house at Compostela Valley.

After he unzipped his pants. It seemed like my hands had its own mind to move forward and grip the waistband of his Calvin Klein white underwear.

Inserting one hand inside it, I almost shouted and pulled my hand back out when I felt that hard yet soft and long features of his terrorizing manhood.

Parang napagtanto niya siguro na kinakabahan ako at ang lakas ng loob kong ipabukas sa kanya ang zipper niya kaya tinulungan niya ako at siya na nga mismo ang naglabas ng kanyang malaki at mahabang pagkalalaki.

Rapidly closing and opening my eyes, I literally, almost swallowed my tongue at the sight of it.

It was already erect.

"Can I touch it?" it was almost a whisper.

"It's all yours," naramdaman kong parang bumibigat ang paraan ng kanyang paghinga. "Puputulin ko 'to 'pag may ibang humawak."

"You can't do that," sabi ko habang nakatitig sa kanyang pagkalalaki.

"Kaya nga hindi ko pinapahawak sa iba, 'di ba?" ramdam ko sa bawat salitang sinasabi niya ay sumasabay ang init ng marahas na paraan ng paghinga niya. "Ikaw lang ang pinapahawak ko."

Visible veins were pulsing and vibrating on his manhood. Active and proudly standing in a horizontal position. It was like reaching for me, pleading for me to touch and hold it.

Pero hindi ko ginawa ang gusto kong gawin ngayon. Maingat kong ibinalik sa loob ng underwear niya ang kanyang pagkalalaki at ako na rin mismo ang nagsara ng zipper niya.

"Keep that, may kasalanan ka pa sa'kin," I tiptoed and kissed his hard jaw. Binigay ko sa kanya ang bag ko at kinuha ang phone niya sa loob ng kanyang bulsa bago lumabas.

Good mood in morning class, it's one of the effects from my conversation with Law. Rest assured that he would fetch me later and he wouldn't meet Erich.

Despite of having a good mood, I was preoccupied with the thought of my biological parents and I couldn't even have a scintillating talk with Cykee. She looked distressed like someone had just piqued her.

Wondering about who my biological parents were, what was their reasons and purposes why they gave me to the Cavanaugh and let them adopted me, treated me like I came from them by flesh and blood.

To the exact point of it, my mind was actually adulterated by odd and foreign thoughts as a result of guessing and esteeming about the real story behind all of this chaos.

"Kry, alam mo ba? 'Di na mahitsura ang nipple ko," Cykee started the conversation as she arranged her food on the table where we would like to eat our lunch. "Laging pinagdidiskitahan ni Hezion gabi-gabi."

We're in the school cafeteria. Just chilling and trying to cool ourselves down from the burdensome life we had.

Last school year, we used to eat here in our favorite spot with Faith. I missed that girl. She have protected her innocence from Cykee, but does she successful to protect it from her cousin? I hope that she's okay.

"Masakit ba, Cyk?" nakangiwing tanong ko nang sumulyap ako sa dibdib niya. "Baka magkaroon ka ng breast cancer niyan?"

"Nope, he's expert and he knows the limitations to prevent that," she confidently said. Mahina lang kaming nag-uusap dito. Takot na baka ay may makarinig. "Paano 'yong sa inyo ni Kuya Law?"

Hindi ko naman masasabing maayos na kami ni Law dahil para sa akin ay hindi pa naman talaga kami maayos. Did he thought that I had forgiven because he obeyed to my command?

No. If that was, then he was wrong and he knew that. I was the kind of girl that's hard to please when it comes to this.

One week and still, I couldn't get the image of Erich kissing Law.

"Medyo okay na kami," ang tanging nasagot ko. "It's just that, I can't get over it. Erich just kissed him. I won't let that pass."

After arranging my food, I started devouring them.

"Mas malala pa pala si Irah pagdating sa pagiging desperada. No wonder na nakipaghiwalay sa kanya ang boyfriend niya last month," walang humpay na panlalait ni Cykee pagkatapos lunukin ang kinakain. "Nahuli ko lang naman noong isang araw na pinipilit niya si Hezion. What else? Sex lang naman ang habol ng lahat ng babae sa

kanya."

"Anong status niyo pala?" pagsingit ko sa panghihimutok niya.

"He's my boyfriend," she was so sure and proud. "Kinakabahan na nga ako ngayon, Kry."

Saglit akong huminto sa pagsubo. "Why?"

"Kasi kahapon may nangyari sa'min, and he's not using condom. Always namang hindi siya gumagamit no'n pero kahapon kasi..." she hesitated for a minute, leaning closer to the table to whisper. "Sinadya niya talagang labasan sa loob ko."

I paused midair from bringing the food to my mouth and stared at Cykee in front of me.

"Cykee..." hindi ko na tinuloy ang balak kong sabihin dahil 'yon din.

Gusto kong sabihin na gano'n din ang nararamdaman.

Queasy with unsettled and polluted mind. A big possibility of having a little baby Law inside my womb made me nervous. Who wouldn't? I didn't need another problem if I already had a mound of it.

Oh please. Dear me. I didn't need to add another problem. The predicament with Law was enough for me to survive a day without having anxiety.

"Galit na galit siya nang mga oras na 'yon at siguro ay napuno na siya sa'kin," puno ng pag-aalala sa boses at mukha ni Cykee na parang ano ma'ng oras ay mababaliw na siya sa mga isiping pumapasok sa isip niya. "Hindi pwede 'to. Hindi ako pwedeng mabuntis ng ganito kaaga."

"Paano na 'yan?" gano'n din naman ang tanong ko kay Cykee sa tanong ko sa sarili ko.

I wouldn't get through this if I would let the fear control my mind.

"Hindi ko na alam kung anong gagawin ko 'pag nabuntis niya nga ako," probelmadong sagot ni Cykee. Halatang kinakabahan at natatakot na magkatotoo ang mga hinala niya. Her face lit up when she saw what's on my plate. "Enough with this. Anyway, why fried chicken and pork belly? I thought you hated meats?"

"I don't know, I just thought that I need to have a new taste," muli akong sumubo ng pagkain at ngayon ko talaga napagtantong masarap pala ang mga ganitong pagkain na madalas na kinakain ni Law.

Umangat ang isang kilay niya habang pinapanood akong kumakain. "Buti naman at naisip mo 'yan."

Vegetables and fruits were my favorite in breakfast, lunch and dinner. However, today was different. My breakfast earlier with Law was very appetizing, the bacon and meatballs that he served were tasty and savoury. I haven't even touched my lettuce.

Yet, because of the fight we had in the middle of eating our breakfast. I didn't finished to eat it all.

I already admitted that meats were scrumptious. I didn't know how it happened but I just woke up earlier having a tongue that's finding something moist and oily. Like

those Law's favourite foods.

May kalahating oras pa kami ni Cykee bago magsimula ang unang subject namin for the afternoon class. Tapos na kaming kumain at nagpapalipas oras na lang kaming dalawa sa parking lot, sa loob ng kotse niya.

"New phone?"

"Nope, it's Law's phone," ni hindi ko siya nilingon habang abala ako sa pag-scroll sa hawak kong phone. "Pinayagan niya akong hiramín 'to."

"Nakakamiss din pala si Faith 'no? Maagang nang-ibang bansa eh, nakita ko 'yong pinsan na tinutukoy niya. Ang gwapo kaso ay mukhang hindi mapagkakatiwalaan," she brought up. Lifting her feet up to rest on the wheel in front of her. Looking very comfortable on her position while she was too, busy with her own phone. "Video call sana pero siguro alas diyas na ng gabi sa Seattle, baka tulog na 'yon."

Nakakainggit talaga 'tong si Cykee. Ilang buwan lang siyang binilhan ni Hezion ng latest version ng iPhone tapos ngayon 'yong gamit niya ay ang bagong release na naman na iPhone.

Recently, little did I realized that materials would never be the reason of bona fide beatitude.

The happiness would come from the person I would like to be with and not from an object that didn't have a spirit to start with.

"Nakakagutom, bumili ka sana ng fries, Cykee," reklamo ko matapos ang ilang minutong nakatutok lang ako sa screen ng phone.

"Lagi ka na lang nagugutom, kakatapos lang nating kumain ng lunch," nakita ko pa ang pag-ikot ng mga mata niya nang lumingon ako sa direksyon niya. Nanlaki ang mga mata niya nang may nakita sigurong kakaiba sa kanyang phone. "Wait, what the hell."

"Anong problema?" I was calm. Though Cykee didn't, she looked like a volcano that's ready to erupt.

"Oh my God, watch this," aniya at agad na inalis ang earphones sa kanyang tainga. She disconnected the earphones from her phone and adjusted the volume.

Hinarap niya sa akin ang screen ng phone at pinanood ko ang video.

I paled when I watched the video and it got over five thousand viewers in just an hour.

Ibig sabihin ay bago pa lang ito nai-upload sa social media.

The video was the only video that I watched from that girl Ashley. It was from Kirsten's phone, if I haven't forgotten, that video was supposed to be a vlog.

I could clearly remember that I deleted it myself, also in the recycle bin. Now how did this happen?

Talagang minura ko sa isip ko ang babaeng 'yong nang nakita ang pangalan niya sa account na nag-upload nito.

She was the one that I should blame. It was obviously her account, she uploaded the video.

"One thousand two hundred forty six comments from the netizens," maarteng sabi ni Cykee bago binasa ang mga comments. "Totoo ba 'to? Baka edited lang 'yan. Ano 'yan? Tinitira ang sariling kadugo? Incest. Kaya naman pala ang strict ni kuya, hatid sunder pa. Isa pa 'yang si Hezion, feeling ko may something sa kanila ng stepsister niya-tangina?"

Mga walang alam, pakialamerang inggitera. Gigil niyo 'ko mga sizst."

Kanina pa nagsasalita si Cykee kahit 'di naman siya naririnig ng mga nilalait niya.

Nakatulala naman ako sa labas at hindi ko na talaga alam kung anong gagawin ko. There were many viewers and I was afraid that it would reach daddy or any of our family members.

I wasn't sure if Law's other cousins have seen it but I hoped not. They're not really into social medias, they prefer having sex than wasting their time on this shitload.

"Oh hala, nawala bigla 'yong video, parang dinelete," nainis na reaksiyon ni Cykee. "'Di pala, 'yong account pala talaga ang dinelete, 'di ko na mahanap."

Sa kabila ng pagkatulala ko sa labas ng sasakyan ay may nahagip ang mga mata ko dahil kung bakit nandilim ang paningin ko at inatake ng galit ang buong sistema ko.

Nagmamadali at marahas kong binuksan ang pinto ng sasakyan saka agad na lumabas. Narinig ko pa ang pagtawag ni Cykee at ang pagmamadali niya ring sumunod sa akin.

Huminto ako sa nakatalikod na pamilyar na babae.

"Ashley..." marahan kong istorbo mula sa pakikipag-usap niya sa isang babae.

Saktong sa paglingon niya ay ang pagtama ng palad ko sa kanyang kaliwang pisngi. Bahagyang tumalbog pa ang dulo ng kanyang maikling buhok.

Her face turned red, she was cupping her left cheek with her left hand, feeling the heat and pain from it. The Chinese looking shape of her cute eyes widened, shock and abashed.

Just how as I was expecting from her.

"Anong problema mo? Why did you slap my friend?" said Ashley's friend who she was talking to.

Ignoring the girl's question, I set my blazing gaze to the silent Ashley and shot her a glare. "How could you? You uploaded the video, for what reason? Mas yayaman ka ba 'pag ginawa mo 'yon?"

"I didn't uploaded it--"

"Of course, you'll say that! Kriminal nga hindi umaamin sa ginawa nilang krimen, magnanakaw nga nagsisinungaling. Ikaw pa kaya?" wala na akong pakialam kung nakakakaagaw na ako ng atensyon dahil karamihan din naman sa mga estudyanteng tumatambay dito ay katulad naming mga Senior High. "I shouldn't have trusted you! May duplicate ka na sa video na 'yon bago mo pinakita at pinabura sa'kin!"

"Ano ba! 'Wag mo nga siyang sinisigawan! Hindi porket kilala ka sa school na 'to ay ganyan ka na umasta!" Ashley's annoying friend was kept on defending her. Interfering and meddling with someone else's problem.

"Shut up," I hissed at her before I turned to Ashley. "Why don't we have a little fun, Ashley? Looks like you have nothing to do, got bored and uploaded the video. Would you mind if I give you five minutes of entertainment?"

Hindi pa mga siya nakakasagot and I knew that her cheek haven't recovered from my slap, hinila ko ang buhok niya dahil kung bakit siya napayuko at nagpumiglas.

"What the..." narinig kong mura ni Cykee na ngayon ay naabutan na rin pala ako. "Kryptonite!"

"Guard! Guard!" narinig ko namang natarantang tawag ng kaibigan ni Ashley.

Nang sinubukan ni Ashley na hawakan ang buhok ko ay ginamit ko na ang isa ko pa'ng kamay para sabunutan siya, hilahin ang buhok niya hanggang sa narinig ko ang sunod-sunod na pagdaing niya.

Cries from her little mouth caught all the attention of students here, some just watched and some were taking a video.

In every grip and pull of her hair that I did, she gave me scratches on my arms.

Nagdidilim talaga ang paningin ko sa sobrang galit. Hindi ko na nga tinigilan si Ashley, lumaban siya pero hindi sapat 'yon para bitiwang ko ang kanyang buhok.

Humahapdi na ang braso ko nang dahil sa mga kalmot niya, nabubuo ang mga linya ng namumulang sugat at may parte pang dumugo ang manipis kong balag dahil sa medyo mahaba ang kanyang mga kuko.

Wala pa rin siyang laban sa akin dahil hawak ko ang kanyang buhok at hinihila ito sa kung saang direksyon ko gugustuhin.

"Kryptonite! Oh my God! Stop!" sinubukan pa nga akong pigilan ni Cykee nang napaluhod sa mainit at sementadong sahig ng parking lot si Ashley.

Binaba ko ang mukha ko, itinapat sa kanang tainga ni Ashley at hindi nagpaawat kay Cykee.

"Alam mo ba kung ano ang mas magandang tanawin sa basurang paaralan na 'to? Bukod sa gusto kong paalisin ang mga bias, favoritism at nagpapabayad para sa grades na mga professor..." I could hear the unpleasant noise of gritting my teeth. "Gusto ko ring makita kang hinahalikan ang sahig."

Kasabay ng huling sinabi ko ay tinulak ko ang likod ng ulo niya hanggang sa dumikit ang kanyang pisngi sa mainit na sahig.

Isang minuto lang din naman 'yon nang may humila sa bewang ko bago mahigpit na hinawakan ang magkabilang braso ko.

I tried to get the hands off me, but it's hard, it wouldn't let me.

"Hey, it's me."

Natigilan ako sa pagpumiglas nang narinig ang pamilyar na boses na 'yon. He could imitate Law's eyes, expression, presence and voice in a mild version.

Desperately catching my breath, I moved my head and found Rule's gentle eyes held mine.

Hindi na ako nakapagsalita nang may isang babaeng nakakataas sa paaralang 'to ang

biglang sumulpot.

"Principal's office, now," maawtoridad nitong utos. She adjusted her eyeglasses and march down back in a building.

"You okay? May sugat ka," that mild version of Law's hard and intimidating voice reminded me of the times that Law was giving me a spank whenever I got in trouble.

"I'm fine," hindi pa rin nabubura ang inis sa boses ko nang nakitang nauna nang umalis si Ashley at dumiretso sa daan palabas ng school. "Let go, may haharapin pa akong gurang na principal."

Ashley didn't took a glance at my direction when she left with her friend and the crowd dispersed once the five minutes entertainment ended under the hot temperature of one in the afternoon.

Damn her. She wouldn't face the principal or guidance? Just like that? She left without getting justice? We're even because I haven't gotten mine too.

Pumasok na sa unang subject namin si Cykee matapos niya akong hinatid sa principal's office with Rule. Gusto pa'ng sumama ni Cykee sa akin at hintayin ako pero sinabi ko na pumasok na lang siya dahil baka ay papagalitan siya ni Kuya Hezion.

Currently sitting on the chair at the side of the principal's desk, I waited there. About fifteen minutes, the door opened and the tall figure of a familiar man came in with his intimidating presence that would make the old principal tremble in fear.

I knew that they had talk over the phone, the voodooist old looking principal used Kuya Hezion's number because he couldn't contact Law, I had his phone, of course the phone inside my pocket rang when she called Law and she gave me a dark stare. She knew Cykee, Faith and I very well.

Now the only thing that Law have to do by now was to fetch me at this early.

Those darkening eyes and hardened expression on his chiselled face could tell thousands of words, synonyms of danger and anger.

Nang nakalabas kami ng principal's office at naglakad sa tahimik na hallway ay naramdaman ko na lang ang kanyang magaspang na kamay, mariin at marahas na pinisil ang isang pisngi ng pwet ko sa gitna ng paglalakad.

I groaned in pain.

"I have two types of punishment, little girl. Spank or suck?" he growled and released my butt.

Inilipat niya naman ang kanyang malaking kamay sa bewang ko at nang hindi ko siya sinagot, gamit ang matigas at nakakatakot niyang boses ay nagsalita siya ulit.

"Sakit o sarap?"

Mature Content Warning (Mild). This chapter may contain content of an adult nature. If you are easily offended or are under the age of 18, just ignore and skip some scenes. Some words within are intended for adults only and may include scenes of sexual content, strong languages, violence etc.

Spank

"Remove your clothes, little girl," nagtitimping utos nito matapos niya akong kinaladkad dito sa loob ng kwarto niya. "Remove it."

Supposedly, I had to increase my bravery for this. To see him with that steely look on his chiselled face, the storm in his intimidatingly dark eyes, and his hardening strong jaw.

I shivered under his penetrating gaze. Apparently, I wasn't doing well on boosting up my strength and fight the fear off.

Remained standing on my spot, facing him and the bed behind me. I didn't obliged to his command. The talk we had about treating me like a child and spank me in times that I was in trouble, had never left my mind.

"You're not going to spank me," shaking my head, my sweaty and cold palms were minimally shaking too. "Law, sinabi mo na sa'kin 'yon. Hindi mo na ako papaluin ulit."

"I want your uniform on the floor, Kryptonite," he lifted the hem of his tee shirt, after taking it off from his rock of a body, he then chucked it away and it landed flat on the floor. "Remove it, now."

Nakatitig siya sa mga mata ko sa paraan kung paano siya tumitig sa akin noong mga nakaraang buwan na wala pa akong alam at lagi niya akong pinapalo.

"No! Law! I'm sixteen years old! Please! Do not spank me!" sigaw ko nang hindi ko na talaga matiis ang nakakatakot niyang mga mata.

It seemed like I had triggered the ruthless monster in him and it came back to life. Returning with vengeance, for he made himself my slave and all that I did in return to his favor was giving both of us such cathartic ailments.

His intense stare that was piercing into me, cut when he turned his back and went to the dark brown sofa. He sat there with his hard, sculpted and well-toned shirtless body.

"Come here, little girl," he tapped his lap.

The heated tension was in between us, and the terrifying dark shadows in his orbs were intently glowering at me.

Naalala ko na naman ang ginawa niya noon. Nagsisimula ang lahat sa mahinahon at kalmadong usupan, pero kalaunan ay kapag nagmamatigas ako, siya na mismo ang maghuhubad sa akin at utusang dumapa sa kama niya.

And he would spank me.

Maybe, we would be okay after this? If I would just behave properly.

Nagdadalawang-isip man ay unti-unti kong nahanap ang sariling humahakbang palapit sa sofa kung saan siya kasalukuyang prenteng nakaupo.

He watched me walk toward him. Immediately, his hand held my waist the moment I reached him and guided me to sit on his hard lap.

Very well, he's eager to have me and keep me locked in his arms.

Napahawak ako sa matigas niyang tiyan nang dahil sa sobrang lapit ko sa kanya at marahan siyang tinulak upang magkaroon ng konting distansya sa pagitan namin. My other hand was resting on his bare shoulder for assistance.

"Why did you do that?" I felt his one hand crawling on my thigh under my skirt. "You have all my attention, little girl. Hindi mo na kailangang gumawa ng gulo sa school para makuha ang atensyon ko."

Mula sa pagkakahawak ko sa matigas niyang tiyan ay hinawakan ko ang kanyang braso kung saan 'yong kamay niya ay nasa ilalim ng school uniform skirt ko. Sinusubukang ihinto ang masamang binabalak ng kanyang magaspang na kamay. "The video, Law. She—"

"Nakita ko 'yong video," he didn't let me finished. "Nagawan ko na ng paraan. Hindi nakarating kay dad at sa mga pinsan ko ang tungkol do'n."

I would be glad to hear that from him. He just did an immediate action to get us out of the exposure related to the secrecy and covertness of our relationship.

However, that wasn't the reason and my concern why I attacked Ashley.

She broke my trust.

Firmly pressing my lips together, my grip on his muscular arm tightened a bit.

"But Ashley told me that she'll keep it! What did she do? She just uploaded it online!" my cheeks heated because of the anger. "I hate her. Tapos ngayon? Mas pinagtatanggol mo pa siya?"

Nang dahil sa sinabi ko ay nakita ko ang pagdaan ng lungkot sa kanyang mga mata, agad din naman 'yong nawala na parang namalikmata lang ako at napalitan ng nakakapanlambot tuhod na nagbabagang galit.

"She didn't uploaded it," aniya, mahinahon at parang sinusubukang palamigin ang kanyang umiinit na ulo. "It's Kirsten."

That's the sign that he wanted a peaceful conversation with me, without shouting, screaming and yelling.

I did the same. I didn't wanna end up with my flat stomach lay on his bed, another with his rough and large palm ferociously giving my derriere some series chastisement of spansks.

"How? Ang sabi ni Ashley sa'kin noon ay wala na raw 'yon sa phone niya," giit ko dahil 'yon naman talaga ang narinig ko sa kanya noon.

"It's not her phone. Dalawang phone ang nakakuha ng video no'n, 'yong nakuha ni Ashley ay 'yong phone ni Dana," "The other phone is Kirsten's beside Dana's phone. 'Di niya alam na naka-on din 'yong camera no'n."

Kaya ba walang masyadong pinagkaiba 'yong nakita kong angle sa video na in-upload

dahil magkatabi lang 'yong dalawang phone?

There was differences of the video that Ashley had let me watch before and the video that got uploaded on social media, it's just the quality of the camera, the angle and the filter.

Obviously, according to what I had seen online. The uploaded video was edited and filtered.

He couldn't fool me with this last thing on my mind though.

"What about the account? It's obviously Ashley's account," I added with a bit of sarcasm in my moderate voice, never mind the informations and explanations that he told me.

"It's Kirsten's account, she changed her name there," he said. "Ashley's not guilty, little girl. She's innocent."

Hindi ko na pinansin at binalewala na lang muna ang kanyang kamay sa loob ng skirt ko, gumagapang papasok sabay himas at hagod sa hita ko.

I may got that misinterpreted or misunderstood, but why did I heard it from his voice that he was somewhat saying that he's giving me all the blame?

Punishable and blamable, that's what could make me vulnerable. Just because of my misdemeanors at school?

Wala na akong ibang maramdaman kung 'di ay galit para sa kanya. Pinapantayan ang gali niya para sa akin.

"Are you telling me that I'm guilty, huh?" binitiwang ko ang kanyang braso at sinuntok ang kanyang matigas na dibdib. "I know it's my fault! Pero sa lahat ba ng nangyaring ganito noon kahit hindi ko kasalanan ay kinampihan mo ba ako? Hindi! Lagi na lang 'yong iba ang kinakampihan mo! Lagi na lang ako 'yong mali!"

The gesticulations with my hands on his chest just made our argument even worse.

Nanatili ang isa niyang kamay sa bewang ko at 'yong isa naman ay patuloy na sumisiksik sa loob ng skirt ko hanggang sa naramdaman ko 'yon sa pang-upo ko.

"Hindi ko sila kinakampihan, Kryptonite," walang pinagkaiba ang matigas niyang boses sa kanyang boses noon kapag nag-uusap kami sa ganitong sitwasyon. "I just want you to learn from your mistakes."

"Sinasabi mo na rin na mali pa rin ako," nanggagalaiti sa galit na muli kong hinampas ang kanyang dibdib. "Kailan nga ba ako naging tama?"

"Mali ka na naman," he didn't even tried to stop my hand from hurting his musclebound chest. He just let me.

"Mali ka rin naman. Alam mo'ng ako 'yong maling babae para sa'yo pero anong ginawa mo?" I grimaced in distaste. "Nagkamali ka nang pinili."

Unexpectedly, my breath hitched when his rough hand took a tight grip on one cheek of my butt.

Bahagya pa'ng umangat ang katawan ko nang dahil sa biglaan niyang ginawa 'yon at parang pinipiga niya na rin ang pwet ko.

"Little girl, hindi pa ako nagkamali ng pinili," he growled, low and dangerous.
"Sakit o sarap?"

Bahagyang nakaangat ang katawan ko dahil sa kanyang kamay na nasa pang-upo ko ay naabot ng kanyang mga mapagparusang mga labi ang panga ko.

He nibbled my skin on that part, stuck out his tongue and licked it for his own pleasure and couldn't-get-enough satisfaction.

My moistened jaw because of his moist tongue and warm, soft lips on the skin of my jaw had titillated me.

"Sinabi mo na rin sa sarili mo na hindi ka pa nagkamali ng pinili," I had the doubtless temerity to tell him that. "Bakit hindi na lang ikaw ang pumili?"

Halatang hindi niya nagustuhan ang mga salitang lumalabas at nanggaling sa tabas ng dila ko.

Lalo akong natakot nang nakita ko ang galit na pumuno sa kanyang mga mata.

Ang lakas ng pagkabog ng puso ko nang saka ko pa lang napagtanto kung anong magiging epekto ng sinabi ko sa kanya.

Nakatagilid ang ulo ko nang dahil sa paghalik at pagsipsip niya sa parte ng balat ng panga ko hanggang sa marahas niya nang iniwas ang kanyang mga labi sa panga ko at hinila niya na palabas ang kanyang kamay mula sa pang-upo ko, sa mismong loob ng skirt ko.

"Get up," tiim bagang utos niya.

I haven't even gotten my recovery from the sexual intoxication as he abruptly and harshly pulled my waist upward to get me off from sitting on his lap. I stood on my feet and waited 'til he got up too, towering over me.

Gasping the need of my body for air that had mixed with Law's masculine scent to inhale, I leaned my hands on both of his bare and strong shoulders to balance myself after he unbuttoned and discarded my upper school uniform. At this minute onward, he was busy removing my skirt.

Please. How could I exorcize the demon out of him.

"L-Law..." nanghihinang tawag ko nang tumayo siya ng maayos sa harap ko.

Katulad ng gusto niyang mangyari ay nagkalat na nga sa sahig ang suot kong school uniform kanina. Even my underwear.

I was completely naked.

"Dapa," maawtoridad na utos nito matapos niyang pinasadahan ng tingin ang hubo't hubad kong katawan.

"You can't do this to me," hindi ko na napigilan ang magmakaawa sa kanya. "Hindi mo na ako papaluin sa pwet 'di ba? Sinabi mo sa'kin 'yon."

"Papaluin kita, kaya dumapa ka na," kalmado niyang tugon na parang hindi siya galit.

Just like those days whenever he would give me a spank. My eyes watered and my jaw dropped with incredulity, I could see it on his handsome face that he was serious

about
it.

He would spank me in a way that I would let him, or he would force me.

I had changed his mind before, that day in Grandpa Sattie's hacienda, but I guess, I couldn't change it now that I desperately needed it the most. This time, the situation and condition was different. No exceptions.

My eyes narrowed into a squint as my brows raised and pulled together that looked like I was in pain. Beads of tears ran down across my blushed cheeks followed by my soft and gentle sobs.

"I-I'm sorry, I'm sorry," hindi na ako nag-aksaya ng oras at pinulupot ko na ang aking mga braso sa kanyang beywang habang nakaangat ang nagmamakaawa kong mga mata sa kanya. "Hindi ko na talaga uulitin, Law. Please. I don't want you to spank me. Law..."

Visible as I hugged him, my bare and not-so-flat breasts and nipples squeezed against the lower part of his bare and broad chest.

Sadly, he didn't wrap his arms around me like how I did to him. The rigid cords on his forearms as he balled his hands into fists was a sight to see, moreover to the tensed and bulging muscles on his upper arm. The sexy triceps.

Hardened, his features were all hard and intimidating. Despite of the bludgeon of his dominance that haven't put into strong words, I never let go of him.

This may be awkward because I was all naked and he was just shirtless, his dark slacks were still on.

Lumakas ang marahan kong paghikbi nang pilit niyang inalis ang mga braso kong nakayakap sa kanya at dahil sa wala naman akong laban sa lakas niya kahit anong pilit kong paghigpit ng yakap ko sa kanya ay wala akong ibang nagawa nang tuluyan niya na nga'ng inalis ang mga braso ko.

"Sige na, dumapa ka na, little girl," marahan ang pagkakasabi niya no'n kahit na alam kong galit pa rin siya at dahil siguro sa pagyakap na ginawa ko. "'Wag mo'ng hintayin na pilitin pa kitang dumapa sa kama ko."

"P-Pero, Law. Masakit..." I didn't drop on his bed, I tried to convince him instead and end up, ignored again. I shook my head in an almost desperate manner. "A-Ayoko ng palo..."

I did like the feeling of his hands on my butt, of him giving me spanks, but I didn't like it the way that he was in a state like this. Vehement, vicious and violent.

"It's just thirty minutes, little girl," pinapahaba niya ang kanyang pasensya habang mariin nakatitig sa mga lumuluha kong mga mata. "After that you can sleep on my bed and I'll cook your favourite vegetable dishes for dinner."

"I-I don't want vegetables," humihikbi pa rin ako.

"We'll talk about that after this," he used his thumb to wipe the hot tears off my red cheeks, after that, he looked at the bed behind me. "Drop on my bed."

Hawak niya ang isang braso ko nang iginiya niya ako patungo sa kanyang kama, tinulungan niya pa akong makaakyat bago ako komportableng dumapa sa kanyang kama.

Narinig ko ang paghila niya sa kanyang belt at akala ko ay gagamitin niya 'yon para ihampas sa pwet ko pero hindi nang narinig kong tinapon niya 'yon sa kung saan.

Siguro ay sobrang nasisikipan lang ang kanyang pagkalalaki kaya niya inalis 'yon.

"L-Law, 'wag mo'ng lakasan, please..." I murmured against the masculine scent of his pillow.

"Alam mo naman kung bakit ko 'to ginagawa 'di ba? Ayokong ulitin mo ang ginawa mo," naramdaman ko ang pag-akyat niya sa kama, sa tabi ko. "Paano kung makarating ang balita kay dad? Na nakipag-away ka? Tatanungin niya sa'kin kung bakit 'di kita binabantayan ng maayos."

Humigpit ang pagkakahawak ko sa sheets at unan ng kama nang naramdaman ko ang kanyang kamay na nakahawak sa binti ko, umaangat ang kanyang kamay na hinihimas, hinahaplos at hinahagod ang binti ko hanggang sa pwet ko.

I could feel him sitting beside me, blazing in great anger, tempted to do the things that he loved doing with my body.

Gripping the sheets angrily, I forced my head to move and have a look at him. "I was just mad! Kaya ko nagawa 'yon!" singhal ko, sapat na lakas ng pagkakasabi ko para marinig niya ang ibig kong iparating sa kanya. "I thought that she did that on purpose! Malay mo, katulad din siya ni Erich, 'di ba? Kaya niya ginawa 'yon dahil baka ay may gusto rin siya sa'yo."

He was being cantankerous and it started to irritate me. Though maybe, it was me that had been very bloody-minded and splenetic for the things he said that doesn't suit nor pass in my standards of critical thinking all this time?

Because for me, he was acting like those professors in school. Bias and favouritism.

Let me say that I was not his favourite.

Squeezing the left cheek of my butt, playing his rough palms on it, he spoke. "Little girl, why are you overthinking so much? Can't you just think about something else? You can think of my penis if you want."

Kasabay no'n ay humikbi ako nang marahas niya akong pinalo sa parte kung saan niya hinagod kanina.

Matapos ang tatlong paghampas niya ng kanyang marahas na palad sa pwet ko ay naramdaman ko naman ang kanyang mamasa-masang mga labi na marahang hinahalikan ang pwet ko at ang mainit niyang dila na dinidilaan 'yon.

Parang nahirapan yata siya sa kanyang posisyon kaya naramdaman ko ang paggalaw ng kama nang lumipat siya.

I cried the first second that he gripped my legs and parted it. Placing himself on the space between.

Otherguess, I wasn't crying because I didn't like it or because of pain, and clearly, I wasn't forced to drop on his bed. I willingly obeyed him, and was crying for his sake.

"Baka mabuntis ako kakaisip sa ari mo." kinakabahan kong sabi habang humihikbi pa rin nang dahil sa sinabi niya. "A-Ayoko."

Marahan niyang kinagat ang kabilang pisngi ng pwet ko at sinisipsip ang balat ko.
"I want you pregnant, Kryptonite."

"I'm not ready for it, Law."

"Ready or not..." bulong niya habang idinidiin niya ang kanyang matangos na ilong sa hiwa ng pwet ko. He inhaled. "Once upon I thrust, there was a sperm fertilized an egg."

Burying my face against the soft and masculine scented pillow, my forehead creased.
"What are you saying?"

"I'm telling you a story," he said, gentle, after giving me a spank on the right cheek of my butt. "The story of how our baby got inside your womb."

"Hindi ako buntis, Law."

"Buntis ka."

"Baka nga buntis ako pero hindi ikaw ang ama?" naiirita kong sabi dahil pinagpipilitan niya talagang buntis ako. "Law! What the hell!"

Hindi na ako magkamayaw sa pagsigaw at paghila ng malambot na buhok ni Law upang mailayo ang kanyang mukha sa pwet ko.

Sinubukan kong gumapang pero agad din naman niyang pinulupot ang kanyang matigas at maskuladong braso sa beywang ko.

Humihikbi at tumutulo na naman ang mga luha ko, nahihirapan na rin ako sa posisyon ko. Nakadapa at magkahiwalay ang mga hita nang dahil sa nasa gitna si Law at nakadapa na rin.

Pinagdidiskitahan niya talaga ang mga malulusog na pisngi ng pwet ko nang dahil sa madalas niyang ginagalaw ang katawan ko para tumalbog 'yon.

"Ugh! Law! Take it slow, please, oh-ah..." halingling ko nang pagkatapos ang limang beses na hinampas niya ang kanyang magaspang na palad sa pwet kong sa tingin ko ay namumula na, umatake na naman ang kanyang bibig. "L-Law, dahan-dahan lang naman. Ayos lang sa'kin kahit magtagal tayo ng isang oras dito-d-damn, ah-oh... oh my God."

"Gusto mo ba 'to, little girl?" he asked, voice was as hard and cold as steel.
"Sagot."

Who wouldn't be angry of the words that I said? He was desperate to be a father and to have a baby with me.

He was just twenty three years old, and having a baby meant having duties, obligations, responsibilities and so on.

I knew that he could do it. He's, unquestionably dependable, independent and responsible, proof and evidence was when he became my legal guardian.

He was taking good care of me when I was just twelve up until now that I was sixteen, still breathing the addictive masculine scent of his room, bed and bathroom. But what about me? If I become a mother? It would be horrible because I was not raised to be like him.

The pampered little girl of Law that I was. I could not even iron my own uniform, but I could somewhat cook. I would learn somehow.

Badly, I wasn't manumitted from this affection that we both had for each other. How could I prevent having a baby? Protection wasn't in his vocabulary.

"G-Gusto ko..." natagalan pa ako ng halos isang minuto sa pag-iisip ng maisasagot sa kanya.

Nakaramdam na naman ako ng kakaibang init sa kaibuturan at buong katawan ko, lalo na sa tuwing nasasagi ng ilong niya ang pagkababae ko, my legs were parted and his nose was pointed, paanong hindi niya masasagi, 'di ba?

Nakaangat ang mga paningin ko sa kisame ng kanyang kwarto habang abala niyang hinahalikan, sinisipsip at kinakagat ang pwet ko. May minsan pa'ng naramdaman ko ang kanyang mainit at mamasa-masang dila sa âñus ko.

Pinikit ko ang mga mata ko, humihigpit ang pagkakakapit sa mga unan habang bahagyang nakaawang ang mga labi kung saan lumalabas at naririnig ko ang nang-aakit kong ungol nang naramdaman kong pilit na inaabot ng kanyang mapangahas, mabangis at malupit na dila ang naka-usling sensitibong parte ng pagkababae ko.

"Who's the father of the baby inside your womb, Kryptonite?" matigas niyang tanong, at namalayan ko na lang na sobrang lapit pala ng mukha niya sa gilid ng mukha ko. Kasabay ng sinabi niya ay ang malakas na pagpalo niya sa malulusog kong pwet.

Alam kong hindi pa siya tapos sa pwet ko pero ngayon ay nakadagan siya sa likod ko.

"L-Law Cavanaugh," I answered, stuttered and couldn't even focus my eyes. "U-Ugh, oh..."

I panted, catching my breath when he came back down to my butt and started nibbling, sucking, licking and kissing it again.

Pleasure after pleasure, desire between desire, and lust against lust.

Feeling that familiar heat on my groin and waves of sticky juices dropping and washed throughout my feminine part. Making me syrupy wet and burning hot.

Why, he wasn't doing anything to give me an orgasm. He was just intending to play and spank my butt, nothing else.

Pero

alam kong sinasadya niyang masagi ang kanyang dila sa pagkababae ko.

"You're wet, little girl," aniya patuloy na dinidilaan ang pwet ko at tinutukso pa ng kanyang dila ang pagkababae ko sa paraan ng pagsagi niya roon. "And I'm hard."

Mariin kong pinikit ang mga mata. "Y-Yes, please..."

I just realized that I was not crying now. There were sobs but it wasn't that loud anymore.

Kumunot ang noo ko nang tumigil si Law at hinila ang kanyang makapal na kumot para takpan ang ibabang kalahati ng katawan ko.

"You need rest," I couldn't trace the anger in his intimidating and baritone voice anymore. "What do you want for dinner?"

"I want you for dinner," I promptly answered.

Pabagsak siyang humiga sa tabi ko habang ako ay nanatiling nakadapa. I moved my head to face him at my side, and felt his one hand resting at the small of my back.

"Kryptonite, I'm serious," naninigas ang kanyang mga matang nakatitig sa'kin nang dahil sa sagot ko kanina. "Do you want fresh lettuce and—"

"No, I don't want that," pagputol ko sa kanyang sinasabi. "I want those foods that you eat."

"What? You mean chicken? Pork? Beef?" naguguluhan niyang tanong. "You don't want those foods before."

"But I want it now," giit ko.

I wasn't expecting him to be like this. Acting and asking me normal questions like there's nothing happened to us, the spank and teases.

"Do you feel nausea, little girl?" the expression on his face went hardened. "Do you feel sick, light-headed and always sleepy?"

An idea popped out into my mind why he was asking those questions, still, I was confused.

I rested my head on the pillow before answering. "I don't have a fever, Law, and no. I didn't feel any of it."

Pinakatitigan niya ako ng maigi bago marahang tumango at hinalikan ako sa noo saka bumangon at nagtungo sa kanyang banyo.

It's been two weeks and five days, I guess, since the last time that we made love, and it was exactly in the Engine Room of the ferry.

Although, if he's hard, why was he stopping himself to do it? The cold and cough that I had from the rain in Compostela Valley before were completely gone and I was absolutely healed by the help of the cold vaporizing rub-menthol ointment and essential oil.

Nakatulog ako sa paghihintay sa kanya na lumabas ng banyo. Hindi ko na nagawang maghintay dahil baka ay may ginagawa pa siyang importante sa loob ng banyo kaya siya natagalan.

My eyes fluttered open, pushing my body up in a sitting position on Law's bed while rubbing the sleep off my eyes.

Checking the time on the wall clock of his room, I found out that I sleep in approximately five hours. I slept earlier at almost three in the afternoon.

It's night and my stomach was calling and demanding for some dinner to eat.

Hinanap ko si Law pero nakakapagtaka lang dahil hindi ko siya nahanap at ang tanging nahanap ko lang ay ang isang note na nakalapag sa dining table.

I'll be back before ten, your dinner is in the fridge, just heat it up in the oven. Eat your dinner, little girl.

He left me?

Saan naman kaya siya pumunta? Bakit ang tagal niya namang umuwi?

Natigilan ako sa kung anong mga pumapasok sa isip ko nang narinig ko ang pamilyar na notification sound ng phone ni Law, nagmula sa living room.

I went to the living room, found Law's phone on the center table. I guess, he forgot to bring this.

The notification got me curious, so I checked it and saw three messages.

From an unknown number.

Without any further ado, I read the message.

Where are you? I'm here, at your Uncle Thomas' restaurant.

Please, reply. It's me, Erich.

Thank you for giving me a chance, Law.

Nabitiwan ko ang hawak kong phone nang dahil sa nabasa ko at agad na umakyat sa loob ng kwarto ko para magbihis. Alam kong kakaalis lang ni Law kasi ngayon pa lang naman umabot 'yong message at isa lang ang ibig sabihin no'n.

'Di pa nakarating si Law sa restaurant. I know the address of Uncle Thomas' restaurant. Ilang beses na kaming kumain do'n.

Ginamit ko ang natirang allowance ko para pambayad sa taxi driver nang nasa harap ko na mismo ang main branch ng restaurant ni Uncle Thomas.

Wearing my deep bronze green coloured raglan sleeves kangaroo pocket hoodie, dark fitted jeans and a pair of Dolce and Gabbana white sorrento slip-on sneakers, I entered the restaurant without acknowledging the receptionist.

Bumibigat at sumisikip na naman ang dibdib ko nang nakita ang pamilyar na maskuladong likod ni Law at ang kaharap niyang bihis na bihis na si Erich, sa isang magandang spot dito sa restaurant.

Hindi alintana ang maraming taong abala sa pagkukwentuhan at pagkain dito ay naglakad ako palapit sa kanila.

Erich haven't noticed me walking toward them since she's too focused, gawking at Law's chiselled face.

Nang nasa malapit na ako ay huminto ako sa paghakbang nang narinig ang malandi at nagmamagaling na boses ni Erich.

"But what about Kryptonite? Law, what if she'll get mad at me because you're dating me?"

I waited and didn't continue to approach their table, I wanted to know what would Law's answer. Hopefully, it would be nice to hear, but I took a step backward.

Wala sa sarili akong tumitig sa maskuladong likod ni Law nang narinig ko ang kanyang seryoso at napakatigas na boses na sumagot sa tanong ni Erich.

Uminit ang sulok ng mga mata ko kasabay ng mas lalong pagbigat at sikip ng dibdib ko, sumasakit ito na parang may kung anong bagay ang pumipiga sa puso ko, nangingilid ang mga luha nang bumagsak ang mga balikat ko, at nagmamadaling lumabas

ng restaurant.

"Don't worry about her, she's just my sister."

Chapter 38

Cousins

Narinig ko ang pagbukas ng pinto ng kwarto ko, alas diyes ng umaga at hindi pa ako kumakain ng breakfast, hindi rin ako kumain ng dinner kagabi at lalong hindi ako natulog kakahintay sa kanya.

Even if I wasn't facing the door, laying on my side at the bed, blankly staring at the closed window of my room, I knew that it was him. I could feel his intimidating presence redeemed the moribund atmosphere of my room.

I heard his heavy footsteps entering the room, the overloud silence followed when the noise of the footsteps came into an end, it was just meters away from my bed. Feeling and hearing him was better than seeing him. It would only hurt me.

He was silent, and I didn't expected him to talk anyway.

Hindi ako gumalaw sa kinahihigaan ko, nanatili akong nakatalikod mula sa direksyon ni Law.

Hardly, I couldn't let go from gripping the duvet that was currently covering my body, protecting myself from him. I clutched the thick comforter tightly against my chest.

"Hindi ka umuwi kagabi," walang ganang sabi ko. It was a statement, I wouldn't ask him a question if it was clearly obvious. Hindi ko pa rin siya hinarap. "Saan ka natulog?"

I knew the possible answer to my question. It was just so funny the way how I could hear my own voice, I sounded like an exhausted wife, tired and enervated from all the cheating of my husband.

Somehow, the thought of him, comfortably laying on the fine hotel bed in the most expensive hotel suite, naked with Erich cuddling and hugging his body. I couldn't think anymore, it felt like my mind was haunted with unforgiving figments that resulted from sleepless overthinking.

Ang hirap pala talaga kapag na-attach na ako masyado sa isang tao. I wouldn't be shock if I found my gravestone, engraved with the letters for the cause of death; overthinking, overfatigued, overall dead. Was it even possible to die like that?

Over my dead body, I would never let myself die without giving that slapsoil of a bitch another spit at her face.

Mariin kong pinikit ang aking mga mata nang kahit isang word o syllable ay 'di ko man lang narinig sa kanya.

Tahimik lang siya. Parang natatakot siyang magsalita dahil pakiramdam niya ay

pinapagalitan at sinesermonan siya ng nanay niya.

"Lumabas ka na kung 'di mo naman ako sasagutin," kalmado at mahinahon ang boses ko. I didn't wanna shout because I couldn't lose and waste my voice for this, I was tired of making fights against him.

Dalawang tao lang dapat ang kailangan kong sigawan.

Erich and daddy.

"Hindi ako natulog," hindi ko inasahan ang pagsagot ng kanyang magaspang sa pandinig na boses. "Hindi mo kinain ang dinner mo. Get up, little girl. Kain na tayo."

"Inaantok ako, ikaw na lang," said my hoarse voice. I was crying almost twenty-four hours, of course, no wonder why my voice turned out like this.

'Yong totoo ay ngugutom na ako, inaantok din dahil humahapdi at pagod na ang mga mata ko sa kaiiyak.

"Little girl—"

"Saan ka ba nanggaling? 'Di mo man lang sinabi," hindi ko na pinatapos ang walang saysay niyang sasabihin sapagkat alam ko naman na pipilitin niya lang akong kumain. "I'm sure. Tapos ka nang kumain ng breakfast sa kung saan ka man nag-stay."

"Yes, I just ate my breakfast, but I wanna eat another breakfast with you," he answered honestly.

"With me? Whom are you with, the first breakfast you ate?" suspicion was in my voice. Suspecting him to a crime that I had witnessed last night. "Anyway, you left your phone last night and I've read three messages from an unknown number."

He just lied. He told me that he would never talk nor meet Erich. But what was that, last night? I hoped that all of it was just a nonentity, but unfortunately, it was not.

After all of it, I could not conceit trusting him anymore.

Nag-uusap nga kami pero nanatili naman akong nakatalikod. Hindi ko pa rin kasi talaga nakakalimutan ang mga salitang huli kong narinig, mismo ay nagmula sa kanya.

"I'm with Erich," nararamdaman at naririnig ko sa kanyang boses ang pinipigilan niyang emosyon. "We stayed in a hotel, but trust me, little girl, nothing happened. I can't sleep there, I didn't sleep."

In a serious relationship like this between man and woman, cheating is a chimera.

But, he was a man and I wasn't a woman, I was just an immature girl, always had a tantrum whenever I wanted. An outburst of uncontrollable emotions, such as anger that I couldn't avoid and escape.

I should free it out, in order to have the relief and peace of mind.

Wala akong ibang naisip na salita. Hindi ko alam kung ano ang sasabihin ko.

Gusto kong malaman kung ano ang dahilan at kung bakit hindi siya nakatulog doon, kung bakit hindi siya natulog.

Bakit hindi na lang siya umuwi? Tatal ay 'yon naman ang sinabi niya. Uuwi siya bago mag-alas diyes ng gabi tapos ngayon, nakauwi siya ay alas diyes ng umaga, malapit na nga'ng mag-alas onse ng tanghali.

"Mas makinis at malaman ba ang pwet niya kesa sa'kin, Law?" wala sa sariling tanong ko.

He loved my butt, and what if he was tired and got enough of it? He wanted someone else's butt, he wanted something new.

Doesn't he wanted to slap his rough hand on my generous posterior?

"Nakita ko ang pwet niya pero hindi ko hinawakan," his voice hardened. Minsan ay nakakadagdag sa sakit na nararamdaman ko ngayon ang pagtapat niya. "Mas gusto ko ang pwet mo, little girl. 'Yong ako lang ang nakakahawak at wala nang iba."

"Siguro hinubaran mo kaya mo nakita 'yon," mariin akong pumikit nang dahil sa mga pumapasok sa isip ko at mas lalong humigpit ang pagkakahawak ko sa comforter na nakatakip sa katawan ko.

"Siya ang naghubad ng sarili niyang damit," depensa niya. "Ikaw lang ang gusto kong hubaran."

Listening to his explanations was tiring. I just couldn't hear it straight and think about it carefully. Flummoxed by the sudden changes of my life since the day that he came back to his usual activity just months ago, exactly, the spank, I didn't wanna add another confusing problem to think.

I could describe Law as a text, written in Baybayin, which was the Tagalog language's old writing system, and that, it was just so hard to understand if I didn't know how to read it in that way, I couldn't read him, I couldn't have the clear interpretation of the text that was him.

"Lumabas ka na, iwan mo na ako," I said with no second thought.

It was what I wanted.

"Hindi ako aalis."

"Just leave, Law," ni hindi ako gumalaw sa puwesto ko na kahit 'yong paghinga ko ay limitado.

"Hindi nga sabi ako aalis," sobrang tigas ng kanyang boses na ngayon ko lang ulit narinig.

Gusto kong matakot ngunit nangingibabaw pa rin sa akin ang galit.

In an abrupt manner, I pulled myself up from laying on the bed and snapped my head to give him a frustrated look.

"Will you fucking give me a little privacy? This is my room, and you're just my brother!" my anger proliferated inside me until it reach the highest point and overtook the full control of my emotions as I raised my voice at him, but my expression changed the moment I found the extreme pain in his eyes. It was silently begging and pleading for me with those unspoken words that I wanted to hear so bad, yet he didn't speak a word. "Ano? Ba't 'di ka magsalita? Masakit ba para sa'yo ang sinabi kong magkapatid lang tayo?"

"You're not my sister," he corrected.

Sobrang titig na titig ang mga nagmamakaawa niyang mga mata sa'kin, bakas din sa kanyang mga mata na totoong hindi siya natulog.

Pareho kaming walang tulog.

"Oh?" once again, I used the sarcastic tone of my voice and just ignore his darkly intimidating yet pleading eyes. "I think that I heard it right last night? You told Erich that I'm just your sister. Should I tell someone that you're just my brother? That someone is planning on courting me."

Rule Fortaleza. Somehow, he could be the boy that suits me where I could fit in his world and didn't have to force myself to be with the man I was with at the moment.

The man that couldn't even keep his words.

"'Di mo magugustuhan ang gagawin ko 'pag ginawa mo 'yan," his gaze darkened. Alam ko na sa mga oras na 'to na nandidilim na ang paningin niya at gusto niyang manakit.

Now he could feel what I felt last night. I didn't mean to make him feel like that. It was just up to the person if he would let those words affect him.

"'Di ko rin naman nagugustuhan ang mga ginagawa mo ah?" I sat sarcastically plastered a smile of defiance on the corners of my lips. "Kuya?" I added and dropped the smile.

The rigid cords in his arms and neck were showing when he balled his large and rough hand into a strong fist.

He didn't let his temper control his mind.

Without saying what was on his mind. He left my room.

Bumagsak ang likod ko sa kama at tinakpan ang mukha ko gamit ang malambot na unan, naaamoy ko pa rin ang panlalaking amoy ni Law.

Great-hearted? Should I thank myself that I didn't released at least one drop of tear during our talk? As I replay on my mind what had just happened earlier. I could tell that I wasn't the timorous and shy little girl like I sometimes used to before whenever Law and I had a fight.

Ended up crying in the sculpted arms of the mountainous beast, seeking for comfort, that was certainly me.

He was like a hoodlum, the wrongdoer, a criminal with a crime for keeping me hostage and eventually killing me. Killing my mind.

Gusto kong matulog pero natatakot ako na baka sa paggising ko ay wala na naman si Law. Nakakalito, gusto kong umalis siya pero hindi 'yong umalis na pupunta siya sa malayo at makikipagkita na naman kay Erich.

They're doing the old culture of lovers before if another person was having a strong contrariety against the lovers that wanted to talk, meet and date. It would be ineluctable for them, and they would just do the rendezvous thingy, indeed.

Hours sprinted like seconds, since all I did inside my room was to sleep, and Law would just bring me lots of food to eat. I didn't wanna torture my stomach and tongue. So, I had eaten all the foods that he brought.

Yes, my tongue was craving for oily thing. Any food that was fried.

Oo nga't naghahatid siya ng mga pagkain ko rito sa kwarto pero aalis din naman siya agad nang hindi nagsasalita. Babalik din siya matapos ang kalahating oras para tahimik na kunin ang pinagkainan ko.

Nakakatawa, parang nagpapakain siya ng tigre rito dahil halos kada dalawang oras siyang papasok at magdadala ng mga pagkaing madalas niyang kinakain, na bigla ko na ring ginustong kainin. Hindi ko alam kung bakit biglaang nag-iba ang panlasa ko.

"Tumawag ako kay dad kagabi para sabihing hindi na lang tayo pupunta bukas para sa birthday ni Lazarus," ang unang narinig ko mula sa matigas at magaspang na boses ni Law nang pumasok siya sa loob ng kwarto ko at dala na ang lunch ko.

I snorted and rolled my eyes at him. "Kailangan pa ba talaga ng permiso niya?"

From the look and smell of his body, even though he wasn't that close to my bed where I was currently sitting, my nose could inhale the scent of his shower gel. I knew that he just got his shower and wore another boxers. His six packs were on display, seemed like he was so comfortable wearing that at this hour of the day.

Mainit sa labas tapos dumagdag pa ang katawan niya. Pakiramdam ko ay nasa impyerno ako kahit na air-conditioned naman ang buong kwarto ko.

"Hindi siya pumayag," he said, placing the tray of lunch on the nearby table. "Pupunta tayo."

"Dito na lang ako," my gaze went down on the hem of my plain white tank top. "Ikaw lang naman ang gusto niyang pumunta at isa pa, may pasok ako. I know that he invited the Costales. I'm sure, Erich will be there."

Probably, Ate Francesca would come, but I wasn't sure about that. She didn't want to ruin the event, did she?

Kaninang umaga nang pumunta si Law dito para sa breakfast ko ay gano'n pa rin siya, hindi nagsalita. Ngayon tanghalian lang.

"I already gave an excuse letter to your adviser," he brought up, his voice was calm. "You'll be excuse for three days."

Speaking of school, I was two days suspended and I would be back tomorrow. To miss the luck of going back to school, I guess, my suspension days were extended because of that excuse.

"Halatang gustong-gusto mo na talagang makita si Erich sa mansyon," I casually said with envy for his selfish exploits. "'Di ka man lang ba gumawa ng paraan para pilitin o kinumbinsi si daddy na hindi na lang muna tayo pupunta? Pa'no ang pag-aaral mo?"

Selfish. He was just thinking about himself, that, what would happen to him if daddy would bring me back to the mansion? That was why he's doing his best to keep me and date Erich. Does the idea of my feelings ever cross his mind? That I would get hurt if he obeyed daddy? I guess not.

He was dating Erich like there's no tomorrow.

"Sana nga ay gano'n na lang kadali ang kumbinsihin si dad, Kry," 'di nakalagpas sa paningin ko ang pagtiim bagang niya nang umangat ako ng tingin sa kanya. "Tatlong

gabi ang iginugol ko para tawagan siya at kausapin ang tungkol do'n pero hindi."

Pakiramdam ko ay parang sasabog na ako sa galit, selos at inis.

"Isipin mo nga, Law? Mag-aabogado ka ngayon? Kunwari, abogado ka na talaga at si daddy 'yong judge, ako naman ang kliyente mo'ng nakapatay ng malanding higad," hindi na talaga ako nakatiis, hindi ko na napigilan ang sarili na pagsalitaan siya. "Pa'no mo ako maipaglaban sa korte kung ganyan ka? Matatalo tayo sa kaso at makukulong ako dahil 'di mo nakumbinsi 'yong judge, 'di mo napatunayan na inosente ako."

"Sa tingin mo ba ay 'di ko naisip 'yon, Kryptonite?" galit ang baritonong boses nito, nakatitig sa mga mata ko at ni hindi siya tumingin sa ibang bagay dito sa loob ng kwarto ko. "Leave it all to me, little girl. Don't think too much."

"Don't think too much?" I couldn't even imitate the tone of his voice when I echoed the last words that he said. "Pareho na tayong nasasaktan tapos 'yan lang ang sasabihin mo'ng gawin ko? Ikaw? Kailan ka ba hihinto sa mga ginagawa mo?"

Imbes na sagutin ang tanong ko ay kinuha niya 'yong tray na may lunch ko at lumapit sa kama ko, marahan niyang inilapag 'yong tray sa kama, sa tabi ko lang.

"Eat your breakfast," mahinahong utos nito ngunit bakas pa rin sa mukha ang galit.

I tore my gaze away from my lunch and tilted my head, bringing my gaze up to him. "Let's break up," I said, humourless and dignified. "I'm just your sister. Why are you having a relationship with your own sister? Gross. I should hate your dick for that."

Apparently, he ignored my indecency. He sat on my bed and took the spoon from the tray. Carefully, he took a slice of beefsteak plus a spoonful of rice and brought it up to my tight closed lip.

"Open your mouth, little girl," he ordered, stern and strict.

Hinawakan ko ang kanyang palapulsuhan at inilayo ang kutsara kasabay ng pag-iwas ko sa aking mukha roon.

"Law, gusto kong makipaghiwalay sa'yo," giit ko. Pilit na makuha ang kanyang atensyon at pakinggan ako. "Maghiwalay na tayo."

"Hindi ako makikipaghiwalay sa'yo," ang tanging sinabi niya at ibinaba ang kutsara sa plato.

"Then don't date Erich," kondisyon ko sa kanya.

"You know, it's the only way for me to keep you," he stated. "Kaya kong magtiis."

"Hindi mo ba ako tatanungin kung kaya ko ba'ng magtiis? Sinasaktan mo ako, alam mo ba 'yon?" I frowned and pressed my lips together before opening it again to speak, giving him an icy stare. "Fine, sasama ako sa'yo. We'll go to the mansion for Kuya Lazi's birthday, asahan mo'ng 'di na ako makakasama sa'yo pabalik dito."

Nasaksihan ko ang pag-igting ng kalamnan niya sa kanyang maskuladong braso, nag-aapoy ang mga matang mariing tumitig sa akin.

Suminghap ako nang gamit ang isang kamay niya ay marahas niya akong hinawakan sa panga. Sakop ng isang magaspang at malaking kamay niya ang magkabilang panga ko, abot pa ng kamay niya ang magkabilang pisngi ko. He squeezed it that made my mouth

automatically open. Kinuha niya 'yong kutsara na may lamang pagkain at itinapat sa nakaawang kong mga labi.

Mukhang napuno na talaga siya pero hindi ko pa rin sinubo 'yon. Pareho kaming galit at mas pinapaangat ko pa ang pride ko.

"Kain," binabalot ng galit at pagkaubos ng pasensya ang kanyang matigas na boses.

Concentrating my gaze on his darkening eyes, my face twisted and my eyes narrowed as I couldn't stop the heavy feeling in my chest, the hard lump stuck in my throat, and the heat at the corner of my watery eyes.

Letting go of the hot tears, I sobbed with mouth agape because of his grip at both sides of my jaw up to my blushed cheeks.

Natigilan siya kasabay ng paglambot ng kanyang ekspresyon sa mukha ay binalik niya ang hawak niyang kutsara sa plato at ang dahan-dahang pagluwag ng pagkakahawak niya sa magkabilang panga ko.

Walang pagdadalawang-isip na mas lumapit siya sa akin at hinalikan ang parte ng panga at pisngi ko kung saan ay nasaktan niya kanina, marahang hinihimas at hinahaplos ang bahaging nagmamarka ng pamumula, resulta ng ginawa niya.

"I'm sorry, I'm so sorry, little girl," hindi ko na nakilala ang boses ni Law nang dahil sa sobrang pagiging desperado nito at ang patuloy na paghalik at paghimas niya sa parte ng panga at pisngi ko na parang pinapawi niya 'yong sakit na naidulot ng ginawa niya sa akin. "I was just mad. Hindi ko sinasadya. I'm sorry, don't be scared of me. Please, I'm sorry. Hinding-hindi ko na uulitin 'yon, hiding-hindi na."

"S-Sinasaktan mo na talaga ako, Law," I pushed his broad chest hard enough to stop him from what he was doing on my cheeks and jaw. Patuloy na tumutulo ang mga luha ko habang nakatitig sa kanyang mga matang puno ng takot at pag-aalala. "H-Hindi mo pa nagawa sa'kin 'yon noon. Ngayon lang na nagkakamabutihan na kayo ni Erich..."

"No... It's not like that, little girl," kahit hindi niya sabihing nagmamakaawa siya ay naririnig ko pa rin ang pakiusap ng kanyang marahan na boses.

"U-Umalis ka na..."

"Kryptonite, little girl, please..."

Dahilan ng matinding galit ay kinuha ko 'yong tray ng lunch at tinapon sa sahig bago marahas na bumaling sa kanya. "Umalis ka na sabi!"

I wanted him to leave my room before I could say the words that I would possibly regret after.

On the contrary, I wanted him to stay, explain, comfort me, make me believe and trust him again. But, could I endure the pain if I would let him fool me again? Maybe I could, and maybe I could not. Who knew? I couldn't even find my strength right now.

Despondently, he went out of the room for a minute and then came back, clutching a broom and dustpan. Without words, he cleaned the mess that I did. The lunch that he cooked or fried for me, I wasted it and didn't even tasted a bit of it.

Before he could step on the doorway after he cleared the eyesore on the floor, he faced me.

The expression on his face was never been this hard before. It was so intimidating to see it before my eyes. "Bukas na bukas, sa mansyon. Tatapusin ko na kung ano ma'n itong namamagitan sa ating dalawa."

For another minute after, he left.

Why us? Bakit hindi na lang ang kung ano ma'ng namamagitan sa kanila ni Erich? I had expected him to say it, to say that he would stop the meeting and dating with Erich.

'Yon naman ang gusto ko kanina, 'di ba? Ang tapusin namin kung anong meron kami.

Pero bakit sobrang sakit na marinig mula sa kanya ang mga katagang 'yon?

Pagod na ako sa pag-iisip kaya mas minabuti ko munang 'wag mag-isip at natulog na lang.

More or less than three hours in our ride of silence in his car, we finally reached our destination as he stop the car, pulled over.

Hindi ko na siya hinintay na lumabas ng kotse at agad na akong lumabas, umakyat ako ng iilang hakbang sa hagdan ng cream coloured theme na mansyon at pumasok, nilagpasan ko pa ang mayordoma na si Manang Letecia na nakatayo sa may pinto at ang mga katulong na nakahilera para batiin kami.

Dala ko ang mga gamit ko nang nagmadali akong umakyat sa kaliwang hagdan, dalawa kasi ang hagdan dito, unlike sa hacienda na isa lang.

Nang nakita ko na ang pinto ng naging kwarto ko noon dito ay agad ko 'yong binuksan.

Pero nagulat na lang ako nang makita ang isang pamilyar na babae sa loob ng kwarto ko, sinusuklayan ang kanyang mahaba at umaalon na buhok sa harap ng salamin.

Kumulo ang dugo ko dahil ang babaeng 'yon ay siyang dahilan kung bakit nagkagulo kaming dalawa ni Law.

"What the hell? Get out of my room!" I shouted, irritated at the sight.

"Your room?" she turned to me and paused from brushing her hair for a second before continuing it, and face the mirror once again, calm and doesn't even look like she cared. "Tito Zach let me stay here. I'm using this room since yesterday."

Papangalawa na sana siya sa ginawa ko kay Ashley dahil talagang umiinit at kumukulo ang dugo ko sa kanya pero hindi ko nagawa ang binabalak ko nang may isang katulong ang kanina pa pala nakahabol sa akin.

"Ma'am Kry, inilipat po ang mga gamit mo sa kabila, doon sa kanang hagdan," magalang at matiyagang paliwanag nito sa akin. "Guestroom na po 'yong karamihan sa mga kwarto rito."

"Guestroom? She doesn't even suit to be called as a guest. What a garbage is doing here?" I gave Erich my half smirk. "And oh, please, don't enjoy your stay here, pathetic bitch."

I left without hearing a word from her. Pero nakita ko sa repleksyon niya sa salamin ang inis at pagkawala ng pagiging kalmado ng postura niya.

The maid followed suit. She would guide me where my room was located, I could describe the mansion as monolithically large with those cream coloured walls and all that speaks elegance.

Perhaps I could go outside and paint or draw the caricature of the mansion. Unfortunately, I didn't know how to paint, although, the abstract painting were much easier to do. I wasn't an artist but how I loved and appreciated the intrinsic significance of an art.

I descended the stairs as the maid catch her breath behind me, hastily following me.

Nang nakababa kami ay nakita ko pa'ng kausap ni Law si Manang Letecia, nakita kong napatingin sa akin si Law pero 'di ko siya pinansin at naglakad na lamang patungo sa kanang hagdan.

"'Yong pang-apat na pinto po sa kanan, 'yong katabi ng kwarto ni Sir Law po," tinuro sa akin ng katulong ang isang pinto, lahat naman ng pinto rito ay pareho lang ng kulay.

Kung minamalas nga naman. Katabi ko 'yong kwarto ni Law na alam ko namang hindi niya magagamit ngayon dahil baka nga ay doon siya sa guestroom ni Erich matutulog.

"Thanks."

"Do you need any snacks or refreshments, ma'am?" bakas sa boses ng katulong na parang kinakabahan siya. "Ihahatid ko na lang po rito."

"I want coffee," biglang sagot ko, ni hindi ako nag-isip.

Kumunot ang noo ng babaeng katulong, mukhang nabaguhan o naguguluhan. "Kape po? Hapon na po, bakit po kayo magkakape? Pwede naman po'ng tea na lang. 'Di ba po ay ayaw niyo sa kape noon?"

"No. I want it now. Gusto ko 'yong kape na iniinom ni Law noon," I was about to turn the knob of my room but stopped when I remembered something. "Tell the chef to serve me Mozzarella Stuffed Chicken Parm for dinner."

"Chicken?"

"Yes," I confirmed.

"O-Okay po," nagtataka na talaga ang katulong sa mga hinihingi ko ngayon dahil noon naman ay vegetables dishes ang hinihingi ko. "Ihahatid ko na lang po rito 'yong kape," saka siya umalis.

Yes. Maasikaso ang mga nagtatrabaho rito pero alam kong pagkatapos nito at nasa mga quarters na 'yan sila? They would talk and gossip about my attitude.

I could make their life a living hell or make their work harder than the usual. If I wanted them to make me a caviar buffet? They would surely do it for the sake of their job.

No. I didn't make those things. I just simply ignore them.

Pumasok na ako sa loob ng kwarto ko at bumungad sa akin ang maayos na pagkakalagay ng lahat ng mga gamit. Napagpasyahan kong maligo pagkatapos ng ilang minutong pahinga at nagsuot ng pyjamas.

Nang bumalik 'yong maid ay nagulat na naman siya sa suot ko.

"Matutulog na po ba kayo?"

"Oo," walang ganang tugon ko. "Nandito na ba sila Kuya Laki?"

"Papunta pa po sila," sagot nito.

I raised one brow. "That means, the Costales came here first?"

"Opo."

"Aba, ang kapal ng mukha talaga," I murmured. Sinigurado kong marinig 'yon ng katulong.

Lumipas ang oras at hapunan na. Pumunta kami rito ng maaga ni Law dahil bukas na kasi ang celebration para sa birthday ni Kuya Lazi. Napagtanungan ko na rin ang isang katulong kung lahat ba ng mga Costales ay nandito, ang sabi ay si Ate Francesca lang 'yong wala.

The dinner was ready. A maid knock against my door to tell me the message about the formal dinner between the Costales and the Cavanaugh. Law's cousins haven't arrived yet. They would be here maybe ten in the evening.

Formal dinner, but I chose to wear a pair of pyjamas and tied my hair in a messy updo. So much for the formal dinner, I thought.

Pumasok ako sa loob ng dining room at lahat ng mga matang nandito ay agad na lumipat sa akin. Wala nga pala akong suot na kahit anong tsinelas, nakapaa lang at naglakad patungo sa isang bakanteng upuan sa tabi ni mommy.

Mommy and daddy's presence right now we're unexpected and grandpa was not here. There's Aunt Lauren with Uncle Augustus, Aunt Hannah and Uncle Thomas, and then Aunt Zara. There were familiar and unfamiliar faces from the Costales at the left side of the grand dining table and some that had maybe the same age as Law.

There's Erich, sitting pretty beside Law like she counted herself as a Cavanaugh at that side of the table.

"Kryptonite, baby, why didn't you change your clothes?" mommy asked, her soft and sweet voice have just chilled the burning lava of blood in me.

"I would like to eat my dinner in my room but then I remember that it would be rude," I formally answered, surveying my eyes to the guest, I forced out a warm smile to welcome them. "I didn't mind to change my clothes, mommy. It's just a dinner, unless if we celebrate Kuya Lazi's birthday tonight even if it will be tomorrow."

I wonder where was the birthday guy? I couldn't find Kuya Lazi here.

Baka bukas pa ang dating niya? He's very busy. Bakit kaya sobra siya kung magtrabaho? Marahil ay utos ni daddy 'yon.

Mas maraming katulong ang nakatayo sa sulok ng dining room ngayon, may dalang iba't ibang mainom.

"Sweetheart, do you like your new room?" asked daddy, he was sitting alone on the seat placed at the edge of the table where he looked like a king.

"Yes, daddy," I shrugged my shoulders. "I missed the mansion so much. I think that, maybe, I can stay here a little longer."

Really. I meant to say it for Law to know that I wouldn't be coming with him back home. He would leave this mansion without me.

"Why? Don't you like to live with your brother, anymore?" he shifted his gaze to Law that took almost six seats away from me. "Law, don't be so strict. Umaayaw na sa'yo ang kapatid mo."

"Napansin ko nga rin po, tito," Erich's filthy voice joined the conversation. "Every time that we'll be out for a date. He doesn't want me to wear those clothes that shows so much of my skin."

"Isang beses pa lang tayong lumabas, Erich," Law corrected her.

I heard mommy cleared her throat. "Enough with this, shall we eat?"

Daddy nodded and all of us started to eat. Parang ako lang yata 'yong hinintay nila kanina.

"Baby, you should have wear your slippers, malamig ang sahig," marahang bulong ni mommy sa tabi ko habang nagsisimula na ang mga matatanda na mag-usap tungkol sa kanilang mga business. "I heard from Manang Letecia that you requested a coffee and a dish of chicken? I thought you only eat vegetables? Law told me that you only drink milk."

"It's not a big deal, mommy," sumulyap ako sa napaka-gandang mukha ng babaeng nagdala sa akin dito.

I wanna ask her so bad about who my biological parents were. Pero ayokong magulat siya, hindi niya pa alam na may alam na ako tungkol do'n.

Sullenly eating my requested dinner, I felt out of place. They're all talking about business, college what about, nevermind that, think of those, endless hows and whatever shits they were discussing about like a formal and professional conversationalist. I wouldn't dare to interrupt and informally kibitz about their conversation like they were playing a card game and I just worded my unwanted comments.

Well, I just needed to wait until one person asked me.

"Where do you wanna study for college after high school, sweetheart?" it was daddy's serious and dark voice.

Nakita ko pa ang saglit niyang pagsulyap kay mommy na hindi man lang siya tinatapanan ng kahit isang tingin.

"I don't know, daddy, but I want it out of the country," ang tanging sagot ko. "I wanna live alone in a condo of my own. I wanna be independent."

"Are you sure, baby?" mommy interfered. "Law needs to look after you, you're still young."

"Law is busy, mommy. Ayokong makaistorbo at sumingit sa mga importanteng bagay na inaasikaso niya," paliwanag ko na siyang totoo naman. "Pa'no kung magpapakasal na siya, 'di ba? He's twenty three. Baka mainis lang 'yong magiging asawa niya sa'kin dahil lagi ko na lang inaagaw ang oras na dapat ay para sa pamilya niya."

Ramdam ko ang mainit at nakakatakot na paraan ng pagtitig ni Law sa akin, hindi ko siya nilingon. Mahirap na baka ay may makita akong hampas lupa.

"Don't worry, Kry. Hindi naman ako maiinis sa'yo," that familiar sweet tone of voice said. "I understand that you can't live without anyone guiding you."

With the most sarcastic smile that I could express, I tore my gaze away from mommy and look at Erich from the right far side of the table.

"How nice, thank you. Sabi ko na nga ba ikaw ang pinakamabuting sister-in-law sa balat ng lupa," nakangiti kong sabi sa kanya at nakita ko pa sa gilid ng mga mata ko ang marahang pagtango ni daddy, sumasang-ayon sa sinabi ko. "You know, we can be friends and then I'll guide you down six feet under."

"That's just so thoughtful, thank you very much, I'll expect a prayer after," she returned a taunting smile at me.

"You don't need a prayer anymore," I grabbed my wine glass and a maid immediately came to my side to pour me a red wine. "How many times have you been in heaven?"

"Several times, I was an angel, you know," kibit balik at niyang sagot at uminom ng tubig.

"Good to hear that," I sipped the wine in my glass after the maid provided me with it, I held the serviette and wiped the corners of my lips before speaking. "Maybe that's why I've seen Michael, Gabriel, Raphael, Uriel, Zadkiel, Raguel, and Jegudiel thrusting themselves into you on social media? You're friends with the archangels?"

The men that I had mentioned were the famous de Dios cousins from the other university. The de Dios family was one of the wealthiest family in the Philippine high society, I have heard that they were known because of their Spaniards ancestors.

Nakita ko ang pamumula ng pisngi ni Erich dahil alam niyang iba ang ibig kong sabihin. Hindi man lang na-gets ng mga taong nandito, except for her cousins na alam ang mga kalokohan niya sa school.

"You little--"

"Enough, Erich," marahas at matigas na pagpigil ni Law sa binabalak na sabihin ni Erich.

Nakita ko ang pagtayo ni Erich at sabay sabing excuse saka lumabas. Lumipat ang paningin ko kay Law na nakatingin kay daddy kaya nilipat ko rin ang tingin ko kay daddy na mariing nakipaglaban ng nakakatakot na titig kay Law.

Seconds after, I heard Law said his excuse and chase after Erich.

Ang sarap magwala. Tinapos ko na lamang ang dinner ko at pagkatapos ay bumalik na sa loob ng kwarto ko.

Taking my shower for the third time in this day, I didn't wear anything after. I turned the lights of my room completely off and went to bed, naked. I just covered myself with the comforter to reduce the cold feeling on my skin.

Usually, if I have this heavy feeling on my chest. I couldn't sleep, and yes, I was. It's hard to sleep no matter how hard I tried to close my eyes and think of

nothing but those happy moments that happened to me just to forget Law.

I gripped the comforter while my eyes were closed when I heard the door of my room opened and a little light from the corridor outside illuminated the dark area near the open door.

Naramdaman ko na lang ang kaluskos at ingay ng damit na parang naghubad 'yong taong pumasok sa loob ng kwarto ko.

Nagkunwari akong tulog. Kasunod no'n ay ang paggalaw ng kama nang tumabi sa akin ang pamilyar na presensya nito, marahan niyang pinapasok ang kanyang sariling katawan sa ilalim ng comforter bago pinulupot ang kanyang maskuladong braso sa beywang ko.

Effortlessly, his hands got a hold of my flat stomach, caressing it softly, rubbing his palm against it in a very gentle way.

Naramdaman kong saglit siyang natigilan nang napagtantong wala akong suot. Ramdam kong wala rin naman siyang suot dahil nakatalikod ako mula sa kanya at ang kanyang pagkalalaki ay tumatama sa pwet ko.

Tahimik akong nagkunwaring tulog hanggang sa naramdaman ko ang mga pamilyar na mainit at mamasa-masang mga labi na hinahalikan ang likod ko.

"I followed her and told her that I won't date with her anymore," marahang paliwanag niya dahilan kung bakit marahan kong minulat ang aking mga mata kahit na nakatalikod ako mula sa kanya. "Wala na akong pakialam sa kung ano man ang gagawin ni dad."

We peacefully and comfortably sleep on my bed after he said the words that have given me another hope.

"Batas ko lang ang sinusunod ko, Kryptonite."

Nagising ako nang naramdaman ko ang marahang pagpisil ng mainit na kamay at pagdila ng mamasa-masang malambot na dila sa pwet ko.

Rubbing the sleep off my eyes, I cleared my vision and found Law pulling my comforter back up to cover my naked body. He was wearing his boxers now and moved himself from the side of my butt to sit on the bed beside me.

"How's your sleep, little girl?" pambungad ng umagang tanong niya pero hindi pa nga ako nakakasagot nang sinunggaban niya ako ng halik sa labi.

Sinuklian ko ang kanyang mainit at lumalalim na halik ngunit bago pa nga ang pagsisimula ng halikan namin nang biglang bumukas ang pinto ng kwarto ko at mabilis kong tinulak si Law palayo sa akin.

"Kryptonite! Law! Anong ibig sabihin nito?"

"Mom—"

"No, don't speak! Get out of your sister's room! Get out!" malakas na sabi ni mommy, sapat lang para kaming tatlo lang ang makakarinig. "And you, young lady, dress up! I will talk to your daddy about this—"

"No, mommy," kinakabahan akong umupo sa kama habang nakatakip sa buong katawan ko hanggang dibdib ang comforter ko. "Wala kaming ginagawang masama!"

"Kryptonite, baby, wala kang kasalanan, okay? Don't worry," pampakalma nito sa akin at hindi man lang naiintindihan ang ibig kong sabihin. Galit na bumaling siya kay Law na nakaupo pa rin sa tabi ko. "Law, go now."

I shook my head desperately. "No!"

"Law, I said, get out of your sister's room. Now," mariin at pag-uulit ni mommy, galit ang boses nito.

Nang nakita kong tumayo si Law at sinuot ang kanyang damit na hinubad niya kagabi ay mabilis din akong pumasok sa loob ng wardrobe ko habang nakatakip sa buong katawan ko ang comforter.

Nagbihis ako sa loob at nang matapos ay mabilis akong lumabas suot ang isang tank top at shorts.

Tumakbo ako nang nakitang naglalakad na palabas ng kwarto ko si Law at nang naabutan ko siya ay mahigpit ko siyang hinawakan sa kanyang matigas na braso.

"Hindi siya lalabas ng kwarto ko, mommy," I said to her with a grim expression on my face. "Dito lang siya."

"Ysa, anong nangyayari rito?"

Nanlumo ako at nanatiling tahimik so Law nang narinig ko ang pagpasok ni daddy sa loob ng kwarto ko. Buti ay pareho na kaming nakabihis ni Law.

"'Yang anak mo, Zacharias, ang tanungin mo," galit at pag-aalala ang narinig ko sa pinapakalmang boses ni mommy.

Daddy face us with that grim expression on his face and closed the door of my room. He may be afraid that someone might hear this kind of scandal.

"Mommy, walang mali sa ginagawa namin! Hindi naman kasi kami magkapatid!" nag-init ang mukha ko nang halos isigaw ko na sa kanila 'yon ng ubod ng lakas.

Nakita ko ang gulat sa kanilang mga mata nang dahil sa sinabi ko pero si daddy ay bumalik din sa pagiging seryoso. Hindi lang galit ang nakikita ko sa kanyang mukha, mas sobra pa sa galit.

Takot. Natatakot ako dahil pakiramdam ko ay ako lang ang gumagawa ng paraan para mairaos kami mula sa magulong sistema ng buhay namin.

Law was dangerously silent.

"Oo, hindi nga kayo magkapatid," mariing tugon ni daddy dahilan kung bakit nabunutan ako ng tinik.

Ngunit dahan-dahan kong binitiwang mahigpit na pagkakahawak sa maskuladong braso ni Law nang narinig ko ang idinugtong ni daddy sa kanyang sinabi.

"Because you're cousins. You're Augustus and Lauren's daughter. You're a Cavanaugh and a Fortaleza."

Pregnant

"Tangina mo! Sabihin mo ang totoo!" parang kulog ang marahas at magaspang na pagsigaw ni Law matapos ang ilang segundong katahimikan, mabilis siyang nakalapit at kinuwelyuhan si daddy.

Masyadong malapit ang kanilang mga mukha habang nagtatagis ang nagdidilim na paraan ng pagtingin nila sa isa't isa.

I was just at the right side behind Law and mommy was at the near side of daddy.

Natatakot ako at hindi ko rin alam kung anong gagawin ko kaya nanatili na lamang ako sa kinatatayuan ko. Sa palagay ko ay hindi pa tapos ang pagsisinungaling ni daddy.

"Yon ang totoo, Law," sobrang kalmado ng boses ni daddy na parang wala siyang pakialam sa kabastusang ginagawa ni Law ngayon. "Magpinsan kayo, kaya kung ayaw mo'ng mahiwalay siya sa'yo-"

"Goddammit! Dad!" nakita ko ang paghigpit ng pagkakahawak niya sa puting kuwelyo ni daddy dahilan kung bakit nagpakita ang mga ugat sa kanyang braso at leeg. "Pwede ba'ng kahit ngayong araw lang? 'Wag kang magsinungaling! Fuck!"

I was trembling in fear. The last time I heard Law shouted because of anger was the time that I accidentally answered the phone call of Ate Francesca.

There was so much difference today than that day. It wasn't just anger, it was a mixture of intense emotions. Anger, hatred, disgust, and more. Hostilities without peace talks could possibly kill a thousand of souls.

"Bakit? Kung sasabihin ko ba ang totoo ay tatapusin mo na 'yang mga kagaguhang ginagawa mo?" ni wala akong narinig o nakita sa ekspresyon sa mukha ni daddy ang galit. "Law, son, alam kong may gusto ka na sa kapatid mo."

Nang dahil sa narinig naming huling sinabi ni daddy ay nasaksihan ko ang unti-unting paglambot ng ekspresyon sa mukha ni Law.

Confusion was playing on the expression of his handsome face. He seemed confused to hear that he wanted me since then.

Dahan-dahan niyang binitiwang ang kuwelyo ni daddy bago umatras. "She's not my sister."

"This is child abuse, son," umiiling na wika ni daddy habang prenteng inaayos ang kanyang kuwelyo. "Mas matanda ka, alam mo kung ano ang tama o mali. You're a law student, why don't you use what you have learned?"

"Ako ba, ginagago mo, dad? Mas malaking iskandalo para sa pamilya natin 'pag nagkataong hinayaan mo'ng makulong ako," pilit namang pinapakalma ni Law ang kanyang sarili bago sumulyap sa akin. "Kung totoong anak siya ni uncle Augustus at aunt Lauren, bakit parang wala namang alam si uncle? He doesn't look at her the way a father look at their child."

I was just silently watching and listening to them, I couldn't speak, I would rather think more, gathering all the informations that I have heard, trying to register it all on my mind.

Believing the lies without knowing the truth doesn't make me a stupid person, but disbelieving the truth knowing the lies does make me more than an idiot.

"Ysa, kunin mo si Kryptonite," mahigpit na utos ni daddy. Ni hindi ko narinig ang sagot niya sa tanong ni Law. He ignored it, that just mean something. "Ihatid mo siya sa mansyon ng mga Fortaleza."

Ang bilis ng pagtibok ng puso ko nang bumaling ako kay mommy at nakitang humahakbang na siya palapit sa akin.

"Come here, baby," masuyo nitong sabi pero nanatili pa rin ako sa kinatatayuan ko. "Kryptonite, halika na kay mommy."

Huminto si mommy sa paglalakad nang mabilis akong lumapit kay Law at niyakap siya, awtomatiko namang hinawakan ni Law ang likod ko.

"Ayoko," I said, keeping my gaze at her. "You know, you're not my mother."

Hindi ko alam pero parang agad ko ring pinagsisihan ang sinabi ko nang nag-iba ang kanyang ekspresyon sa mukha.

She's hurt.

"Kryptonite..." I could hear from her voice that she was pleading. She turned to daddy. "Zacharias, please. Just tell them the truth. Tell them."

Why does it feel like mommy was under daddy's control? Does it even matter if she would just spill the truth? Why didn't she? I knew that she could tell us, but she chose to be silent.

"No," that stern voice was from daddy. Seeing the darkening look at his eyes as he stared at mommy, I could see a glint of hope in it. "Mag-usap tayo mamaya sa kwarto ko."

His room? They didn't sleep in the same room? Maybe, it was mommy's choice to have a separate room.

"But Zach—"

"Call August and Thomas," umiwas ng tingin si daddy kay mommy at tumingin kay Law bago bumaba ang tingin sa akin. "Come to me, sweetheart. Ibabalik na kita sa real parents mo, okay? Don't be scared."

Alam kong gusto niya lang makuha ang loob ko kaya sobrang marahan at maingat ang pagsasalita niya.

Narinig kong lumabas na si mommy, marahil ay susundin niya ang pinag-uutos ni daddy.

Bakit kung makapagsalita si daddy ay parang isa akong kuting na hiniram nila tapos ibabalik lang sa biological parents ko kapag nalaman ko nang 'di pala nila ako totoong anak?

Kinakabahan man ay mas lalo ko lang hinigpitan ang pagkakayakap ko kay Law, gano'n din ang mga maskulado niyang braso sa likod ko. Mas idinikit at idiniin ko pa ang katawan ko sa kanyang matigas na katawan. Ramdam ko ang kanyang matigas na tiyan at hindi ko na rin pinapansin ang kanyang matigas na pagkalalaki na tumatama sa ibabaw na bahagi ng pagkababae ko.

For this moment, I just want to hug him. I didn't wanna lose the chance to hug him, feel him, take all of him as long as I have him.

Pakiramdam ko kasi pagkatapos nito ay hinding-hindi ko na siya mahahawakan, makikita, o 'di kaya'y mararamdaman ulit at natatakot akong mangyari 'yon.

"Law, ilalayo ba nila ako sa'yo?" bulong ko at isinubsob ang mukha ko sa kanyang dibdib, inaamoy siya. Gusto ko lang naman mabawasan ng konti ang kaba at takot sa ganitong paraan.

"Alam mo namang hindi ako papayag, little girl," bulong niya habang marahan niyang hinahalikan ang noo, buhok at tuktok ng ulo ko sa mismong harap ni daddy. "Hindi ako papayag. Makukulong muna ako bago mangyari 'yon."

I admired Law for being so intelligent. He knew that daddy couldn't afford to lose the good reputation of this family, not to mention Kuya Laki's sex scandal videos.

Moving my head to the side from burying my face against Law's broad chest. I glanced at daddy's direction, five feet away from us.

"Son, she doesn't deserve this. Mas nakakabuti sa kanya--"

"Alam mo pala kung ano ang mas nakakabuti sa kanya?" natigilan si Law sa kanyang ginagawang malambing na paghalik sa noo ko nang hindi niya na pinatapos pa sa pagsasalita si daddy. Lalo ko lang nararamdaman ang galit sa kanyang boses at ang paghigpit ng pagkakayakap niya sa akin. "Hindi mo nga alam kung anong nakakabuti sa'kin, sa'min ng mga kapatid ko. Si Lazarus, nilulunod ang sarili niya sa pagtatrabaho sa kompanya mo. Si Laki, nagpakagago at inaaliw ang sarili niya sa iba't ibang babae. Ako? Fuck! Ito na nga lang ang naging buhay ko tapos babawiin niyo pa? Kukunin niyo pa? Ilalayo niyo pa! Tangina!"

Sa bawat salitang binitiwang ni Law ay ang pagbilis ng paraan ng paghinga niya, malalalim at mabibigat.

Sumisikip at nananakit ang dibdib ko sa isiping may mas mabigat pa palang dinadala si Law. Nakakatakot ang pagsigaw niya, pero sa kabila ng takot ay mas pinili kong higpitan ang pagkakayakap sa kanya.

Nangingilid ang mainit na luha sa mga mata ko. Nagtatangkang kumawala.

We're both hurt and I couldn't help but being selfish. It's harder than I thought, but I want to be with him. Why was it so hard to be with him?

"Trust me. I've been there, son," daddy's collected voice and posture was very opposite to Law. "Ayokong maranasan niyo ang naranasan ko noong pinagpipilitan kong manatili si Ysa. She stayed, we loved each other before, but look at us now? Look how my life is fucked up."

"And mine is about to fuck up," marahas na tugon ni Law sa kanyang ama.

"L-Law..." tawag ko at iniwas ng tingin kay daddy para isubsob ang aking mukha sa dibdib ni Law.

It was just so hard sometimes to stop the tears.

Umiyak ako hindi lang dahil sa nasasaktan ako, kung 'di ay dahil sa nahihirapan ako, naiipit ako sa sitwasyon ng mag-ama, pero kinakaya ko pa rin kahit na hindi ko pa tuluyang natanggap ang lahat ng nalaman ko.

All too sudden, I wasn't ready, I haven't prepared myself.

Matapos ang ilang segundong kumalma siya nang napagtantong umiiyak ako at sinimulan muli ang paghalik sa ulo ko. "Tell me. Hindi siya anak ni uncle Augustus, walang alam si uncle Augustus. He only knows that she's adopted."

Isang minutong hindi ko narinig ang boses ni daddy at ang mahihinang paghikbi ko lang ang tanging narinig ko. Lumipas ang tatlong minutong katahimikan ay bigla kong narinig ang pagbukas ng pinto ng kwarto ko at siyang pagpasok nila uncle Augustus at uncle Thomas.

"Pinatawag mo raw kami?" narinig kong baritonong boses ni uncle Thomas.

"What happened? Bakit umiiyak si Kry?" it was from uncle Augustus, I could here the pure and sincere concern in his gruff voice.

"Hawakan niyo," mariing utos ni daddy sa kanila. "Ibabalik ko na siya sa mga Fortaleza."

Innocently, I didn't have any idea what does that mean, not until I felt myself being pulled away from Law.

Hindi ko inasahan 'yon, pareho naming hindi inasahan ni Law ang biglang nangyari dahil agad nilang mahigpit na hinawakan si Law sa kanyang magkabilang braso sa oras na naihiwalay na ako sa kanya para siguro hindi na niya ako makuha pa ulit.

"Hindi niyo siya pwedeng ilayo sa'kin," Law's intimidating voice said. "Fuck."

"Law, kumalma ka," pampakalma ng boses ni uncle Thomas. "Ibigay mo na ang bata, para sa kapakanan niyo rin naman 'to."

"Hindi niyo ako naiintindihan!" sigaw naman ng nagwawalang boses ni Law.

Gusto kong lumingon at tignan ang mga nangyayari sa likuran ko. Gusto kong sabihin kay Law na kumalma siya at 'wag nang magalit, pero hindi ko nagawa.

Daddy cupped my face, the reason why I couldn't look behind.

"Don't cry, don't cry, sweetheart, sh," his big arms on my cheeks felt so gentle as he held my face. "I'll bring you back to your biological parents. Don't cry... Tahan na."

"N-No. Pa'no na si Law? Hindi niyo naman siya ipapakulong, 'di ba?" nag-aalalang tanong ko. "'Di ko siya iiwan, daddy..."

Taas-baba ang marahas na paggalaw ng dibdib ko, kasabay ng paghikbi ko.

I seemed like hyperventilating, voice was shaking and knees were wobbling. The situation on my mind has oscillated between exultation and affliction.

Exultation, because of the victory of knowing somehow who my parents were. At least, they told me themselves that they weren't my biological parents. Affliction, because I was hurt to know the truth.

"You should tell your parents about that, sweetheart. Hindi naman kasi ako ang magsasampa ng kaso laban sa sariling anak ko," daddy's expression on his face and his voice seemed so soothing, but I knew that he was just trying to earn my trust.

"Iiwan mo siya pero sandali lang naman, babalik ka rin agad."

Bakit pakiramdam ko sa sinabi niyang sandali ay parang ilang taong sandali pa bago ako babalik agad?

"Kryptonite, don't listen to them, please," sabi ng nagmamakaawa at desperadong matigas na boses ni Law. "Sa'kin ka lang makinig. Sa'kin ka lang dapat maniniwala, little girl. Please."

Kahit hindi ko nakikita si Law ay pumapasok pa rin sa isip ko ang kanyang imahe, ang kanyang mukhang nagmamakaawa sa akin.

"Don't you wanna meet your biological parents, hm? I'm sorry, we're sorry for keeping this from you," daddy continued as he used his thumb to wipe the tears off my blushed cheeks. "Ginagawa lang naman namin kung ano ang nakakabuti sa'yo."

I heard Law groaned from behind. "Bitiwan niyo 'ko."

The noise behind me goes audible, louder, as if Law was trying to fight back from being tied up. He was truly, surely, fighting back from his uncles' tight hold on his arms.

"Law," mahinahong sabi ng malalim na boses ni uncle Thomas. "Ayokong magkasakitan tayo rito. Pabayaang mo muna ang dad mo. Hayaan mo'ng makilala ni Kryptonite ang totoong magulang niya."

"Totoong magulang, uncle Thomas?" kung tama man ang narinig ko ay nagpakawala ng sarkastiko at mahinang tawa si Law. "Akala ko ba, dad, anak siya ni uncle August at aunt Lauren? Nandito lang pala ang totoong magulang niya, bakit ilalayo niyo pa siya?"

Coldly, daddy removed his hands from cupping my face. I was still crying when I turned to see Law behind me.

"Anong ibig sabihin nito?" bakas sa mukha ni uncle August ang pagkalito at parang hindi niya talaga inaasahan ang mga pangyayari.

"Augustus," daddy started, his voice was stern and the way he pronounce uncle August's name was so rigid and firm. "May kailangan kang malaman pero sa ngayon, kailangan ko munang ihatid si Kryptonite sa mansyon ng mga Fortaleza."

Hindi ako makagalaw para lumapit kay Law dahil hawak ako ni daddy sa isang braso.

"A-Ayoko, daddy," bumaling ako ng tingin sa kanya at marahan pa'ng hinawakan ang laylayan ng kanyang puting damit. "Isama na natin si Law, please? Gusto kong kasama si Law."

"Hindi pwede, sweetheart," he opposed. "May kasalanan si Law."

Nabitiwan ko ang kanyang damit. I felt the anger again. "Wala po siyang kasalanan!" pilit ko pa'ng inalis ang kanyang kamay sa braso ko pero hindi niya man lang niluwagan 'yon, he just tightened it more. "Let me go! Hindi ako sasama sa inyo!"

"Anong nangyayari? Zacharias?" another familiar voice came inside my room.

"Lauren, get your daughter," seryoso at bakas na ang galit sa boses ni daddy nang patuloy at pilit ko pa ring inaalis ang pagkakahawak niya sa braso ko. "Ysa just caught Law, molesting, harassing and attempting to rape her."

"He didn't!" parang umalingawngaw pa ang boses ko nang dahil sa sobrang lakas ng pagkakasigaw ko. "H-Hindi niya ginawa 'yon! I let him touch me! He didn't force me!"

Inilipat ko ang aking tingin kay aunt Lauren na siyang sinasabi nilang ang totoong ina ko at nakitang may kasama pala siya.

"Hannah, pakisabi sa driver na ihanda 'yong kotse," sabi niya kay aunt Hannah, uncle Thomas' wife, bago siya bumaling kay aunt Zara na nakatayo sa kanan niya. "Zara..."

"No problem, Lau," was aunt Zara's only response.

Naguguluhan na ako at hindi ko alam kung ano ang binabalak nilang gawin pero bumuhos na naman ang mga luha ko nang narinig ko ang boses ni Law.

"Fuck this! Dad!" he screamed furiously before he fell on his knees. "N-Nagmamakaawa ako sa inyo, 'wag niyo naman siyang ilayo sa'kin."

Nang dahil sa sobrang desperado niya, gipit na gipit, at sa palagay ko ay handa pa siyang magpatiwakal, kung hindi niya ako makukuha sa marahas na paraan. Nagbabaka sakali siyang baka ay makukuha niya ako at mapapanatili sa paraan ng pakikiusap at pagmamakaawa.

"Law, get up, you don't have to do that," aunt Lauren said. Mukhang naaawa na rin siya kay Law.

Law never wanted this. Sa lahat ng ayaw niya ay ang kaawaan siya, ang magmakaawa siya, pero ginawa niya pa rin.

Gusto ko siyang lapitan, yakapin at sabihing hindi naman ako aalis. Hindi ko siya iiwan kaya dapat ay hindi na niya aalalahanin 'yon.

But daddy's grip on my arm was stopping me from doing so.

Habang nakaluhod si Law at lahat kami ay pinapanood lang siya, hindi ko nakitang umiyak siya. Ayaw niya sigurong mas lalo siyang kaawaan nila, at lalong ayaw niyang masaktan ako makita siyang umiiyak.

Begging and pleading, his intimidating eyes hardened when he shifted his look from daddy to me.

"Aunt Lauren, mahal ko po ang anak niyo," he said grimly and honestly, before turning his gaze to aunt Lauren. "I love her. I love your daughter so much. I don't care about the law and reputation. She's my law and I'll always obey and follow that law."

A minute of unyielding silence followed right after Law said those words. No one dared to talk.

It was unexpected.

Kahit ako ay nagulat sa sinabi niya kahit na patuloy pa rin ang paghikbi at pagbuhos ng luha ko. Akala ko noon ay libog lang 'yong parehong nararamdaman namin.

"Lauren, umalis na kayo," daddy broke the silence.

"'H-Hindi ako sasama sa inyo," giit ko. Lalo na ngayong narinig ko ang sinabi ni

Law.

Aunt Lauren walked toward us. "Anak—"

"Don't call me that!" I bursted and let go of the anger that was boiling inside me. "P-Pa'no niyo nagawa sa'kin 'to? Pa'no niyo ako nagawang ipamigay! I was seeking for my parents' attention, I was blaming them and now, it was just you who deserves all the blame!"

"I'm so sorry that we have to do this, Kryptonite," the inner corner of her perfect brows raised and almost met, an expression that she was hurt, enduring the pain.

I was in panic when aunt Zara and aunt Lauren, who they said to me as a matter of fact that she was my biological parents, went to me, forced me to walk and out of the room.

"Let me go! Get off me!" I fought back against their hold on my arms. Pilit kong huwag maglakad pero napapahakbang ako dahil sa paghila nila sa akin. Nang wala akong ibang nagawa ay bumaling ako sa likuran at tumingin kay Law. Napakagat labi ako bago nagsalita. "L-Law... Law, please help me. Ayokong sumama sa kanila."

Nakita kong tumayo siya mula sa pagkakaluhod pero maglalakad pa nga lang sana siya para humabol at makalapit sa amin ay agad naman siyang pinigilan nila uncle Augustus at uncle Thomas.

They were gripping both of his muscular arms an he tried to break free. Angrily, he groaned in dislike to no avail.

Namalayan ko na lang ang sarili kong nakalabas na sa kwarto ko at ang huli kong nakita ay ang likod ni daddy nang humarang siya sa harap ni Law. Kinakausap ang anak niyang nagwawala.

"Don't cry, Kry, darling," pagpapatahan ni aunt Zara sa akin habang naglalakad kami sa corridor. "Pupunta tayo sa mansyon ng mga Fortaleza para maayos natin 'to, okay?"

"Naghihintay na sa labas ang kotse. Nasa labas na rin si Ysa, sasama raw siya," salubong ni aunt Hannah sa amin at marahan niya pa'ng inayos ang buhok kong medyo nagulo.

"Ang mga Costales? Sinigurado ba'ng 'di nila malalaman ang kaguluhang 'to?" aunt Zara asked worriedly.

"Nasa pool sila at ang iba pa'ng magpinsan na kararating lang kagabi," aunt Hannah answered before we continued to walk. "Hindi nila malalaman."

"S-Si Law po, balikan po natin siya," pamimilit ko nang bumaba kami ng hagdan. "Iba po siya magalit. Aunt Zara, tulungan mo naman ako..."

I asked for aunt Zara's help because I knew that she has something for Law and I. Clearly, she wanted us to be together if we weren't just blood related. I could still remember the dinner in La Trinidad where she told us her opinion.

"I know, darling. Iba magalit si Law, remember? Noong seven years old ka pa at nawawala ka sa simbahan? Galit na galit siya kay Lazarus at Laki dahil 'di ka nila tiningnan ng mabuti," marahan niya pa'ng hinahaplos ang buhok ko upang mabawasan ang bigat na nararamdaman ko nang nakarating kami sa bulwagan. "Don't worry, okay? Lilipas din ang galit niya."

"But he's scared right now," huminto ako sa paglalakad at sumulyap sa dinaanan namin. "I know he's scared."

"We don't have enough time," ani aunt Lauren at marahan akong hinila patungo sa malaking pinto ng mansyon. "Let's go."

Nagdadalawang-isip man ay nagpatianod ako sa kanilang marahang paghila sa braso ko. Nakalabas na kami ng mansyon at pababa na sa kinaroroonan ng naghihintay na kotse kung saan naghihintay din si mommy.

Ngunit isang sigaw ang nagpatigil sa akin.

"Lauren! Bilis na! Umalis na kayo!"

"Kryptonite!"

Lumington ako at nakitang mabilis na naglalakad si Law para humabol sa amin habang hinahabol din siya nila uncle Augustus, uncle Thomas at daddy.

"Law..." I whispered.

"Kryptonite, pumasok ka na, bilis na," utos ni aunt Zara nang 'di ko man lang namalayang nasa harap na pala kami ng kotse.

"Pero si Law—"

"Ipapakulong ko siya kung hindi ka papasok."

Lumipat ang paningin ko kay aunt Lauren nasiyang pumutol sa sasabihin ko.

"You can't do that," marahan akong suminghap at bumuga ng hangin habang umiiling. "Ang sama mo."

I had no other choice but to get inside the car and they followed suit before Law could reach us.

"Kryptonite! Fuck! Little girl, don't leave me. Lumabas ka, Kryptonite, please," hinahampas niya ang salamin sa labas ng kotse nang dahan-dahan itong umandar at sumasabay pa'ng naglakad si Law para makausap lang ako. "Hindi na ako makikipagkita kay Erich, magluluto ako araw-araw ng mga gusto mo'ng kainin. Bibilhan na kita ng phone. Papayagan na kita sa lahat ng gusto mo. I can answer all your assignments, make all your projects and presentations, little girl. Labas na, please. Uuwi na tayo."

Paulit-ulit na nagbabalik sa isip ko ang pagmamakaawa sa boses niya. Naririnig ko iyon dahil may maliit na awang sa bintana ng kotse.

Nasasaktan akong makita siyang nagmamakaawa sa labas at hinahabol pa rin ang kotse nang unti-unting bumibilis ang takbo nito. Gusto ko na talagang lumabas pero pinapagitnaan ako ni mommy at aunt Zara rito sa backseat habang nasa front seat naman si aunt Hannah, si aunt Lauren naman ang nagmamaneho. Pinaalis niya kasi 'yong driver kanina.

Ang tanging naririnig ko lang sa ngayon ay ang mga hikbi ko naghahalo sa ingay ng umaandar na sasakyan.

Hindi ko napigilan ang sarili kong lumington nang 'di na nakahabol si Law.

My heart broke when I saw him, for the second time around, on bended knees in the

middle of the road just inside the property of the Cavanaugh.

Marahas niya pa'ng sinabunutan ang kanyang sarili at kahit na hindi ko na siya naririnig ay nakikita ko sa kanyang mga labi na sumisigaw siya. Paulit siyang sumisigaw, nagwawala habang sinusuntok ng paulit-ulit ang sementadong daan kung saan siya nakaluhod. Kumikinang pa sa kanyang sentido ang iilang butil ng pawis niya nang dahil sa sobrang pagod.

Huli kong nakita ay ang pagdating nila daddy at pinanood ang kotse namin na lumabas ng gate ng mansyon.

Too much. This was just too much for me to take. I haven't even accepted the truth about me, and now, I have to leave Law?

Couldn't I be happy even just for one week straight? I was not born to be one of the extraordinary people, I couldn't catch every extra pain, heartache, headache, earache because of all the shouts, sting of the lies, pang of the truth and my chest throbbed with pain at the torture to see Law in that condition, in this situation.

How he plead and beg just to keep me. He told daddy that I was his life, and it was just perfectly fucked up. How long would this torment end? Couldn't we skip it for a bit of seconds?

Selfless and selfish eagerness to keep me was the quintessence of the incestuous love, what a good example it was to me.

I haven't even told him that I feel the same way. That I love him, and I was still believing what I wanted to believe. I didn't believe daddy when he told us that we're cousins. Should I make my own law too? Even if I was already treated as the law of Law.

What if this misery would change Law? To desensitize him into someone so insensitive and a bad person? He would become that lawyer who takes no prisoners.

Inconsolably, how could I lessen the pain if that day would come? Funny, extinguishing this pain would just make it even worse.

Kung anu-ano na ang mga pumapasok sa isip ko simula noong umalis kami sa mansyon ng mga Cavanaugh. I wasn't doing this on purpose, it was just, I couldn't really help it. My brain was working too much more than my hands and feet does.

The moment I stepped on the Fortaleza's mansion, I couldn't even appreciate how splendiferous the mansion was because I was just too preoccupied to even notice. But since I have my own eyes, clear yet tired of crying. Perhaps I could tell that the architect, engineers, construction workers and anyone in a prodigious construction firm did their jobs with passion that after the processes of their hard works had resulted into success.

Somehow, someday, I could have my own success, show a triumph smile on my face, and greet the victory of life.

Isang araw ang nakalipas simula noong lumipat ako rito sa mansion ng mga Fortaleza. They had provided me a comfortable and massive room that they have occupied with expensive furnitures and all. A fine room for a very lonely young lady to sleep and stay for the whole day and night.

Lagi na nga lang akong nakahiga sa napakalaki at komportableng kama, pero aanhin ko naman ang kalakihan nito kung hindi ko naman naaamoy ang amoy ni Law doon?

I fluttered my eyes open when I felt something's going on in my stomach. It felt like it turned upside down.

Mabilis akong bumangon at halos magkandarapa na sa pagmamadali papasok sa loob ng banyo kahit na pakiramdam ko ay parang nahihilo ako.

Napaluhod ako sa napakalinis na sahig ng banyo at doon sa toilet bowl inilabas lahat ng gustong ilabas ng tiyan ko.

Siguro ay limang minuto rin akong naghintay dahil baka ay may maisuka pa ako bago ako nanghilamos at tumitig sa repleksyon ko sa salamin.

I looked a little pale. Ang hirap din kasing matulog kapag pinipilit ko.

"Ma'am Kry? Breakfast po," narinig kong katok ng pamilyar na boses ng isang katulong dito.

After fixing myself for another few seconds, I went out of the bathroom and opened the door.

"Thanks," sabi ko nang pumasok siya at inilapag ang isang tray ng breakfast ko sa kama. "Ahm, may gamot ba kayo?"

"Para saan po?" tanong niya. I guess, she's in early twenties. Mukha kasi talaga siyang bata pa para maging katulong.

"Para sa pagsusuka?" I hesitated.

"Po?" nagtataka nitong sabi. "May lagnat po ba kayo?"

"Wala naman," kunot noo kong sagot. "Medyo nahihilo lang ako at hindi ko alam kung anong nakain ko. Nasusuka ako."

"Ma'am? Kailan ka po dadatnan?"

"Always first week of the month," I replied quickly after surveying my eyes at the breakfast and sighed when I saw meat. "Hindi ako dinatnan last week, baka na-delay lang or something. Why?"

"Wag mo po'ng mamasamain, ma'am, ah?" magalang nitong saad. I could say that she's very careful and afraid she may offended me. "Pero baka ay nagdadalang tao po kayo."

I was stunned. "W-What?"

Hindi pumasok sa isip ko na buntis ako kahit na alam kong malaki ang posibilidad na buntis nga ako.

"Gusto niyo po ba'ng malaman?" pagbabaka sakali niyang tanong. "Lalabas po kami mamaya para mag-grocery. Gusto niyo po ba'ng bilhan ko kayo ng pregnancy test? Hindi ko po ipagsasabi."

Mukhang mapagkakatiwalaan naman siya.

"Okay, thank you," marahan kong sabi bago siya nagpaalam dahil baka ay iiwan na siya ng mga kasama niyang katulong sa paggo-grocery.

Right after breakfast, I took my shower. It was so hard to focus on cleaning the

dirt off my body when I thought of something else.

Pregnant. I just hope that I was not pregnant.

Ang dami ko nang problema tapos dadagdag pa ang pagiging buntis ko? I wasn't blaming the baby, I was blaming myself.

Nang bumalik ang katulong matapos ang apat na oras ay palihim niyang ibinigay sa akin ang dalawang pregnancy test. I followed the instructions of it and tried it.

Twenty minutes of sitting on the toilet bowl, I decided to go outside and cried on my bed once again, but this time, I was clutching the two pregnancy test that both have two red lines, and caressing my flat stomach.

Nakatulog ako sa kaiiyak at saglit na kinalimutan ang mga problema ko.

"Kryptonite? Let's have lunch downstairs," kahapon ay ganito rin ang sinabi ni aunt Lauren sa akin.

Hindi ko pa rin talaga nagawang ibahin ang tawag ko sa kanya. Sadyang nasanay na akong tawagin siyang gano'n.

"Dito na lang po ako kakain," was my answer again.

"Law is downstairs, I invited him to come over," dugtong nito dahilan kung bakit ako natigilan. "Are you going to join us?"

Hindi na ako sumagot at bumangon na saka nauna pa'ng lumabas ng kwarto.

Nasa loob ng bulsa ko ang dalawang pregnancy test nang bumaba kami ni aunt Lauren ng hagdan at dumiretso sa likod ng mansyon kung saan may pool at magandang table na may bubong bilang proteksyon mula sa maaliwalas at mainit na sikat ng tanghaling araw.

My heart leapt in joy when I caught sight of Law sitting in the opposite side where I was supposed to sit. I would be facing him while we eat.

I missed him, I wanna run to him and hugged him again, kiss him, touch him, but for now, I need to endure it.

Daddy and mommy were here, aunt Lauren and uncle Augustus were, of course, they're here too.

Nang umupo ako sa kinauupuan ko ay ramdam ko ang walang katapusang paraan ng pagtitig ni Law sa akin.

Kinagat ko ang pang-ibabang labi ko nang nakitang nakabenda ang kanyang mga nakakuyom na kamay.

"What happened to your hand?" kahit may ideya na ako ay nagawa ko pa ring magtanong.

"I'm okay, little girl," ni hindi niya ako nilubayan ng tingin, kalmado na rin ang kanyang boses.

"That's not what I'm asking," I said and stretched out my arm to reach for his hand. "Can I hold it?"

He moved his injured hands for me to reach it. Immediately, I gently held it. It

was larger compared to my hand, but I knew that my hand would surely fit.

Siguro ay ito na ang tamang oras para malaman nila. Malaman ng lahat.

Lahat sila ay tahimik na pinagmamasdan kaming dalawa ni Law. Nakaupo na rin sila sa kani-kanilang mga upuan.

Gamit ang isang kamay ko ay kinuha ko ang dalawang pregnancy test sa loob ng bulsa ko. When I tried to open his fist, he let me and that's when I put the pregnancy test on his palm.

Lahat sila ay natigilan nang nakita at napagtanto kung ano ang inilagay ko sa kanyang palad. Sa kanyang palad kung saan nakasalalay ang magiging buhay ng magiging anak namin.

I heard mommy and Aunt Lauren's gasped, the men remained silent and Law just stared at the thing on his hand.

"I-I'm pregnant, Law," kinakabahan kong sabi. Natatakot ako kasi ilang minuto na rin siyang tahimik at nakatitig lang sa pregnancy test. "Hindi ka man lang ba magsasalita? Hindi mo ba ako pananagutan? Ang sabi mo—"

"Silence, little girl," he cut me off and for the first time since I saw him here. He genuinely smiled. "Nag-iisip pa ako ng pangalan."

"Law, son, you know that this is ince—"

"It's not incest, Zacharias," pagputol ni aunt Lauren sa sasabihin ni daddy. "They're not incest."

Nang tumingin ako kay aunt Lauren ay nakikita ko ang lungkot sa kanyang mga mata. Parang may kung anong humaplos sa puso ko nang nakita ang sakit doon.

Pero sa hindi ko inaasahang katotohanan ay sinabin niya ang mga salitang nagbigay ng konting pag-asa sa amin ni Law.

"I've had a relationship with my cousin before. She's my daughter and her father is my cousin."

Chapter 40

Hide

Napasinghap ako nang narinig ko ang marahas na paghampas ni uncle Augustus sa mesa gamit ang kanyang kamay kasabay ng pagtayo niya.

I just noticed that Law came fast out of his seat and went to my side. As careful and gentle as he could be, he leaned down to me and wrapped his very protective arms around me.

Dumbfounded. I watched aunt Lauren, my biological mother, cried. She looked scared of uncle Augustus when he got up from his seat and stared at her before he shook his head in disappointment and dismay.

"She's sixteen years old, Saul is just nineteen and Daumier is twenty," nakikita ko sa mga mata ni uncle Augustus ang galit pero sadyang sobrang mahinahon sa pandinig ang kanyang malalim na boses. Parang ayaw niyang matakot sa kanya si aunt Lauren. "You cheated, baby? Noong nag-away tayo. Kaya ba sinabi mo sa akin na magbabakasyon ka lang sa probinsya niyo? Isang taon ng pagbabakasyon bago ka bumalik? Iniwan mo kami ng mga anak natin? 'Yon pala ay buntis ka na sa ibang lalaki. You didn't even talked to me for one year, texted me or called me."

I didn't know why, but when I turned to aunt Lauren. She was still very beautiful in distress.

Tumayo si aunt Lauren at naglakad palapit sa kinatatayuan ngayon ni uncle Augustus. She clung her hands on his right arm. "A-Augustus... Listen, I-"

"Bring me to your room, baby," bumaba ang tingin ni uncle Augustus sa kamay ni aunt Lauren na nanatiling nakakapit sa kanyang braso. Slowly and gently, he removed her fragile and fair white hands off the bulging muscles on his arms, he then snake his arms around the small of her back. "I wanna talk to you privately."

"B-But what about the lunch?" nagdadalawang-isip at nauutal na tanong ni aunt Lauren habang marahan na umiiyak.

"Excuse us for an hour," pormal at seryosong paalam ni uncle Augustus. "May pag-uusapan lang kami sandali ng asawa ko."

Daddy just nodded and then they're off to go. I even caught uncle Augustus, kissing aunt Lauren's head while walking at the side of the pool, just right on the way of the sun lounges that was arranged perfectly in an array and back inside the mansion.

Ilang segundo lang ang nagtagal simula noong umalis sila uncle Augustus at si aunt Lauren na siyang biological mother ko ay saglit na natahimik ang buong mesa.

"I'm so happy, little girl. Thank you for giving me another hope," Law whispered as he discreetly kissed my earlobe, didn't even mind about his parents that could possibly see what he was currently doing. "I love you so much, so much. Fuck, I can't wait to be alone with you."

Ramdam ko talaga ang saya sa kanyang boses at presensya. Parang noong isang araw lang ay sobrang galit na galit siya, pinagmumura niya pa ang sarili niyang ama.

Parang kanina lang ay parang walang kabuhay-buhay siyang nakaupo sa harap ko, pero ngayon ay halos masira na nga 'yong dalawang pregnancy test nang dahil sa sobrang higpit ng pagkakahawak niya.

"Pero, Law, may problema pa tayo," tanong ko dahil sa buong araw at gabi na nanatili ako rito ay walang minuto ang lumipas na hindi ko inisip ang tungkol sa amin.

"Law, anak, that's not healthy for her," I heard mommy's voice from the other side of the table near daddy. "Kry, baby, you should think of something else. Don't stress yourself, it's not healthy for the baby."

"We're not sure about it yet," I could say that daddy was not done with this problem, between him and Law. "Minsan ay nagkakamali rin ang mga pregnancy test. It's better if she'll have a check up first."

He has a point. Another possibility of false hope for Law.

"Zacharias, will you please stop that?" mommy's cheeks turned red. It looked like she had enough of the opposition. "You're such a jerk-"

"Napag-usapan na natin ang tungkol dito, Ysa," I could not even read a single expression nor emotions on daddy's steely look on his face the way he talk. "Baka naman ay gusto mo'ng pag-usapan natin ulit sa kwarto ko?"

I wonder what were they going to talk about inside his room? Mainly, it would be about their unhealthy relationship, or maybe business, it's possible if the subject would be related to our current problem as of now.

"Kry, what do you feel? Are you alright?" she ignored daddy and just focused her attention to me.

Siguro ay alam niyang matatapos lang sa isang away at sagutan kung papatulan niya pa si daddy.

"Not really, mommy," medyo nakangiwi kong sagot. "I vomited earlier when I woke up and I feel nausea."

Iniisip ko pa lang na baka ay bukas ng umaga, paggising ko ay masusuka na naman ako, parang hindi ko na kakayanin at baka ay mainis lang ako.

"That's just normal, baby, don't worry, lilipas din 'yan," her sweet voice was just full of reassurance as she gave me a kind smile. "The city isn't good for you. Maraming problema rito."

"You should go to a province, gaya ng ginawa ng mommy Lauren mo," ani daddy, his arms were crossed against his broad chest. "Mas maganda 'yon sa kalusugan mo, sweetheart."

Narinig ko sa tabi ko ang paghila ni Law ng isang upuan at ipinuwesto 'yon sa tabi ko saka siya umupo.

"I wanna live with Law, daddy," kahit medyo naiinis ako sa kanya dahil sa ginawa niya noong isang araw ay mas pinili ko pa ring itrato siya ng tama. "Ayokong lumayo sa kanya."

"Law can visit you, may pasok pa siya at ang dami niya pa'ng aasikasuhin," dahilan ni daddy at saglit pa siyang sumulyap kay Law na nakaupo sa tabi ko.

Surprisingly, my eyes widened when Law took some food and put it on my plate. It was the kind of lunch that he always wanted to eat.

Just a Parmesan Chicken Cutlets. He even took a pitcher of pineapple juice and pour it in my glass.

"Hihinto muna ako sa pag-aaral," desididong sabi ni Law, bakas sa kanyang mukha na wala na talagang makakapagpabago sa desisyon niya. "I'll take care of my little girl and our baby."

Pinanood ko ang mga magaspang at malaking kamay ni Law na inaayos ang pagkain ko sa plato. Staring at it, I turned to his face to watch how incredible his beauty was.

I was wearing my rosewood coloured floral house dress and Law as simple as he was, just wearing a plain white v-neck tee shirt and a black pants for men.

"Hindi ka pwedeng huminto sa pag-aaral, Law. Hindi ba importante sa'yo ang pag-

aabogado?" parang pinipapili pa ni daddy si Law. Between his dreams or his life.

How could he pursue, follow and chase his dreams without his life? That life was his strength, hope and determination to his dreams.

Without life? There would be no dreams. It was just like. Without world? There would be no living things.

Tahimik ko lang silang inoobserbahan. Pinapanood ang bawat pangyayaring nangyayari sa mimong harap ko.

"Importante sa'kin ang pag-aabogado, dad," mariing sagot ni Law, matigas na nakatitig kay daddy. "Pero wala nang mas importante pa sa mag-ina ko."

Naiintindihan ko naman na gusto niya lang kaming maalagaan ng maayos pero hindi naman siguro tama na ipagpaliban o hihinto muna siya sa kanyang pag-aaral dahil sa akin?

I faced him and placed my hand on his thigh. "Law, hindi mo naman kailangang huminto sa pag-aaral.

"Sh, little girl, just eat your lunch," aniya kasabay ng pagpatong niya ng kanyang kamay sa ibabaw ng kamay kong nasa hita niya.

"Pag-usapan na lang natin 'to 'pag nakabalik na sila Lauren at Augustus," sabi ni mommy at tipid na ngumiti sa amin. "For now, let's eat our lunch."

We started to eat our lunch and I couldn't help myself but eat like I wasn't a fine young lady. I devoured every pieces and slices of the delicious chicken like a lion overeating it's newly found meat.

"Don't you want to eat lettuce, little girl?" asked Law at my side.

"No, I don't like lettuce," I answered after swallowing the food inside my mouth. "Gusto ko 'yong mga kinakain mo, and I like the taste of brown coffee."

About thirty minutes after we fell into a deep silence, but not that silent because I could hear the clashing noise of the metal spoon, fork and knife against the expensive glass plate, although I sometimes ask questions, specifically to Law. Another moment had begun, aunt Lauren and uncle Augustus came back.

They seemed okay, I guessed that they had a peaceful talk. Aunt Lauren wasn't crying now, and while they were walking back here, uncle August was whispering some words over her ear and aunt Lauren just answer him with a slow nod.

Umupo sila sa kanilang kinauupuan kanina at ginawang komportable ang kanilang sarili.

Kanina pa tapos kumain si mommy at daddy na parang nawawalan sila ng ganang kumain kapag katabi nila ang isa't isa. Si Law din ay tapos ng kumain pero ako ay nilalantakan ko pa rin ang manok na inilagay ni Law sa plato ko, he was having fun watching me.

"Lauren, anong plano mo para kay Kry?" mommy started and glanced at me for a quick second.

Aunt Lauren tore her eyes from mommy and it darted to me.

"Let's just keep her this way, a Cavanaugh," the tone of her soft voice was marked

with importance and seriousness. Nanatiling nasa akin ang kanyang seryosong tingin at nakikita ko pa rin ang pamumula ng kanyang mga pisngi nang dahil sa pag-iyak. "She needs to meet her Lolo and Lola in Florida before I can decide to change her surname."

I made a face and expressed a sour grimace. "What do you mean? Pupunta ako ng Florida?"

"You have to-"

"Hindi. No, I won't go there without Law," umiiling kong sabi.

"Kryptonite, this is for your own good. Kailangan ay matanggap ka muna nila mama at papa, so we can change your surname," wika niya kasabay ng paglambot ng ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha. "Please, honey, just obey."

"Kailangan muna nila akong matanggap? Paano kung hindi? Hindi mo ba papalitan ang apilyedo ko?" iritadong binaba ko ang tinidor na hawak ko at hindi na muna kumain ng manok. "Ayoko, hindi ako aalis dito. Hindi ko iiwan si Law."

Nakakawalang gana talaga kapag ganito ang patutunguhan ng usapan namin.

"Sandali lang naman, anak," she even had the guts to call me her daughter. "You'll just going there to visit your Lolo and Lola. Hindi ka naman magtatagal do'n."

"You can't convince me to do what I don't wanna do, I'm staying here with Law and that's final," I frowned.

Nagkatinginan si uncle Augustus at aunt Lauren, nanatili namang tahimik sila mommy at daddy. Ramdam ko rin si Law sa tabi ko na hinawakan ang likod ko.

"Kry-"

"Please stop! You just blackmailed me, maniniwala pa ba ako sa'yo na hindi ako magtatagal sa Florida? Oh don't rush on it because I will never go there!" nawala ang pagpipigil ko nang balak niya naman yatang kumbinsihin ako. "Hindi ko iiwan si Law dahil... Mahal ko siya... Sapat na ba 'yon para hayaan niyo akong manatili rito? Sapat na ba ang dahilang mahal na mahal ko siya para hayaan niyo kaming magsama?"

"Little girl, I love you so much, now, calm down," bulong ni Law sa akin habang mahigpit niyang hawak ang beywang ko. "Just let me deal with this, okay? I can handle this."

"Mas mabuting manatili na muna siya rito, Lauren," sumali na rin sa pinag-uusapan namin si mommy. "Ang daming nangyari, we can't risk the baby just because of stress. Let her accept it all first, let her refresh it on her mind. Alam kong mahirap pa'ng tanggapin ang mga nalaman niya, 'wag na nating dagdagan ang problema."

For a moment, I was so glad that mommy talked her side, her opinion. It felt like she's with us.

"I have a resthouse in Quezon Province, we can stay there," Law firmly suggested, but for me, it wasn't just a suggestion. It was a statement that he would really do with or without other's permission. "May malapit naman na ospital doon."

"No, Law. I want to keep an eye on my daughter," tila ay hindi rin nagpapatalo si

aunt Lauren.

She's my mother, however, I hated her for some reason that was making me feel something unavoidable.

I felt unwanted by my own mother.

"Lauren, we should consider Law's suggestion," wala akong nasabi nang narinig ko ang boses ni daddy na siyang nagsalita. "It's better if they'll stay in a place where Kryptonite will be free from worries and stressful problems. I know that my son can take care of her."

Unnoticed by anyone here, but I clearly noticed how daddy shot a meaningful glance at Law. That was why I didn't really trust all of the words that came from daddy.

"Why don't you let my nephew, baby? He's responsible," kahit si uncle Augustus ay pinahayag na rin ang kanyang sariling opinyon. "Siya naman ang nagbantay kay Kryptonite ng mahigit apat na taon. Maaalagaan niya ng mabuti si Kryptonite."

"Fine," aunt Lauren sighed before she turned to Law. "Kailan ang alis niyo?"

"Today after the checkup," Law immediately replied.

"Gagabihin kayo. Ipagpabukas mo na lang kaya, Law, son?" nakakunot noong tanong ni daddy na parang may concern naman siya.

"I can drive, dad," Law said as he moved his gaze to me. "My little girl would just sleep for the whole ride or... request a food to eat."

The unforeseen response of his parents and my biological mother made me wanna celebrate in joy. Without any choice, they let us leave after the lunch.

Aunt Lauren have called the maid to prepare my things and pack them inside a bag. Happy to serve us, they immediately got my things ready for us to leave.

Not so fast yet because they would come with us first to a private hospital for a checkup before Law and I would be alone and free to go to his resthouse in Quezon Province.

Law was like a duplicitous business dealer, his clients would say yes without forcing them to. He convinced aunt Lauren with his words, I would almost think that the conversation we had earlier was just, maybe an artifice that was created and controlled by Law to have their trust.

I wonder how he outwitted his old chap of a father. But I bet that daddy had something against Law.

"Law, may dala ka ba'ng laptop?" I asked while he was busy driving.

He glanced at me but focused his eyes back on the road. "Yes, little girl, why?"

"I don't know," sumubo ako ng isang fries na hawak ko. It's a large fries that he bought in a fast food chain, just through the drive thru. Nilunok ko muna ng malinamnam na fries pagkatapos ko itong nguyain bago nagsalita. "Parang gusto kong mag-type."

"The last time you borrowed my laptop, you were watching porn," his temperate voice reminded me the thing happened back in his house at Compostela Valley. "I won't let you watch porn again."

I pouted and took out one piece of fries, I didn't eat it. I took the fries up to his sexy mouth instead.

Kinain niya ang fries na sinubo ko sa kanya habang abala siya sa pagmamaneho.

We're finally alone and heading to Quezon Province.

Kanina pa talaga nakangiti si Law simula kaninang lumabas kami ng ospital.

The doctor told us the news that I was, we were, confirmed, having a baby. I was three weeks pregnant and this was all his fault. Again, I was not blaming the baby, I was blaming the father of my baby.

Amicably saying, I had never thought that this idea of Law, his plans of getting me pregnant would be one of the reason why daddy and aunt Lauren gave us the permission and another chance to be together.

However, despite of all the good things that they did today, I still despise them. Should I tell them on their faces next time that they were a complete hypocrite?

Supposedly, the ride from Manila to Quezon Province was just four hours and a half, but I guessed that we were on the road for approximately five hours. It's already dark and it's almost seven in the evening.

Pang-apat na beses na kaming huminto kaya mas lalo kaming natagalan at sa ibang restaurant na naman, nadaanan lang namin pero parang ang sarap tikman ng mga dishes nila kahit 'di ko pa naman nakikita kaya kahit malayo na ay pinabalik ko pa ang sasakyan para bumili.

"What else do you want, little girl?" it was a very patient question from Law.

I bit my lip when I could find that his voice was somewhat or obviously annoyed and getting impatient. Trying so hard to make it sound like he wasn't.

"Galit ka ba, Law?" hindi ko alam kung bakit naging ganito ang sinabi ko pero naiinis talaga ako kapag nagkukunwari at umaakto siyang hindi naiirita o nauubusan ng pasensya.

I want him to express himself what he was truly feeling. Not that he would hide it just for me, to avoid hurting my feelings.

"No, just tell me what do you wanna eat," walang pagbabago sa kanyang mukha ngayon, kung kanina ay nakangiti siya, ngayon naman ay sobrang seryoso niya. "Medyo malayo pa tayo sa resthouse at gabi na."

There, he finally told me.

"Ba't 'di mo agad sinabi? 'Di na lang ako kakain," tumalikod ako at akmang maglalakad na patungo sa glass double doors ng restaurant pero 'di pa nga ako nakakahakbang ay isang kamay ang humapit sa beywang ko.

"Wait, little girl, don't make this hard for me, please," napapadalas na ang pagmamakaawa ng kanyang matigas na boses at ngayon ay narinig ko na naman 'yon. "Pili ka na, anong gusto mo'ng kainin?"

Umiwas ako ng tingin sa kanya dahil nasasaktan akong nakikita siyang nagmamakaawa at nakayukong tinuro na lamang ang mga pagkaing gusto kong ipabili sa kanya.

For the continuation of our ride to Quezon Province, I forced myself to sleep just to avoid seeing those restaurants that we past by.

Sometimes, I could describe myself as a fastidious and persnickety pregnant girl. Not that easy to please, nevertheless, I still wanted Law to please me.

Nagising lang ako nang naramdaman kong parang bumalikad na naman ang sikmura ko. Hindi agad ako nakatayo dahil napagtanto kong wala naman na pala ako sa loob ng kotse ni Law. Nasa isang kwarto ako at nakapatong sa ibabaw na bahagi ng tiyan ko ang mabigat at maskuladong braso ni Law.

Inalis ko 'yon at mabilis na hinanap ng mga mata ko ang pinto ng banyo rito sa isang hindi pamilyar na kwarto.

When I finally found the bathroom, I dashed inside and fell on my knees in front of the toilet bowl. With a perfect timing, I vomited just as I tucked my hair behind my ear.

"Kryptonite? Fuck, little girl, what happened? Are you okay? Tatawag na ba ako ng doctor? Anong gagawin ko? Shit! Ang sabi ni mom, normal lang daw ang pagsusuka?" narinig kong natatarantang matigas na boses ni Law nang pumasok din siya sa loob ng banyo at lumuhod sa tabi ko.

"L-Law, kailan ba matatapos 'to? Kahapon nasuka pa ako tapos ngayon naman," reklamo ko bago niya ako tinulungang tumayo at siya na nga mismo ang nagpunas ng bibig ko habang panay naman ang pagrereklamo ko. "I feel sick."

Parang nawala 'yong pagkahilo na nararamdaman ko nang nakita ko ang pagkagat ni Law sa kaniyang pang-ibabang labi na parang nag-iisip pa siya kung anong maisasagot niya sa tanong ko.

He, as usual, was wearing a black boxers only, and for my part, I was not wearing the clothes that I wore during our ride last night. I was wearing a pair of pastel coloured pajamas.

I was so sure that Law changed my clothes while I was sleeping.

The resthouse looked so relaxing and refreshing, it was made in hard wood like his house back in Compostela Valley. Another coffee themed house. Well, the comfy sheets and fluffy pillows on the bed were white, like a white coffee. A study table and shelves at the corner. Bean bags and sofa were placed at the other side.

I could forget the problems seeing this room, it looked so free and nice.

Currently sitting on Law's lap after we had our breakfast downstairs and took our shower together, we were facing his laptop here on the study table at the moment. His one hand on my flat stomach and one hand controlling the mouse of his laptop.

He was doing a research about pregnancy.

"Let's just wait for the second trimester, little girl," sabi niya matapos ang seryosong pagbabasa niya ng mga kung anong lumalabas na sagot sa mga nisearch niya. "Mawawala na 'yang pagsusuka mo."

"Fine then," umayos ako ng upo sa kanyang hita at bahagyang humarap sa kanya. "Can you search about making love during pregnancy? Is it safe?"

"Safe if I have the average size of manhood, little girl," aniya, nakikita ko sa kanyang mukha na parang

iniawasan niya talagang may mangyari sa amin. "But I don't think it is safe for us to do it. I'm afraid that I might hurt you or the baby."

Looked like I was not the only person who's overthinking here.

He groaned when I changed my position on his lap, but he eventually helped me. I parted my legs, turning my back to face Law before I plumped myself down on his lap.

"'Di pa nga tayo nakakasigurado, Law. Baka pwede naman siguro," wrapping my arms around his neck, I pulled myself closer to his body, same second as I felt his arms at my back to support me. "Bakit ba kasi 'di mo tinanong 'yong doctor kahapon?"

"Don't do that again," tukoy niya sa padabog na pag-upo ko sa kanyang hita kanina. "I asked the doctor."

"Anong sabi?" I asked quickly.

"Pwede naman."

"At?"

Huminga siya ng malalim bago muling binalik sa akin ang kanyang seryosong tingin. "Little girl, natatakot ako, okay? Ayokong masaktan kita, ayokong masaktan ko kayo ng baby natin."

"Pero, 'di ba, kailangan mo 'yon?" giit ko.

"I can masturbate," he said stoically, ending the subject.

Wala akong nagawa kung 'di ay ang sundin ang gusto niya. Naiintindihan ko naman siya, iniisip niya lang ang kaligtasan ko at ng baby. Alam ko namang pwede 'yon kahit buntis ako, hindi pa naman malaki 'yong baby at siguro ay hindi naman ako maselan magbuntis.

He's just so worried that he would provide me and give me anything I needed and wanted before himself.

Rewinding what happened yesterday, I realized that aunt Lauren haven't explained to me why did it all happened? Did she really cheated? Where's my father? Who's he? She told us that my biological father was her cousin and I couldn't believe it.

Kaya siguro sinabi niya sa amin ang totoo, na hindi kami incest ni Law dahil alam niya sa sarili niya ang pakiramdam. Ang sakit na dulot ng pagiging magpinsan nila ng totoong ama ko.

I wonder if they, aunt Lauren and her cousin have loved each other? Why does it seemed like she was so in love with uncle Augustus, now?

The first trimester of pregnancy was as hard as hell. For me, it was very torturous and abusive. Sometimes I overslept, but oftentimes I couldn't sleep. Most of the time, I felt drained with my fatigued body. I was physically weak and lethargic.

A thought came inside my mind, what happened to our derelict house, now? Did Law appointed or hired someone to take care and look after it? I missed the house. It's been almost five months since the last time we live there, just before mommy caught Law and I, kissing in my room at the mansion.

Yes, I was halfway in my second trimester of pregnancy.

Parang kailan lang ay nasusuka pa ako, pero ngayon ay iba na ang mga symptoms na nararamdaman ko. It was not that hard, kaya ko lang at ngayon ay ang dami ng pagbabago sa katawan ko.

I had a baby bump and I usually were some loose clothes. Kapag nandito lang kami sa resthouse ni Law ay 'yong mga damit niya ang sinusuot ko pero kapag lumalabas kami for checkups o mamamasyal ay madalas maternity dress ang susuotin ko. Sinasama niya nga ako sa lahat ng lakad niya dahil ayaw niyang maiwan ako sa resthouse na 'yong mga taga-linis lang ang kasama ko, isa pa ay minsan lang naman silang pumupunta sa resthouse.

"Hey, baby, can you hear daddy?" kausap ni Law sa baby bump ko habang nakaluhod siya sa sahig at nakaupo ako sa isang upuang gawa sa metal. "You're getting bigger."

Nasa isang wooden gazebo kami ni Law, sa likuran lang ng resthouse niya.

Nakakatuwa siyang panoorin habang marahan niyang hinahaplos ang baby bump ko at kinakausap niya pa ang baby sa loob, marahang hinahalikan 'yon na parang naglalalambing.

Sinusuklay ko rin naman ang mga daliri ko sa kanyang malambot na buhok dahil may iilang hibla ng buhok niya ang tumatakip sa kanyang noo.

"What do you think is the baby's gender?" tanong ko matapos niyang idinikit ang kanyang kanang tainga na tila ay may pinapakinggan siya sa loob ng baby bump ko.

"I think it's a boy," nakangiti niyang sagot bago inilayo ang mukha sa tiyan ko at inangat ang tingin sa akin.

I scowled playfully. "Why?"

Another boy? Hindi ko alam pero sa isiping lalaki ang magiging anak namin ay parang sasakit siguro ang ulo ko. Kapag babae kasi madalas ay mabait at masunurin, except for myself na hindi lumaki sa totoong magulang at napabayaan lang.

I waited for his response until he told me the reason why he had a gut feeling that the baby would be a boy.

"Lahat ng gusto kong kainin ay kinakain mo, minsan ay inaagawan mo pa ako," he let out a deep and sexy chuckles. "I have no choice, little girl. Binibigay ko na lang lahat ng pagkain ko sa'yo kasi no'ng huling hindi kita binigyan dahil ang dami mo nang nakain ay umiyak ka, nagkasagutan pa tayo no'n at ayokong maulit 'yon."

That was the second week of the second trimester. I was craving all the food that he wanted to eat. Until now.

He swallowed his pride that time like from the start he hadn't even have a pride to swallow, I ate all the foods that was supposed to be his to eat.

"I'm sorry, Law," I murmured with downcast eyes.

"It's not you. It's the baby's likes," he said, trying to cheer me up from all the faults that I did these past few months. "Alam ko namang gusto mo ng lettuce at iba pa'ng mga gulay at prutas, ngayon ay madalang ka na lang kumakain ng mga gano'ng pagkain."

Tumango na lamang ako at muli siyang pinanood na hinahalikan ang tiyan ko kahit na

may suot naman akong oversized na damit niya ay tumatagos pa rin ang init ng kanyang mga labi.

"Anong oras na, Law?"

"Five," was his response after checking his wristwatch. "Gusto mo na ba'ng bumalik sa loob? Dito muna tayo, little girl. Nag-uusap pa kami ng baby natin."

"Okay, daddy Law," mapanukso kong sang-ayon sa kanya. He was enjoy talking to our baby, very excited.

"Can I pull the shirt up? I wanna touch you and the baby," he's been asking my permission since the day that he noticed the growing baby bump. Sobra niya talaga kaming iniingatan dito. "Wala namang tao, pauwi na rin naman sila Manang Cecilia."

I nodded saying. "Alright."

It's getting dark here but we didn't have to worry about the lights. There's a yellowish lights scattered around on top of the wooden gazebo.

Pinanood ko si Law na dahan-dahan at marahang inangat ang laylayan mg tee shirt hanggang sa ibabaw na bahagi lang ng baby bump ko, natatakpan pa rin naman ang dibdib ko.

His dark eyes were close when he pressed his soft and warm lips against the skin of my baby bump, gentle and slow like he have never been violent on me before. "I love you, and if the only way to keep you is to make you pregnant then I'm willing to give you all my sperm. All yours, they're all yours, I'm all yours, little girl."

"I won't leave you, Law. Don't say that like I'm leaving you soon," pakiramdam ko kasi ay gano'n ang ibig niyang sabihin.

Marahan niyang hinihimas ang kabilang side ng baby bump ko gamit ang kanyang magaspang na palad.

I loved the way his rough hands touching and caressing my soft skin. The roughness of it was giving me the attention that I wanted. It became rough because of me, the story behind his rough palms were all because of me, for me.

Parang ayaw ko na lang na umalis kami sa tahimik na lugar na 'to. Gusto kong manatili rito kung saan wala akong mabibigat na problemang dinadala, kung saan ang tanging problema namin ay ang pagdadalang tao ko lang, kung saan ang maliit na away at sagutan namin ay mauwi lang sa paghahalikan.

Nakangiti akong muling pinanood si Law na kinakausap ang baby namin sa loob.

"Suntukan tayo paglaki mo," sobrang seryoso ng pagkakasabi ni Law at titig na titig sa baby bump ko na parang hinahamon ni pa ang baby pagkatapos ay hinalikan niya na naman ulit 'yon.

Marahan ko siyang hinampas sa kanyang balikat. "Tinuturuan mo pa ng masama ang baby."

"It's self defense, little girl. He's a boy," paliwanag niya bago humalik na naman at wala na yata siyang balak na tumigil pa.

Natigil lang ang pag-uusap namin nang dumating si Manang Cecilia, marahan namang binaba ni Law ang damit ko para takpan ang tiyan ko, he got up and planted a soft kiss on my forehead before he faced the old woman who's taking care of his

resthouse.

"Hijo, pasensya na sa abala. Pauwi na sana ako pero may dumating na bisita. Lalaki, ang sabi ay ama mo raw kaya pinapasok ko na," paliwanag ng matandang babae na magalang kong nginitian.

But my smile faded at the news that she brought.

Law glanced at me before focusing his eyes to Manang Cecilia, yet his attention was focused on me.

"Salamat, manang," magalang na sagot ni Law. "Umuwi na po kayo, ako na ang bahala. Mag-ingat po kayo sa daan."

Parang bumalik 'yong kaba at takot ko nang sinundan ko ng tingin si Manang Cecilia na pumasok sa loob ng resthouse para umalis.

Alam ko naman kung bakit sila pumayag sa gusto ni Law. Para maitago ang iskandalong 'to, para hindi mapahiya ang mga Fortaleza at pati na rin ang mga Cavanaugh. Nandito kami kung saan walang masyadong nakakakilala sa amin.

What was daddy doing here? He never visited us since the very first day that Law and I arrived here. It was just aunt Lauren, aunt Hannah, aunt Zara and mommy, they visited us thrice a month.

"Stay here, little girl, okay?" lumapit siya sa akin at inabot niya pa ang kamay ko para halikan ang palad at likod nito. "Ako na ang bahala."

"Balik ka agad, please?" I requested.

Tumango siya agad. "Yes. Just wait here, hm?" paninigurado niya na sinagot ko ng isang tango. "Very good."

He left me after kissing me on my lips and went inside the resthouse.

Sinabi kong maghihintay lang ako rito pero nang lumipas ang sa palagay ko ay sampung minuto at nakakarinig na ako ng mga sigaw sa loob ay hindi ko na napigilan ang sarili at naglakad na papasok sa loob ng resthouse.

Mga sigaw na parang pilit nilang pinapahinaan dahil ayaw nilang may makarinig o marinig ko.

Nakapasok na ako sa dining room, nasa sala yata sila at akmang babalik na lang sana ako sa labas dahil mukhang huminahon naman na sila at saglit na tumahimik ang paligid.

Pero kahit gano'n ay 'di ko naiwasang marinig ang galit na boses ni daddy.

"Naaksidente si Erich kahapon, car accident, naglasing dahil sa'yo at nagmaneho. Her car was hit by a bus. Nasa ospital siya ngayon. Comatose and she needs you, son."

Mature Content Warning. This chapter may contain content of an adult nature. If you are easily offended or are under the age of 18, just ignore and skip some scenes. Some words within are intended for adults only and may include scenes of sexual content, strong languages, violence etc.

I wrote this chapter while listening to Act Like You Love Me by Shawn Mendes.

Died

My baby was in its last month of the third trimester, my baby bump was now bigger and heavier than the past months. I couldn't even stand in more than thirty minutes long.

Kabuwanan ko na ngayon at madalas ay nakaupo lang ako kasi masakit ang ibabang bahagi ng likod ko. Kapag naglalalakad din ako ay walang oras na hindi ako nakahawak sa ibabang bahagi ng likod ko.

Parang papahirapan pa yata ako ng maliit na Law sa loob ng sinapupunan ko.

Four months since the last time that daddy came here, Law never left me. Daddy nor Erich that was suffering in comatose could never change Law's decisions.

The words that he told daddy kept on repeating on my mind and I could have tried to forget about it if it was a bad thing, no, it was the words that my ears would risk just to hear it from him. He just told daddy that I was his only priority.

I tried to contact Cykee and Faith they just disrupted my mind. I found out yesterday that Cykee was now seven months pregnant, Faith gave birth to a baby last month. For now, I was waiting for the little Law to come out at this exact month.

At the past months, Law and I celebrated Christmas and New Year together in this resthouse. I felt contented that I wouldn't ask for anything, I wouldn't ask for gadgets, clothes, so far, I have never wanted those materials, I only wanted their attention.

"Law, are you sure? 'Di ko sasabihin sa'yo kung ano ang gender ng baby natin?" ilang beses na akong nagtanong kay Law tungkol dito.

I knew the gender already, we went at the nearest private hospital here for checkups and also for the ultrasound. He doesn't wanted me to tell him about it.

"We bought blue things for the baby, little girl," tugon niya habang pinupunasan niya ang basang hita ko ng towel. "I know it's a boy."

"Fine, it's a boy," I gave up.

We're both naked inside the room of his resthouse that we occupied for almost nine months. He made sure that the door was locked, but even if it was not locked, no one would try to get inside, unless if Law would command Manang Cecelia to clean and vacuum the room.

It was so funny how Law would get me with his words, he would always tell, convince me every morning that we have to save soap, shampoo, shower gel, body scrub and water. Every day of our stay here, we always took our shower together or have a refreshing bubble bath every night before we go to bed, in the circular, clear

white and spacious bathtub that would fit four bodies inside.

Me before him, exactly at this very minute, I was naked sitting on the edge of our bed and he was naked too, busy wiping my wet body with a clean white towel, although, he was also wet and he haven't dried himself. I couldn't reach my feet to wipe it, and he was doing the work for me.

Nang natapos siya sa pagpupunas sa akin ay nanatili siyang nakaluhod sa harap ko.

Hindi pa rin siya gumagalaw para punasan ang sarili niyang katawan at magbihis dahil nakakaagaw pansin ang kanyang pagkalalaki na sa tingin ko ay aktibong-aktibo na naman.

Nasaksihan ko kung paano niya marahang isinandal ang kanyang noo sa malaking tiyan ko, magaan lang naman at ramdam ko pa ang matangos niyang ilong na marahang gumagalaw at humahaplos sa tiyan ko, ang kanyang mainit na hininga na tumatama sa sa ibabang bahagi ng tiyan ko na parang sinasabayan ang tibok ng puso ng baby sa loob ang kanyang normal na paghinga.

"Ito ang dahilan kung bakit hanggang ngayon ay kasama pa rin kita," he whispered, remained his forehead light as a feather against the upper part of my baby bump. "'Pag mawala 'to, hindi ko na alam kung anong gagawin ko."

I felt him placed both his masculine arms at both sides of my waist, embracing me, enveloping us.

"'Di siya mawawala, Law. Hindi naman kita iiwan," I said, resting my hand on his nape. "Hindi kami mawawala."

Akala ko ay may magsasalita pa siya dahil ramdam ko ang pagbuga niya ng mainit na hangin sa kanyang bibig pero hindi na siya nagsalita.

Marahan niyang dinampi ang kanyang mamasa-masang mga labi sa malaking tiyan ko, umaangat ang kanyang mga halik, labi mula sa tiyan ko patungo sa gitnang bahagi ng dibdib ko.

Patiently, I waited for him and watch him glided his lips against my skin. Closing my eyes shut, I tilted my chin up, feeling his hot and burning lips, marking me, I let out a soft moan when he came across my chest and now he was aiming for the middle part of my neck. I gave him the access of my neck since my chin was held up, until he reached my jaw and claimed my lips.

In an unaggressive way, he kissed me gently, nibbling and biting my bottom lip slowly. He slide his tongue out on my lips in a few times as I returned the kiss.

Agad na kumapit ang mga braso ko sa kanyang leeg at mas lalong pinalalim at pina-init ang paghahalikan namin. Marahang naglalaban ang aming mga dila nang nagpumilit siyang ipasok iyon sa bibig ko.

He was tasting every inch of my mouth like it was his favorite flavor of lollipop to lick and savour. I ended the kiss with a gentle push on his broad and bare chest.

Panting, I tried to catch my breath from that long and sweet french kiss. Law didn't actually pulled himself away from me to give me a little distance, he rested his forehead on mine instead as we both inhaled the same air.

"This is my arms, and you're in it," he said, tightening his hold around my waist. Those dark eyes were glistening with happiness that had been very intimidating for

years. "Do you understand, little girl?"

"I understand, Law," I answered, caressing my palm against his tensed jaw.

Malumanay ang kanyang mga mata habang nakatitig sa akin bago siya bahagyang lumayo at hinalikan ang noo ko. Isang matagal at matamis na halik sa noo ko.

"Anong gusto mo'ng suotin?" he went across the room to the closet and all that I could do right at this moment was to watch his perfect shape of bare butt as he walk.

I looked away from the sexy view of his butt. "Gusto ko 'yong damit mo."

"Okay, little girl," sabi niya habang abala na siya ngayon sa pamimili ng damit na susuotin namin.

Nang nakapili na siya ay bumalik siya sa kinaroroonan ko rito sa dulo ng kama at tinulungan ulit ako bago niya inasikaso ang kanyang sarili.

Glancing at the bag where he got our things ready for the baby to come out. I smiled to myself and waited the right day.

One week had passed and we were still waiting for the baby 'til he decided when to come out.

Mommy and aunt Lauren had visited me two days ago, I could still come up with the idea that what if they're here to get me? So, I would always give a counterfeit concern for them, and tried to hold back the disingenuous expression on my face.

Despite of the problems that they brought in my life, but with candor I could say that they do have a part of my heart nonetheless.

Yes, and I would thank mommy for her philanthropy that had given Law and I another opportunity and hope to be together. However, daddy's parsimony for his company was just so ultimate that he would keep the Costales to widen his connections for money and who knows what was with them, that resulted why he was pushing Law to date Erich for the sake of the family business' development.

I was just confused. The Fortaleza was as wealthy as the Cavanaugh, why does daddy have so much need for the Costales' business partnership if the Fortaleza could help him more than the Costales could?

Clearing my thoughts, I set my eyes on the television and just watch the show.

Nasa baba ako ng resthouse, nanonood habang abala sa pag-inom ng fresh coconut water. Inakyat pa kaya 'to ni Law kanina sa coconut tree na malapit lang dito sa resthouse niya. Hindi ko nga alam na marunong pala siyang umakyat ng puno, siguro ay natutunan niya 'yon noong nagtatrabaho siya sa hacienda.

Noong mga panahong nagtatrabaho siya sa hacienda ay hindi kami nakapagbakasyon doon dahil sa paglalayas niya pero hindi namin alam magpipinsan sa mga panahong 'yon ay nasa hacienda lang pala si Law.

"Kryptonite? Where's my briefs?" narinig kong tawag ni Law mula sa pangalawang palapag ng resthouse niya. He's in our room. Naligo kasi siya ulit dahil kinakagat ang likod at mga braso niya ng mga langgam kanina nang umakyat siya sa puno.

"Tinago mo na naman ba, little girl?"

Lumingon ako kay Manang Cecelia na naglilinis dito nang narinig kong sumasabay na

pala siya sa pagtawa ko.

"Fine, nasa pinakababang drawer ng nightstand, Law!" sinigurado ko talagang marinig niya ang sinabi ko.

Ilang minuto lang ang nakalipas nang narinig ko na ang pagbaba ni Law.

He was holding his phone before he sat on the long sofa, beside me and put his phone upon the center table.

"Manang, mamaya mo na lang po tapusin 'yan," Law said.

"Oh sige, hijo, may pupuntahan pa kasi ako sandali sa kabilang barangay. Babalik din ako agad," ani Manang Cecelia bago nagpaalam at lumabas ng resthouse.

Tumingin sa akin si Law bago nakasiguradong kaming dalawa na lamang ang nandito.

"Lagot ka sa'kin ngayon," matigas ang kanyang boses at masama ang paraan ng tingin sa akin pero alam ko namang nagbibiro lang siya. "Tinatago mo na naman ang mga brief ko? Ang kulit mo talaga."

"Hindi ko naman tinatago, Law. Nilipat ko lang," kinakabahang pagdadahilan ko at umusog ng konti palayo sa kanya nang mas inilapit niya ang kanyang mukha sa akin.

"You're saying, little girl?" he said before leaning down on the big baby bump and touch it with his one large hand. "Baby, listen to daddy. Your mommy is making fun of daddy again. What are we going to do with her?"

I pursed my lips to refrain myself from laughing.

Para kasi siyang nagsusumbong sa baby at naghahanap ng kakampi.

"Law, I'm not making fun of you," nagpipigil ng tawa na sabi ko.

He opened his mouth and was about to say something but stopped when his phone on the table ring.

Sabay kaming napatingin sa phone at kumunot ang noo ko nang nakita kung sino ang tumatawag.

It's daddy.

Kinuha niya 'yong phone at sinagot ang tawag.

Akala ko ay aalis siya at lalabas para roon na lang sagutin ang tawag pero hindi, nanatili siyang nakaupo sa tabi ko at marahang hinahaplos ang tiyan ko.

I could not hear what daddy was saying from the other line, it was not in loudspeaker.

But from the intimidating expression on Law's face, it was obviously a bad news. I caught his jaw clenched and some rigid cords in his arms were showing, pulsing in what maybe anger.

Hinawakan ko ang kanyang maskuladong braso at kasabay no'n ang paglipat ng kanyang mga mata sa akin. Ang kaninang nagtatagis niyang mga mata ay naging malumanay nang nakita niya ang pag-aalala sa mukha ko.

He relaxed under my touch.

"Fine, dad. Aasikasuhin ko 'yon ngayong araw," Law said firmly on the other line of the call. "Pero hindi rin ako magtatagal diyan. Babalik ako agad."

My gaze followed his hands holding the phone when he ended the call and slid the phone in his pocket. "Anong sabi ni daddy?"

"Don't worry, little girl," tumayo siya at naglakad pabalik sa hagdan. "I'll take care of it. Aalis ako sandali, 'wag kang umalis dito, babalik din ako agad mamayang hapon."

Naguguluhan kong sinundan ng tingin si Law hanggang sa nakaakyat na siya ng hagdan at limang minuto lang siyang nagtagal sa taas nang bumaba siya at bihis na bihis na, dala niya rin ang susi ng kanyang sasakyan.

"Babalik ka sa syudad? Baka gabihin ka, Law? Sama na lang ako, please?" I remained sitting on the sofa because my body felt heavy and I had done exercising, such as walking earlier.

"Hindi pwede, Kryptonite," abala pa siya sa pagsusuot ng kulay itim niyang leather jacket sa harap ko. "Mas magandang dito ka na lang muna, okay? Hintayin mo si Manang Cecelia, babalik din naman siya agad."

"Ano ba kasing aasikasuhin mo? Matatagalan ka ba?" I demanded. "Is it Erich? Gising na ba siya?"

I haven't heard any news from him about Erich. I told him that I overheard daddy talking about Erich and then he explained everything to me, carefully, I understood and what's the big deal with it?

Law seemed like he really doesn't care about Erich. It was like she was the thing that doesn't matter to him.

Natigilan si Law sa pag-aayos ng sarili niya nang dahil sa narinig.

"It's not her," he corrected. "Aunt Lauren, she filed a case against me."

I was stunned. "W-What?"

"Ginagawa nila 'to dahil alam nilang kabuwanan mo ngayon," marahan siyang umupo sa tabi ko at muling hinawakan ang tiyan ko. "Kung hindi ko 'to maaasikaso ngayon. Baka paglabas ng baby ay ilalayo nila kayo sa'kin."

Afraid that I may hear the sadness in his voice, I would cover my ears, but it's too late. I already heard it. I knew that he was doing his very best to make things right, although, everything was right, our parents were just making it all wrong.

"Gusto kong sumama sa'yo, Law. Please? I wanna talk to aunt Lauren," I begged. Convincing him and maybe I could deal with aunt Lauren, my biological mother, with this matter.

"No, little girl. You're safe here," I could see in his eyes the extreme worry. "Magulo do'n at baka ay may mangyari pa sa'yo, ilang oras lang naman akong mawawala. Just stay here, okay? I promise, I'll be back. Stay here..."

Ayoko nang pahirapan siya. Nahihirapan na nga siya tapos dagdagan ko pa? I should understand him, I should let him do whatever he thought was right for us to.

Painfully, I slowly nodded. "O-Okay. I'll stay here for the baby."

"Wait for Manang Cecelia, kung gusto mo'ng kumain ulit, may niluto naman ako sa kusina kanina," paalala niya kahit na bakas pa rin sa kanyang matigas na ekspresyon sa mukha at boses ang sobrang pag-aalala sa isiping maiiwan ako rito mag-isa. "Don't move too much, okay? Baka madulas ka o aksidenteng matamaan ang tiyan mo. 'Wag ka munang umakyat ng hagdan, mamaya na pagdating ko. Naiintindihan mo ba ako, Kryptonite?"

"I understand," sinubukan ko pa siyang pakalmahin mula sa mabilisang pagsasalita sa paraan ng marahan kong boses. "Balik ka agad, Law."

"Babalik naman talaga ako agad, little girl," pinagdikit niya ang mga noo namin at sabay na pinikit ang aking mga mata. Dinadama ang isa't isa. "I love you, I love you and the baby."

Seconds after, he pressed his lips on my baby bump and whispered something before he kissed my forehead and pulled himself up.

I watch him walk to the door of the resthouse.

Parang may kung anong tumutulak at pumipilit sa akin na pigilan siya. Pigilan siyang umalis nang saglit siyang natigilan sa harap ng nakabukas na pinto, akala ko ay lilingon siya pero hindi.

Lumabas siya ng resthouse nang hindi ako nilingon at narinig ko na lang matapos ang ilang minuto ang ingay ng pag-alis ng kanyang sasakyan.

I was kicking out all the bad thoughts on my mind and just sipped my coconut water to calm my nerves.

Pero ilang minuto lang akong nakaupo sa sofa at nanood ng show matapos ang pag-alis ni Law nang napangiwi ako dahil sa kirot na nararamdaman ko sa aking katawan. Madalas naman talagang sumasakit ang likod ko. Cramps at my lower back, lower abdomen and groin.

Ngayon ay parang mas lumala lang.

Huminga ako ng malalim at binuga ang hangin sa bibig para pakalmahin ang sarili nang naramdaman kong parang may bumuga at lumabas na basang kung ano sa pagkababae ko.

"O-Oh my God..." I gasped and noticed the sofa on the area where I was sitting became wet.

I couldn't feel anything when my water broke, it doesn't hurt. What hurt me was the pain at my lower back, lower abdomen and groin.

Grimacing, I tried to stand up but I didn't force myself to when I failed because of the damp feeling on my underwear just made me uncomfortable.

Nakahawak ako sa ibabang bahagi ng likod ko at ang isang kamay ko naman ay nasa ibabang bahagi ng malaking tiyan ko.

"B-Ba't ngayon mo pa naisipang lumabas, baby? Wala pa si daddy mo," sabi ko habang pinapaypayan ang sarili gamit ang isang kamay ko pilit pinapakalma ang sarili mula sa nararamdamang sakit.

Labour, was this the start of labour? I need to calm down and wait for Manang Cecelia to come back.

The doctor told me an information about labour. Something like, the baby was not going to come out immediately the moment that my water breaks. We have to wait for maybe twelve or twenty-four hours.

Kalahating oras na ang nakalipas at hindi man lang nababawasan ang sakit na nararamdaman ko kaya minsan ay napapadaing ako habang nakangiti.

I heard the footsteps from someone coming inside the resthouse from the doorway.

"Hija! Anong nangyari?" it was Manang Cecelia's old yet soft voice, asking me when she took all my appearance.

"M-Manang, pakikuha po 'yong mga gamit sa kwarto," mabigat at malalim na hininga ang ginawa ko habang nagsasalita at maring napapikit. "Samahan mo po ako sa ospital. Manganganak na yata ako..."

"Tatawag lang ako ng masasakyan natin saglit, hija," mabilis na lumabas si Manang Cecelia ulit.

Bumalik siya na kasama ang isang lalaking kasing tanda lang ni daddy, siya siguro ang driver. Umakyat si Manang Cecelia at kinuha na ang bag na hinanda ni Law.

They brought me to the nearest private hospital. May pera naman palang nilagay sa loob ng bag si Law, sobra sobrang pera kaya hindi na namin kailangan pa'ng problemahin ang kung ano ma'ng bayarin.

Carefully and calmly, the doctor checked me and told me that we just have to wait. I waited 'til night, Manang Cecelia was trying to contact Law, but unfortunately, we didn't have any phone to call him.

Manang Cecelia took care of me in the hospital 'til I was ready and really screaming when the pain at my groin, inner thighs, lower back, anywhere near my baby bump went worse and hard to endure.

Inside the delivery room, the doctor and nurses attentively did everything they could do. Guiding me, telling me what I supposed to do, all the must, I obeyed and cooperate with them.

All I want was to give the baby a normal delivery. I was crying like hell as I tried to push the baby out without anyone to hold on but the sheets of the hospital bed.

I was enduring the agonizing pain and after it seemed like half an hour or almost an hour, my head slumped down on the soft pillows. I was currently wearing a surgical disposable hair net and a hospital dress.

Tired but I tried to fight the sleep off me and waited for five minutes just to hear the cry of my baby, yet I couldn't hear anything until the last minutes.

Conscious in what seemed like eight minutes, I still could not hear the cry. My eyelids surrendered and the last thing that I saw, the doctor was trying to revive my baby.

Marahan kong binuksan ang aking mga mata nang naramdaman ko ang konting sinag ng araw na tumatama sa mukha ko.

"You're awake..."

Lumington ako sa tabi ko at umaasang makikita si Law ngunit bumungad sa akin ang

pilit na ngiti sa mga labi ni mommy para takpan ang lungkot sa kanyang mukha.

"Where's my baby? How did you get here, mommy? Where's Law?" sunod-sunod kong tanong nang muli kong inilibot ang aking paningin at nakitang si aunt Lauren, aunt Hannah at aunt Zara lang talaga ang kasama niya.

"Now, calm down, baby," dinaluhan agad kami ni aunt Zara na kanina ay nakaupo sa isang sofa rito. "Your body haven't fully recovered."

"Tinatanong ko po kayo kung nasa'n ang baby ko, can I see him? I wanna see him," iritableng sabi ko at sinubukang umupo mula sa pagkakahiga.

"Kryptonite, calm down, please. Just take a rest," aunt Hannah said with the serenity of her voice.

That just made me more irritated. "Bakit hindi niyo sinasagot ang tanong ko? Gusto kong makita ang anak ko..."

Silent. They were silent for another minute before mommy held my hand and caressed it.

"The baby died," she paused and bit her bottom lip for a second before continuing. "It's a stillborn baby, death at birth. Before you delivered the baby, the doctor checked you up again and found out an undetected heartbeat. Ang sabi ay may heartbeat pa 'yong baby no'ng sinugod ka ni Manang Cecelia rito pero nang sa oras na ng panganganak mo ay 'di na nila mahanap 'yong heartbeat ng baby. They tried to revive the baby, but the baby didn't survive."

"We can have an autopsy of the baby, para malaman natin kung ano ang dahilan ng pagkamatay nito, but mostly ay birth defects," dugtong naman ni aunt Lauren.

I was listening, yes.

Pero hindi ko na talaga napigilan ang mga luhanag nagbabadyang tumulo kanina habang nagpapaliwanag si mommy tungkol sa baby ko.

Sobrang sikip at bigat sa dibdib ang marinig 'yong mga nangyari sa baby ko. Ang hirap tanggapin na parang mas gusto ko na lang paniwalaan ang mga kasinungalingang bumubuo sa isip ko.

Gusto kong paniwalaan ang sarili ko na hindi totoo ang mga sinasabi nila.

Forcing myself to get out of the hospital bed, they tried to stop me.

"L-Let me go, pupuntahan ko ang baby ko," hinawi ko ang kamay ni mommy na pumipigil sa akin. "Please, call Law. I need him, I need him, please."

"I'll call him, just stay here and rest, Kry. It's for your own good," aunt Zara said, picking her phone up and went out of the room.

"Gusto kong makita ang baby ko, please. Hindi totoong wala na siya, hindi 'yan totoo..." hindi na huminto sa pagtulo ang mga luha ko, humihikbi habang nagmamakaawa sa kanila. "P-Please tell me that my baby is not dead! He's not dead!"

Mommy hugged me tightly. Nakikita ko sa mga nanlalabo kong mga mata na si aunt Lauren ay hindi niya man lang nagawang lumapit sa akin. She was just watching us. Mukhang natatakot siyang lumapit dahil baka ay ipagtabuyan ko lang siya.

Alam kong lahat kami ay nasasaktan sa mga nangyari pero ako 'yong mas lalong nasasaktan. Lalo na at wala rito si Law, naalala ko rin ang sinabi niya na kung hindi niya aasikasuhin ang kaso ay baka paglabas ng baby ilalayo nila agad ako kay Law.

Humahagulgol, humihikbi at nanlalabo ang mga nag-iinit na paningin ko, patuloy pa rin ang pagdaosdos ng mga luha ko. Sobrang sikip sa dibdib na kahit ang simpleng paghinga ng hangin ay nahihirapan ako.

"M-My baby is not dead..." I whispered breathlessly.

"Sh... Do you wanna see the baby? Calm down, first, baby. Pupuntahan natin ang baby mo, okay? Huminahon ka muna," pagpapatahan ni mommy sa akin habang mahigpit akong nakayakap sa kanya, sa kanya na nga lang ako kumukuha ng lakas dahil hanggang ngayon ay wala pa rin si Law.

It took me fifteen minutes to calm myself, not that calm, I was still sobbing and the tears were dried on my flushed cheeks. They guided me and brought me to a room where I saw a little thing on top of a little bed. The little thing was covered with white blanket.

Once again, my face was flooded with warm tears and I couldn't even walk closer to where my baby was laying.

Mahihinang hakbang ang tinahak ko palapit sa kinaroroonan ng baby at humagulgol na naman ako nang mabilis kong niyakap 'yon at 'di na ako nag-abalang tignan pa 'yong baby ko dahil alam kong masasaktan lang ako.

Ramdam ko ang maliit at malambot ngunit malamig na katawan nito sa ilalim ng nakatakip na puting kumot.

'Di ko napigilan ang sarili at bahagya akong lumayo para hawiin ang puting kumot na nakatakip doon.

Napatakip na lamang ako sa bibig ko para pigilan ang paghikbi nang nakita ang mahinahong guwapong mukha ng baby ko na parang mahimbing na natutulog lang. Maingat at marahan kong pinadaosdos ang mga daliri ko sa pisngi ng baby habang pinagmamasdan itong nakapikit.

Namumutla, nanlalamig ang kanyang makinis at maputing balat. Muli ko siyang niyakap kahit sa huling pagkakataon man lang ay maramdaman ko siya, dahil kapag nararamdaman ko siya ay parang nararamdaman ko na ring nandito si Law.

"Kryptonite, tahan na, anak," this time, it was aunt Lauren's voice and arms that have embraced me.

And for the very first time, I felt what truly was a mother's embrace. Like how I just embraced my baby.

Lumipat ang paningin ko mula sa baby patungo sa nakabukas na pinto ng kwarto at sa hindi inaasahang pangyayari.

Nakita ko si Law. Nakatayo roon at nakatingin sa baby sa harap ko bago siya tumingin sa akin.

I was expecting him to come inside and hug me. Ang buong akala ko ay lalapitan niya ako, patatahanin at sasamahan pero hindi niya ginawa.

"L-Law..." I called him. Pero hindi siya nakinig.

Limang minuto na kaming nakatayo sa kinaroroonan namin at hinihintay ko lang siyang lumapit sa akin. Pero kahit konting pag-aalala sa kanyang mukha at nakakatakot na mga mata ay 'di ko mahanap.

Bakit pakiramdam ko ay pinagtatabuyan niya ako sa paraan ng pagtitig niya sa akin? Ni hindi siya nagsalita.

Pinunasan ko ang mga luha sa mga pisngi ko at kumawala mula sa pagkakayakap ni aunt Lauren sa akin. I took one step forward to go to him, but to my surprise, I didn't expected the next thing that happened.

Limang pulis ang biglang dumating at hinawakan siya sa magkabilang braso, nagtataka ako nang nakitang hindi man lang nagpumiglas si Law nang pinusasan na siya.

"W-What are you doing to him? Pakawalan niyo siya!" sigaw ko at akmang lalabas ako ngunit agad naman akong pinigilan ni aunt Lauren, aunt, Hannah, aunt Zara at mommy. I snapped my head at them and groaned. "What the hell? Kayo ba ang may pakana nito? Sabihin niyo sa kanila na pakawalan si Law! Wala siyang ginagawang masama!"

"Law Cavanaugh, inaaresto ka namin sa pagkakasalang pang-aabuso at panggagahasa kay Kryptonite Cavanaugh," the other officer announced. "Sa prisinto ka na magpaliwanag."

"No, no! Law! Lumaban ka! Wala ka namang ginagawang masama, 'di ba? Let him go! Wala siyang kasalanan!" I could my voice echoed through the walls of the hospital and Law didn't even tried to fight against the police.

The moment he saw me crying, all that he did was to clenched his jaw and looked away.

Wala akong nagawa nang dinala ng mga pulis si Law at kahit isang salita ay hindi ko narinig sa kanya. Hindi siya nagsalita. Bakit pakiramdam ko ay sumusuko na siya? Pagod na ba siya? Ayaw niya na ba'ng lumaban? Pero bakit ngayon pa?

I lost my baby, and now, I was losing Law.

Anong klaseng pagpapahirap 'to? Kailangan ko pa si Law, tapos iiwan niya ako? Kamamatay pa lang ng baby namin tapos mawawala rin siya?

Regretfully, I should know that what happened between Law and I was not gratuitous. It was never appropriate and good because I was underage and we weren't even married.

A week of hell came into an end without seeing even a glimpse of shadow of Law. After I got my recovery from my labour, they brought me back from Quezon Province to Manila and I requested that I wanted to stay in Law's house, but they insisted that it would be safe for me to stay in the mansion of Fortaleza.

Therewith I refused so, I longed for an environment where I could smell the comforting masculine scent of Law. In that matter, I was determined and wished to stay in the mansion of the Cavanaugh and use Law's room.

Rude how sometimes, or maybe often more when I talked with my aunts, uncles, mommy and daddy, unintentionally, I would answer them with malapropism and sarcasm.

I just didn't like the way they ask me things. It was obvious that I was hurt, and why would they ask? Did they even care a bit? I was not blaming them why the baby, my baby died, but I just couldn't stop myself from thinking that if they didn't

file a case against Law, he would never leave me that time to work for it and make it all right, he would never leave my side, and that just mean there would be a possibility, a chance that the baby would survive.

Hindi ko alam kung kanino ako magagalit. It would be reasonable if I blame myself. It was my body where the baby was, maybe, it was my fault why the baby died.

Kasalanan ko kung bakit nangyari 'yon. Sa mukha pa lang ni Law nang nakita niya 'yong baby, nasasaktan na ako.

It was not miscarriage, it was stillbirth, because miscarriages happens before the twentieth week of the baby.

Hindi nga ako nakunan pero nawala naman 'yong baby ko sa mismong araw ng pagbibigay buhay ko sa kanya.

About the autopsy, I didn't wanna know what was the reason why my baby died. I gave him a peaceful burial because that was the only thing that I knew what was right for him, what he deserve, even if he really deserve life and not death.

Nakatanaw ako sa bintana ng kwarto ni Law ngayon, pinagmamasdan ang maaliwalas na paligid sa labas ng mansyon.

My forehead furrowed when I saw a familiar car went inside the far open gates, it stopped near the stairs of the mansion.

I could feel my heart raced as the door of the car at the driver's side opened and there, I saw Law went out of his car.

Hindi agad ako gumalaw sa kinatatayuan ko habang pinagmamasdan ang mukha ni Law na tila ay bumalik na naman sa dati. 'Yong dating Law na namamalo ng pwet at palaging galit kapag nasangkot na naman ako sa gulo sa school.

Naghintay ako hanggang sa limang minuto ang lumipas ay narinig ko ang pagbukas ng pinto ng kanyang kwarto.

Saka pa ako nagmamadaling lumapit sa kanya nang nakapasok na siya at sinara niya na ang pinto.

Tumulo na naman ang mga luha ko nang sa wakas pagkatapos ng apat na linggong paghihintay sa kanya rito sa mansyon na wala man lang natatanggap na balita tungkol sa kanya ay nakarating na rin siya. Naramdaman ko ang pagsubsob niya sa kanyang mukha sa buhok ko, pababa sa leeg ko nang niyakap niya rin ako.

"I-I'm sorry, Law. I'm so sorry, I lost the baby, I lost him, I lost our only hope..." bulong ko at mas hinigpitan ko pa ang pagkakayakap sa kanya.

"How does it hurt, little girl? Tell me," utos niya at ramdam ko pa ang paghigpit ng pagkakahawak niya sa damit ko. "I wanna know, tell me."

Bakit gusto niya pa'ng malaman? Masasaktan lang din naman siya.

"M-Masakit... Sobra, sobrang sakit, Law," I could not even find the right words to describe how painful it was. "I don't want this."

"Thank you for giving me pain," he whispered against my neck, under his breath. "Do you wanna get this over with?"

Nakapagtataka lang ang mga inaakto ni Law ngayon dahil hindi naman siya ganito

noong
huli ko siyang nakita sa ospital.

"H-How?" tanong ko at marahang lumayo sa kanya para tignan siya sa kanyang mukha.

"Drop on the bed," his intimidating voice was so calm and stern, the way he stared at me could make me quiver under his hardened eyes. "After this, you won't feel the pain anymore."

Was he referring to sexual intercourse? How possible that having sex could lessen the pain?

Four weeks since I gave birth to our baby. I have told from the health care providers about having sex after giving birth. They said that I should wait until four to six weeks after delivery, and I could have sex again. Having sex in one to two weeks after delivery could cause high risk of infection.

It would be safe if I would make love with Law today.

Examining Law's face, I tried to read what was on his mind, but to no trace of any emotions, I gave up and let him remove my clothes when he started to undress me.

Iginiya niya ako patungo sa kanyang kama. Kahit alam kong parang may mali sa inaakto ni Law ay sumunod pa rin ako sa gusto niya. Apat na linggo ko siyang hindi nakita, nahawakan, napakinggan at lahat lahat ng tungkol sa kanya.

Ngayon pa ba ako aayaw na nandito na siya? Pero ang masakit lang ay nasaan siya noong panahong sobra ko siyang kailangan? Hindi ako makapaniwalang hinayaan siyang makulong ni daddy sa loob ng apat na linggo.

Marahan niya akong tinulungang dumapa sa kama bago siya naghubad at agad na pumaibabaw sa akin.

I was mourning for our baby in four weeks, it had remained fresh on my mind and I could never try to forget about it. I was the mother, and it would leave a scar on my heart for a lifetime as long as I was breathing.

Kagaya ng sinabi ni Law ay gusto kong kalimutan ang sakit pero hindi ko kakalimutan ang baby ko.

"Ask me questions, everything that you wanna know about me, little girl," sabi ng matigas na boses ni Law kasabay ng pagpalo niya sa pwet ko. "Lahat sasagutin ko."

"Kinulong ka ba nila?" ang una kong tanong nang naramdaman kong marahan niya nang kinakagat, sinisipsip at dinidilaan ang pwet ko.

"Yes, and I missed you so much, I missed you," he answered with all the honesty in him.

Magtatanong pa sana ako ngunit napalitan 'yon ng hindi inaasahang ungol nang lumipat ang kanyang bibig mula sa pisngi ng pwet ko ay pinadulas niya ang kanyang mainit at basang labi pababa at patungo sa añas ko.

"Ask me more," utos niya at inaabala ang kanyang sarili sa ginagawang medyo marahas at mabilis na paraan ng pag pagdila sa parteng 'yon ng pwet ko.

"Anong-ugh, Law-oh," I couldn't finish what I wanted to ask because his merciless tongue was distracting me.

I grabbed his hair and pulled it upward for a second to make him stop for a moment.

"I told you, don't pull my hair that way, little girl. It's making me horny," he moaned, and continued nibbling my *añus*.

I ignored him. "What happened to Francesca?"

Hindi man lang siya nagulat sa tanong ko at puwersahan pa akong pinahiga mula sa pagkakadapa. He parted my legs and rubbed my *çlit* with his thumb.

Pina-ikot niya ang kanyang hinlalaki sa *çlit* ko. Rubbing it repeatedly while he was staring down at me. Patuloy niyang ginagawa 'yon at binaba ang katawan sa akin. Ngayon ay ang nipple ko na naman ang pinunteryang ng kanyang bibig at dila. Marahang kinakagat 'yon at halos sakop na ng kanyang bibig ang isang buong dibdib ko.

Ginagawa niya 'yon ng sabay at sabay sabay ding pinuno ng kakaibang init na nararamdaman ko ang aking katawan.

"I called her and told her to fuck off," marahas ang kanyang boses nang sinagot niya ang tanong ko. "What else? I want you to ask me, little girl. Ask me."

He licked his lips before kissing mine. Marahas ang kanyang mga labi katulad ng dati pero alam kong sinusubukan niya namang maging marahan sa akin. My back arc when he inserted one finger and added another finger inside me. No'ng una ay dahan-dahan niya 'yong nilabas pasok sa akin pero nang nagtagal at nararamdaman niyang dumudulas na ang kanyang daliri ay saka niya pa binilisan.

"Ugh, ugh! Oh-hm, ah..." abot abot ang pag-ungol ko nang bumaba na naman ang kanyang mga labi mula sa labi ko patungo sa kabilang bahagi ng dibdib ko na hindi niya pa nagagalaw.

Sinubukan kong sumilip sa kanyang baba para tignan ang kanyang pagkalalaki pero hindi na pala kailangan nang naramdaman kong marahan niyang tinatama at hinahaplos ang kanyang sarili sa hita ko.

Matigas na malambot ito, ngunit nakakatakot, nakakatakot ang pagiging matigas nito sa mga oras nito. Halos sampung buwan yatang walang nangyari sa amin.

It was not just Law that have missed me, it was his manhood too. Ang pagiging matigas nito ay hindi pangkaraniwang.

Nanginginig ang katawan ko nang may inilabas ako at bumaba na naman ang kanyang mga labi mula sa dibdib ko, pababa sa tiyan at pagkababae ko.

"Ask me," muli niyang utos at ngayon ay nakadapa na, kaharap ang basang pagkababae ko.

"M-May tinatago ka ba sa akin?" hinihingal pa ako mula sa pinaggagawa niya sa katawan ko pero nagawa ko pa ring magsalita.

"Yes."

Mariin kong kinagat ang pang-ibabang labi ko nang naramdaman ko ang kanyang matangos na ilong na tumatama sa *çlit* ko.

'Yong paghinga ko ay halos 'di ko na mahabol. "W-What is it?"

"I'll answer that after this," kasabay no'n ay mabilis nang sinakop ng kanyang mainit at malambot na dila ang pagkababae ko. Marahan lang naman 'yon, dahan-dahan

na tila ay natatakot siyang baka ay masaktan niya ako.

Pakiramdam ko ay tumitirik na ang mga mata ko nang naramdaman ko ang paraan ng pagdila niya sa pagkababae ko, pinaglalaruan ang clitoris ko habang nilalabas pasok ang kanyang dalawang daliri sa pagkababae ko.

Ang higpit na masyadong ang pagkakahawak ko sa kanyang buhok at bahagya pa'ng umangat ang katawan ko nang dahil sa pagdila at pagsipsip niya sa clitoris ko. Ang ingay pa ng dila niya dahil kung makadila at sipsip siya ay parang humihigop lang ng sabaw.

After fifteen minutes, I had gone through three orgasm before he lifted my feet up and rested the back of my knees on both of his shoulder.

Ramdam ko ang ulo ng kanyang pagkalalaki nang itinatapat niya 'yon sa basang-basang pagkababae ko. He moved the tip of his hard manhood against my feminine part in a circular motion before he slowly and gently thrust it inside me.

That seething sexual desire have reined in our bodies. With a touch, skin contact, I could feel how hot he was.

We were both panting and moaning one another's name, praising each other's body.

"F-Faster, please... Oh-ah. Deeper, Law-ugh..." I moaned.

Naramdaman kong sinagad niya ang pagbayo nang dahil sa sinabi ko, parehong tumatalbog ang katawan namin sa kanyang malambot at malaking kama.

Abala naman siya sa paulit-ulit at palipat-lipat na paghalik sa panga at labi ko habang lalo niyang binibilisan at mas nilaliman ang paghuhukay sa pagkababae ko.

But when we both came, I wonder why he didn't released it inside me. Then I realized and felt the bed, wet with something white and sticky.

Tama nga siya, saglit na nawala ang sakit na nararamdaman ko sa limang beses na ginawa namin. Kahit sa pagligo ay may pahabol pa siya bago siya naunang natapos dahil ang sabi niya ay papalitan niya lang daw muna ang sheets ng kama.

Hindi na rin naman ako nagtanong sa kanya tungkol sa nangyari at kung bakit gano'n ang ginawa niya.

Pinagbihis niya ako ng panglakad na damit at nakakapagtaka lang dahil ang suot niya ay isang simpleng kulay puting tee shirt lang at kulay dark brown na shorts.

"Di ba gusto mo'ng tumira mag-isa sa sarili mo'ng condo sa ibang bansa? You wanna be independent, right? That's your dream," sabi ni Law habang nilalaro ng kanyang mga daliri ang mga daliri ko. "You told dad about that."

Nakasandal siya ngayon sa headrest ng kama, his strong legs were parted and I was sitting on the space between it. Nakasandal ako sa kanyang matigas na tiyan at gano'n din ang ulo ko sa kanyang malapad na dibdib.

Mahigpit niyang hawak ang isang kamay ko habang nakapaibabaw 'yon sa kanyang hita, ang kanyang isang braso naman ay mahigpit na nakapalibot sa tiyan ko.

Naramdaman ko ang pagsandal ng kanyang noo sa balikat ko, binura ko sa aking isip ang lahat ng mga posibilidad na maaaring mangyari ngayon. Baka naman ay mali lang ang iniisip ko.

We were in this position in almost an hour, telling everything we wanted to tell. Asking questions, kissing, feeling his heart beating against my back.

"If dreaming of it means leaving you, then I would never dream of it again," I worded the thoughts on my mind.

"But it's your dream, little girl," giit niya habang nanatiling nakasandal ang noo sa balikat ko. "I want you to reach your dreams."

"No, I won't without you," my voice was husky.

Hindi siya nagsalita nang inangat niya ang kanyang tingin sa akin bago inilipat ang kanyang tingin sa wall clock dito.

"May gusto akong puntahan, little girl. Come with me," aniya habang matipid na nakangiti matapos niyang nakita ang oras.

What was with the time? It's just three in the afternoon.

"Saan?" naniniguradong tanong ko.

"Samahan mo na lang ako," sabi ng matigas niyang boses at tinulungan akong bumaba ng kama saka lumabas ng kwarto.

Halos apag na linggo na rin akong nagkulong sa loob ng kwarto ni Law at lumalabas lang ako kapag gugustuhin ko.

Wala nang kasing higpit pa ang pagkakahawak niya sa bewang ko ngayon at ang paulit-ulit niyang paghalik sa gilid na bahagi ng noo ko habang naglalakad kami sa hagdan ng mansyon pababa.

Nang nakababa kami ay nagtaka ako nang nakitang nandito sila mommy at daddy, ang akala ko kasi ay may trabaho sila.

Aunt Lauren was here too.

Humakbang ako paatras nang lumapit si daddy at aunt Lauren sa akin.

"Kayo na ang bahala sa kanya," narinig kong sabi ng nakakatakot at malalim na boses ni Law nang huli niyang hinalikan ang noo ko at binitiwang ako.

"Law? Anong ibig sabihin nito? Law!" sigaw ko nang agad akong nahawakan ni daddy at hinila palayo kay Law. "Law, akala ko ba may gusto kang puntahan? Anong ibig sabihin nito? Sagutin mo ang tanong ko!"

"This is the answer to your last question earlier, little girl," bakas ang matinding galit sa kanyang mukha pero pinipilit niya naman 'yong tinatago.

Ito? Ito ang tinatago niya mula sa akin?

"Law, 'wag mo namang gawin sa'kin 'to, parang awa mo naman oh. I don't want to leave you. Akala ko ba ay natatakot kang iwan kita? Bakit ngayon ay ikaw na mismo ang nagpapaalis sa'kin?" bakas sa boses ko ang matinding sakit na nararamdaman ko, kasing tindi ng nararamdaman niyang galit.

"Ginagawa ko 'to para sa'yo—"

"Para sa'kin na naman? Hindi ba puwedeng manatili ako rito para sa'yo? Law, pag-isipan mo ulit! Gusto kong pag-isipan mo ulit!" I exploded. Ang hirap pigilan ng

galit.

Nagpumiglas ako mula sa pagkakahawak ni daddy sa akin pero hindi niya naman ako binitiwang kaya marahas kong muling sinalubong ang nakakatakot na tingin ni Law

"A-Ayaw mo na ba sa'kin? Hindi mo na ba ako mahal?" nanginginig ang boses ko sa gitna ng pagsasalita.

"Ayoko na sa'yo at hindi naman talaga kita minahal," his hardened voice was so merciless that the words cut through my chest.

Hindi ko alam kung kakayanin ko ba ulit ang sakit katulad ng sakit noong araw na nawala 'yong baby namin.

"Y-You're lying," umiiling kong sabi.

"Just leave, Kryptonite."

"You're lying!" sigaw ko na umalingawngaw pa sa buong bulwagan ng mansyon. "Sabihin mo ang totoo, Law!"

Hindi ko namalayan ang mainit na luhanang kanina pa pala tumutulo sa pisngi ko, napagtanto ko lang na umiiyak ako nang nanlabo ang paningin ko at umiinit ang sulok ng aking mga mata.

I saw how he clenched his fist like he was refraining something inside him, his jaw tensed and his eyes hardened more.

"Fuck! Fine! I love you and I will always want you!" pagbawi niya at alam kong kahit ang mga katulong sa malayo ay narinig ang marahas na pagsigaw niya, agad din namang lumambot ang ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha at napalitan ang galit ng mas matinding sakit. "Ginagawa ko 'to dahil gusto kong ayusin ang lahat. Aayusin ko lahat lahat, Kryptonite. Lahat. Dahil sirang-sira na ako, ubos na ang lahat sa'kin, naibigay ko na lahat sa'yo."

"W-What about me?" nanghihina ang boses ko na parang kahit ako ay 'di ko na narinig 'yon.

"Live in Florida for me, little girl."

"Pero hindi 'yon ang gusto ko, Law..." sinubukan kong humakbang palapit sa kanya nang unti-unting lumuluwag ang pagkakahawak sa akin ni daddy. "Samahan mo'ko."

"Is that what you really want?"

"Yes."

Ilang segundo pa bago siya nakasagot.

"Okay," he said.

Daddy released me and I immediately ran to hugged Law.

Aunt Lauren, mommy and daddy guided us outside of the mansion and got us inside an expensive car. Not Law's car.

There was a driver and I was confident enough that Law would come with me to Florida because aunt Lauren and the rest of them just stayed in the mansion.

Kaming dalawa lang ni Law ang magkasama ngayon patungo sa airport.

He intertwined our hands. We were at the backseat and I just noticed the luggages at the back of the car. I asked Law about his things and he told me it doesn't matter anymore, he had money to buy his own things in Florida.

Nang nakarating na kami sa airport ay hindi man lang siya sinita ng guard nang dumaan kami sa isang daan kung saan walang taong dumadaan sa parte nito ng airport, wala ring pinakitang passport si Law at 'yong mga dala naming gamit ay dala na ng driver kanina na bigla na lang nawala sa paningin ko.

Sa oras na nakalabas kami ng airport ay kitang-kita ko ang runway sa 'di kalayuan pero isa lang talaga ang nakakuha ng atensyon ko.

A private plane not that far from us was waiting.

"Let's go, little girl," marahan pa'ng tinulak ni Law ang beywang ko para muling maglakad.

Habang nauna akong umakyat ng eroplano ay nilingon ko si Law kung nakasunod pa ba siya sa akin. Huminga ako ng malalim nang nakita kong nakasunod pa naman siya sa akin.

Pero mas nagulat ako sa bumungad sa akin sa loob ng eroplano.

"You're here," Rule said as he stood up from his seat and walked his way toward me.

"Rule? What are you doing here?" naguguluhang tanong ko habang magkasalubong ang mga kilay.

Rule ignored my question and turned to Law behind me. "Makakaalis ka na, Law."

"Makakaalis? Sasama siya sa'kin," ayokong magalit sa kanya dahil naging mabuti naman siya sa akin.

I just didn't like the way he talked to Law.

"Do me a favor, Rule," lumingon ako kay Law nang siya naman ang nagsalita. "Take care of my little girl."

Sumama ang timpla ng ekspresyon ko sa mukha nang umatras si Law. Akmang lalapitan ko na sana siya ngunit 'di ako nagtagumpay nang mabilis na humarang si Rule sa dinadaan ko.

"Ano ba! Bitiwan mo'ko!" pinaghahampas ko na ang dibdib ni Rule nang hindi siya umalis sa dinadaan ko. "Rule, please. I'm begging you, please, let me go."

"I can't, Kryptonite," sa kasamaang palad ay humigpit lang lalo ang pagkakahawak ni Rule sa likod ko.

Tumingin ako sa balikat ni Rule at nakitang tumalikod na si Law, naglalakad na pabalik sa pinto ng eroplano kung saan kami pumasok.

"Law! Isama mo na lang ako..." I called him and luckily, he stopped, but he didn't look back. "Gusto kong sumama sa'yo. Isama mo na lang ako, nagmamakaawa ako sa'yo, Law..."

May sinabi si Law dahilan kung bakit nagawa kong nang magwala mula sa pagkakahawak ni Rule sa akin. Pisikal ko nang sinasaktan si Rule para bitiwan niya ako.

No'ng una ay humihikbi lang ako nang nasaksihan ko ang paglabas ni Law, humahagulgol na ako sa sobrang pagsikip ng dibdib ko at tila ay may bumara sa lalamunan ko nang sumara ang pinto ng eroplano ay saka pa ako binitiwang ni Rule.

Tinakbo ko ang masikip na daan patungo sa nakasarang pinto at pinagsusuntok 'yon hanggang sa namula ang mga kamay ko.

Hindi ko na nga naririnig ang mga sinasabi ng isang flight attendant dito dahil ang tanging naririnig ko lang ay ang pag-iyak ko.

Sinusubukan akong pigilan ni Rule dahil sa sinasaktan ko na rin ang sarili ko sa paraan ng pagpupumilit na lumabas ng eroplano.

I gave up and pushed Rule out of the way. I found a seat near the window and look out of it.

From the outside, I saw Law from a far, standing straight and waiting for the plane to leave.

Pinagsusuntok ko na naman ang bintana kahit na alam kong hindi ko naman ito masisira. Hindi na huminto ang pagbuhos ng luha ko nang nakita kong kanina pa pala mariin nakatitig sa akin si Law.

I was shouting even if he couldn't hear me, I was begging even if it was useless, I was asking for him to come back and get me out of this plane even if it was impossible.

Before the plane took off. The words that Law said to me keep on repeating on my mind and it only hurt me more.

"Just forget that you love me, little girl. Kahit ikaw ang mahal ko ay alam kong iba naman ang pakakasalan ko."

Chapter 42

Fiance

Since it was summer, I was currently at Sanibel Island in the best and expensive resort. Wearing my halter triangle tie side bikini swimsuit under the sunlounger umbrella, where I was laying, relaxing on the luxurious beach sunlounger.

I pulled up my sunglasses when someone blocked the view in front of me.

"You should stop wearing that," sabi ng istriktong boses na 'yon.

"Rule, calm down," I rolled my eyes and pulled my sunglasses back down to cover my eyes. I snorted when he didn't budge and remained where he was standing tall, blocking the nice view. "Are you out of your mind? Of course I should wear this, we're in Florida. It's normal to wear sexy bikini swimsuits. Besides, I want anyone to see my body, I've been hurting my ass working out and what? Masasayang ang pinaghirapan kong pagpaganda ng katawan ko kung 'di ko naman ipapakita."

"Let's go, snorkeling!" I heard Savannah's voice from the group of people near us. She's the most hyper cousin I've ever had.

"Rule? Gabriela is calling," Hugo said, walking toward us. "Should I decline the call?"

"Yeah, I'm busy here," sang-ayon ni Rule at tinapunan pa ako ng masamang tingin.

Gabriela was his sexy and gorgeous blonde ex girlfriend, their relationship lasted for one year and seven months. He broke up with her because she was complaining about time, Rule had always given me his time, she got really jealous even if she already know that we're just cousins.

Wala sa sariling napangiti ako. "Hugo, can you apply that sunscreen on my back? Can't really reach it. Mukhang galit kasi si Rule sa'kin."

Usually, I always ask Rule to apply it at my back. Pero ngayon ay parang ang sarap niyang galitin lalo. Today, I asked Hugo, one of our male cousin, Savannah's older brother. Marami naman silang lalaking Fortaleza, 'yong kalahati ay may lahi, 'yong iba nga lang ay abala sa paghahanap ng magandang dilag dito. Hindi ko alam kung nasa'n nagpunta.

"No problem," akmang kukunin na ni Hugo ang sunscreen ngunit 'di niya natuloy nang hinablot ni Rule ang sunscreen.

"Ako na," Rule said, giving Hugo a stern look.

Natatawang inangat ni Hugo ang kanyang magkabilang kamay. A sign that he didn't want a fight. Hugo is one year older than Rule, mas madalas nga lang nakakatakot si Rule, pero kapag si Hugo naman ang magalit ay kahit isa sa aming magpipinsan ay walang susubok na makipag-usap sa isang galit na Fortaleza.

Umupo ako ng maayos at kinuha ko ang puting towel na nakasampay sa maskuladong balikat ni Rule, I covered my chest with the towel as I turned my back at Rule.

I felt his strong fingers untied the thin straps at my back and placed it at the side before he started to apply the sunscreen on it.

One month ago, Savannah captured a photo of me, wearing a kind of bikini swimsuit that would show off very much of my skin and uploaded it on social media. I didn't mind anyway, but the reactions and comments from the Cavanaugh cousins made me want to delete the photo.

They had no idea that I was no longer a Cavanaugh. My biological mom along with Zacharias and Ysa Cavanaugh took care of everything back in the Philippines two years ago. I had no legal guardian anymore. Lolo and Lola accepted me with open arms. I met my real father with his own family and welcomed me wholeheartedly, my father was the older brother of Rule's father, he had given me a gift at my eighteenth birthday, a condo and a brand new car.

I just turned nineteen last week and got an unexpected call from someone that I would never liked to talk to. The phone call from Philippines to Florida was just so inexpensive for a man as wealthy and had overloaded money in his bank account. I just wondered why he had the guts to call me.

His name here was banned, no one would dare to mention it in front of me.

Who wouldn't be feel angry at him? Pinagtabuyan niya ako, hinatid pa mismo sa loob ng eroplano.

Although, I could clearly understand his point. He just wanted me to have a life, the life that I wanted before I admitted to myself and confessed my love for him. But why would he have to push me away? Told me that even if I was the one that he love, he knows that he would marry anyone but not me.

Nang natapos si Rule sa pinapagawa ko sa kanya ay saka naman ang pagdating ng ibang pinsan namin.

"Pissed off," ang unang narinig ko mula kay Kuya Gage habang kasabay sa paglalakad ang pinsan naming si Kuya Adam. "Easy to get. Gusto ko 'yong babaeng papahirapan ako."

"Gagong Gage," tukso naman ni Kuya Adam.

"Bastos talaga ang mga babae rito, bigla na lang manghahalik," sabat ni Moises at napasuklay pa sa kanyang kulay brown na buhok na parang sobrang stress siya sa mga nangyari sa kanya sabay kagat sa mapupulang pang-ibabang labi.

"Mason, Matthias, dude, have you seen my phone? Fuck," Kuya Sergio said, kinakapa niya pa ang bulsa ng kanyang suot.

Silang anim ay naglalakad na parang mga modelo. Lahat sila ay walang suot na pangitaas kaya ay tambad ang magandang hubog ng kanilang katawan. They influenced me about working out and diet, body fitness and much more.

Nakita ko sa 'di kalayuan si Savannah na kasama na sila Zuri at Ari, papalapit na rin dito, at tila ay magyayaya na namang mag-snorkeling.

"Calliope, are you in for a spa?" I heard Ate Prom's voice asking Ate Calliope at the other sunlounger near us.

Already mentioned that Hugo and Savannah were siblings, their father was the younger brother of Rule's father. Si Adam at Zuri ay magkapatid din, Adam was the eldest, their mother was a Fortaleza, pinsan ng mama ko. Magkapatid din sila Calliope, Sergio at Gage. Si Calliope 'yong tipo ng nakakatandang kapatid na sobrang suplada, si Gage 'yong bunso.

Mason, Matthias at Moises, magkapatid din, kapatid ko sila sa ama na siyang nakakatandang kapatid ng ama ni Rule. Nakakainis lang dahil naaalala ko ang mga Cavanaugh sa kanila. Then lastly, Promise or most commonly called as Prom, Rule and Ari were siblings. Magkaedad lang sila Ate Prom at Calliope.

Dito ay hindi sila sanay na tawagin ang mga nakakatanda na ate o kuya. Mas nasanay silang tawagin ang mga nakakatanda sa pangalan lang.

Kunot noo kong sinundan ng tingin si Kuya Mason nang naglakad siya palayo at may kausap sa phone.

All the Fortaleza cousins gathered around when someone from the resort served us our snacks. Kuya Mason came back after three minutes and went to my side.

"Someone wants to talk to you," bulong nito saka inilapag ang kanyang phone sa hita ko. "Gusto niya lang daw marinig ang boses mo."

Sa kabila ng tawanan at biruan ng mga Fortaleza rito ay napagdesisyunan kong umalis nang hindi nila namamalayan para sagutin ang tawag.

Sinagot ko lang ang tawag sa ilalim ng isang puno rito kung saan ay walang

makakarinig at malayo sa mga pinsan ko kahit na may iilang amerikano o 'di kaya'y foreigner din mula sa ibang bansa ang minsan ay sumusulyap sa direksyon ko sabay pinasadahan ng tingin ang katawan ko.

"Hello?" I said, though I had an idea who's on the other line, but I didn't hear anything in return after two minutes of waiting. "Who's this?"

Irritated because after another minute, still, I could not hear any response. I was about to end the call, but stopped by a familiar intimidating and hardened voice came from the phone.

"Bumalik ka na," kahit sa phone o kahit dalawang taon ko nang hindi naririnig ang kanyang boses ay lalo lang itong naging katakot-takot sa pandinig ko.

And I was not afraid of that voice anymore.

Wala akong naging balita kung ano ang nangyari sa kanya sa loob ng dalawang taon at 'yon ang dahilan kung bakit nag-iba ang nararamdaman ko.

For the past years, in five months after the day that he fooled me, and told me that he was going to come with me here in Florida, just like that he left me inside the airplane, in that five months I tried to contact him, try to have a little connection and communication with him.

Bitterly, the moment that I could almost reach him, contact and have a quick conversation with him two years ago. He declined it, and I felt rejected.

Could anyone blame me why I was declining his call since last month that he started to contact me? No one, of course.

"Bumalik? Pinapabalik mo na ako ngayon?" sobrang bilis ng pagtibok ng puso ko. "I'm sorry, but I don't wanna leave my life here."

"Kryptonite," I could hear the warn in his voice, and I knew that he's trying to control me again.

"I gotta end this call now. Baka magselos ang boyfriend ko, kung sinu-sino na lang ang tumatawag sa'kin," malumanay ang boses ko nang sinabi ko ang mga salitang 'yon. "Bye."

Hindi ko na siya pinagsalita pa at binabaan ko na siya agad.

Actually, I didn't have a boyfriend. I said that just to get rid of him because I could not risk my feelings anymore, I didn't know why but after two years of not hearing his intimidating voice, it just made me missed it more and craved for it to hear.

Bumalik na ako sa mga pinsan kong nagkakatuwaan at ibinalik na kay Kuya Mason ang phone niya.

"Ang sexy na ng baby girl natin, Gage oh. Sabi ko sa'yo eh, magkaka-boobs ka rin," Moises winked at me as they inspected my body. "Just work out."

"Sexy na siya, 'di niya na kailangang mag-work out, Moises," pagsingit naman ng seryoso at istriktong boses ni Rule na siyang laging nagpapaalala sa akin sa lalaking tumawag kanina lang.

"Bukas na pala ang alis namin ni Prom, we're going back to the Philippines for businesses," kumuha si Ate Calliope ng nachos saka kinain bago nagsalita ulit.

"This is just a two weeks vacation for us, anyway, Kry, I love your cooking skills, Lolo and Lola is so proud of you. 'Di ko talaga pinagsisihang piliin 'yong culinary school na 'yon para sa'yo."

"Thank you, ate," I said and took a piece of nachos too.

I took Culinary Arts after graduating high school. I just thought that if I wanted to live alone in my own condo, I need to learn how to cook for myself first and not that I always got to eat unhealthy foods

such as noodles in cup, canned goods, order a pizza and burger to deliver it at home. I could fry an egg, hotdog and any breakfast delights, that's just the basics and easy, but what about the other dishes? I wanna learn for myself and for my own everyday satisfaction.

Habitually, I cooked healthy foods that contain vegetables. People here somewhat wanted to remain their body fitness, vegetables would be nice for diet and fasting.

After two days, all of us came back home to Miami from Sanibel Island.

Morning came, I tied my hair in a messy bun and didn't even bother to take a tee shirt from my wardrobe.

Nakasuot lang ako ng nude coloured na booty shorts, 'yong shorts na sobrang iksi. Kapag natutulog kasi ako ay hindi na ako nagsusuot ng pangitaas na damit, dahil paggising ko ay magluluto rin naman ako agad.

Which I had the advantage because I didn't wanna have a stain on my pyjamas whenever I cook, so I would rather wear nothing when I sleep, and woke up with nothing. It would be a waste of time if I would wash or sometimes go to a laundry shop if I was too busy to wash my own clothes, that was why I would wash my clothes every weekend if I have time, since I have the equipment to wash my clothes.

My average size of boobs were currently on display when I went to the kitchen and wore a black apron.

Natakpan din naman ang boobs ko nang dahil sa apron, hindi naman siya gano'n kalaki katulad ng sa mga pornstars pero sapat na naman na ang laki nito. Ang importante may nipple.

I started working in the kitchen for my breakfast.

Kumunot ang noo ko nang narinig ang pagbukas ng pinto sa labas. Umiling na lamang ako dahil alam kong si Rule lang naman ang madalas na bumibisita at pumapasok sa condo nang hindi nagdodoorbell, I gave him the passcode of my condo, kaya malaya siyang nakakapasok. Nakakapagtaka lang dahil umaga pa, hapon o gabi kasi siya madalas na pumupunta rito.

Abala ako sa paghihiwa ng onion at nakatalikod mula sa pinto ng kitchen nang narinig ko ang mga yabag ng mga paang huminto roon.

"Rule, why so early? May lakad pa ako with dad and Kuya Mason mamayang lunch, feeling ko, pag-uusapan namin 'yong tungkol sa fiancé ko," sabi ko habang pokus sa paghihiwa at ni hindi ko na siya nilingon. "I'm just nineteen, Rule. Siguro ay papayag ako pero makikipaghiwalay din kapag tapos na 'yong kontrata."

Nagsalubong ang mga kilay ko nang matapos ang ilang minutong pagsasalita ko ay wala pa rin akong nakuhang sagot mula sa kausap ko.

Rule was a silent person, but he usually give a comment if he see or hear something

inappropriate to his eyes and ear.

Just for example, my appearance at the very moment. I knew that he could shape my butt and bare back right now.

Huminto ako sa paghihiwa at lumingon, ngunit pakiramdam ko ay bigla akong naubusan ng dugo sa mukha nang bumungad sa akin ang hindi inaasahang taong pupunta rito.

Tinignan ko siya mula ulo hanggang paa kung totoo ba talaga siya.

He was wearing a formal attire. Parang galing lang sa opisina.

Umiwas ako ng tingin nang muli kong naramdaman at naalala ang lahat ng sakit na nangyari noon. Ramdam ko ang pagkirot ng puso ko at ang marahang pagsikip ng dibdib ko.

Ang pagkamatay ng baby ko at ang pagpapaalis niya sa akin. Lahat ng 'yon ay mag-isa kong nilabanan at tumayo ulit mula sa pagkakadapa at pagkasubsob sa walang hangganang sakit.

Nang binalik ko ang tingin sa kaniyang mga naninigas at umaapoy sa init na mga matang nakatitig sa katawan ko ay 'di ko rin naman napigilan ang nanunuyang tipid na ngiti sa mga labi ko.

Ang daming nagbago sa kanya, lalo na ang kanyang pangangatawan na mas naging maskulado.

His addictive sex appeal could catch every women's attention in the whole city.

Biting my bottom lip while observing him, I let go of my lip and stood up properly. "What are you here for?"

Hindi ko talaga alam kung anong sasabihin ko at kung sa anong paraan ko siya pakikitunguhan.

I thought I was mature enough to handle this kind of confrontation and conversation with the man I used to love. Until now, I wanted to scold my heart and mind why, why the love didn't even lessen a bit. The more distance that we've been away for two years, the more it held strong in me that it was still him.

To the hell with it, I would never admit and confess to him that matter of fact.

Hindi naman ako natatakot sa kanya, siya naman ang may gusto nito. Ang iwan ko siya kaya bakit naman ako matatakot sa kanya? May maipagmamalaki na ako.

Luckily, I was not that Kryptonite two years ago. Weak and easy to manipulate.

"Who's your boyfriend?" ang unang sinabi niya, walang pinagkaiba ang boses ngunit mas naging matigas at marahas lang ito sa pandinig ko. "Break up with him."

I was seventeen and he was twenty-four when I came here in Florida. I was nineteen and he was twenty six, and he's acting like the strict older brother that I had before.

Kung makapagsalita siya ay parang walang nangyari sa amin noon. May concern pa siya sa sinabi ko sa kanya noong dalawang araw sa tawag.

Baka nga ay may sariling pamilya na siya ngayon. Hindi ako makapaniwalang sinabi ko lang na may boyfriend ako ay pumunta siya agad ng Florida? Sana noon ko pa sinabi

'yon para agad siyang pupunta, 'di ba?

Parang mas gusto ko siyang galitin.

"What? Nandito ka ba para diktahan ako? 'Di ba ay kasal ka na?" marahang sabi ko dahil ayokong pagtaasan siya ng boses katulad noon.

"No, I'm not, little girl," nanliit ang kanyang mga mata na parang mariin akong sinusuri.

"Don't call me that," I snapped. "Matagal nang wala ang little girl mo."

"My little girl is here, she's just angry at me," diin niya.

"Umalis ka na, Law," pagtataboy ko sa kanya.

"Hindi ako aalis."

Kumulo ang dugo ko nang dahil sinabi niya at naalala ko rin noon na parang gano'n na rin ang sinabi ko sa kanya. Na hindi ako aalis, hindi ko siya iiwan nang mga panahong pinapaaalis niya ako.

I clenched my fist. "Sana hindi na lang kita minahal, pinagsisisihan kong minahal kita—"

Nawalan ako ng pagkakataong tapusin ang sasabihin ko nang mabilis siyang nakalapit sa akin at ikinulong ako nang ipinuwesto niya ang kanyang mga braso sa magkabilang gilid ko.

"Bawiin mo ang sinabi mo, talagang pagsisisihan mo'ng sinabi mo 'yon," inilapit niya pa ang kanyang mukha sa akin kaya napaatras ako ngunit 'di gano'n kalayo dahil sa kitchen island na nasa likuran ko. "Hindi ka na underage, Kryptonite. Hindi ko na kailangang magpigil pa."

Taas noo kong sinalubong ang kanyang nakakatakot na mga mata habang bahagya akong nakatingala sa kanya dahil sa tangkad niya at siya naman ay nakatungo sa akin.

Umiwas ako ng tingin nang idiniin niya ang kanyang matigas na katawan sa akin dahilan kung bakit naiipit ako sa pagitan ng katawan niya at ng kitchen island sa likuran ko. Nang bumaba ang tingin ko sa aking dibdib ay ramdam kong parang pinipiga ang dibdib ko nang dahil sa sobrang pagdiin ng kanyang matigas na dibdib sa akin.

Buong lakas ko siyang tinulak nang naramdaman ko ang kanyang malaking palad na sumakop sa isang pisngi ng pwet ko. Kasabay ng pagtulak ko sa kanya ay ang marahas na paglapat ng isang palad ko sa kanyang pisngi.

"I won't allow you to hold me like that," I said in a moderate harsh tone of my voice. "Binabastos mo na ako ngayon? Know your place, Mr. Cavanaugh."

Pinanood ko siyang napahawak sa kanyang panga at iginalaw 'yon bago muling tumingin sa akin at inayos ang kanyang medyo nakusot na damit.

"Kryptonite—"

"It's Ms. Fortaleza," I corrected.

Fixing his black tie and moving his head to adjust the tie around his neck under the collar of the white long sleeves shirt covered with black suit, his

intimidating stare pierced through me before he cleared his throat. "Very well, Ms. Fortaleza. I should go, I have an appointment with your half brother, Matthias."

"Wait," pagtigil ko sa kanya nang nagsimula na siyang maglakad palabas ng kusina. "Are you leaving Florida after?"

He stopped, but he didn't turned to face me.

"Sinusundo kita, kaya bakit ako aalis nang hindi ka kasama?" seryosong sabi niya habang nanatili pa ring nakatalikod. "Break up with your boyfriend, Ms. Fortaleza. Ayokong mamatay sa selos."

The last statement that he said made me silent and the last thing that I hear, was the noise from the door closing.

Inimical reactions on my mind faded. For some reasons and rationales, unwelcome thoughts disrupted my mind that have been thinking critically and practically for so long since the day that he rejected all my calls.

Hurriedly, I went back to my room and left the work that I started in the kitchen.

Law was not the apparent person who would express his feelings through an ambiguous expression on his face. He would say it to me straightforwardly.

Preparing myself for lunch with dad and Kuya Mason in a fine restaurant, and didn't even get to eat my breakfast because of Law's unexpected arrival, I wore my white coloured off the shoulder top and black pencil skirt paired with nude coloured high heels. I tied my hair in a clean pattern of ponytail.

I used to talk formally with the other business magnates and chief executive officer of some known companies because I've been in several formal parties, engagement parties, birthday parties, business parties and so on, our Lolo and Lola would introduce me along with my biological dad.

Gladly, they accepted me.

Hindi sila nahihiyang ipakilala ako bilang anak ng magpinsang Fortaleza. 'Yong iba ay gulat at may iba namang humahanga dahil hindi 'yon naging dahilan at iskandalo sa pamilya namin.

When would Law come and visit me, again? I wonder how did he know what was the passcode of my condo.

Nang nakarating ako sa sinasabing restaurant ng dad at Kuya Mason ko ay pumasok ako.

I was walking with all the glory that I had when I greeted back the receptionist. With my head held high, chest out and stomach in, I wouldn't be lazy as to walk like I was carrying some heavy things on my back, like the hunchback of Notre Dame. The Fortaleza raised me in such a manner that a lady would have.

A personable and congenial young lady. At least, I could call myself a lady now, a lady with dignity and class.

"Baby, I just want to inform you about your fiance," dad started after three servers served our lunch. "Nakarating na siya kahapon. Your Lolo and Lola invited him over for a dinner."

"Another businessman to deal with, dad? May I know him? It's been last month since you told me about my fiancée," I chuckled gracefully and took the serviette folded properly on top of the clean white plate to place it on my lap. "I hope that he's young and handsome. Well, I've met several businessmen and quite seventy percent of them were old men."

Natawa rin si dad nang dahil sa sinabi ko, and it was a matter of fact. Madalas sa mga businessman ay matatanda at gurang na.

"He's not just a businessman, baby. He's not that young but I can assure you that he's not like those old men that you're referring to. Your fiancée is the son of my business partner," he explained carefully. "Don't worry, you'll meet him later tonight."

I was hesitant. My instinct was pushing me to meet the person that would be soon my husband, but the thought of Law, angry and furious, it made me quiver.

Shifting my gaze from dad to Kuya Mason, I gave my half brother a meaningful smile. "Kuya Mason, have you met my fiancée?"

"Yes," he answered quickly with his deep tone, and one dark brow raised.

I brought my gaze back to dad. "Dad, can I cancel the marriage if I wouldn't like him?"

"Of course, baby," sagot niya sabay tanggap ng isang ballpen na inilahad ng waiter sa kanya at pinirmahan ang hawak ng waiter. "I'll let you choose, but I think that you won't cancel it. You'll like him."

Parang masama ang kutob ko sa sinasabi nilang mapapangasawa ko.

"Nakita niya na ba ako? Or my pictures?" I asked.

"Yes, unfortunately, he have seen those trending photos of you online, wearing a bikini swimsuit," si Kuya Mason ang sumagot dahilan kung bakit nanlamig ako dahil pakiramdam ko ay sinesermonan niya rin ako. "He's a very private person. Kaya hindi niya nagustuhan 'yon. But you're beautiful, baby sister, he would love you."

Naglagay ako ng mga pagkain sa pinggan ko, 'yong sa tingin ko ay magugustuhan ko.

"He's discouraged? Is that a bad news? I think it's a good news to me," I let out a nervous laugh. "What's with you men nowadays? We're in Florida, it's normal to wear sexy bikini in the beach."

Dapat ay makisabay ako sa mga kababaihan dito. Normal lang naman kasi ang magsuot ng gano'ng bikini.

"As I've said, he's a very private person, and you're surrounded with men, we're just protecting you, baby sister," kahit sa kabila ng pagiging pormal ni Kuya Mason ay ramdam ko talaga ang concern na binibigay niya sa akin.

"Now, I'm curious who this man is," I couldn't stop my lips from pouting a bit. "Dad, I'm nervous. Feeling ko masama ang ugali ng fiancée ko."

"You're my daughter. Ikaw lang ang babaeng anak ko tapos ipapakasal pa kita sa masamang lalaki? No, baby, just trust me. He's a good man," ani dad. "Let's eat?"

Nagsimula na kaming kumain pero habang kumakain kami at nag-uusap tungkol sa mga business, upcoming events, at mga relatives ay 'di ko pa rin talaga maiwasang

isipin ang tungkol sa fiance ko. Lalo na si Law na alam kong may appointment with Kuya Matthias.

Mas matanda sa akin ang tatlong lalaki kaya ibig sabihin lang no'n ay hindi lang pala si mom ang may kasalanan. Daddy also cheated from his wife.

He told me their story, and he didn't wanna see my mom, Lauren Cavanaugh, again.

Gustavo Fortaleza, dad had this powerful thing toward mom since they became high school together, they had a relationship and kept it a secret.

Pero si dad na ang lumayo nang talagang napagtanto niyang hindi tama ang kanilang ginagawa. They married someone else and forgot about their past. Sa kasamaang palad ay akala ni dad na wala na siyang nararamdaman para kay mom kaya bumalik si dad sa Pilipinas, at sa hindi inaasahang pangyayari, hindi niya napigilan ang kanyang sarili.

Hanggang ngayon ay nagmamahalan pa rin sila kahit 'di sila ang nagkatuluyan o nagkikita, kahit hindi nila inaamin ay 'yon ang nararamdaman ko sa tuwing nagkukuwento si dad tungkol sa high school days nila ni mom, siguro ay minabuti nilang hindi magkita ulit dahil baka ay masundan ako. Ang sabi kasi ni mommy ay nineteen years na silang hindi nagkikita.

Dad told me that he love his wife, also mom told me that she love uncle Augustus. What tragedy of their hearts happened was their greatest love.

Right after lunch with dad and Kuya Mason, I went to the mall to buy a nice dress for the dinner. I was told that my unknown fiance would be at Lolo and Lola's residence by seven sharp.

In front of the mirror here in my room, I was looking and examining my reflection.

Wearing a black strapless v-wire bodycon dress, paired with another black coloured hot shot crisscross peep toe block platform heels, I got satisfied and took my pouch.

Nang dahil sa v-wire ng dress ay halos kalahati ng itaas na bahagi ng dibdib ko ay kitang-kita na. Hindi na ako mahihiyang magsuot ng mga ganitong klaseng dress dahil may dibdib naman na ako.

Nakarating ako sa Fortaleza Residence nang ten minutes late. Naalala kong may residence din ang mga Fortaleza sa Singapore, hindi pa ako nakakapunta roon pero siguro makakapunta ako kapag hindi na masyadong busy.

Habang naglalakad ako patungo sa isang malaking kwarto kung saan nakahanda 'yong dinner at tanaw ang indoor pool, kasama sila Lolo, Lola at ang fiance ko.

Naglalakad pa lang ako papasok ay ramdam ko ang kaba nang nakita ang maskuladong likuran ng isang lalaki kahit na nakasuot siya ng kulay itim na tuxedo. Hindi pamilyar ang buhok nito dahil parang bagong gupit ito at ang ganda ng buhok, mukhang malambot ang kaso ay parang gumamit yata ito ng gel para mapanatili ang ganda ng pagkakagupit no'n, pero ang tindig ng kaniyang presensya ay pamilyar.

Nagtatawanan pa si Lolo at Lola sa sinabi nito na hindi ko naman masyadong narinig ang boses.

Lolo and Lola found me, walking my way toward them. They all stood up to welcome me.

This got really unexpected when I found myself lost under the intimidating eyes of the man.

A very private person. Kuya Mason described him as that.

Seemed like thirty seconds of staring at one another, I heard Lolo introduce me to him.

"Attorney, this is our lovely granddaughter, Kryptonite Fortaleza. Kryptonite, this is Atty. Law Cavanaugh, your fiancee."

Chapter 43

Mature Content Warning (Mild). This chapter may contain content of an adult nature. If you are easily offended or are under the age of 18, just ignore and skip some scenes. Some words within are intended for adults only and may include scenes of sexual content, strong languages, violence etc.

Live-in

On the circular glass dining table right beside the glass wall where we could see the view from the luxurious indoor pool and another glass wall at the pool where we could sightsee the buildings and lights of the city. My gaze dropped on the table and saw placemats, dinner plates, salad plates, soup bowls, serviettes, dinner forks, knives, soup spoons, water glasses, and wine glasses, displayed with clear transparent and straight tube glass vases that had clean water and white fresh roses drowned inside with floating candles lit in it.

Eyeing the man that held his hand in front of me, I squeezed out an approachable smile on my red lips. I applied power red liquid matte lipstick on my lips, it suited the color of my dress anyway. Red and black, it sounded evil and tempting.

However, this man that have waited for almost half a minute just for me to accept his hand, his intimidating presence and sex appeal have governed my devilish and enticing look.

Cautiously, unhurried and in slow movement, I accepted his hand.

I remembered his large and strong hand, the hard knuckles, lean and long fingers of it, and most importantly, the rough surface of his palm because of farming just to gain money for me.

This hand that I was holding right now have been the hand that he use whenever he spank me before, the hand that catches us altogether as we fall, the hand that touches me and my baby bump every moment that we've been together, and the hand that crashed my heart, splintered into painful and thorny pieces the day that he decided to make me leave and separate my life from him.

So much memories of this resilient yet firm and hard hand. This hand got tired before, and now it was holding me again.

"I see, Sir Rodelito, your granddaughter seems too young for me, how old is she again?" Feeling Law's hand gently squeezing mine as we both stared at each other and didn't even mind my grandparents behind him, watching us.

Pakiramdam ko ay parang nanibago ang mga kamay kong hawak niya ngayon dahil sa mas naging matigas at matibay lang ito.

"She's just nineteen, attorney," lolo answered, and I could see them over Law's shoulder, happily smiling. "But if you like, we can talk about the wedding, or if you wanna know more about her, we can deal to have a long term engagement."

Lolo and lola were watching us like they were reminiscing about their past, the time that they're still young, handsome and beautiful.

"I'd like this young lady to decide, sir," titig na titig sa akin ang nakakatakot na mga mata ni Law sabay hila ng kamay kong hawak niya paitaas at hinalikan ang likod ng kamay ko. "It'll be my pleasure to respect her decisions."

"Oh, how sweet of you, attorney," lola commented. Glancing at them over Law's shoulder, I saw that she wrapped her pale and wrinkly arms around lolo's hard yet wrinkly arms too. "Kryptonite, dear, what can you say?"

Bringing back my gaze to this handsome specimen in front of me, I cleared my throat. "Yes, lola, I agree," I gave our hands a quick glance when until now, he didn't let go of my hand. "But, attorney, if I to decide about the matter. I would like us to have a long term engagement."

His intimidating eyes hardened.

"Apo, may I know why?" Lolo asked.

Binawi ko muna ang kamay ko mula sa mahigpit na pagkakahawak ni Law sa akin bago ko ako naglakad sa tabi niya, nilagpasan siya at lumapit sa kinaroroonan ni lolo at lola para halikan sila sa pisngi.

"Lolo, I'm kinda busy these past few days, I'm catching up since I just got home from a vacation in Sanibel Island with my cousins, and I don't want another event such as wedding to add up or cancel my schedules and appointments," I explained and when I turned to look at Law, he was facing us now. "I hope this marriage won't involve having babies, it would be more stressful."

"I don't agree with that," I could hear the displeasure hanging in his low raucous voice.

"So do I, attorney," lolo concurred in almost as the same tone as Law.

Nervously, I turned to Lola Destina to ask for help.

"Rodelito, our granddaughter has a point," sabi ni lola dahilan kung bakit napahinga ako ng maluwa ngunit 'di ko inaasahan ang idinugtong niya. "But, I'm sorry, apo, I'd like to have grandbabies too."

Nang tumingin ako kay Law ay palihim ko siyang tinapunan ng masamang tingin.

"Enough with this, let's talk about it while having dinner, shall we?" Lolo announced and called three maids to serve our dinner.

Culturally, Americans wasn't used to have maids in their sweet home. They work independently, even so, if their house was as huge as a mansion, just like the

Fortaleza residence, they would certainly hire maids to maintain the cleanliness of their home.

Naiirita man ay muli kong tinanggap ang kamay ni Law nang lumapit siya sa akin at iginiya ako patungo sa isang upuan sa tabi niya.

"By the way, lola, thank you for the gifts, I just received it yesterday," I started the conversation smoothly. "I love it, and I've been trying to find that kind of modern electric range for cooking, but I just don't have much enough time to find one in a mall."

It's a new expensive and modern electric range, plus a set of kitchen utensils, she had given me gifts at the exact date of my birthday, but I didn't expected that she would give me another.

"Apo, hindi 'yon galing sa'kin," lola was smiling from ear to ear when she look at Law. "It's a birthday gift from attorney."

Inilipat ko ang tingin kay Law pagkatapos kong sumubo ng pagkain. Nilunok ko muna ang pagkain kasabay ng paglunok ko ng konting pride ko. "You don't have to do that, attorney."

Nakakalusaw talaga ang paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin.

He was so sexy, his thin and natural pinkish lips moved in a rhythm as he chew the food in his mouth sexily. Even if he was in a side view position because we were sitting on the left side of the table and facing the lolo and lola, I watched the way his Adam's apple moved as he swallowed the food before he looked down at me.

What a nice sight to behold. Does he know that he was turning me on right now? Of course I wouldn't let him know a single information about what I was feeling tonight.

"I'm your fiancée, Ms. Fortaleza. I don't want to miss another birthday of my fiancée," as usual, his baritone voice was full of authority and seriousness.

"You're my fiancée?" I tried to suppress a laugh, but I couldn't stop myself, at least it was a soft and gentle laugh. "I'm sorry, attorney, but why do I feel like you become my sugar daddy?"

Kahit na gusto ko nang humalakhak dahil sa naging ekspresyon niya ay pinipigilan ko pa rin ang sarili ko.

This dinner with my grandparents and fiancée would be formal, so I should behave like a fine young lady, a kind of nice behaviour that my grandparents have expected from me.

"I'm just twenty six," Law enunciated. "But if you want me to be your sugar daddy and fiancée, I can be both."

"Twenty six is just too old to marry a nineteen years old woman, attorney," I said, giving him my opinion.

His intimidating eyes fueled and burned me. "It's not, if that nineteen years old woman is attracted to me."

Parang natameme ako at umiwas ng tingin nang bumaba na naman ang tingin ko sa kanyang Adam's apple.

Wordlessly, I focused my attention on my plate and just eat gracefully, even if the inner me was screaming at him, irritated and annoyed at his attitude.

He was so arrogant, and it would be a sin if I wouldn't shout that fact at his handsome face.

Matapos ang ilang minutong pag-uusap at pagtatanong ni lolo kay Law ay humarap siya sa akin na parang may naalala.

"Kryptonite, apo," panimula nito. "Attorney talked to us that he'll stay here for a little longer, maybe weeks or a month."

"That's good to hear then. Enjoy your stay here, attorney," sabi ko nang hindi tinatapunan ng tingin si Law.

"That is the problem, honey," lola inserted after drinking her water. "He couldn't enjoy his stay here if he didn't have someone to be with him. So I decided that maybe, he could stay in your condo, and you two would get to know each other."

Napalunok ako at takot na lumingon sa katabi ko. "Does that mean that he's going to live in with me in my own condo?"

"Yes," mariin sagot ng magaspang na boses ni lolo.

"We're not going to share the same bed, aren't we?" panigurado kong tanong pagkatapos uminom ng wine at pinunasan ang sulok ng bibig ko gamit ang malinis na table napkin.

"It's up to you, dear, besides, you two are engaged. There's nothing wrong if the honeymoon would go first before the wedding," hindi pa napigilan ni lola ang marahang tumawa at mas inilapit pa ang sarili sa mesa para magkalapit kami kahit na ang laking distansya ang layo namin. "Your lolo and I had made love several times before our wedding because he can't control himself anymore."

"Destina, you're influencing the young lady," saway ni lolo sa maawtoridad na tono ng boses.

Lola angrily snapped her head at lolo's direction. "Rodelito, I'm just telling them the truth. You got out of control that's why you-"

"Fine, fine, my baby," lolo gave up.

And then the conversation turned to be out of topic.

Nilalambing na ni lolo si lola na siyang naging suplada at binalewala ang kanyang asawa sa buong hapunan dahilan kung bakit umalis sila at dinala niya muna si lola sa kanilang kuwarto.

Inubos ko muna ang wine nang dumating ang mga katulong para linisin ang pinagkainan namin. Pareho kaming nakatayo ni Law sa tabi ng mesa habang pinagmamasdan ko ang paglilinis na ginagawa ng mga katulong.

Nang dumaan sa tabi ko ang kilala kong katulong ay hinawakan ko siya sa kanyang braso dahilan kung bakit napahinto siya sa paglalakad.

"Aya, can you give me two clean towels, please? And kindly close the door after," I whispered.

The young maid smiled. "Of course, ma'am."

Afterward, just as the two towels came and Aya closed the door, I walked my way out of the area that was shielded with glass walls and went to the indoor pool.

Nakatalikod ako mula sa kung saan kami kumain kanina at alam kong hindi gumalaw sa kanyang kinatatayuan si Law na umiinom ng kanyang red wine na siyang iniwan ng mga katulong para sa kanya, alam ko ring nanonood siya sa akin dahil gawa sa salamin ang pader na naghihiwalay doon at dito sa area ng indoor pool.

Taas noo kong pinagmasdan ang magandang tanawin sa labas mula rito, bahagyang nakaawang pa ang mga labi ko ng dahan-dahan kong ginalaw ang aking kamay. I untied my wavy hair and let it fell 'til it reached my elbows. Yumuko ako at marahang binaba ang katawang upang maabot ko ang paa ko para maghubad ng suot kong high heels.

I stepped out of my heels when I successfully unhooked it and proceeded.

Dahan-dahan akong naghubad ng suot kong kulay itim na dress habang nakatalikod pa rin mula kay Law na ramdam kong parang nasusunog na ang likod ko nang dahil sa kanyang paniguradong nag-aapoy na mga titig.

Ang nakaawang kong mga labi ay mariin kong tinikom at kinagat ang pang-ibabang labi ko habang diretso pa rin ang tingin sa harap ko nang hinayaan kong mahulog ang suot kong damit sa malamig na sahig.

The next thing that I did was to remove my nude coloured thong and followed by the same colour strapless bra.

Naked.

Gusto kong lumingon at tumingin kay Law, gusto kong makita ang reaksiyon niya.

Parang kaninang umaga lang ay sinasagot ko siya, ngayon ay parang nahihiya na akong makipagsagutan sa kanya. Sinong hindi mahihiya? He's an attorney. Matatalo lang ako kung makipagtalo pa ako sa kanya.

Instead of talking to him and knowing that I didn't even have a bit of chance to win, I would fight through heat against heat.

Heavy footsteps behind me got louder and louder. The corners of my lips curved up into a seductive smile when the footsteps stopped close behind me.

"Attorney, would you like to have a swim with me?" pag-aaya ko habang pinagmamasdan ang malinis na tubig ng pool.

"No, and get dressed, we're going to your condo," mariing utos niya na tila may ideya na siya sa kung ano ang posibleng mangyayari.

"I've heard that you're a very private person," I said, ignoring his command and didn't move an inch, I kept my back facing him. "Tell me more about yourself, attorney."

Narinig ko ang iilang hakbang ng paglapit niya sa'kin, ramdam kong sobrang lapit niya sa akin ngunit hindi ko naman nararamdaman ang kanyang katawan na dumidikit sa katawan ko.

Mukhang isang hakbang na lamang ang layo niya. Natatakot akong gumalaw at harapin siya dahil baka ay tumama lang ang hubo't hubad kong katawan sa kanya.

"Kilala mo na ako," bulong niya sa mas matigas at puno ng awtoridad na boses.
"Bumalik na tayo sa condo mo bago pa ako maging bastos."

The corners of my lips just stretched upward in a tantalizing smile for myself.
"Bakit? Nagugustuhan mo ba ang mga nakikita mo, attorney?"

A gasp escaped from my mouth as I felt the fabric of his clothes pressed against my back. I could certainly feel how hard and broad his chest was. It changed a lot, this time, it was harder than the last time I touched it.

Similarly, hard and irresistible, that familiar, yet the hardest part of his body every time he's angry and I was the reason, the hard and large bulge under his tightening pants pressed against the center part of my butt, like he was afraid that someone might see how large the bulge was, that's why he hid it in my butt.

"Call me attorney again and I'll let you choose, little girl. I know that you're mature enough to make a decision," his voice was very ungentle and harsh over my right ear as he kept my back against him. "Sakit o sarap?"

I wasn't afraid of him anymore.

Groaning, I closed my eyes firmly and felt the arousal in my body. "Tapos na tayo sa sakitan, pwedeng sarapan naman ngayon, attorney?"

Hindi ko napigilan ang pag-ungol nang puwersahan niya pa'ng pinagsiksikan ang kanyang matigas na umbok sa hiwa ng pwet ko kahit na alam kong hindi pa napapasok ang kalahati ng umbok ay ramdam ko namang masikip na at wala ng espasyo sa hiwa ng pwet ko.

Parang hindi pa siya nakuntento kaya puwersahan niya akong pinaharap sa kanya.

Umatras siya ng isang hakbang bago pinasadahan ng tingin ang buong hubad kong katawan.

Nakatitig ang kanyang naninigas na mga mata sa katawan ko nang nagsimula siyang maghubad sa mismong harap ko hanggang sa pareho na kaming nakahubad.

I couldn't stop myself from staring at his manhood. Erected, straight, as if it was trying to reach for my feminine part. I didn't realize that I wasn't breathing while checking his body.

Perhaps, I should cancel this while we haven't started yet? Obviously, I didn't want my feminine part to bring its own ruination.

Indeed he was long and large before, I did expected it to have changes just like his body, but I didn't know that the changes would be like this.

Shamelessly, I admit to myself that I couldn't take it inside me, even if he devirginized me long ago.

"Gusto mo'ng hawakan?" he asked after a minute of silence.

T'saka ko pa napagtantong isang minuto na rin pala akong nakatitig at pinagmamasdan ang kanyang pagkalalaki na sa tingin ko ay magwawala na kapag hindi pa ako lumapit.

Matagal ko na talagang gustong gawin 'to noon pero ngayon lang yata talaga ako nagkaroon ng lakas ng loob.

Closing the distance between us as I stepped a few steps forward, I tilted my head up to give him an innocent stare. Wordlessly asking him the permission to let me touch it.

He moved one hand up and touch the back of my head, I let him kiss me on my forehead.

"All yours, little girl," masuyo niyang sabi kahit sa kabila ng katigasan ng kanyang boses.

Bumaba ang tingin ko sa kanyang nakatayong pagkalalaki, dahan-dahan kong hinawakan 'yon at nang pinulupot ko ang mga daliri ko roon ay nakaramdam ako ng inis dahil 'di ko man lang mahawakan 'yon ng buo gamit ang isang kamay.

Ramdam ko sa aking palad ang ugat nito nang dahil sa sobrang tigas ay nagpapakita na ang iilang ugat. Malambot na matigas.

"F-Fuck..." he groaned when I started to move my hands slowly, up and down. "Little girl, akala ko ba ay hahawakan mo lang-ah shit."

He didn't protested because he wanted it, but I guess, he just thought that this was the wrong place to do it.

Mahina at malalim ang pag-ungol niya habang pinagpatuloy ko ang paggalaw ng kamay ko sa kanyang pagkalalaki.

I wonder how he masturbate? But I was so sure that he would look sexy.

Matuwid siyang nakatayo at hinayaan akong gawin ang gusto ko, lalo lang tumigas ang pagkalalaki niya kaya medyo binilisan ko na rin ang paggalaw ng kamay ko.

Napayakap siya sa akin ng mahigpit habang dinig ko ang sunod-sunod na pagmumura niya.

His hand reached my back and squeezed the left cheek of my butt. That didn't stop me from moving my hand doing the work on his manhood.

"Attorney," marahan kong tawag sa kanya nang naramdaman ko ang paghigpit ng kanyang pagkakayakap sa akin at ang isang kamay niyang pinagdidiskitahan sa pagpisil ang pwet ko.

"Little girl, stop," hinihingal niyang bulong habang nakadikit ang kanyang gilid ng mukha sa may sentido ko. "I-f-fuck... I'm cumming."

Ang bilis niyang nilabasan at naramdaman ko pa ang medyo malapot na likido sa hita ko kung saan ito tumama. Mula sa pagkakatigas ay parang nanghina ang kanyang pagkalalaki pagkatapos nitong nilabasan.

Hawak ko pa rin 'yon ng tatlong minuto ngunit nagulat ako nang tumigas na naman 'yon kaya muntik ko nang nabitiwan.

"Ang kalat mo, attorney," sabi ko at binitiwang na nga ang kanyang pagkalalaki nang bumaba ang tingin ko sa aking hita.

Sinadya ko talagang itapat ang dulo ng kanyang pagkalalaki sa hita ko para roon lalabas ang kanyang tamod. Mahirap na baka ay umabot pa sa dibdib ko, nakatayo pa naman 'yon.

Tatalikuran ko na sana siya para maligo sa pool pero 'di ko nagawa nang mahigpit

niya akong hinawakan sa braso.

"Hindi pa tayo tapos," marahas niyang sabi sabay hapit ng beywang ko. "Pakainin mo'ko."

Nakangiti ako sa kabila ng pagdidilim ng ekspresyon sa kanyang mukha. "Attorney, hindi ba masarap 'yong dinner kanina? Gusto mo ba'ng ipagluto kita ng chicken adobo? Don't worry, this time, hindi na siya magkukulang ng soy sauce."

"Patikim, Kryptonite," may diin ang pagkakasabi niya kasabay ng pagdiin ng kanyang katawan sa akin.

"Tikim lang?" I pushed his bare and hard chest gently. "Attorney, hindi mo na ako maloloko."

Hindi niya ako napigilan nang nakawala ako mula sa pagkakahawak niya sa akin.

I dived into the pool with a splash of water when it finally came on contact with my body.

Eventually, just seconds after I dived down, I heard another noise of water splashing when someone followed me.

Natagpuan ko na lamang ang sarili kong nakakulong sa matigas at maskuladong braso ni Law, hinihila ako pabalik at pinilit akong umahon mula sa tubig. Ang bilis niyang lumangoy at talagang nahabol niya ako.

Binuhat niya ako at pinaupo sa side ng pool, nanatili siyang nakababad sa tubig nang pinaghiwalay niya ang mga hita ko sa harap niya.

Kahit nakikitang niyang basang-basa ng tubig mula sa pool ay agad niya 'yong sinunggaban ng marahas na pagdila at pagsipsip, ang mabangis niyang dila ay tila nilalaplap ang pagkababae ko.

Naramdaman ko ang init na namumuo sa katawan ko, ramdam ko na ito kanina pa lang ngunit madali ko naman 'yong binalewala. Mahigpit kong hinawakan ang kanyang basang buhok upang mahila ang kanyang ulo mula sa pagkababae ko.

I was angry when I got successful of taking his face off my feminine part and slap him.

He was stunned, and did not move after I slapped him.

"Napapadalas na ang pagsampal mo sa'kin," hearing the pain in his hard voice made me feel guilty.

Nanatiling nakatagilid ang kanyang mukha nang dahil sa pagkakasampal ko sa kanya, ni hindi rin siya tumingin sa akin.

"You're forcing me," I stated. "I can sue you if I want to, attorney."

"I know what I'm doing, little girl," he defended, as he moved his head slowly to face me. "You're not being forced, you're just angry."

"I'm not angry," I said and just ignored the forced topic.

He was right. I was not forced, if I was being forced then why did I even let him lick and suck my pearl more longer than a minute?

The anger have disrupted my mind, the reason why I pulled his hair.

Ashamed, I got up and walked to the poolside, I grabbed one towel from the lounge and wiped the drops of water off my body before taking my clothes from the cold floor of the poolside and started dressing up.

I could see him at the corner of my eyes, getting out of the pool and took the other towel that I left on the lounge.

Hurriedly, after I got myself presentable enough to face my grandparents, I left him while he was taking his clothes on and the last thing that I heard from him, was his businesslike tone of voice answering a phone call. I went to the living room and found lolo sitting on the white sofa.

My grandparents didn't know that Law was my brother before. My aunts, uncles, dad, mom and my cousins didn't told them about my life back in the Philippines. They just informed them about the good family who took care of me.

"Lolo, I have to go back now," I kissed my grandfather on his cheek before I stood straight.

His brows furrowed when he searched for someone behind me and found no one.

"Where's attorney, apo?"

"He's talking to someone over the phone," pilit ko pa'ng tinago ang inis sa aking boses. "I'll just wait in my car, lolo. Good night."

Matapos kong makapagpaalam ay hindi ko na hinintay si Law. Sinabi ko lang 'yon kay lolo para makaalis na ako at makabalik na sa condo ko.

On the ride back to my condo. My mind was full of questions, what ifs and hows. I felt my body was venerated by Law's hand when he didn't push the growing heat inside us, that's how he invaded, at the same time respected me.

Lost in reverie, with miscellany of unwanted sexual thoughts of me having sex with Law inside my room, I screamed inside my car out of frustration and pounded my fists against the wheel after I parked my car at the parking space of the building where my condo was located.

I'd rather be the protagonist of a picaresque story than dealing with this busted life of mine.

Even on my mind, he wouldn't just stop pestering me. I felt like he was chivvying me just because he has title right before his name to prove his own worth and importance. Although, I knew that he was doing it right and didn't offended others, I just didn't like the confidence radiating in his intimidating presence.

Poor me. If I try to have an argument with him, my highfalutin ways to words of reasons would be just so objectionable and unacceptable in court. Was it?

The gallimaufry of images, possible occurrence of me and him laying on my comfy bed, unforgettable words and the irresistibly strong feelings just continued to intrude my mind, killing my sanity.

Sa sobrang inis ko nang nakarating ako sa loob ng condo ko ay nagbabad ako sa bathtub ko upang subukang alisin sa isip ko si Law, lalo na ang mga nangyari kanina.

Pakiramdam ko ay literal na umuusok ang ilong at tainga ko, kaya't kailangan kong

kumalma kung sakaling pupunta rito ang lalaking 'yon.

Just ten minutes later of staying in the bathtub, I decided to get out of it and washed myself with clear cold water from the shower to rinse the bubbles off from sticking all over my body. Now, I could tell that my system was finally cooling down from being stimulated by the sexual heat earlier.

I went to my wardrobe to find something to wear, I used to wear shorts only whenever I go to sleep but tonight was different. It took me almost ten minutes before I found the perfect clothes to wear.

Snatching a currant red coloured nighties and black underwear, I wore it and went out of my wardrobe.

"Oh God!" I gasped in surprised and pressed my hand against my chest as I felt my heart palpitated so fast.

Blinking at the naked man that was comfortably laying on my bed, I breathed and tried to calm myself.

"You didn't called me, babe," the tone of his voice sounded very sad and depressed. Heartsick over his small problem. "I heard from Gage that you just got here last two days and you didn't even informed me."

He was so fluent that I couldn't even hear the words clearly.

Mariin akong napapikit nang nakita ang kanyang kamay na hawak ang kanyang malaking pagkalalaki, pero masasabi ko namang mas malaki ang pagkalalaki ni Law. Hindi ko masyadong nakikita ang pagkalalaki nito dahil medyo nakatakip ang makapal kong kumot sa kalahati ng kanyang katawan.

At the time being, he was shamelessly masturbating on my bed.

What's wrong with this jerk?

Alam ko namang may gusto siya sa akin pero never niya pa'ng ginawa 'to. 'Yong biglang pumasok sa loob ng condo ko, hindi ko rin alam kung sino ang nagbigay sa kanya ng passcode ko pero tatlong lalaki lang talaga ang pinagkakatiwalaan ko sa passcode ng condo ko. Dad, Kuya Mason and Rule.

"What the hell, Julius! Get dressed!" I exclaimed in extreme anger.

"Why? I like your bed," ni hindi nagpatinag ang amerikanong 'to sa galit ko.

Julius was a sexy and muscular Latino with brown hair and blue eyes. By the way, he was a complete jerk. An egotistical asshole.

"Oh my God! Just get up!" mabilis akong lumapit sa kanya at hinila ang kanyang braso para paalisin siya. "How did you get here?"

Napamura ako sa isip ko nang naalala si Law. Baka ay pupunta nga 'yon dito, katulad ng pinag-usapan kanina. It was obviously live-in. Kahit 'di pa nila sinabi ay gano'n din naman ang labas ng pangyayari.

"But, babe," Julius protested and lazily get up. "Your door is slightly open. You forgot to lock it too, babe."

"Hush! Don't call me babe!" sigaw ko at napatampal sa noo ko nang nakita ang kanyang mga damit sa malamig na sahig. "Remember? We're not in a relationship. Now,

if you would be so kind and make yourself presentable in front of me. Grab your clothes on the floor immediately!"

Hindi siya nagmamadali nang kinuha niya ang kanyang damit kaya tumalikod ako dahil ayokong makakita ng ibang pwer o kahit anong pribadong katawan ng lalaki.

Matapos ang limang minutong nakatalikod lang ako at nainip na talaga kaya hinila ko na ang walang hiyang amerikano kahit na boxers pa lang ang suot niya, ako na rin ang nagdala ng kanyang damit para sa labas ng condo ko na lang siya magbihis. Tatal ay wala naman siyang nararamdamang hiya sa katawan.

Nang lumabas kami ng kwarto ko ay tinulak ko si Julius palabas ng kwarto ko kahit na sobrang tigas ng katawan niya at ang hirap niya pa'ng itulak.

"Babe, I like your nighties. Do you always wear that?" dada ng amerikano habang nakatingin sa damit ko kahit na abala pa rin ako sa pagpapalabas sa kanya sa kwarto ko.

Nakalabas na kaming dalawa sa kwarto ko at sinara ko agad ang pinto ngunit naestatwa ako nang humarap sa may pintuan ng condo kung saan ko sana itutulak palabas si Julius.

Trembling, I fought the fear off my body when I met Law's intimidating eyes. It looked deadly and violent.

He was standing straight by the closed door of the condo, eyes were hardened, expression was darkened, and I knew that he just got here.

"Who's he?" turo ni Julius kay Law kahit na halatang mas matangkad naman si Law kesa sa kanya.

Talagang nanlamig ang mga kamay ko nang lumapit si Law sa amin at huminto sa harap ng amerikano kaya agad akong pumagitna. Bahagya ko pa'ng tinulak sa dibdib si Law upang mailayo siya ng konti mula sa kawawang walang alam na amerikano.

"Julius, he's Atty. Law Cavanaugh," tugon ko sa tanong ni Julius. "My fiance... and live-in partner."

"Oh, sorry, man. I didn't know," Julius apologized. Binigay ko na sa kanya ang kanyang damit na agad niya namang tinanggap. Bumaling siya ng tingin sa akin at ngumisi. "Thanks for the night, babe. I really enjoyed it."

Then he's gone.

I gritted my teeth and felt like I wanted to go after Julius to kick him where the sun doesn't shine, but I couldn't move on my spot because of the sudden grip of the hard and large hand on my arm.

When I turned to Law. He was calm, but I could tell from the rigid cords pulsing in his arms that he was just controlling himself. I couldn't describe how angry and jealous he was, but I knew that it was screaming violence.

"Law, hindi ko alam-"

Hindi niya na ako pinatapos sa pagsasalita nang mula sa pagiging tahimik niya kanina pa lang ay marahas siyang nagsalita.

"Anong hindi mo alam? Dumapa ka sa sahig, at lalaspagin kita sa sarap na sinasabi mo."

...

Imagining the indoor pool like this. Copyright to the rightful owner of the photo.
Source: Google.

Chapter 44

Baby

Marahas na binitiwang ni Law ang braso ko at naglakad patungo sa pinto ng condo.

I watched his broad back as he lock the door of the condo, securing it, and just had to make sure that no one could possibly caught us up from what probabilities of sexual intercourse might happen for tonight.

Somehow, I couldn't stop the urge to do the same, obey, cooperate and participate with him. I had to admit that I have missed him so much.

With lustful gaze upon him, I bit my bottom lip firmly. Looking down at the cold floor, I couldn't stop the hot and sexual images from building up inside my mind. I was not trying to envisage him having sex with me on the floor, my mind just automatically visualized it even if I didn't wanted it to.

How, why those clear mental images of me and him just added and multiplied the growing heat and sexual desire inside my body? I didn't know. I couldn't take it, I couldn't afford to feel this, this feeling that I had buried down the deepest corner of my mind just to forget about it.

Wet and hot. That feeling of something tickling on my feminine part, yes, it really felt like Law was invisibly fingering me with just one look at his long and lean fingers.

I looked away from staring at his fingers when he turned and faced me after locking the door.

This was serious. What on earth from heaven to hell was happening on my body? I didn't wish to be turned on like this.

"Ano pa'ng hinihintay mo, Kryptonite?" his hard voice was so powerful. "Tignan natin kung gugustuhin mo pa ba'ng makipagtalik sa ibang lalaki pagkatapos ng gagawin ko sa'yo."

So that was what his opinion about me? That was how he see me as a woman? Or still a little girl? How could he think that I could do those things with any other young man that easily? He thought too low of me.

Ang hirap magpigil ng galit lalo na't nagiging marahas at bayolente si Law ngayon, kahit sa kabila ng kalmado niyang pagsasalita at postura ng katawan.

Showing him my unaffected smirk, I cleared the thoughts on my mind. "Hindi ka ba nandidiri sa'kin, attorney? I just had sex with the guy about five minutes ago, it was three rounds and I'm tired."

Kahit na ilang hakbang lang naman ang layo niya mula sa'kin ay narinig ko pa rin ang marahas na pagbuga niya ng hangin.

"Drop on the floor, little girl," I could hear that he was trying to tone down his gruff voice. "Hindi ako nandidiri sa'yo."

Disappointed because I assumed that he would be disgusted of me. The smirk on my lips moved down and formed into a thin line. "Galit ka ba sa'kin?"

"Ikaw lang ang rason ng galit ko, pero hindi ako galit sa'yo," sagot niya bago lumapit sa akin. "Dumapa ka na sa sahig."

"You're such in a hurry. Aabot pa naman siguro tayo sa kama ko, attorney," I said with that taunting tone in my voice.

Witnessing how his hard square-shaped jaw clenched, his darkening eyes stared right through me as he stopped one foot away. "Gusto ko sa sahig."

He's so demanding. I was so sure that nothing would happen between us here because obviously we're inside my condo. That just mean, indoor, and he was not into indoor when it comes to sex activities.

Did he changed his mind for the past two years? Well, I just realized that the first time we made love on the bed, he wasted his sperm, he pulled his manhood out of me before he released it.

Kahit sa mga sumunod na nangyari sa loob ng banyo ay 'di niya pinutok sa loob ko.

Tatalikuran ko na sana siya kaya lang ay agad niya akong hinawakan sa braso. Marahas akong napabuga ng hangin dahil sa unti-unting pagkakaubos ng pasensya ko. "Law, sabing pagod na ako at busy akong tao. Kung gusto mo, ilalagay ko na lang sa schedule ko kung kailan tayo magsesex-"

"Pag nalaman kong wala talagang nangyari sa inyo, maghanda ka na sa three rounds na sinasabi mo," puwersahan niya akong hinila dahil kung bakit muntik na akong napasubsob sa kanyang matigas na dibdib.

"Pa'no mo naman malalaman 'yon, attorney? What are you? A doctor specializes in women's reproductive health?" Even though I was nervous, I still managed to chuckle.

Suminghap ako ng hangin nang hinawakan niya ako sa likod mula sa pagkakahawak niya sa braso ko, at mas idiniin niya pa ang katawan ko sa kanya dahil kung bakit pakiramdam ko ay nauubusan na ako ng hangin.

"Lagi kong hinahalikan ang pwet mo habang natutulog ka noon sa tuwing may mangyari sa'tin. I always check your pussy while you're sleeping because I'm afraid that my size might have done something wrong," I could feel how he rubbed his moist and soft lips against my earlobe as he spoke. "After we made love before, your strawberry would look swollen and red, but if not, it's just normally pinkish."

Pakiramdam ko ay namumula na ang pisngi ko sa sobrang hiya. "What the hell? Pati ba naman 'yon, Law?"

"Yes, little girl. I know every inch of your body and my favorite is your butt." Kasabay no'n ay ang paggalaw ng kamay niya mula sa likod ko pababa sa pwet ko at pinisil ang kaliwang pisngi nito.

It felt like I had stopped from breathing, the hairs on my nape raised when I felt

his hot breath hit and was like caressing the skin on my shoulder.

The nighties that I was wearing didn't help. It became Law's advantage to an easy access of my body. I was wearing nothing to protect my breast from him, just black panty and nighties.

Steadily, I avoided any movements of my body against him because I knew that it would only make his manhood hard and unavoidable for me.

Mariin akong napapikit nang naramdaman kong bahagya niyang inangat ang laylayan ng nighties ko at naramdaman ko na lang na hawak niya na ang panty ko.

I gasped when I heard the ripping sound of the fabric. He ripped my black panty with only one hand and threw it away until I saw it landed on the cold floor.

Nawalan ako ng lakas nang hinila niya ako at pinaupo sa sofa, hindi ako nakapanglaban nang lumuhod siya sa harap ko at ibinuka ang mga hita ko.

Parang naubusan ako ng dugo sa mukha nang nakita ang pagdilim lalo ng kanyang ekspresyon sa mukha nang dahil sa nakita.

"You lied," I could hear the extreme anger in his voice. "You fucking lied."

"Ah! O-Oh my God, oh my God, Law!" sigaw kong pag-ungol nang namalayan ko na lamang ang sarili kong ibinaba niya mula sa sofa at pinahiga sa malamig na sahig. Hindi ko na siya napigilan nang marahas at bayolente niyang sinunggaban ng paglaplap ang pagkababae ko. "Ugh-ah... Hm, ah, ugh!"

Nakahiga ako sa sahig habang siya naman ay nakadapa, nakapuwesto ang mukha sa pagkababae ko, dinidilaan, sinisipsip at pinanggigigilan ng kanyang mapangahas na dila at labi ang clît ko.

Mahigpit akong napakapit sa kanyang malambot na medyo basang buhok nang walang awang pinagdidiskitahan at pinaparusahan niya ang clît ko, pabilis ang paggalaw ng kanyang dila nang bumababa at umaangat ito, dumudulas dahilan kung bakit naririnig ko ang nakakawala ng katinuan na tunog nito sa tuwing tumatama ang kanyang mainit at malambot na dila roon.

Pilit kong ginagalaw ang balakang ko at hinihila ang kanyang buhok para mailayo ang kanyang bibig mula sa malupit na paraan ng pagkain niya sa pagkakababae ko, ngunit 'di ako nagtagumpay at nakatanggap lang ng mas marahas na pagsipsip sabay kagat sa clît ko.

"Ah-uhm... L-Law, I'm sorry, I'm sorry. Hindi na kita gagalitin ulit, just-oh God, oh God! Law! Ugh!" halos isigaw ko na ang pag-ungol ko nang naramdaman kong habang pinanggigigilan niya ang clît ko ay pinasok niya naman ang mahaba niyang gitnang daliri sa pagkababae ko, sinunod niyang pinasok ang kanyang hintuturo bago mabilis na nilabas pasok 'yon.

Isang kamay niya na lamang ang nakahawak sa beywang ko kaya naging mas malikot ako at umaangat pa ang katawan ko nang dahil sa ginagawa niya. Tinutulak ko pa ang kanyang matitigas na balikat upang bahagyang mailayo siya sa pagkababae kong hindi na tinatantanan ng kanyang walang awang dila.

Hindi ko alam kung mahitsura ko pa ba ang pagkababae ko pagkatapos nito.

Nakakapanghina ng hita at binti ang kanyang ginagawa sa akin.

May back arc and my body trembled when I reached my first orgasm for tonight. He

knew that I had released it, but he didn't stop or let me rest for a minute.

Restless from his rough way of licking, sucking and nibbling my clit, and aggressively fingering me, my back collapsed on the cold and hard floor after reaching my orgasm. It took me a few seconds before I screamed and cried in so much pleasure once again.

The heat from my core crawled up and spread throughout my body once more, increasing the lust in me. Although the floor was cold and the place, my condo wasn't even warm, I was sweating, we were both sweating with the tender of sexual heat, scorching desire, and the sweltering sensations from this rough sex.

Panting and catching my breath from screaming, moaning, and groaning, I loosened my grip on his hair and my body slowly relax from the intense sensations.

Huminto siya sa pagdila at pagsipsip ng pagkababae ko bago tumayo.

"This is not enough, little girl," aniya, titig na titig sa akin habang marahas niyang hinuhubaran ang kanyang sarili. "Drop on the floor. I want your butt."

"W-What?" napapaos pa ang boses ko nang dahil sa ginawa kong sunod-sunod na pagsigaw at pag-ungol kanina. "Are you going to spank me?"

Umupo ako mula sa pagkakahiga sa malamig na sahig at inayos ang suot kong nighties para takpan ang pagkababae ko. Hindi niya naman kasi ako hinubaran kanina, 'yong panty ko lang ang pinunit niya.

"Nagseselos ako, hindi lang palo ang matatangap mo sa'kin," bakas ang dahas ng pagkakasabi niya no'n nang tuluyan na nga siyang nakahubad sa harap ko, matuwid na nakatayo at nakababa ang tingin sa akin.

Hindi lang naman siya ang matuwid na nakatayo. May iba pa'ng nakatayo rin na tambad ang tigas, kumikinang ang dulong bahagi at lumalabas ang ugat.

Sa sobrang takot ko sa sinabi niya ay lumuhod ako at niyakap ang kanyang beywang kahit na tumatama ang kanyang matigas na ari sa gitnang bahagi ng dibdib ko.

"H-Hindi ko na uulitin, please. Let's go to my room? 'Wag dito, Law..." I tried to make my voice soft and gentle.

"Little girl, hindi tayo matatapos nito kung hindi mo ako pagbibigyan sa mga gusto ko," he said, caressing my hair as he looked down at me.

Kahit na nakahubad siya ay hindi ko na inisip 'yon. Tumayo ako at hinarap siya, nilalabanan ang nakakatakot na paraan ng pagtingin niya sa akin sa abot ng aking makakaya.

"Pagbibigyan naman kita, Law, pero pwede ba'ng sa kwarto natin gawin 'to? Kahit magdamag mo pa'ng dilaan at kagatin ang pwet ko kung 'yan ang gusto mo," I said a choice that would give us both even advantages. Slowly, I touched his the tensed muscles on his arm. "Let's go, please? Just calm down, okay?"

Lumapit ako sa kanya upang hilahin siya patungo sa kwarto ko ngunit 'di ko naman siya nahila dahil siya naman ang humawak sa kabila kong braso upang mapanatili ako sa pwesto ko.

Ramdam ko ang kanyang matangos na ilong na tumatama sa gilid ng ulo ko. Inaamoy ang buhok ko.

"Ang bango mo, little girl," he murmured against my hair, and luckily, his voice wasn't that harsh.

"Yes, yes, can we go to my room now, attorney?" I was so much careful of picking what word to say just to maintain the calm in him. "I think you need rest."

"No," bumalik na naman ang pagiging matigas ng kanyang boses na tila ay nagising siya mula sa ginawa kong pagsuyo sa kanya. "Sinabi ko naman sa'yo, 'di ba? Gusto ko sa sahig."

I wanted to have a smooth conversation with him, but it seemed like formally calling him attorney was not a good thing to say.

Taking one step back, I faced him with a serious expression on my face. "Attorney, it's not appropriate to have sex with me on the floor."

"You didn't protested like that when we made love in a greenhouse and the engine room of a ferry," his jaw clenched. "The floor is much good. We're just going to have sex on the floor of your condo, little girl. No one can see us. Why can't you?"

Unexpectedly, I made a face because of hearing that word that he would say the least.

"What do you mean sex?" I asked.

"Naalala mo ba ang sinabi ko sa'yo noon?" Ang kanyang kamay na nakahawak sa isang braso ko ay unti-unting humihigpit. "Hardcore sex."

Hearkening back to the days that we've been together before, I bit my lip when I could almost clearly hear his voice on my mind that day.

Explaining to me what he would do if he possibly caught me cheating on him.

This wasn't cheating. I didn't cheated, but maybe because he was jealous and angry. He assumed that I cheated because he caught me with another man, inside my own condo. A man that was only wearing boxers, and I was the one who's holding his clothes, plus my appearance that was showing off too much of my skin.

I wouldn't be surprised, it really looked like I cheated.

"N-No," I stammered, but tried to compose myself. "Law-"

"And I want you to call me attorney," his hardened voice told me that he had no room for any argument.

I watched how he licked his lips before pressing it hard against mine.

Bahagyang kinakagat niya ang pang-ibabang labi ko, sisipsipin bago nagpumilit na makapasok ang kanyang dila sa bibig ko.

Napasinghap ako nang marahas niyang pinalo ang kanang pisngi ng pwet ko at pinisil dahilan kung bakit tuluyan na nga niyang inangkin ang bibig ko.

His mouth tasted good, it was screaming violence and savagery as he dominantly moved his harsh tongue inside my mouth. I could not kiss him back, it's just so hard. I was letting him have the upper hand, giving him the permission to control me.

Without benignity, or a little sympathy, he mercilessly bit my bottom lip and slowly, painfully slid his teeth before releasing my lip.

Ang hirap pantayan ng pagiging marahas niya, lalo na kapag sinusubukan kong maging marahas ay mas magiging marahas lang din siya.

Pareho kaming hinihinal nang inilayo niya ang kanyang mukha sa akin, tumitig siya sa mga labi kong alam ko sa ngayon na sobra na ang pamumula.

Siya na mismo ang naghubad ng suot kong nighties, nahanap ko na lang ang sarili kong muling nakahiga sa sahig habang ang nipple ko na naman ang pinagdidiskitahan ng mapangahas niyang bibig. Kasabay ng pagsipsip niya sa nipple ko ay ang pagkiskis ng kanyang gitnang daliri sa cḷit ko.

He was rubbing it, making it wet more before he inserted two fingers again.

I knew that he wanted to insert three or four fingers because of the extreme size of his manhood, but then he couldn't. I was tight, it's been two years since the last time that I had encountered such activities as this with him, and I never did it again with any other man.

"A-Attorney..." ungol ko habang magkasalubong ang mga kilay ko na parang nasasaktan. "A-Ah, uhm-uhm... Oh-ah..."

Ang init ng nararamdaman ko, habol ko ang hininga ko at ni wala akong makapitan dito kahit kumot lang kaya napapakapit na lamang ako sa kanyang bagong gupit na buhok.

Naramdaman ko ang kanyang mahaba at napakatigas na pagkalalaki na tumatama sa kanan at ibabang bahagi ng hita ko.

Hindi ko na alam kung saan titingin kaya ipinukos ko ang aking paningin kay Law na sumususo.

Nakatitig siya sa akin, pinapanood ang reaksiyon ko sa bawat paglabas at pasok ng kanyang daliri sa akin at sa bawat pagsisipsip niya sa nipple ko.

"Ugh! A-Ah, attorney..." palakas ng palakas ang pag-ungol ko nang marahas niyang dinagdagan ng isa pa'ng daliri.

Medyo masakit 'yon pero dahil sa sobrang basa ng pagkababae ko ay dumudulas na lamang ang kanyang daliri at madaling napalitan ng sarap ang sakit.

Hindi siya nagsasalita, pinapanood niya lang akong umuungol at tinatawag siya sa gusto niyang itawag ko sa kanya.

Kahit na gusto niya pa'ng sipsipin ang magkabilang nipple ko ay bumaba na naman siya sa pagkababae ko at 'yong cḷit ko naman ang pinagdidiskitahang sipsipin sa paraan na parang sumususo lang din siya.

Matapos ang ilang minutong patuloy siya sa marahasang pagkain sa pagkababae ko ay marahas niya naman akong pinadapa mula sa pagkakahiga.

I groaned when I felt the hard and cold surface of the floor on my stomach, I could even feel how my warm breast squeezed against it.

Resting my chin on my hands, I bit my thumb when Law spanked me, harder than before.

Kakaiba at nakakatakot pala siya sa ganitong sitwasyon.

Hardcore sex for him was more than just being rough, he was silent too. He wasn't asking questions and anything after our conversation about this earlier.

All that I could hear was my loud moan, cry for his mercy and more pleasure. Moan after moan.

Law didn't consider how I felt, because if he did? He would ask me if I was hurt, or do I want it fast.

Nanghihina na ang katawan ko nang inatake na naman ng kanyang bibig ang pwet ko. Wala akong nagawa kung 'di ang sunod-sunod na umungol, napapakagat sa labi at hinalalaki, at napapapikit sa sarap ng pagiging marahas niya.

Minu-minuto ang pagpalo niya sa pwet ko kaya alam kong sa ngayon ay namumula na 'yon.

I took a deep breath when he stop, but I was shocked when he spread my legs while I was still on this position.

Nakadapa pa rin ako at magkahiwalay ang mga hita nang naramdaman ko ang dulo ng kanyang pagkalalaki sa pagkababae ko. Pinasok niya 'yon at napasigaw na lamang ako ng ungol nang naramdaman ko ang kalahati niya sa loob ko, winawasak ang pagkababae ko.

Lumapit siya sa likod ko nang nasigurado niyang napasok niya na nga ang kalahati ng kanyang pagkalalaki sa akin, kaya ramdam ko ang kanyang matigas na dibdib na tumatama sa likod ko.

Hawak ng kanang kamay niya ang pwet ko na marahas at mariin niyang pinipisil at hawak naman ng kaliwang kamay niya ang kaliwang dibdib ko at hinimas 'yon, kaya 'yong kabilang dibdib ko na lang ang tumatama sa malamig na sahig.

Nang pinasok niya ng buo ang kanyang pagkalalaki ay talagang naubusan ako ng lakas, wala pa akong ibang makapitan kaya napapalakas ang pag-ungol ko.

Naramdaman ko ang kanyang mga labing humahalik sa balikat at batok ko nang dahan-dahan siyang gumalaw na parang sinusubukan niya lang, sinasanay at dinadanama ang mainit na loob ko, ngunit isang minuto lang 'yon bago niya sinagad ang pagbayo sa akin.

Dinig ko ang mahinang pag-ungol niya na humahalo sa malakas kong pag-ungol nang dahil sa sikip at sinasakal ng pagkababae ko ang kanyang ari.

Pakiramdam ko ay niyanig ang buong katawan ko. Mabilis, marahas at napapaangat pa ang katawan ko sa tuwing umuulos siya.

Napuno ng init at pawis ang katawan namin sa loob ng ilang minuto nang sabay kaming dumating.

I felt the rush of liquid inside me before he pulled out his manhood.

My head collapsed on the back of my hand and I breathe as I was desperately needing a lung full of air.

"Get up," he commanded firmly and helped me, but I couldn't even stand on my feet, so he just carried me in a way that he usually carry me before.

"A-Attorney, can I rest? I'm tired..." I whispered. Ni hindi na ako makakapit sa kanyang leeg.

Akala ko ay ihahatid niya na ako sa kwarto ko ngunit nanlumo ako nang lumiko siya ng daan.

I felt him bit my ear. "Do'n naman tayo sa sahig ng kusina."

Natapos ang gabing 'yon na pakiramdam ko ay sumalangit na ang pagkababae ko. Wasak na wasak na, kaya nang tinignan ko ito kinabukasan nang nagising ako sa loob ng isa pa'ng room dito sa condo ko. Nakita ko ang hitsura ng pwet at buong katawan ko.

Parang na-gangbang yata ako.

Hickeys all over my body, little bruises on my swollen lips, my poor butt with kiss marks, and my swollen feminine part that Law had licked, sucked and bit in countless times.

"What do you want for breakfast?" narinig kong tanong ng maawtoridad na boses na 'yon.

Binaba ko ang hawak kong phone matapos kong pina-cancel lahat ng schedules at appointments ko dahil hindi na nga ako halos makatayo at lagi na lamang napapangiwi.

"Ako ang magluluto ng sarili kong pagkain," I rolled my eyes and avoided to have a longer than five seconds eye contact with him. "Wala ka ba'ng lakad o kahit ano?"

"Magluluto ka pa sa sitwasyong 'yan, little girl? Kanina ka pa nakaupo diyan," said the man that was wearing nothing and shamelessly standing by the doorway of the room. "May lakad tayo, but I cancelled it."

Still, we're both naked and I could see his extremely large manhood on great display. Another, I could have just stare at his eight packs to avoid his intense and intimidating eyes.

"Attorney, what I mean is, don't you have any case to defend or whatsoever that you do? Aren't you going back?" I asked, and somehow irritated at him. "Baka pagbalik mo sa Pilipinas ay nakulong na 'yong kliyente mo."

"I'm not just an attorney, little girl. I hold businesses," he crossed his arms against his broad chest and didn't even tore his eyes from me. He was watching and observing me. "We're both busy, but if you request, I can give you my twenty three hours everyday. One hour would be enough for work."

Ignoring him, I grabbed the minaudière from the nightstand, it's just a small case for my jewelries and busy myself from picking what bracelet I would love to wear for tomorrow if I would be finally okay. I forgot that I left this here, that's why I couldn't find it somewhere in my room.

Angrily, I put the thing back on the nightstand when I couldn't find something nice in it. It's because Law was here and I felt conscious like hell.

"Ilang days ka lang ba rito?" hindi na talaga nawala ang inis sa boses ko.

"Kapag buntis ka na," kaswal niyang sagot.

Hindi ako makapaniwalang tinapunan siya ng isang masamang tingin.

"Nagpapatawa ka ba, attorney? Impossibleng mabubuntis mo'ko," napahigpit ang pagkakahawak ko sa makapal na kumot na nakapulupot sa katawan ko habang nakaupo pa rin ako sa kama. "I've visited the Fortaleza's family doctor last week, and I took pills."

The truth was, I didn't. I just said that just so I could get rid of him.

Napangiwi ako nang sinubukan kong gumalaw at alam kong nakita niya 'yon.

"Pag nalaman kong nagsisinungaling ka na naman," ang lalim at nakakatakot ng matigas niyang boses nang nagsalita na naman siya habang mariing nakatitig sa akin. "Pray for your vagina, little girl."

Swallowing the lump in my throat, I couldn't stop myself from thinking things that was unnecessary and absolutely unwanted because we just had sex last night, and now I was recalling every details that we did, he roughly did on my body.

Umalis na siya at lumabas. Hula ko ay baka magluluto na siya pero bakit nakahubad? Paano kung pupunta si dad, Kuya Mason o 'di kaya'y si Rule dito para bumisita? Paano kung makita siya?

Rule. I could clearly remember the pain on his face the time his parents explained to him that we're cousins. After that, he confessed to me everything that he felt for me since the very day that he saw my photos online.

He cried in front of me and told me that he would soon forget about it, for the past two years, he treated my like his own sister even though he already has two pretty sisters.

Distressingly, I couldn't return to him the same feelings because I already gave all of me to someone I thought that was incest for me.

Lachrymose and dramatic person that I was two years ago, I realized that if I was just only mature and old enough to handle the situation, maybe I would really understand.

I had fully understood that Law did that for me, but I just couldn't understand why does he have to cut all our communications like he didn't wanna talk to me anymore? He wanted space, I gave him, then all of a sudden he came here and demanded for me to go back like nothing happened? How hilarious it was.

Three weeks later, Law was still here, living in my condo. He was handling the things here like it was his, he cooked, baked, wash our clothes, wash the dishes, clean the rooms, and anything. The attorney was doing the work that was for maids. I didn't have maids, but sometimes if I was deep tired and restless, I would ask Grandpa for one maid to come over and clean my condo.

Tatlong araw lang naman bago ako nakapaglakad ulit nang sa unang araw ay tumawag na talaga ng doctor si Law. Sobrang nag-aalala kahit na kasalanan niya naman ang lahat.

Kahit na sinusungitan ko siya ay ang kalmado at mahinahon pa rin ang pakikitungo at pakikipag-usap niya sa akin.

I moaned in my sleep when I felt someone's hard and large hand squeezing and massaging my butt.

"Hey... Little girl, wake up, nandito ang lolo at lola mo," narinig kong masuyong bulong ng matigas na boses ni Law. "I prepared our breakfast and they're going to join us."

"Law, prepare mo na rin ang shower ko, and then 'yong damit ko, gusto ko 'yong dark brown, marami sa wardrobe hanapin mo," my voice was husky and my eyes had remained close as I commanded him what to do. "I'm sleepy. Ten minutes, please."

"Fine, just ten minutes, okay?" he asked and I just answered it with a slow nod.

I hugged the pillow tightly and went to sleep for ten minutes.

He woke me up again after ten minutes and I didn't have a choice but to get up and take a shower.

"Apo? Aren't you feeling well?" lolo asked when we made ourselves comfortable on the chairs of the dining table in my condo.

I smiled and examined the breakfast on the table. "Oh nothing, lolo, maybe because I overslept."

Napamura ako sa isip ko nang naramdaman ang pamilyar na pakiramdam sa tiyan ko na parang bumalikad ang sikmura ko.

Mabilis pa sa isang segundo akong tumayo dahilan kung bakit napatayo rin si Law nang muntik na akong nawalan ng balanse dahil sa konting patkahilo at 'di ko napigilan ang sariling sumuka sa mismong damit ni Law habang mahigpit siyang nakahawak sa magkabilang braso ko.

Narinig ko pa ang nag-aalalang pagsinghap ni lola at ang mga katanungan ni lolo.

"Excuse us for a minute," seryosong paalam ni Law kay lolo at lola bago ako iginiya patungo sa kwarto ko, sa loob ng banyo nito.

Nang nakarating na kami ni Law sa banyo ay nagpatuloy ako sa pagsuka habang nakaalalay siya sa akin.

When I finally made myself okay, and Law removed his shirt where I vomited earlier, I grabbed the soap and threw it at Law, I followed the shampoo, shower gel and everything that I could see here, I threw it all at him and he was just letting me hurt him.

I wasn't expecting a baby, but what could I do? It's already here, with or without using pregnancy test, or even consulting to a doctor. I could feel, there was a little life inside my womb.

"Hayop ka talaga, attorney. Binuntis mo na naman ako."

Chapter 45

Ended

Three months later, after having our engagement party and consulted to a doctor

about my health, my dad and grandparents decided for me and Law to go back in the Philippines just for a simple purpose, and that was to meet his family, the Cavanaugh that was once my family.

Unexpectedly, Law told my grandparents about us, the thing about us before. I was so nervous that I couldn't even look at my grandparents straight in their eyes. Who thought that Law would confess the truth? I apologized, and I was not expecting that my grandparents had wholeheartedly understood the situation. The conversation ended up with them, storytelling from their catastrophic meeting, calamitous climax with lolo chasing after her to their euphoric ending.

About my health, the doctor had said to us the same word what the other doctor had said to us back in the Philippines years ago.

Positive. I was indeed got pregnant again by the same male creature, and as of the moment, I was fifteen weeks pregnant.

A bump was growing, and oftentimes, I feel so insecure. I was very bossy these past months since I got pregnant, and Law had no other choice but to obey, do what I wanted him to do, give all my request.

Carefully, we walked down to the sidewalk and stopped in front of a black car. We just got here, and I got really irritated because I hated airplanes.

"Law, 'yong mga damit ko ba nandiyan na? Gusto kong makipagkita kay Cykee mamaya," I said as I watched the driver took our luggages and placed it all inside the baggage compartment of the car.

I was just checking the things, what if we had left the others inside the airport? All the things that I brought was very dear to me and I didn't want to lose it.

"No, we just got here, little girl. Mas mabuting magpahinga ka muna," he rested one hand against the small of my back before he left a soft and long kiss on my forehead. "Pupunta pa tayo sa mansyon bukas."

"Ayokong magpahinga. I wanna see my best friend, and I'm not asking your permission, I'm just telling you," my voice sounded like it had all the authority of a woman. "At hindi ka kasama sa mga lakad ko."

Without hesitation, I tried to remove his hand at my back, but unfortunately, the hard and large thing didn't budge.

"Sasama ako," he said firmly.

"Ano ba, Law? Kaya ko na ang sarili ko," naininis kong sabi at akmang mauuna nang papasok sa loob ng sasakyan ngunit 'di ko nagawa nang pinigilan niya ako.

"May lakad din ako, makikipagkita ako kay Hezion," ang tigas at dilim sa pakiram ng kanyang boses nang sinabi niya 'yon kasabay ng mariing pagtitig niya sa akin. "May problema ka ba do'n, little girl?"

Bothered, I tried not to quiver under his penetrating gaze. I rolled my eyes when he smiled at my reaction before he guided me to get in the backseat of the car.

He was just so intimidating, and I was not intimidated by it. I could not find the right words to say, so I kept myself silent.

Maybe, it's better to be silent than to add more fire to this heated conversation. If he was persistent then, I knew that he would not let me win. It's useless to

argue.

In the middle of our ride to somewhere I didn't know where because he just told me that we would be going to the nearest house that he owned, and stay there for the whole day to rest for the sake of me and the baby before we would travel again to go to the mansion of the Cavanaugh.

Nakarating kami sa sinasabi niyang bahay after twenty minutes ride.

What a nice house it was, welcoming and comforting because of the light atmosphere that surrounded it.

Pero sa gitna ng magaan nitong awra ay 'di ko pa rin napigilan ang magalit habang hinahalughog ko ang mga dala naming gamit dito sa master's bedroom.

"Where's my underwear? Law!" I shouted, frustrated at the mess that I had done here just to find my underwear. "Law, I can't find my bras and panties! Where did you put it? There's no underwear in the first luggage! Law!"

Sometimes, all that I could do whenever I got frustrated was to cry, but Law would come and hush me down, embrace me and stroke my hair, whispering sweet words over my ear until I calm down.

Hawak ko ang umbok ng aking tiyan, hindi naman gano'n kalaki dahil four months pa lang naman 'to. Napadabog ako nang dahil sa inis at marahas na binaba ang hawak kong damit nang wala pa ring Law ang pumasok dito.

Sigaw ako ng sigaw tapos 'di niya man lang naririnig sa baba? Malaki ang bahay, pero impossible namang 'di niya maririnig ang sigaw ko dahil nakabukas naman ang pinto ng kwarto.

Napaupo ako sa kama habang naluluhan nakatingin sa tiyan ko at hinihimas ito.

"Sabi ko na eh, 'di tayo importante, baby, mas inuuna pa ng daddy mo ang mga taong tumatawag sa kanya," I released the sobs that I had been trying to stop, and the tears that was slowly cascading down my face. "N-Nakakainis naman."

Law had been very busy with those multiple texts and phone calls that he received ever since our last minute in Florida. He stopped from accepting some calls that was causing such annoying kerfuffle when we got in the airplane. Yes, it was an absolute disturbance that had been sometimes the reasons of having another endless argument between us.

Even if I was already carrying his child, I would not let him take it all easy. I had to make sure that it would be hard, getting me heart and mind back would be another conundrum for the great attorney.

I would like to see him try and tame me even though I felt the same, that I still love him.

Hearing the heavy and hurrying footsteps coming inside the room, I pressed my eyes close and the tears flowed down continuously.

"What happened? Little girl, may masakit ba sa'yo? Gusto mo ba'ng tumawag ako ng doctor?" his worried yet intimidating voice felt so good to hear. "Hey, don't cry, don't cry."

Agad siyang umupo sa tabi ko at akala ko ay tatabi lang siya ngunit nagulat ako nang maingat niya akong binuhat at pinaupo sa kanyang hita.

Fuming, I pushed his hard chest, but it was just so difficult to get him away from me since he was holding me tightly, securing me in his strong arms.

"Umalis ka na, ayoko sa'yo," my tears had failed me again.

Walang tigil na tumutulo ang mga luha ko nang dahil sa emosyong bumabalot sa akin.

"Anong nagawa ko, little girl?" his perfect dark brows almost met when he asked me, puzzled and didn't have any idea. "Sabihin mo nga sa'kin, aayusin natin."

"Hindi ka naman makikinig eh, lagi ka na lang may kausap sa phone mo tapos kapag sinasagot mo, lalayo ka agad, lalabas ka para 'di ko marinig," ang lakas ng loob ko dahil kahit sa kabila ng paghikbi at iyak ko ay 'di pa rin ako nauutal. "Sino ba 'yan? Si Dana? Tirana? Kirsten? Ate Francesca? Sino pa ba? Baka naman si Erich 'yan, kung buhay pa 'yon."

"It's just businesses, Mason and Lazarus," ang pormal masyado ng boses nito. "Erich is alive and I don't communicate with her."

Parang nabunutan ako ng tinik nang narinig ang huli niyang sinabi. "Kuya Lazi?" I asked right after. "What happened to him?"

As I said, I was not updated. No one in Florida dared to tell me what they know. The Fortaleza cousins knew that telling me anything related to the Cavanaugh, it would not gonna help me.

It would just make things worse.

"Naalala mo ba noong nakaraang dalawang buwan na bumalik ako rito at nanatili ng iilang araw bago ako bumalik sa Florida?" he explained very careful, and gently wiping the tears on my flushed face. "Si Lazarus, dinala sa ospital."

Clearly, I remembered. I was just two months pregnant, still in Florida that time when he asked me if it was okay that he would go back only to stay here in the Philippines for a few days.

At first, I didn't agree because he didn't explain to me why, but when he told me that it has something to do with his brothers, eventually, I let him go.

I calmed down and rested my hand on the bulging muscles of his arms. "Bakit?"

Kahit na 'di ko sila totoong kapatid at pinsan ay napamahal na rin naman ako sa kanila. Nag-aalala ako katulad ng pag-aalala ko para sa mga pinsan at kapatid kong Fortaleza.

"Muntik nang nagpakamatay," marahan nitong bulong sa tainga ko. "His girl left him."

A soft gasp came out from my mouth. I didn't know that Kuya Lazi would do such thing as that. He wasn't that kind of person as I had known him for how many years in my life.

"May girlfriend na si Kuya Lazi? Sino? Saan naman pumunta?" I didn't want to meddle, I was just curious.

Bakit parang simula noong nabuntis ako ay ang laki na ng bunganga ko? Tanong ako ng tanong, utos diyan, utos doon, utos dito. Siguro ay magiging pala-utos 'tong baby ko.

"They don't have a relationship, and she's Calista Fortaleza Belmonte," he answered patiently, though I could hear from his hardened voice that he didn't wanna talk about this matter. "Lazarus got her pregnant when they were just in high school. Umalis siya at pinapunta ni aunt Lauren sa Singapore dahil buntis siya sa pangalawang anak nila ni Lazarus, at dahil sa problema ay 'di niya nakayanang manatili."

Confused, I pursed my lips before asking. "She's my cousin? How?"

"May kapatid si aunt Lauren na naglayas at 'di na kinikilalang Fortaleza," paliwanag niya at napabuntong hininga. "Enough with this, little girl. Tell me what's your problem."

However, I would like to know another thing.

"What about Kuya Mason?"

Frustratedly, but I could feel his patience, once again, he answered my question. "He wants me to check the situation of his girl in Palawan."

Kumunot ang noo ko nang dahil sa nalaman.

Ang dami ko pa nga talagang walang nalalaman. Kasi sa loob ng dalawang taong hindi ko nakakausap si Law ay ang sarili ko lang ang inaatupag ko.

Kaya siguro noong last year na nagkaproblema kung kailan ay nag-overnight kaming magpipinsan sa bahay ni Kuya Mason. Nalasing si Kuya Mason at paggising niya sa kanyang kwarto, may ibang babae siyang katabi, pareho silang nakahubad at galit na galit siya, pinagsusuntok pa ang pader. Agad niya pa'ng pinaalis ang kawawang amerikana na umiiyak.

"Wala namang girlfriend si Kuya Mason?" bakas sa boses ko ang pagtataka. "Limang taon na siya sa Florida simula noong huli siyang pumunta rito? Anong nangya—"

"Gusto kong malaman kung ano ang problema, little girl," matigas at nagdidilim ang ekspresyon sa mukha niyang pagputol sa sasabihin ko. "Tell me."

Pressing my lips tightly, and kept my gaze down on his chest, silence made it all clear that I didn't know what to answer, no words were available for me to say.

My face was a little dry after he wiped the tears, but I knew that my nose and cheeks were red because of useless crying over him.

"Naiinis ako sa'yo," mahina kong sabi.

Napasinghap ako nang mas hinila niya ako palapit sa kanya at namalayan ko na lamang ang sarili kong mukha na sobrang lapit sa kanya.

Titig na titig ang kanyang mga mapangahas na mga mata sa akin. Naramdaman ko na ang dulo ng kanyang matangos na ilong sa tabi ng ilong ko dahil sa bahagyang nakatagilid ang kanyang ulo.

"Bakit ka naman naiinis sa'kin huh? Hm?" he paused and pressed his lips hard with a little force against mine. He continuously kissed me, but he didn't use his tongue and teeth like the usual. "Naiinis ka sa'kin? Hindi ako hihinto hangga't 'di mo sinabing 'di ka na naiinis sa'kin."

Hindi ko sinabing 'di na ako naiinis sa kanya, kasi naman paano ako makakapagsalita

kung panay ang paghalik niya sa akin?

I let him move my arms and he wrapped it around his neck. The smack after smack became a gentle and slow french kiss, he was leading it, and I just responded.

Marahan kong sinasabayan ang bawat paggalaw ng kanyang dila at labi.

We stopped when I pulled out and gasped for air. I felt like drowning.

"Why are you crying, little girl?" was the first thing he asked, he's breathing evenly.

"I-I can't find my underwear," turo ko sa kalat na ginawa ko rito sa magandang kwarto. "Tinawag kita pero 'di ka naman nakikinig."

"Is that all?"

"Yes."

"You can borrow my underwear instead. If you want," naririnig ko sa kanyang boses na pinipigilan niyang tumawa bago tinuro ang isang gamit sa tabi ng mga kalat na ginawa ko. "Our underwear is in that suitcase, little girl."

Padabog akong tumayo mula sa pagkakaupo sa kanyang hita at pumunta sa kinaroroonan ng suitcase na tinuturo niya.

I frowned when I heard his phone rang again. "Lumabas ka na, lagi ka namang ganyan."

"Don't stomp, little girl," saway nito bago ko narinig ang pagsagot niya ng tawag. "Please contact my secretary, avoid giving me phone calls and text messages because it's making my wife upset."

Then he ended the call.

Somehow, what he did make me feel assured and contented, but I didn't show it to him, I tried to hide it. It's obvious nonetheless. I didn't expected that he would say it.

I froze when I felt that familiar hard and muscular arms encircled me from behind, and that soft lips gently moving on my temple, sending me his warm kisses.

"Muntik ka nang nadulas sa banyo noon at ayokong mangyari ulit 'yon," bulong nito habang hinihimas ang tiyan ko. "Sabay na tayong maligo."

We did, we got our shower together, fixed ourselves and went to a nearby coffee shop to meet Hezion, Cykee and their little boy.

Hindi naman kami nagtagal doon at bumalik din agad dahil kailangan pa naming maghanda para sa pagpunta namin sa mansyon ng mga Cavanaugh.

Until now, Law and I were always fighting over small things, but he would swallow his pride and just understand me.

Who wouldn't get angry at me if I always initiate war between us? It's because I could not get over at the past, I didn't like to be under his intimidating presence because it intended me to remember all the bad things that had made a scar with a missing piece in my heart and mind.

That missing piece was my first baby. I was a mother, I would feel empty to lose a little life.

I was back in reality from overthinking when the car parked in front of the cream coloured theme mansion. The familiar and grand mansion of the Cavanaugh, standing proud, screaming of elegance and grandiosity.

Meticulously, I roamed my gaze around the exterior of the mansion, and found that there were a little changes, but the colour of the walls were still the same, it was just repainted to make it look new and alive.

Seeing Manang Letecia standing by the doorway of the mansion to welcome us made me think about my childhood memories here and in the hacienda back in Compostela Valley.

"Careful," sabi ni Law nang pinagbuksan niya ako ng pinto ng kanyang mamahaling kotse at tinulungang lumabas. "Please don't get mad at me, little girl. Bibilhan naman kita no'n pero mamaya na, okay?"

Kanina pa kasi ako nakanguso at ang hirap pigilan dahil gustong-gusto kong bumili ng kape, 'yong mapait, ang kaso ay sabi niya mamaya na raw.

"Fine, lagi namang mamaya tapos makakalimutan mo na naman? Ang lakas talaga ng loob mo'ng buntisin ako, Law, 'di mo naman pala kayang ibigay ang mga kailangan ko," I ranted as I stepped out of the car and withdraw my hand from his after I stood on my feet. "Mas mabuti pa'ng ako na lang ang bibili."

He once forgot to buy me what I requested before, and I got really mad, but the following request after that, he didn't forget to buy all of it. He bought more than what I asked.

I was about to walk past him but a large hand stopped me when it caressed my baby bump.

Lumipat ang tingin ko kay Law at nakitang may nakadikit ng phone sa kanyang tainga, patuloy niya pa rin namang hinahaplos ang tiyan ko at direktso ang tingin sa akin.

"Oo. 'Yong mapait na kape, bilhin mo na lahat," matigas niyang sabi sa kabilang linya, ni hindi niya ako nilubayan ng tingin. "Ngayon na, mainit ang ulo ng asawa ko."

"Hindi pa tayo kasal," bara ko sa kanya at hinayaang haplusin ng kanyang malaking kamay ang baby bump ko.

He's the father anyway, he had the right to touch and feel the baby. Hindi ko 'yon ipagkakait sa kanya.

Umatras ang nguso ko at tinapunan na lamang siya ng isang masamang tingin. Hindi na siya nakipag-away pa at iginiya na ako patungo sa hagdan ng mansyon.

"Kryptonite, hija, aba'y nagdadalang tao ka? Sinong ama? Ikinasal ka na ba roon?" Manang Letecia's voice sounded so shock, obvious that she didn't expected it. "Akala ko ay hindi ka na babalik, hija. Masaya akong napagpasyahan mo'ng bumisita. Nandito silang lahat."

I brought my gaze to Law and rolled my eyes at him when I caught him staring and reading my reaction.

They didn't know. How could Law keep this? Well, maybe, he brought me here to tell

them, but I was so sure that his dad knew it.

"Manang, meet my fiancée, Kryptonite Fortaleza," Law announced.

Napatingin ako sa iilang katulong na nakarinig no'n at karamihan sa kanila ay saglit na natigilan sa kanilang ginagawa.

Ako naman ang nagulat ngayon nang nakitang 'di man lang nagulat si Manang Letecia sa kanyang narinig, imbes ay dahan-dahang umangat ang sulok ng kanyang mga labi.

Wala na akong ibang narinig mula kay Manang Letecia dahil iginiya na naman ako ni Law patungo sa dining room ng mansyon.

The fine dining table with chairs where all the Cavanaugh cousins that was wearing their casual attire were currently sitting and was like waiting, they greeted us with curiosity and confusion on their faces. It's just them. I could not see those persons that was once my parents, uncles and aunts.

Tensed and nervous, I could feel the excitement mixed with worry in my whole system.

It seemed like the Cavanaugh cousins changed. They were all too formal and sitting properly on their seats, silently talking like a businessman in a board meeting.

Formally, they behave themselves, respected Law at his intimidating presence.

Kuya Lazi was here, and there was something wrong with the atmosphere that surrounded him. The way he gave his cousins a strange look, his eyes were filled with emptiness. Same as Kuya Saul.

Hindi naman sila ganito kapormal noon kapag kaharap nila si Law, pero ngayon ay tila wala ng makakapantay sa respetong binibigay nila kay Law.

Nakaupo na kami ni Law at pinanatili niya ako malapit sa kanya, sa tabi niya at nakikita ko pa ang naguguluhang tingin ng mga pinsan niya nang nakita ang umbok ng tiyan ko.

Alam ko namang gusto na nila akong yakapin o 'di kaya'y halikan sa pisngi at noo pero pinipigilan nila dahil nararamdaman nilang may kakaiba.

"I know all of you thinks that Kryptonite is our sister, your cousin," Law started, and I thought that they were going to ask, but unexpectedly, they kept themselves quiet and waited for him to continue. "She's not, she's aunt Lauren's daughter. Daumier, Saul, she's your half sister."

"Mom told us," Daumier responded coldly, but the respect was there.

"Hindi pinaalam sa'min," Kuya Ruin's moderate tone of voice interrupted in a proper way. "Pero kahit gano'n ay wala namang magbabago. Ituturing pa rin namin siyang prinsesa."

Kuya Laki was silent, and it seemed like they were not in good terms with Kuya Ruin.

I turned to Law and saw him shook his head. "Hindi na kailangan, Ruin, dahil tinuturing ko na siyang reyna."

Pakiramdam ko ay parang sasabog na ang puso ko, naghaharumentado nang dahil sa narinig.

"Kuya, anong ibig mo'ng sabihin?" Kuya Zanoah couldn't stop himself from asking anymore. At least, it was not a complaint. His brother, Kuya Isaiah just kept himself silent with that innocent look on his face.

Lumipat ang paningin ni Law sa'kin at tumayo mula sa kinauupuan niya sa gitnang dulo ng mesa.

"Slowly," utos ni Law nang tinulungan niya akong tumayo mula sa kinauupuan ko at siya naman ang dahan-dahang lumuhod sa harap ko habang pinapanood siya ng kanyang mga pinsan at kapatid.

"Law," I called softly as I watched him kissed my baby bump, touched it gently.

It was okay. I was wearing my white coloured loose long sleeves maternity dress.

Tumayo siya at hinawakan ang likod ko bago hinarap ang kanyang mga pinsan at kapatid
na pinipigilan ang paglaki ng kanilang mga mata.

"She's carrying my child," he announced before he looked down at me and gave me his ever genuine smile. "Once a Cavanaugh, always a Cavanaugh."

I was staring at his lips, that genuine smile just got me off guard, broke down my walls and had me almost taken aback.

Ngayon ko pa nakita ang ganitong side niya dahil madalas ay tipid lang ang kanyang ngiti, kakaiba kay Kuya Mason na laging nakasimangot at kasing pormal din ni Law. Kaya nga naaalala ko ang mga half brothers kong Fortaleza sa mga Cavanaugh. Medyo may pagkakahawig ang kanilang mga ugali.

Magsasalita na sana ako ngunit napalingon kaming lahat sa may pinto nang pumasok si Manang Letecia, nagmamadali.

"Law, hijo," sabi ng matanda, bakas pa ang pag-aalala sa kaniyang ekspresyon. "Nandito ang tatay niyo, gustong makipag-usap sa'yo."

I turned to Law and saw how his genuine smile faded, his lips altered into a grim line.

"Little girl, stay here, okay? Wait for your coffee, may kakausapin lang ako," bumalik na naman sa dati ang paraan ng pagsasalita niya ngunit mas mahinahon naman. Pinaupo niya ulit ako at nilagyan niya pa ng pagkain ang pinggan sa harap ko bago hinalikan ang noo ko. "Mabilis lang 'to. Babalik din ako agad."

Law left and Manang Letecia stayed here.

Nang binalik ko ang tingin sa mga makikisig at matipunong magpipinsang Cavanaugh ay nahuli kong nakatingin silang lahat sa'kin.

My gaze went to Kuya Daumier when he got up from his seat and looked at me with open arms. "Come here, Kry, give us a hug."

With all my love for them, I gave each of them a hug. Kuya Lazi and Kuya Laki gave me hugs and kisses on my forehead, head and cheeks even though I knew that they were hiding something deep inside, their problems.

Kuya Lazi looked empty and soulless, on the other hand, Kuya Laki was filled with anger and hatred.

What happened to them?

Nagsimula na kaming kumain at nagkuwentuhan, tinatanong ako kung ano ang mga nangyari sa akin sa Florida kasama ang mga Fortaleza at kung maayos ba ang pakikitungo nila sa akin doon.

I answered them honestly.

Hindi pa nga ako tapos sa pagkain nang naramdaman kong parang kailangan kong pumasok sa banyo upang umihi.

Standing up, Kuya Laki stood up too and helped me since he was near me, I could still manage to stand up despite of my weight, the baby bump was not that big anyway.

"I wanna pee, kuya" sabi ko. "Pero ang sabi ni Law, kapag papasok daw ako ng banyo ay dapat kasama siya dahil baka ay madulas ako."

"Bunso, ayos lang ba kung ako muna ang sasama sa'yo ngayon? Ihahatid lang kita sa banyo at maghihintay ako sa labas," marahang sabi ni Kuya Laki habang hawak pa rin ang isang braso ko.

Ang laki rin ng pinagbago niya, pero sa tingin ko ay lumala lang ang paggamit niya sa mga babae para mawala ang lahat ng iniisip niya.

"Hindi na, kuya, pupuntahan ko na lang si Law," I said with a kind smile formed on my lips. "Nasa'n ba siya?"

"Madalas siyang mag-isa sa dating private room ni dad," Kuya Lazi answered, I could not trace any emotions in his businesslike and calm voice, dark eyes and the expression on his handsome face.

Pumapangalawa rin 'tong si Kuya Lazi sa pagiging istrikto ni Law.

Nagpaalam ako at sinabing babalik din, napagtanto ko ring nawala na si Manang Letecia rito, may inaasikaso yata.

Pumunta ako sa sinasabing dating private room ng dad nila na minsan na ring naging daddy ko, hinding-hindi ko makakalimutan ang mga pasikot-sikot dito sa mansyon ng mga Cavanaugh kaya madali kong nahanap ang kwartong sinasabi nila.

I turned the doorknob and found that it was not locked when I successfully opened it.

"Law, son, sinabi ko na sa'yo na magkikita kayo kapag nasa tamang edad na siya. Anong ginawa mo?"

The first familiar voice that I heard was clearly pushing their subject.

Zacharias Cavanaugh's broad back was facing me while he was facing Law and a table separating them. They didn't notice my presence yet.

"Nasa tamang edad na siya, dad," Law's voice was as hard as his father's. "She's not underage."

"That's not my point—"

"Then I don't get your point, dad," he cut him off. "Ang hirap magpigil. Ilang taon

na akong nagpipigil."

Saglit na bumalot sa buong paligid ang katahimikan.

That's when Law caught me when he shifted his look over his father's shoulder.

"Law..." I whispered. Marahan ko pa'ng hinihimas ang tiyan ko at nag-aalalang pinapanood sila. Hindi pa rin ako pumasok.

Without further ado, Law walked past the side of the table between him and his dad, and made his way toward me.

He left his dad right there and approached me. His father turned and looked at us with disapproval in his eyes.

I felt Law's arm at the small of my back, planting a soft and long kiss on my temple before he set his intimidating eyes back to his father.

Law ended their conversation.

"Wala akong sinasanto maliban sa babaeng 'to. Gagawin ko siyang Cavanaugh kahit labag sa batas mo."

Epilogue

Mature Content Warning. Epilogue may contain content of an adult nature. If you are easily offended or are under the age of 18, just ignore and skip some scenes. Some words within are intended for adults only and may include scenes of sexual content, strong languages, violence etc.

After

For six years that I had been with him, lived with him under the same roof, slept with him on the same bed, before that six years was a mess, he had a hard time earning my trust instead of earning money. His patience grew higher and higher, longer and longer every time we had our fight and misunderstanding. I just couldn't forget about what happened before we met again in Florida.

We lost our first baby, and for this second, he was so much careful, he never left my side. There was this once that his father called and asked for his presence on a certain meeting, but he refused to go.

He was scared that we might lose our baby again if he leave.

As the time healed me, it took almost three years before Law and I got along, yes, even if we're married, called husband and wife, I treated him like a garbage, like he was just nothing and thus doesn't exist. We slept together, but he was the one who would hug me as I turned my back at him. I knew that my behaviour and attitude was getting dirtier than the effluvium from what who knows where. I couldn't stop it, my mind was polluted with anger and vengeance.

Our baby just turned two years old when I confessed all my fear and doubt of him.

I couldn't believe that I made him cry as I shouted, yelled at him all the sore and raw words that I wanted him to hear, that had wanted to be heard. He cried in front of me, begging, pleading the life out of him. I was really surprised because he didn't cry in our wedding, he just cried after three years of our wedding.

The causes from the past had given us deleterious effects in the future.

"Little girl..."

"Mommy..."

Mariin akong napapikit nang nagsabay pa talaga ang dalawa sa pagtawag sa akin.

I was busy placing our clothes inside Law's closet here in his own room at Grandpa Sattie's hacienda. Done with my work in my baby's room, of course, Law told the maids to prepare a room for his child. He wanted our baby to sleep there and separated from us.

Privacy, he was claiming for the nonsense privacy that he wanted. He was kept on complaining that our baby should sleep and stay in the other room just because our baby was at the right age.

Five years old? He couldn't have been kidding me.

"Adonis, son. Go to grandpa for a minute," Law was using his usual authoritative voice over his son. "May pag-uusapan lang muna kami ng mommy mo."

"No, daddy. I know what you're gonna do with mommy," same as his father, my baby Adonis stood his ground coldly.

I wasn't facing the two, I was busy arranging the clothes and was facing the terracotta coloured wooden closet.

Hearing their voices behind me was kind of annoying, a disturbance, I was focusing and there they were? Fighting over something.

But I found it very amusing and cute anyway.

"What then, son?"

"Tito Laki said—"

"Baby, come here," I cut my baby off from continuing his sentence. "What do you want from mommy?"

Ilang beses na ring pinagsabihan ni Law si Kuya Laki na huwag tuturuan ng kahit anong kagaguhan si Adonis, pero kahit na hindi naman turuan ni Kuya Laki si Adonis ay minsan ko na ring nahuli si Luzon, 'yong anak ni Kuya Lazi at ang pinsan kong si Calista. That handsome boy was teaching Adonis everything that he learned from Kuya Laki.

Turning my heels, I faced the two and my baby was the first who greeted me with a tight hug on my waist, his little arms couldn't reach higher.

I glanced at Law just close right behind our son, there I could see through the hardened expression on his handsome face that he was getting impatient and irritated at his son's disobedience.

"Son," Law warned.

"Mommy, scold mo si daddy, nahuli ko siya, sinilip ka niya sa bathroom habang naliligo ka po, mommy," sumbong ng bata habang nararamdaman ko ang baba nitong nakadikit sa tiyan ko, nakaangat ang tingin sa akin.

"Adonis—"

"Law, is that true?" pagputol ko sa matigas at nakakatakot na pagbanggit ni Law sa pangalan ng anak namin.

When Law turned his look from his son hugging me to my eyes, it softened, his hardened eyes earlier just softened.

A minute of unbreakable silence had passed through across the distance between us, I was actually waiting for Law to speak. Intently staring at him for a second or two.

"Yes," he surrendered like he was afraid that I might really scold him. "Pero saglit lang naman 'yon, little girl," was his reasoning.

Indeed, he does the scolding, keelhaul, to lecture and reprimand sometimes, but he would do those things if he know that our baby was getting out of hand.

Unpleasantly though, this time, our baby just got his revenge. Adonis was smart and intelligent enough to know that he couldn't scold his own daddy, so he did otherwise, because he knew that there was only one person, one woman that could scold Law.

"Adonis, baby, punta ka muna kay Grandpa Sattie sa baba, okay? I'll scold your daddy," marahan ko pa'ng hinalikan ang noo at pisngi ng bata dahilan kung bakit siya napangiti sa gitna ng pagiging suplado ng guwapong mukha nito, at tinapunan pa ng malamig na tingin ang kanyang ama habang mahigpit pa ring nakayakap sa beywang ko.

"Opo, mommy," my baby Adonis said obediently.

"Very good, baby," I praised his subservience and planted a long kiss on the tip of his pointed nose.

Pinakawalan na ako ng maliit na braso ng anak ko bago ito nagpaalam matapos akong hinalikan sa pisngi ko.

I watched the little Law walked with pride, dignity and courtesy, until he's out of sight, although he didn't really obey to his father's command, he would just obey if Law was angry and serious.

This was just a play for them after all.

Minsan pa nga ay silang dalawa ang pinapagalitan ko, minsan din ay ang baby namin kapag alam kong mali siya, pero natutuwa talaga 'yong bata kapag si Law ang pinapagalitan ko.

Angrily, I snapped my gaze to Law after I closed the door of the room.

"I'm sorry, little girl," even though his baritone voice was hard and sounded strict, I could hear the sincerity in it.

I sighed and crossed my arms against my chest, I shot him a glare. "Hindi pa rin tama 'yon, Law. Pa'no kung gayahin ka ng bata? Law naman."

"I was just checking on you," dahilan na naman nito, dinedepensahan ang kanyang sarili.

"If that's the case then you shouldn't have to take a peek, you should have went inside the bathroom," I dictated.

Tumitig ako sa kanyang mukha, naninigas ang panga, may maliliit na buhok pa ang tumutubo sa kanyang panga, baba at itaas na bahagi ng mapupula at manipis na labi.

Matured, the adult Law was really turning hot and sexy although he was already thirty two years old. The bulging muscles on his strong arms and the eight packs on his stomach never faded or lessen a bit.

Women in the city and province had tried to seduce him since the past years whenever we have a vocation into different places and tourist spot out of town or out of the country.

They thought that he was single, but he always carry Adonis wherever he goes. Were the women got blind nowadays?

Hinayaan kong lapitan ako ni Law dito sa nakasarang pinto ng kwarto niya.

Slowly, he grabbed my wrist and gently pulled me closer to his hard, tall and muscular figure, towering over me. "Baka sundan ako ng bata at papasok din sa loob?"

He had a point, but I cleared my throat and rested my free hand on his broad chest, lightly pushing him away.

"Attorney, hindi makakapasok ang bata kapag ni-lock mo ang pinto," rason ko naman.

Hindi ako magpapatalo kahit na isa siyang abogado, pero madalas talaga ay alam kong talo na ako ngunit nagpapatalo na lamang siya para iwas gulo at hindi na rin ako magalit sa kanya.

"Mrs. Cavanaugh, you want me to get inside the bathroom while you're taking a bath and lock the door?" he whispered over my ear, and I could feel his hot breath, tickling the skin on my neck. "Therefore, you want me to do something more than just seeing you naked?"

So close, he was so close that I didn't even noticed his arms around the small of my back. He was pressing my body against him.

From his statement, I knew right there that I absolutely got lost. He won.

"No, of course not," I denied with downturn gaze.

Hindi siya nagsalita at mas piniling hinila ako patungo sa dulong bahagi ng kama. Umupo siya roon at hinigit ako dahilan kung bakit napaupo ako sa kanyang hita.

"Pero gusto ko talaga, little girl," pag-aamin nito, tinutukoy ang sinasabi niyang maaaring mangyari sa loob ng banyo. "Kaya lang kahit na sa banyo ay pinagbabawal ni grandpa 'yon kaya hanggang silip lang talaga ako sa tuwing nandito tayo sa hacienda."

Not allowed? Making love in the hacienda was not allowed? I didn't know that. I

meant, why? What if we break the rules? It was not like Grandpa Sattie would know.

"Kaya ba mas gusto mo sa bahay mo na lang tayo tutuloy?" tanong ko habang nakakapit na ang mga braso sa kanyang leeg.

I was referring to his elegant wooden house here somewhere in Grandpa Sattie's wide land.

"Bahay natin, little girl."

"Anong pag-uusapan natin?" pag-iiba ko sa usapan nang may naalala ako kanina na may gusto pala siyang pag-usapan namin. "Pinaalis mo pa 'yong bata kanina."

Silent concentration, he wordlessly stared at me for a minute. Only he learned to break the hard, dark and intimidating expression on his chiselled face the time he cried. Starting that day, he treated me more like a delicate and precious glass, afraid that he would accidentally break the fragile me.

Observing him at this moment, I could admit to myself that this man had a hundred per cent excellent performance of being an uncle to his nephew and niece, a father to our son, and a husband to me.

After felt like maybe two minutes of indelible silence between us, finally, Law was strong enough to wash it away.

"Gusto ko sanang mamasyal," he said in a low and moderate tone, like he was planning on going to some sort of amusement park to wander around and get himself some entertaining games and rides.

"Mamasyal?"

I mused. "And?"

"Samahan mo'ko," hinigpitan niya pa ang pagkakapulupot ng kanyang maskuladong mga braso sa beywang ko.

Para siyang bata na nagpapasamang bumili ng kendi.

"Where?"

"Grandpa told me that his new indoor fish farming is needed to be blessed," aniya na parang nagpapaliwanag, malayo sa tinanong ko. "May fish pond na siya para sa mga tilapia, pero iba naman 'tong bagong negosyo niya."

I was gently massaging his nape, the side of his neck, and also his tensed shoulders.

"Blessed? Para saan?" I asked as I continued doing my work, making my husband relax under my touch.

Narinig ko ang pagtikhim niya at nakita ko pa ang paggalaw ng Adam's apple niya. "Pampasuwerte sa negosyo ni grandpa."

"May misa na magaganap do'n?"

"Wala," mabilis niyang agap sa tanong ko. "Kararating nga lang ng mga breeding tanks na binili ni grandpa galing sa ibang bansa."

Walang misa? Pero ang sabi ay basbasan? Nevermind. Baka gusto niya lang makita ang lugar.

"Breeding tanks? For the fishes?" once again, I asked.

Didn't have knowledge about those businesses, but still, I wanted to know about it, because it talked about foods and ingredients that I could use for cooking. Fishes and seafoods.

"Yes, little girl. A fish farm aquaculture stock tank looks like a rectangular mini pool made in fiberglass," he explained while he's busy spotting some light and warm kisses on my shoulder. "Doon ang mga isda nagpaparami."

"Malayo ba 'yon?"

"Medyo, may sports car naman, we can use it."

"Fine, bibihisan ko lang si Adonis, baka gusto niyang sumama—"

"No," wala pa'ng isang segundong pagpigil niya sa'kin. "Gusto ko tayong dalawa lang, little girl."

Nanliit ang mga mata ko nang dahil sa sinabi niya, mariin kong tinitigan ang kanyang mapang-akit na mga mata na tila ay may gusto siyang gawin na 'di puwedeng kasama o makita ng bata.

"But what about our baby?" my voice sounded confused and unsure.

"Ako na lang bihisan mo," bakas sa matigas na boses nito ang paglalambing at pagsuyo nang may hinila niya ako palapit sa kanya dahilan kung bakit halos magkadikit na ang aming mga katawan.

I knew that he could feel my breasts squeezing against his hard and broad chest, and I knew that he was loving the soft and bouncy feeling of it.

Of course, after my pregnancy, my breasts grew impressively and impossibly large. Just the average size and not those extremely and enormously huge breasts.

"Law," I called with a mixture of warning when I saw that he could not get enough of kissing my shoulder, and his one hand under my butt, gently squeezing it like he thought that it was kind of a stuff toy.

"Hindi makakasama ang anak natin," aniya habang patuloy pa rin sa paghalik sa balikat ko at gano'n din ang pagpisil ng malaking kamay niya sa pwet ko. "Nagpaalam si grandpa sa'kin kanina. Isasama niya si Adonis, ipapakilala niya raw sa mga apo ng kaibigan niya."

Apparently, I was trying to ignore the burning touch of his hot lips against the sensitive skin of my shoulder, and his big arms claiming my butt.

He was intimidatingly staring at me as he did those things, he wanted to witness how my facial expression would respond to it and my own body would want for it.

Unsatisfied of what he was seeing on my face, he tried his hands to get inside my jeans. I let him anyway because I wouldn't be the one who would suffer from sexual arousal.

Nang umusog ako palapit sa kanya ay nakita ko ang pagkagat niya ng kanyang pang-ibabang labi nang nasagi ko ang naninigas na umbok sa kanyang pagkalalaki.

"Ah gano'n ba?" balewalang tanong ko, hindi na inisip pa ang mga nangyayari sa

kanya. "Nagugutom ka ba? You wanna eat something? I'll cook, nagpapahinga pa kasi si Nayda."

"I wanna eat you," he murmured, although it was very clear.

"What?" my left brow raised.

"I mean, mangisda tayo? Gusto kong makita ang indoor fishpond ni grandpa bago tayo kukuha ng tilapia sa kabilang fishpond niya tapos ipagluto mo'ko," agap niya sa sinabi ko.

How he could not really say it straightforward, howbeit, I knew that if it longed and craved for my entrance, he would definitely say what he wanted—needed out loud.

"You sure?" I mocked.

"Yes, little girl, what else would we do?"

"Nothing."

To no avail, he withdrew his hand out from under my butt and just embraced me.

Inayos ko ang aking puwesto sa kanyang hita ngunit 'di ko namalayang napatukod ang aking isang kamay sa matigas at malaking umbok niya, tila mas masahol pa sa bukol ito.

"Argh... F-Fuck—"

"You're saying?"

"I love you, little girl, so much, 'wag mo namang sakalin ang pagkalalaki ko," bakas pa sa nakakatakot at malalim na boses nito ang iniindang parang sakit yata sa nasagi kong umbok kaya agad kong inalis ang aking kamay. "Alis na tayo?"

"Nagmamadali ka?" I had tried to figure what was up with him.

Parang may mali talaga sa mga kinikilos ni Law. Ganito kasi siya lagi kapag gusto niyang may mangyari sa amin.

"Hindi naman," pagbawi niya at muli na namang hinahalikan ang balikat ko, sumasagi pa nga ang dulo ng kanyang matangos na ilong doon. "I just wanna show you the fishpond."

"I've seen the fishpond before," I told him with great anticipation in my voice. "'Yong bago lang na indoor hindi pa."

"Let's go?"

I nodded while I was studying his every move, tensed jaw, tensed muscles on his arms, hardened eyes were focused on me. Like how a lion scrutinize its prey.

Adequately, with our plans for the rest of the afternoon, I told him that I just needed to change my clothes but he stopped me, he said that we would just need to bring extra clothes. We did, he brought extra clothes for me and for him, he placed the things inside the backseat of the sports car that we would use.

The hacienda got old but it never change, it was always renovated after two or three years of being renovated, repainted and fix all the things that was needed to be fixed.

I remembered the old and antique chandelier hanging from the high ceiling of the entrance hall. The grandfather clock at the corner, grandpa's roll of tobacco and its outmoded ashtray. All of them were still here. I could call this as an antediluvian hacienda. Everything was old, and was made and built a long time ago, but it never died.

"Mommy," my baby Adonis walked his way toward me with his short legs when he caught Law and me went out of the hacienda. "Did daddy cry because you scolded him?"

Nandito kasi silang dalawa ni Grandpa Sattie sa labas ng hacienda, hinihintay nila si Heron, hinanda lang yata ang sasakyan din nila. Nauna kasing hinanda ni Heron ang sports car na gagamitin namin ni Law.

"Yes, baby," sinasabayan ko na 'yong bata at binuhat ko pa siya.

Ang angas pa ng dating ng suot niya, darks jeans for boys, and a white clean polo shirt. The style of his hair was same as Law. Kahit na madalas silang nag-aaway ay iniidolo niya ang kanyang ama at gusto pa'ng gayahin ang lahat ng kung anong meron dito.

"I didn't cry," matigas na sabi ni Law mula sa likuran ko dahil kung bakit sumimangot 'yong bata.

"Law," I warned sternly.

"I whined," bawi ni Law sa sinabi niya kanina dahil kung bakit napangiti ang anak namin.

I turned, and faced Law. It looked like someone was not in the mood, because he was intimidatingly standing straight with that serious and hard expression on his face. Glancing down at his pants, I saw how it tightened, and he didn't even bother to hide the large bulge.

Genuinely smiling at him, I gave my baby Adonis to him, so they could talk before our baby would leave with Grandpa Sattie.

"Daddy, our deal?" Adonis whispered below Law's right ear, and he even placed his little hands at the corners of his lips to hide and secure what he would going to say as he leaned forward to his father.

I heard it anyway.

"Fine, I'll buy you Superman toys," Law whispered back, but he didn't hide his lips with his hand. "But you should clean your room every morning so your mommy would not get up just to clean it."

"Deal, daddy!"

Binaba na ni Law ang bata sabay halik sa tuktok ng ulo nito at saka naman tumakbo ang bata pabalik sa kinaroroonan ni Grandpa Sattie kung saan ay dumating na si Heron na siyang nagmamaneho ng kulay puting van.

We watched them leave, and our son even waved his hands through the open window of the van.

"Kryptonite, little girl, get in," ang siyang pumukaw sa akin nang narinig ko mula sa boses nito ang bakas ng dahas na may pinaghalong rahan.

Ako kasi madalas ang masusunod kapag kaharap namin ang anak namin, pero ngayon ay tila gusto niyang siya ang masusunod.

Pumasok na kami sa loob ng sports car at siya naman ang nagmamaneho. Wala naman akong problema pero napapalunok nga lang minsan sa tuwing napapasulyap ako sa malaking umbok doon sa gitnang bahagi ng suot niyang pants.

The road was not cemented, but we came past the farm and the area of the horse stables. I think it was just a ten minutes drive 'til our destination, it was all familiar, and yes, we would come and have our vacation here every year, every summer and Christmas break.

Stress reliever as what they all said, that was why Grandpa Sattie had spent his months here longer than the city. He did visit the city back in Manila, the mansion, but because he was old and aging, he would rather chose to stay most of his months here in his peaceful hacienda.

Beyond the green grass at the side of the bumpy road, I saw the new built large building from afar, it looked wide and spacious, but not tall, didn't have second floor, yes. It was not as wide as the rice storehouse that had high roofs for the sacks of rice in a mountainous arrangement inside it. The fishpond that would be place inside the building was just a simple and concrete building with a roof painted in blue.

Ang sabi ni Law ay titingin lang daw kami saglit sa loob ng indoor fishpond ni Grandpa Sattie pagkatapos ay pupunta na kami sa dating fishpond nito, malawak kung saan nagpaparami ang mga tilapia.

Inihinto

ni Law ang sports car sa tabi ng daan at agad na lumabas para pagbuksan ako ng pinto bago ko pa man mabuksan 'yon.

"Law, are you angry?" was the first thing that I asked, noticing his grip on my wrist that was tightening after we left the car and started to walk on the narrow and cemented pathway that would lead us to the new built fishpond.

The invisible rigid cords on his arms were pulsing, hard, active and alive. I was so sure that he was trying hard not to touch me earlier on our ride.

I tried to suppress a wince from his tight hold, and also the way he was pulling my wrist, seemed like he was in a hurry.

"I'm not angry, little girl," Law's baritone voice was low and controlled. "Hindi ko kayang magalit sa'yo, mahal na mahal kita, sobra, at 'di ko kayang makita kang galit sa'kin, pero ang hira magpigil."

"Magpigil?" I echoed, stopping the urge to laugh.

"Kryptonite, little girl, don't start," seryosong sabi nito at saka ko pa namalayan na binuksan niya ang pinto ng fishpond building saka hinila ako papasok.

"Law, I don't know what you're talking about," pagmaang-maangan ko nang sinara niya ang pinto, ni-lock, bago humarap sa'kin.

"F-Fuck, little girl, please? Please help me, I'm erect..." pagmamakaawa nito habang nakaangat at halos magkasalubong na ang mga kilay, senyales na parang nasasaktan o nahihirapan siya. "Look, little girl, I can't stop it," binuksan niya pa ang kanyang pants at doon ipinakita sa akin ang ebidensya niya.

Mariin akong napapikit nang sa ilang beses niya nang ginawa 'to ay hindi pa rin ako nagsawang napatingin doon. Kumikinig ang dulo at may mga ugat pa ang nagpapakita, akala ko ay 'yong braso niya lang ang maugat. Parang isang bata itong nagsusumbong at itinuturo kung saan nasugatan.

"Lagi naman talagang nakatayo 'yan, Law," I sighed and brought my look up at his face. "For my Law then, I'll help you."

"Thank you, little girl," aniya, matigas pa rin ang boses at hindi man lang ibinalik sa loob ng kanyang pants o underwear ang kanyang pagkalalaki para maitago man lang.

Law closed the distance between us, wrapped his muscular arms around me, crashing his erect manhood against the lower part of my flat stomach. Of course, it was flat, I made myself back to my normal form after a year of bringing my baby Adonis in the world, after I had shown him the world that my first baby didn't even caught a glimpse.

I should take care of my body and maintain its sexy figure, my husband was active in all activities, it was a must for me to work the fats out of my body, since my husband was getting sexier and hotter every passing years.

How unfair if he would be the only one with that well-toned body? What about me? I should give him the satisfaction, contentment and pleasure that he deserve after years of experiencing hardships, trials difficulties, obstacles, tribulations and name it all.

This man deserved better, and I knew that I was not better enough, that's why I was making myself better for him.

While he was busy caging me in his arms, I looked over his shoulder and examined the place.

Indoor fish farming. Unlike the outdoor where the fish farmers would just dig in the ground to make a pond, indoor was something like the alternative version of it.

Water pipes, hose, other materials, and what Law said earlier, I saw the breeding tanks or fish farm aquaculture stock tanks where they would stock the little sea creatures with scales and fins. The tools and materials were not in a good arrangement, it was messed around the whole enclosed place, mostly the blue coloured rectangular and circular shaped stock tanks. It was large and long enough that two persons would fit inside the stock tanks, it was like the larger type of a casket or a vampire's coffin. The differences were the size, shape and the stock tank doesn't have lid to close or for covering.

My loving husband informed me that the workers had given one day off before they would start to arrange all the materials and stock the fishes, under grandpa's orders, and it was today, there's no single person in here except for the two of us.

Why does it feel like it was all planned?

I couldn't suppress a chuckle when Law started his gentle moves. I tried not to giggle from the tickling sensations that he was giving me through kissing my neck and shoulder, nuzzling the tip of his pointed nose on the hollow part of my collarbone, and inhaling me as his hot breathe hit my skin.

Ramdam ko pa rin ang kanyang maugat na pagkalalaki sa may pusod ko, dumidiin, tila

ay gusto niyang sakalin 'yon, nagbabaka sakaling lumambot ngunit lalo lang itong tumigas at uminit.

Hindi rin nagpapahuli ang kamay ni Law nang hinayaan ko siyang ipasok 'yon sa aking suot na jeans at marahas na pinisil ang magkabilang pisngi ng pwet ko, matapos ang hindi ko namalayang kinalas niya pala ang strapless bra ko kanina, at nakita ko na lang yon na nahulog sa sahig.

Natawa na lamang ako nang dahil sa kasabikan niya, parang kahapon lang kasi ay may nangyari sa amin. Ngayon nga na hapon pa lang ay 'di na siya nakapagpigil.

Hurriedly, he took off his shirt, I watched him did it to himself, and I also tried to help him, but he was fast enough to ask for any of my help. He was half naked when he faced me again, although the zipper of his pants was still open, and his extremely large and long manhood was shamelessly exposed.

"Law!" natatawang sambit ko nang marahas niya akong hinila patungo sa isang kulay asul na stock tank.

Napangiti na lamang ako habang pinagmamasdan siyang abala sa kanyang ginagawa nang lumuhod siya at binuksan ang jeans ko bago marahas na hinila pababa kasabay ng panty ko dahil kung bakit marahang tumalbog ang pwet ko nang dahil sa impact nito.

Stepping out of my jeans, I leant my hands on his hard and tensed shoulders to balance myself.

"Step in, little girl," he ordered firmly referring to the blue coloured stock tank beside us.

Tumayo siya mula sa pagkakaluhod at hinawakan ang isang kamay ko sabay halik doon bago niya ako inalalayan upang makaapak sa loob ng stock tank.

Humiga ako roon at medyo masikip din pala dahil ilang pulgada lang ang espasyo sa gilid ko at pakiramdam ko talaga ay nakahiga ako sa isang kabaong ngunit medyo hindi nga lang ako komportable dahil gawa ito sa plastic kaya masakit ito sa likuran, may iba namang gawa sa fiberglass.

"Ang init," reklamo ni Law habang nakatayo pa rin sa gilid at 'di pa pumaibabaw sa akin, hindi ko namalayang may hawak na pala siyang hose na nakakonekta yata sa isang malapit na gripo at binasa niya pa ang kanyang dibdib.

Pinanood kong dumaosdos ang mga butil ng tubig mula sa kanyang malapad na dibdib patungo sa kanyang eight packs at pababa sa umaapoy at umiinit na kanyang pagkalalaki

Napakagat ako sa pang-ibabang labi ko nang itinapat niya naman sa akin dito sa baba ang hose, nabasa ang suot kong pangitaas na damit, dumikit pa ito sa katawan ko dahil kung bakit malinaw niyang nakikita ang dibdib at nipple ko.

The heat didn't subdued, it grew more because of the water splashing down and against my body.

Napapikit ako nang naramdaman kong itinapat niya ang dulo ng hose sa bahagi ng pagkababae ko dahil kung bakit marahan akong napa-ungol nang naramdaman ko ang tubig na binasa ang pagkababae ko, parang tinutukso niya talaga ako, binibitin.

He turned off the water and left the hose on the floor before he placed himself on top of me. My tee shirt was now soaked, the stock tank wasn't fulfilled with water,

Law just made my body wet.

Sinunggaban agad ako ni Law ng halik sa labi nang naipuwesto niya na ang kanyang sarili sa ibabaw ko. Marahan ang kanyang nag-iingat na dila at labi sa paghalik sa akin pero ang kanyang kamay ay medyo marahas, ngayon ay hindi lang pwet ang kanyang pinipisil, pati na rin ang dibdib ko kahit suot ko pa ang damit kong nabasa.

Tila ay 'di pa talaga siya nakuntento sa paghalik niya sa labi ko ngunit sabik naman siyang tikman ang iba pa'ng parte ng katawan ko kaya't minsan ay nagpalipat-lipat ang mga maiinit na labi nito.

"A-Ah, ugh... Law," I moaned when I felt him inserted one finger in my entrance while he was nibbling my nipple, I didn't even notice that he already pulled my clothes up, but he didn't take it off.

Because of the pleasure and hot sensations that I felt, all that I could do was to moan and call his name.

I knew that he loved hearing me calling his name, groaning, moaning 'til I reached the climax.

Natigil lang ako saglit sa pag-ungol nang inangat niya ang binti ko at ipinuwesto sa magkabilang gilid ng breeding tank, nakalabas na ang paa at binti ko, dahilan kung bakit nakabuka ang mga hita ko at malinaw niya nang nakikita ang pagkakababae ko.

Tinitigan niya 'yon saglit na parang pinaplano niya pa kung saan siya unang didila.

"Wag mo lang ipagkait sa'kin 'to, little girl," he said in a low, yet gentle voice, and there was a deep meaning behind his words. He was seriously staring at my wet feminine part before he shifted his intense gaze up to my eyes. "I live for you, I breathe for you, I work for you, and I will die for you... for you, it's all for you, little girl, when everything turns out to be nothing for me."

"I love you, attorney," matamis akong nakangiti sa kanya at marahan ko pang ginulo ang kanyang buhok, abot ko naman 'yon dahil kaharap niya ang pagkababae ko, sobrang lapit niya roon na kahit ang kanyang paghinga ay nararamdaman ko. "A-Ah...uhm, ugh..."

I already know that calling him attorney would turn him on, hard and unstoppable.

Sunod-sunod ang pag-ungol ko, lumalakas at masahol pa sa pagsigaw nang hindi na nagsalita si Law at sinunggaban niya ng sagad na paraan ng pagdila ang pagkababae ko. Mapaglaro at mapangahas ang maliksi at malikot nitong mainit na dila habang pinapakinggan niya akong umungol, ungulin ang kanyang pangalan at panoorin ang mukha kong nasasaktan na nasasarapan.

Obviously, it was his way of saying
I love you too.

Ayon sa nalaman ko ilang taon na ang nakalipas ay mas lalo niyang sinasagad ang pagdila kapag hinahawakan ko ng mahigpit ang kanyang buhok at marahang hilahin o idiin ang kanyang ulo sa pagkababae ko.

I did those things that could make him wild and a little ungentle. I loved it that way. He wanted to be the dominant when it comes to this, so, I would just submit.

However, when it comes to family problems and misunderstanding, he would swallow his pride, kneel down in front of me, and ask for forgiveness, although he knew

that he was not at fault.

"Moan my name, little girl," was his request, and tightened his hold on my waist to keep me still.

For my part, I could not stop myself from gripping his hair, his soft yet wet hair where some beads of sweat were dripping and the cold water that he played with earlier had mixed.

"L-Law, ah... Oh! Ugh!" halingling ko at wala sa sariling iginalaw ko rin ang aking balakang upang sabayan ang paggalaw ng kanyang mabangis na dila.

Hindi ko na alam kung saan ako titingin o kung saan ako kakapit dahil masikip itong kinahihigaan ko at walang unan o kumot na makakapitan.

Matapos ang sampung minuto ng pagdila at pagsisipsip niya sa pagkababae ko ay tumayo siya mula sa pagkakadapa sa harap ng pagkababae ko.

Saka ko naramdaman ang dulo ng kanyang matigas na pagkalalaki na ikiniskis niya pa sa basang pagkababae ko.

"Let's finish this, little girl," salita niya na nakapagpabuntong hininga sa akin ngunit napahiyaw ako sa pag-ungol nang pinasok niya ang kalahati ng kanyang pagkalalaki at nagsalita ulit dahilan kung bakit napakapit ako sa kanyang kamay na nakahawak sa beywang ko. "Isa-isahin pa natin lahat ng breeding tanks para suwerte raw ang basbas natin sabi ni grandpa. May walo pa'ng natira, lipat tayo pagkatapos nito."

Kasabay no'n ay ang paghila niya sa beywang ko at ang pagdiin niya ng kanyang pagkalalaki ng buo sa loob ko.

I was not just moaning, I could almost shout my moan, he tried to be gentle, but whenever I made an action that could provoke him, he ended up, thrusting himself inside me, hard to the core.

Provoking him was fun after all. I loved to witness how he would lose control of making himself gentle. Sometimes, I would express a hearty laugh or the teasing, taunting and mocking one, but then, my laugh would soon turn out to be moan after moan of pure pleasure.

Nevertheless, pleasure could make a life, but pain would complete the life that the pleasure had made.

Was it really experience that what they all call as the best teacher? For me, it was not, every people does come through experience, but some hadn't learned.

It was mistake, mistakes were the best teacher. They would learn from it because people were afraid to make the same painful mistakes again. It was okay to have mistakes, but never think of yourself as the mistake.

I closed my eyes as the soft and gentle breeze of wind embraced me after placing the bouquet of white roses on the tombstone made in marble. I stared at it for a minute.

"How are you, baby?" at last, my voice didn't tremble.

"Kuya Noel, did you know?" pagsingit ng baby Adonis ko nang mabilis siyang tumabi sa akin at mahigpit na hinawakan ang kamay ko. "There's a baby inside mommy's tummy. Sh, don't tell daddy, okay?" hininaan niya pa ang kanyang boses upang 'di

marinig ni Law na naglalakad pa lang patungo rito.

Iniwan niya siguro ang daddy niya na inasikaso pa ang pagpark sa sasakyan at tinakbuhan. Wala namang masyadong tao, mga janitor lang na nagwawalis sa tabi ng daan ang nakikita namin dito.

Sinabi ko sa anak ko kahapon lang na buntis ako, limang pregnancy test na ang nasayang ko pero gano'n pa rin ang kinalalabasan, dalawang kulay pulang linya. Hindi ko muna sinabi kay Law dahil medyo busy kasi siya sa mga nagdaang araw at madalas din na sumasakit ang ulo niya, madaling araw na kasi natutulog.

Wala na naman na kaming problema tungkol sa pamilya namin. Everything goes smooth. Hindi na rin siya pinapakialaman ng ama niya. Women? Minsan ko nang nahuli ang isang babae sa opisina niya, ang sabi ay kliyente niya, pero nakikita ko naman na marahan pa'ng hinahaplos ang braso ni Law, muntik ko na nga'ng sinugod pero si Law na mismo ang marahas na nag-alis ng kamay ng babae sa braso niya habang nakabusangot ang mukha, at nang nakita ako ay agad itong lumapit sa akin, bumubulong ng mga matatamis na salita.

Nabitiwan ko ang kamay ni Adonis nang may biglang bumuhat sa kanya habang abala kaming nakatingin sa lapida ng unang baby ko.

"Why did you leave me, son? I told you to stay," I heard Law's stern and worried voice from behind.

"I'm sorry, daddy, po."

Hinarap ko ang mag-ama ko at nakitang nakayuko si baby Adonis, tila ay nararamdaman niya ang pagiging seryoso ng kanyang ama.

I was twenty five years old now and he was thirty two.

"Law, it's okay," marahan ko pa'ng hinaplos ang umiigting na kalamnan sa braso ni Law habang buhat niya ang bata.

"I'm sorry, little girl, I'm just worried," mahinahon nitong sabi at marahan pa'ng hinalikan ang tuktok ng ulo ng bata bago niya binaba.

I thought my baby Adonis would come to me, but he didn't, he hugged his father's leg instead.

"Daddy, 'di ko naman po sadya," bakas ang lamig sa boses ng bata pero alam kong puno ng emosyon 'yon.

"I understand, son," tugon ni Law at ginulo pa ang buhok ng bata. "You're just excited to talk to your kuya."

Adonis let go of his father and went to his older brother. I watched my baby fished out the toys that he kept in his pocket. He placed the little toys, mini cars, and mini robots beside the flowers.

On top of the flowers and toys, there, my first baby's name was carved perfectly.

Noel Fortaleza Cavanaugh

Naramdaman ko naman ang braso ni Law na sinakop ang likod ko nang tumabi siya sa akin, at paulit-ulit na hinalikan ako sa sentido ko.

"Little girl, have you remembered what I said when you were just six years old?"

aniya habang pareho naming pinapanood si Adonis na saglit pa'ng nalalaro ang mga laruang bigay niya sa kuya niya.

My brows furrowed in confusion. "The party? When I found you alone in the corner? Noong pinagalitan ka ni daddy."

"Yes."

"Why?" tanong ko at nag-angat pa ng tingin sa kanyang mukha.

He smiled, and leant forward to my ear, before he whispered. "I mean it."

I thought that he was the most obedient son of Mr. Zacharias Cavanaugh, the respectable with clean reputation, or so I thought. I was six and he was thirteen when a party held in the mansion.

Wearing a pistachio green coloured long sleeves mesh ball gowns for kids, I walked down the hall. I had a fairy wings earlier, but Mommy Sai removed it. I was kind of uncomfortable wearing the wings. I always wear these kinds of dress and gown whenever there's an event in the mansion, and my cousins would wear their tuxedos.

"What a cute baby girl."

"Aw, look at her."

Komento ng iilang kababaihang dalaga rito nang dumaan ako sa table nila.

Ngunit natigilan ako nang nabunggo ako sa isang taong mas matangkad sa akin. "Kry, bunso, where's mommy?"

I looked up and saw that it was Kuya Lazi. He was so handsome tonight, but I was finding someone, and I didn't have enough time to give him a compliment.

"Upstairs, kuya!" masigla kong sagot bago siya iniwan na bakas ang pagtataka sa mukha.

Kanina pa ako naglalakad sa paligid. Sampung minuto at sumasakit na ang paa ko dahil sa may konting heels itong suot ko.

Napangiti ako sa gitna ng sakit na nararamdaman nang nakita ko sa isang sulok ang isang madilim at pamilyar na pigura ng isang lalaki. Nag-iisa, nakaupo sa isang silya, nakapatong pa ang mga siko sa kanyang mga tuhod habang nakayuko ito.

My smile faded when I realized that he was not in the mood, he looked distant and intimidating as always.

He was wearing his tuxedo, and that added his intimidating presence.

I took a step forward and brought my other feet forward, slow and cautious like I was trying to be careful not to wake the sleeping lion when I tried to get inside its den.

But I was stunned when Law lifted his head up and he automatically spotted me.

Sobrang dilim ng kanyang paraan ng pagtingin sa akin at nakita ko pa ang nakakuyom niyang kamay, ngunit natigilan siya nang napagtanto kung sino itong nagbabalak na lumapit sa kanya.

"Little girl," sambit niya sa akin nang nanatili akong nakatayo ilang metro lang

ang layo mula sa kanya, itong kinaroroonan namin ay malayo rin nangyayaring party dito sa mansyon. "Come here," utos niya.

Kinakabahan man dahil mukhang galit siya ay lumapit pa rin ako sa kanya, hinawakan niya ako sa magkabilang beywang ko nang huminto ako sa harap niya.

Tumitig ang naninigas na mga mata nito sa akin, mariing pinag-aralan ang bawat sulok ng mukha ko gamit ang kanyang nakakatakot na paraan ng pagtingin.

I just innocently stared back at his hardened eyes too.

"You know hell? I want to go there if it's the only way to have you, little girl," aniya na parang pinapaliwanag sa akin ang isang bagay na kailanman ay 'di ko maintindihan sa murang edad.

This was when he and daddy started their fight. When he confessed to daddy that he wanted me more than just a sister.

I let him kiss me on my cheeks and forehead, it felt like he was trying to make himself calm by holding me close and kissing me so gently.

"Law, my feet hurts," I complained and winced, the reason why he stopped for a second.

He stared at me again before he tapped his lap. Indicating for me to sit there.

"Sit, little girl."

-END_

join in our Facebook Group and submit your most requested wattpad stories in ebook/softcopy format like this!
link - <https://www.facebook.com/groups/237572074500485>

follow makamundo on Wattpad: <https://www.wattpad.com/user/makamundo>